NOT TO BE ISSUED
OUT OF THE LIBRARY.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 25 June, 2016

SUMMARY,

Hiſtorical and Political,

OF THE

Firſt Planting, Progreſſive Improvements, and Preſent State of the BRITISH Settlements in NORTH-AMERICA.

CONTAINING

Some general Account of ancient and modern Colonies, the granting and ſettling of the Britiſh Continent and Weſt-India Iſland Colonies, with ſome tranſient Remarks concerning the adjoining French and Spaniſh Settlements, and other Remarks of various Natures.

II. The Hudſon's-Bay Company's Lodges, Fur and Skin Trade.

III. Newfoundland Harbours and Cod-Fiſhery.

IV. The Province of L'Acadie or Nova Scotia; with the Viciſſitudes of the Property and Juriſdiction thereof, and its preſent State.

V. The ſeveral Grants of Sagadahock, Province of Main, Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and New-Plymouth, united by a new Charter in the preſent Province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, commonly called New-England.

By WILLIAM DOUGLASS, M.D.

VOL. I.

Ne quid falſi dicere audeat, ne quid veri non audeat. CICERO.

32396 a

LONDON,

Printed for R. and J. DODSLEY, in *Pall-mall.*

MDCCLX.

1760

00032396

THE AUTHOR TO THE READER.

THIS HISTORICAL SUMMARY, concerning the British continent plantations in North-America, we published in loose sheets by way of pamphlet, feuille volante, or loss-blad, which in their nature are temporary, and soon lost; but as it is generally desired, that it may be preserved, we publish it in two large

contains general affairs, of ancient and modern grants and settling of our and West-India islands,

and the adjoining French and Spaniſh ſettlements, with remarks of various natures.

Vol. I. Part ii. contains, 1. The Hudſon's-bay company's ſettlements, factories or lodges, and their fur and ſkin trade. 2. Newfoundland cod-fiſhery. 3. The province of Nova-Scotia; the viciſſitudes under the Britiſh and French juriſdictions. 4. The ſeveral grants united by a new charter in the province of Maſſachuſetts-bay.

Vol. II. concerning the ſundry other Britiſh provinces, colonies, or plantations, in the continent of North-America, viz. New-Hampſhire, Rhode-Iſland, Connecticut, Eaſt and Weſt Jerſeys, Penſylvania higher and lower, Maryland, and Virginia. Throughout are interſperſed ſeveral miſcellaneous affairs, ſuch as the natural hiſtory the diſtempers at times epidemical, and the endemial diſeaſes in various climates, with their [illegible] alſo ſome addenda and [illegible] cularly, if, by hiſtorical [illegible] any juſt offence (human [illegible] given to perſon or perſons [illegible] didly rectified.

The writer, with candour, acknowledges hat in the affair of commodore Knowles's mpreſs in the harbour of Boſton, Nov. 1747, there was ſomewhat of paſſionate varmth and indiſcretion, merely in affec-ion to Boſton, and country of New-Eng-and, his altera patria; but not with ran-our or malice, having no perſonal ac-quaintance nor dealings with Mr. Knowles; herefore from common fame, he (as hiſto-ians do) only narrates his peculiar temper, is ſeverity in diſcipline, and not ſo much egard as ſome other ſea commanders have or the mercantile intereſt, by impreſſing heir men, when he thought the publick rvice required it: his general courage as ſea officer is not queſtioned; the inſinua-on concerning his perſonal courage, has een conſtrued amiſs; the refuſing paſ-onate challenges from private maſters of erchant ſhips, whoſe men he had im-reſſed, which perhaps might deprive the ition of his ſervice, is no ſlur.

The writer declares that he had no other tention, than by ſetting the affair in a ong light, to contribute towards extend-

ing to the continent colonies, particularly to New-England, a late act of parliament againſt impreſſing of ſailors in the ſugar Weſt-India iſlands. Therefore as this affair was temporary, of no uſe, and may give offence, it is ſuppreſſed in the preſent publication of this firſt volume of the Summary. Admiral Knowles, ſince he ſailed from Boſton, has been happy in ſucceſsful expeditions, particularly in reducing the fort of Port-Louis of Hiſpaniola, and in beating a ſuperior Spaniſh ſquadron off the Havannah; he has been in a courſe of preferments; and proſperous as to his private fortune.

WILLIAM DOUGLASS.

THE CONTENTS

Of VOL. I. PART. I.

Boundaries between the Britiſh and French colonies of North-America 1
Ancient and modern navigation, and colonies in general 17
The firſt adventures from Europe to the E. and W. Indies 25
Dutch Eaſt-India trade 30
Scots Darien company 44
Digreſſion concerning whaling 56
Spaniſh diſcoveries and ſettlements 63
Engliſh South-ſea company and bubble 74
French Miſſiſſippi bubble 78
French diſcoveries and ſettlements 90
Portugueſe diſcoveries and ſettlements 103
Dutch diſcoveries and ſettlements 106
Britiſh general diſcoveries and ſettlements on the continent and ſugar-iſlands 109
Digreſſion, concerning ſugar 115
Barbadoes 130
Leeward iſlands 136
Jamaica 141
Bahama iſlands 145
Bermudas 146
The eaſtern tribes of North-America Indians, their polity, trade, religion, food and language 151
Religion of ancient nations in general 163
Our wars with the Indians 189
General remarks concerning the conſtitution of the Britiſh colonies 201

Diſcoveries

Discoveries before grants 205
Their religious sectaries 224
Societies for propagating the gospel 231
Utopian amusements concerning the regulating our colonies 233
Concerning the magnetick needle, and its variations in North-America, &c. 263

PART II.

HUdson's-bay company and trade 273
Cabots, Forbisher, Gilbert, Davis, Hudson ibid.
Greenland whaling 274
Middleton and Dobbs 275
Button, James, Baffin, Fox, Danes, Guillam 276
Hudson's-bay charter 277
French depredations there 278
Hudson's b y weather 281
N. W. passage 28
Middleton's voyage 284
Newfoundland, its fishery 287
Fisheries of five species, whales, herring, cod, smaller kinds, and for present use 29
Nova-Scotia 30
Port-Royal reduced by G. Nicholson 1710 30
A Canada expedition under Sir William Phipps 1690 30
Paper currencies animadverted 31
A Canada expedition miscarries 1711 31
A Canada designed expedition abortive 1746 31
New-England Indian war 1722, *&c.* 31
New-England Indian war, 1744, *&c.* 32
French attempts upon Annapolis 1744, *&c.* 31
Duke d'Anville's expedition to North-America 32
Island of Sable 33
Cape-Breton island 33
Reduction of Louisbourg 336, 34
North-America sea campaigns 1744-45-46-47 33
Affairs of Louisbourg 35
Paper currencies animadverted 35
Province of Massachusetts-bay 361

General account 361
Hiſtorians faulted 365
Iriſh preſbyterian church in Boſton 368
A general account of the ſettling of New-England 369
Maſſachuſetts new charter 372
Explanatory charter 1726 380
Sagadahock or duke of York's property 382
Province of Main 386
Late Plymouth colony 394
Boundaries with Rhode-iſland determined 398
Iſland near Cape-Cod 405
Maſſachuſetts-Bay old colony 406
Authors faulted 407
Old charter 408
Controverſies with New-Hampſhire 410
Charter vacated and revolution 412
Boundary lines 415
Wheelwright's grant 419
Million purchaſe *ibid.*
Boundary with New-Hampſhire 421
General Hiſtory under old charter 426
Governors 428
Law and cuſtoms 431
Mint-houſe 433
County diviſions 437
Religious ſectaries 438
Independents 439
Church of England 442
Browniſts 443
Anabaptiſts 445
Muggletonians 447
Quakers *ibid.*
Witchcraft 449
Maſſachuſetts mountains and hills 452
——— *Rivers and runs of water* 455
——— *Promontories* 463
The new Maſſachuſetts charter 464
America poſt office and great road 465

Civil

Civil Adminiſtration; general aſſembly or legiſlature 472
Governors 475
Secretaries 483
Admiralty *ibid.*
Surveyors of the woods 484
Cuſtom officers, and auditor 485
Council board *ibid.*
Houſe of repreſentatives 488
Some political plantation obſervations 49[illegible]
Paper currencies animadverted 49[illegible]
The three negatives in a joint capacity 497
Houſe of repreſentatives, continued 499
Cape-Breton reimburſement 509
The conſtitution of New-England townſhips 512
Provincial civil officers of Maſſachuſetts-Bay 515
Executive courts 517
Taxes and valuations 524
Annual ſupplies 527
Reimburſements for Cape-Breton 528
Maſſachuſetts inhabitants, produce, manufactures 529
——— *Eſtabliſhments military ſea and land* 532
——— *Fiſhery, timber and grain* 537
Rum, hats, iron 540
College in Maſſachuſetts-Bay 543
French and Indian wars ſince the revolution, with a circumſtantiated account of our late French and Indian war in the adminiſtration of governor Shirley 548
The French claims to ſome part of Nova-Scotia revived 566
Proceedings at the court of Great-Britain, towards encouraging the ſettling and fiſhery of Nova-Scotia *ibid.*

Place the Map to Face the Title of Vol. I.

A

SUMMARY,

HISTORICAL and POLITICAL,

OF

The firſt planting, progreſſive improvements, and preſent ſtate of the *Britiſh* ſettlements in NORTH-AMERICA; with ſome tranſient accounts of the bordering *French* and *Spaniſh* ſettlements.

AS *diſtance of place* does equally or rather more admit of latitude, for imperfect, erroneous, and romantic accounts of affairs than diſtance of me; the author, after thirty years reſidence in theſe lonies, and correſpondence with ſome inquiſitive ntlemen of the ſeveral governments, does generouſly fer to the public the following collection, done with me expenſe of time borrowed from the buſineſs of his ofeſſion, and hours of relaxation; without any mer- nary, ſordid, ſcribbling view of profit, or oſtentation more knowledge in theſe things than ſome of his ighbours, but to contribute towards a ſolid certain undation for the hiſtories of theſe countries in times to me. The people in Europe (the public boards not cepted) have a very indiſtinct notion of theſe ſettle- ents, and the American ſettlers are too indolent, to quaint themſelves with the ſtate of their neighbouring lonies.

Deſcriptions and bare relations, although accurate and inſtructive, to many readers are inſipid and tedious; therefore a little ſeaſoning is ſometimes uſed; where a *mica ſalis* occurs, it may not be diſagreable; it is no deſigned with any malicious invidious view. For the ſame reaſon, a ſmall digreſſion, but not impertinent to the ſubject, is now and then made uſe of; as alſo ſome ſhort illuſtrations.

SECT. I.

Concerning the boundaries between the Britiſh *and* French *ſettlements in* NORTH-AMERICA.

AS a treaty of peace ſeems to be upon the anvil in Europe between Great-Britain and France; the ſubject-matter of this ſection, is to propoſe a ſcheme (the more propoſals or projections, the more choice) towards determining and ſettling the territorial limits, and thoſe of an excluſive Indian trade, between Great-Britain and France in North-America. The ſcheme muſt ſhort, elſe it will not be attended to, and therefore requi ſome previous elucidations, and ſome ſhort anticipati accounts of things.

Our principal intereſt is to rival the French and Dut in their trade and navigation, without diſtinction or pa tiality to either. In this preſent war, the French co ſeems to neglect their colonies, trade, and navigation, t principal care of their late good and great miniſter C dinal de Fleury; and run into their former roman humour of land-conqueſts. This is the opportunity take the advantage of their inattention, more eſpecia with regard to North-America, our preſent ſubject.

The French are the common nuſance and diſturb of Europe, and will, in a ſhort time, become the ſame America, if not mutilated at home, and in Ameri fenced off from us by ditches and walls, that is, by gr riv

ivers and impracticable mountains. They are a nu-
erous, powerful, rich, and polite nation, they have the
dvantage of us in three grand articles.

1. Their government is abſolutely monarchical; tax
t pleaſure; not accountable for monies expended in
ſecret ſervices (in Great-Britain, the article for ſecret ſer-
vices in the civil liſt, is ſmall, and when the parliament
allows any ſum extraordinary for that uſe, it occaſions a
grumbling both within and without doors.) In this they
have the advantage of us, well knowing, that not only
private perſons, but miniſters of ſtate, generals, admirals,
even ſovereigns may be bought or bribed; the late E. of
Or—d, the grand maſter of corruption, when he gave
himſelf the looſe, at times declared, "That there was no
'private perſon or community, but what might be cor-
'rupted, provided their price could be complied with."
t therefore becomes the repreſentatives of Great-Britain,
arrowly to inſpect into the conduct of their miniſters,
nd other great officers in truſt, eſpecially in making
reaties with France. The infamous treaty of Utrecht,
13, was procured by the French court bribing our cor-
ted adminiſtration; that part of it relating to the Bri-
northern American colonies will in time be their ruin,
ot rectified and explained. 2. By cuſtom time out of
nd, they are above, and do upon all occaſions diſpenſe
h, the principles of honeſty and honour; ſuperiority
power is their only rule, as Louis XIV modeſtly ex-
ſſed it, in the device upon his canon, *ratio ultima regum:*
y occaſionally make dupes of the other princes in Eu-
e; their promiſes and faith are by them uſed only as a
of ſcaffolding, which, when the ſtructure is finiſhed,
project effected, they drop; in all public treaties
y are *gens de mauveiſe foy*. This may ſeem an unman-
y national reflection; but, at this time, it could not
voided, conſidering their perfidiouſly exciting a re-
in Great-Britain, contrary to their ſolemn acknow-
gment and guarantee of the *Hanover* ſucceſſion, by in-
ng the Highlanders to rapine and killing of their

countrymen; their re-fortifying of Dunkirk in time of peace; their violating of their guarantee of the *pragmatic ſanction*, concerning the Auſtrian ſucceſſion, by invaſion of Germany. 3. The greateſt and moſt eſſential real article is, the largeneſs of their dominions in the beſt country of Europe, and thereby are become an overmatch for their neighbours, and more capable of ſwarming into their colonies than we are. In order to preſerve a balance in Europe, they ought to be curtailed or diſmembred there, which will effectually, at the ſame time, prevent their too great growth in America.

Louiſbourg being now in our poſſeſſion, there can be no great difficulty in reducing of Canada: at preſent it is not populous (perhaps not exceeding 12,000 men capable of marching) neither is it compact (from the mouth of St. Laurence river to its riſe from lake Ontario, at fort Frontenac, are about 800 miles;) and the French (without a pun) are like cocks which fight beſt upon their own dunghill: witneſs, their late behaviour in Germany, in Italy, their late poltronnerie in Cape-Breton, and at ſea. Flanders is their own dunghill, and perha for politic reaſons, the allies allow them to over-run it will be to them a chargeable poſſeſſion, and a dimi tion of their army in garriſoning of ſo many tow thus by giving them ſcope, they may run themſelves of breath, that is, out of men and money, and become eaſy prey.

Cape-Breton iſlands and Canada being reduced, wo be to us an immenſe advantage, *viz.* the monopoly of the American fiſh, fur, and ſkins trade, provided th acquiſitions could be annexed to Great-Britain, as a l ing poſſeſſion: but unleſs in the preſent treaty we co abſolutely give the law to France, and perſuade the ot powers of Europe to allow us this monopoly, we ſho to no purpoſe, incur (if not reimburſed from home) inextricable expenſe or debt, and by extending or ſtret ing our colonies, render them more ſlender and we we are not capable of ſettling inland countries in a ſl

ti

time, our European dominions cannot allow or ſpare people ſufficient for that purpoſe. The Phœnicians, Greeks, Venetians, Genoeſe, *&c.* formerly had many factories and colonies in ſundry places, but for want of people ſufficient to maintain theſe poſſeſſions, they ſoon vaniſhed. It is true, the Dutch, an amphibious man-animal, though a ſmall people, maintain their ground in their colonies: but we may obſerve, they never run their ſettlements far from their natural and trading element, the water.

Formerly priority of diſcovery was reckoned a proper claim. The Cabots coaſted North-America (they were in Canada river) in the end of the fifteenth century. Secretary Walſingham, being informed of an opening weſterly, north of North-Virginia (Nova Scotia and New England were ſoon after called North-Virginia) anno 1583, ſent out veſſels upon the diſcovery; they ſailed up the river of St. Laurence, took poſſeſſion of Canada, and ſettled ſome trade there. In Queen Anne's manifeſto, diſperſed in Canada, anno 1711, when the expedition for the reduction of it, was on foot, it is ſaid, "That Canada belonged to the Engliſh by priority of diſcovery, and what the French poſſeſſed there was by grants from the Engliſh, and conſequently held it only as a fief, therefore where the poſſeſſors turn enemy, it reverts." Quebec was taken by ſome private Engliſh adventurers, anno 1629. It was given up by treaty to the French, 1632.

Afterwards in place of prior diſcovery, pre-emption of the Indian natives, and occupancy, was deemed a more juſt and equitable title. In caſe of a war, if any conqueſt happened, upon a peace, an *uti poſſidetis* (as is the practice with the Turks and other Aſiatics) was the right: but at preſent in Europe, amongſt the civilized and polite nations, at the concluſion of a war, the baſis of the treaty, is former treaties (reckoned ſolemn barriers, indentures, or *jus gentium*) equivalents in money, abſolute ceſſion, or exchange of territories, for damages

received, or ſuppoſed to be received, articles of former treaties, explained and rectified, as in our preſent caſe the treaty of Utrecht, 1713, ſeems to require.

By treaty of peace and neutrality for America, anno 1656, Nov. 6, 16, between Great-Britain and France in one another's diſtricts they are not to trade, fiſh, or harbour (except in caſes of diſtreſs to repair, wood, and water) but iniquitouſly by the treaty of Utrecht, our corrupt adminiſtration granted to the French the liberty of catching and curing of fiſh in the moſt advantageous places, "On that part of Newfoundland from Cape "Bonaviſta to the northermoſt part of the iſland, and "from thence running down by the weſtern ſide to "Point-Riche:" there cod-fiſh are ſo plenty, and fall in ſo near the ſhore, that the French fiſhermen, without the charge or trouble of hook and line, catch them by a kind of grapling, as our privateers diſcovered when they made prizes of ſeveral French fiſh-traders in the ſummer, 1744, in the northern harbours of Newfoundland: by this unaccountable conceſſion, the French had already the better of us in the fiſhery trade, and, in a few years more, would have ſupplied all the markets in Europe and by underſelling, entirely excluded us from the Cod fiſhery, which is more beneficial and eaſier wrought than the Spaniſh mines of Mexico and Peru.

It would be a vaſt advantage to our trade and navigation, if, by the enſuing congreſs for a general peace we could obtain the monopoly of the North-American Cod-fiſhery; there are precedents of monopolies allowed amongſt ſovereign princes: the Dutch have engrossed the ſpice-trade (pepper excepted) of the Eaſt-Indies. But if the French are ſtill to be allowed ſome ſhare in this fiſhery, let them cure their fiſh upon the iſlands in the gulph of St. Laurence, and upon the S. E. ſhore of Terra de Labaradore near the ſtraights of Belle Iſle.

By the ſaid treaty of Utrecht, our corrupted court gave up to the French the iſland of Cape-Breton, with the other iſlands in the gulph of St. Laurence, with

pernici

rnicious clauſe, *liberty to fortify*. Accordingly in Cape-reton, or L'Iſle Royale, was erected the fortreſs of Louiſbourg, the North-American Dunkirk, to annoy our American navigation and trade; but, by good luck, it is lately fallen into our poſſeſſion: as the people of New-England, from their abundant loyalty to the crown, and zeal for the Britiſh intereſt, were the firſt projectors and principal promoters of this moſt valuable acquiſition; if it is confirmed to us by a ſubſequent peace, it may prove a kind of monopoly of the Cod-fiſhery. New-England deſerves not only a plenary reimburſement, but alſo ſome peculiar favour or bounty from the parliament of Great-Britain; having, upon this occaſion, involved themſelves deeply in debt, and loſt many of their beſt labouring men, not by the enemy, but by an ill-conditioned putrid or hoſpital fever and flux. The high encomiums of our militia ought not to give any umbrage of jealouſy to the Britiſh government or mother-country, that, in caſe of any general diſcontent here, concurring with a Dutch or French (maritime powers) war, they may ſt themſelves into the arms of the French or Dutch; and caſion ſome difficulty, for a Britiſh ſquadron and armaent, to reduce them to reaſon. The people here are ſo al to the crown, and ſo affectionate to their mother-ntry, that this cannot be ſuppoſed. It is true, the g and council of Great-Britain lately ſeem to be of nion, that the colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, with re-d to the neighbouring colonies, is too large, and have ordingly *curtailed* it, by annexing a large part of it to inconſiderable government of New-Hampſhire, and ne part of it to the ſmall colony of Rhode-Iſland; as have never ſettled our line with New-York governnt, we are told they deſign to put in for a ſhare.

Cape-Breton and the other iſlands of the bay of St. urence, before the peace of Utrecht, were in our poſſion, as belonging to M. Subercaſſe's commiſſion, in ich he is called governor of L'Acadie and Cape-ton iſlands. He was the Frenc governor when we

reduced that country 1710; but by the peace the iſlands were given to the French in exchange for th fortreſs (no ſettlement) of Placentia: while the peace was negociating, Mr. More, of the board of trade and plantations, was ſo barefacedly corrupt, when the importance of Cape-Breton was repreſented, he anſwered, Muſt the French then have nothing?

By the treaty of Utrecht, the Canada or French line with Hudſon's-Bay company or Great-Britain, was aſcertained, *viz.* from a certain promontory upon the atlantic ocean in N. lat. 58 deg. 30 min. to run S. W to lake Miſtaſin (which communicates, by Indian water carriage, by P. Rupert's river with Hudſon's-Bay, an by Seguany river, with St. Laurence river at the por of Tadouſac, thirty leagues below Quebec) and from thence continued ſtill S. W. to N. lat. 49 deg. and from thence due weſt indefinitely; this weſt line takes in the northern parts of the upper-lake, large as the Caſpian ſea in Aſia, one of the North-America five great lakes, or inland ſeas. By this conceſſion we gave French a ſea-line ſkirt of Terra de Labaradore (by authors who write in Latin, called *Terra Laboratoris, Nova Britannia)* the better to accommodate their fiſhe whereas, if the Britiſh intereſt had been in view, weſt line or parallel of 49 D. N. lat. ought to been continued eaſt to a little above the mouth of Laurence or Canada river.

By the ſaid treaty, the French were not to fiſh wit thirty leagues of Nova-Scotia to the eaſtward, beginn at the iſland of Sable; its ſouth ſide lies in 43 D. 55 N. lat. and from thence in a S. W. line indefinite *N. B.* There is no Cod-fiſhery to the ſouthward of lat. 41 D. Salmon, ſmelts, and ſome other north mate fiſh are under the ſame reſtriction: to the w ward of this line was *a mare clauſum.*

In the peace of Utrecht it was omitted to ſettle a between our colonies and thoſe of France, called c monly Canada, and Miſſiſſippi, or New-France,

Louiſia

uiſiana, from north to ſouth; and the line eaſt and eſt between Carolina or Georgia, and the Spaniſh ape Florida claims. In the propoſed negociation for a peace, it would be much for the eaſe and quiet of all parties to have the ſame ſettled.

The natural and moſt effectual boundaries of countries or territories ſeem to be large rivers, as the upper Rhine divides the French acquiſitions from ſundry German ſovereignties; and mountains impracticable, as the Pyrenean mountains, in general, divide France from Spain, the Dafforne hills divide Sweden from Norway, the Carpach, or Carpathian mountains, divide Poland from Hungary and Tranſylvania. The great river of St. Laurence, the lakes Ontario and Erie, and the Apalachian mountains may anſwer the intended Britiſh and French boundary, without any advantage or acquiſition, diſadvantage or loſs on either ſide; but merely for peace and good neighbourhood.

The French fur-trade, and their ſettlements, are almoſt entirely northward of St. Laurence river: let us take a curſory view of the ſouthern or Britiſh ſide of the great river, and of the lakes Ontario and Erie, and the Apalachian mountains, or blue hills: all the advantage the French can have, by Indians in their intereſt, or ſmall ſettlements ſouth of St. Laurence, is only on occaſion to diſtreſs their neighbours, the Britiſh of Nova-Scotia, New-England, and New-York.

From Cape Roſiers, at the ſouthern ſide of the mouth of the river St. Laurence, in N. Lat. 50 D. 30 M. is La Riviere puante, or the Indian tribe, called the miſſion of Beſancourt, over-againſt Les Trois Rivieres, are about 400 miles; the barrenneſs of the ſoil; impracticableneſs of the mountains, which lie but a ſmall way ſouth of the great river; the rapidity of the ſhort rivers or runs of water from theſe mountains; renders the country unhoſpitable, eſpecially there being no proper water-carriage for Indian canoes. Here are no Indian habitations, and, as if in a deſert, no human kind

kind to be met with, only a very few Indian tra
lers. In Maſſachuſett's new charter, anno 1661, t
claim is kept up in its extent, by expreſs words, "T
"the gulf of St. Laurence, and Canada rivers." B
our laſt treaty with the French, which was that
Utrecht, 1713, L'Acadie, or Nova Scotia, was co
firmed to us; the French commiſſion to their laſt g
vernor Subercaſſe, was from Cape Roſiers to Quenebe
river; this river lies nearly in the ſame meridian wit
Quebec, and the head of it not above fifty or ſixty mil
diſtant from Quebec, the metropolis of Canada, or Ne
France. (The mouth of Sagadahoc or Quenebec rive
lies nearly in 44 D. N. Lat.) Quebec, according
M. De l'Iſle's accurate obſervations, lies in 46 D. 5
M. N. Lat. From the entrance of Sagadohoc to No
ridgwag (the head quarters, on Quenebec river, of
conſiderable tribe of the Abnequie Indian nation, o
ſubjects, or dependants) are not exceeding 100 mil
thence up Quenebec river, almoſt due North, ſo fa
Indian canoes with paddles and ſetting poles can proce
about ſeventy miles; theſe 170 miles, allowing for
meanders, or crooked turnings of the river, may
computed at two degrees of latitude; remains about ſi
miles only, to Quebec, hilly bad travelling. The N
ridgwag Indians road to Canada is up to the head
Quenebec river, and thence, by ſeveral lakes and ca
ing-places, to the river La Chaudierie very rapid, wh
falls into St. Laurence river about four or five leag
above Quebec: their beſt but longeſt travelling roa
from Quenebec river to Connecticut river, up C
necticut river, and thence to the river St. Franç
which falls into St. Laurence river, about four or f
leagues above Les Trois Rivieres.

To render it evident, that we do not intend to pro
any large extenſion of territories inland, we ſhall p
ceed to enumerate ſome more extents in ſundry pla
of the projected line. From Saratogoa, a conſidera
Britiſh ſettlement in the crook elbow and long falls
Hudſ

dſon's river, the carrying-place, to Wood-creek, are elve or fifteen miles, according to the wet or dry ſeaſons; thence about thirty miles to the Verdronken Landen, or drowned over-flowed flooded lands; thence fifty miles to Crown-Point, a paſs near the entrance of Lake Champlain (Crown-Point is not well expreſſed in Engliſh, the proper name is Scalp-Point, from ſome Indian battle which happened there, and many Scalps carried off; it is better expreſſed in French, Point Chevelure, and in Dutch, Kruyn Punt;) from Crown-Point 100 miles to fort Chamblais, at the falls of Chamblais river, near its outlet from the lake; thence five or ſix leagues to Montreal, the ſecond good town of Canada; in all 210 miles from the New-York ſettlement of Saratogoa.

This Crown-Point, not much exceeding 100 miles from Montreal, is to this day, with the adjoining country called the Dutch ſide of the lake Champlain or Corlaer (a Dutchman of conſequence who was drowned there in a ſtorm). We are ſorry that the levies of ſeveral Northern colonies, did not proceed in the intended expedition againſt the fort of Crown-point; ſucceſs or not, it would have made ſome noiſe in Europe, and naturally have led the congreſs to ſettle the line or boundaries.

We have a fort and conſtant garriſon of regular troops at Oſwego N. Lat. 43 d. 20 m. near the mouth of Onondagas river, on the South ſide of the lake Ontario or Cataraquie; in the proper ſeaſons, here is kept a fair for the Indian trade; Indians of above twenty different nations have been obſerved here at a time, the greateſt part of the trade between Canada, and the Indians of the great lakes, and ſome branches of the Miſſiſippi, paſs near this fort, the neareſt and ſafeſt way of carrying goods upon this lake, being along the ſouth ſide of it. The diſtance from Albany to Oſwego fort is about 200 miles Weſt, and many good farms or ſettlements in the way.

The

The Apalachian mountains or great blue hills (l
much elevated in the air, viewed at a conſiderable d
tance, appears of a ſky colour) are only 200 to 30
miles diſtant from the ſea line of Virginia, Carolinas, an
Georgia; the Britiſh people, and ſome naturalized Ger
mans, have made ſome good ſettlements at the foot o
the eaſt ſide of theſe mountains, the waſh of the hill
rendering the ſoil very rich. This chain of mountains
is not paſſable but in very few places with pack-horſes
it runs from the Sennekas country near the lake E
almoſt due ſouth to the bay of Apalachia, in the gulph
Mexico. Sundry deeds from the Indians to the p
prietors of the Carolinas do expreſly mention this gr
ridge of mountains as a W. and N. W. line or boundary

The CHIKESAW and upper CHERAKEE nations reac
from the weſt ſide of theſe mountains to the great rive
Miſſiſſipi; at preſent, and for many years paſt, their tr
is, and has been, with the Virginia and Carolina In
traders, who keep conſiderable ſtores among theſe
tions. We have many trading houſes and ſtores
along the eaſt ſide of theſe hills, and all the Indians
live there are our faſt friends and traders, excluſive
any other European nation. The Sennekas, Chouw
the old Tuſcaroras, Cuttumbas, the lower and mi
Cherakee nations. All our long rivers reach t
mountains, *viz.* Potomack, and James rivers in M
land, and Virginia, Maratoke, alias Raonoak ri
Pemlico river, Neuſe river, and a branch of Cape F
river in North-Carolina, Peddie river, the middle bra
of Wineaa in South-Carolina, and the Savanna rive
Georgia.

The propoſed line cannot be of any great detri
to the French colony of Canada; they have little o
fur-trade ſouth of the river of St. Laurence, and
exceeding 280 friend Indian fighting men, *viz.*
miſſion of Beſancourt, over-againſt Les Trois Rivi
forty men; on La Riviere Puante, the miſſion of
François on the river of the ſame name, about fou

leagues higher, 160 men; theſe two tribes are of e Abnaquie nation, and therefore naturally belong to e New-England Indians; above Montreal there are out eighty men called Kahnuagus, or praying Indians; le fellows, who run about the ſtreets of Montreal, beg- ng with their chaplets or beads; they are runaways m our Mohawk Indians.

As to our boundary with the Spaniard ſouth of Geor- , which a few years ſince occaſioned conſiderable diſ- tes, and the ſtationing of a regiment (Col. Oglethorp's) regular troops; we may obſerve, that ſoon after the ſtoration, the crown granted the colony of Carolina to rtain proprietors, extending ſo far ſouth as 29 D. N. at. (this included St. Auguſtine, in the latitude of the ttom of the bay of Apalachia; and by the treaties of 67 and 1670, ſeems confirmed to us.) St. Auguſtine a barred place, no harbour for veſſels, excepting ſmall aft, and ſeems of no other advantage to the Spaniard, in time of war to annoy our navigation in theſe parts, to diſturb our adjoining colonies by exciting the ek Indians in their neighbourhood to rapine, as was caſe, anno 1715. They improve no territory. Florida Neck, or Tongue, ſouthward is a barren not worth contending for. This Florida Shore ap- s to be of no great benefit to Spain, but would be onſiderable advantage to Great-Britain, for the tran- lity of our colonies in that neighbourhood.

heme towards ſettling the boundaries between the Britiſh *d* French *colonies of* NORTH-AMERICA, *and for the tter regulation of their trade.*

T is further agreed and concluded, that the bounda- between the Britiſh Hudſon's-Bay company, and rench colony of Canada, ſhall remain as ſettled by eace of Utrecht, 1713. That in conformity to the y of peace and neutrality for the Engliſh and French ies in America, anno 1686, French veſſels ſhall

not enter any of the harbours of Newfoundland (exce
ing in caſes of diſtreſs) ſhall not trade or curl fiſh ther
neither ſhall they fiſh within—leagues of the ſam
That the excluſive fiſhing-line on the coaſts of Nov
Scotia and New-England, ſhall begin at the ſouther
entrance of the gut of Canſo, and run a direct courſe
the iſland of Sable, comprehending all the banks of t
ſaid iſland; and from thence to run ſouth-weſt indefinitel
That the inland line ſhall begin at Cape Roſiers, t
mouth of the river St. Laurence; up the ſaid river, ar
Catarequia river to the lake Cataraquie or Ontario; alor
the ſaid lake and its communication with lake Eri
along lake Erie ſo far as the Sennekas country extend
and from this termination, the neareſt courſe, or diſtanc
to the Apalachian mountains; and along the ridge
the ſaid mountains to the bay of Apalachie in the gulph
Mexica; St. Auguſtine and the promontory of Flori
included. That the iſlands in the gulph and river
St. Laurence ſhall belong to the French, but the n
gation of the ſaid gulph, river, and lakes, ſhall be fre
both parties. That the French ſhall not ſet up lod
trading-houſes, or factories, nor travel with goods, in
Britiſh American territories; neither ſhall the Britiſh
jects, in French American territories; penalty, confi
tion of goods: but the Indians ſhall have a free paſſ
with their ſkins and furs, and return of goods for
ſame, indifferently, to a market, in both territo
That the trade with the Chikeſaw and Cherokee In
nations (although weſt of the Apalachian mountain
being of many years continuance, ſhall continue with
Britiſh ſubjects excluſively.

N. B. This Section would have more naturally
cluded, than begun the Eſſay; but as it may be
poſed that a negociation for peace between Great-Br
and France is now on foot in Europe, it was ju
ſeaſonable, and adviſable not to poſtpone it.

We ſhall now reduce the Hiſtory of Britiſh N
America under the following heads:

SECT. I. A ſcheme for boundaries between the Britiſh
d *French colonies in* NORTH-AMERICA, and for re-
lating their excluſive trade.

II. Some general and ſhort account of the Spaniſh,
Engliſh, French, and Dutch diſcoveries, ſettlements, and
laims in America.

III. Concerning the Indian nations and tribes, inter-
nixed with, under the protection of, or in alliance with,
Great-Britain: as alſo ſome imperfect hints of thoſe
alled the French Indians.

IV. Some remarks in relation to the general Britiſh
onſtitution of their colonies, in order to render the ac-
unts of the ſeveral provinces more ſuccinct.

V. HUDSON'S-BAY company; their trading lodges,
ts, and factories; their boundaries with Canada, as
by the treaty of Utrecht, anno 1713.

NEWFOUNDLAND fiſhery; it is not colonized.

NOVA SCOTIA, appointed to be colonized in go-
Philips's inſtructions, but hitherto neglected; and
ſaid (the garriſon of Annapolis excepted) to be
h a French colony as before its reduction; toge-
th ſome ſhort account of the iſlands in the gulph
Laurence, formerly included in the government
die, or Nova Scotia, but given to France by the
f Utrecht, and lately reduced to ſubjection of the
I wiſh I could ſay annexed to the dominions of
Britain.

. MASSACHUSETTS-BAY. In the extent of their
arter, anno 1691, comprehending Old Maſſachu-
y colony, Plymouth ſettlement, Province of
and the juriſdiction, but not the abſolute pro-
f duke of York's grant from Quenebec river to
t. Croix in the Bay of Fundy, commonly called
hoc.

NEW HAMPSHIRE, including the northern ſettle-
of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, lately adjudged to the
and annexed to that province.

X. RHODE-

X. RHODE-ISLAND, including a part of Plymou late colony, lately adjudged to Rhode-Iſland colony.

XI. CONNECTICUT, according to the boundaries ſpectively ſettled, by commiſſioners with Maſſachuſe Bay, New-York, and Rhode-Iſland; and confirmed the king in council.

XII. NEW-YORK, according to their diviſional li ſettled with the proprietors of Eaſt-Jerſey, anno 171 by commiſſioners appointed by the legiſlatures of bo provinces, and confirmed by the king in council: an according to a diviſional line, ſettled anno 1725, by co miſſioners from the reſpective legiſlatures of New-Yo and Connecticut colonies, and confirmed by the king a council: the boundary between Maſſachuſetts-Bay a New-York colony we muſt defer, as not aſcertaine notwithſtanding the New-York commiſſioners agr that the baſis of their ſettlements, with Conne ſhould be twenty miles eaſt from, and paralle Hudſon's river; the colony of New-York (as I formed) inſiſt that Houſatonick, alias Weſtenho Stratford river, ſhall be the boundary with M ſetts-Bay; the neutrality in Queen Anne's war, New-York and their Indians, and Canada and t dians, was bounded eaſterly by Houſatonick rive of the New-York politicians ſay, that their claim to Connecticut river: their line with Pennſylva mited by Delaware river, and the parallel of 4 Lat.: their northern boundary with Canada wan fixed in ſome ſubſequent treaty.

XIII. The EAST and WEST JERSEYS, two grants: the proprietors ſurrendered the governm the crown, anno 1702: being ſmall, the crown ha them under one juriſdiction or government.

XIV. PENNSYLVANIA. Two diſtinct governm legiſlatures, but under one governor; becauſe t perty of one family.

XV. MARYLAND. Lord Baltimore's property cannot adjuſt his line with Penn's family, as it i yet ſettled.

XV

XVI. VIRGINIA; according to their line lately run nd confirmed with North-Carolina.

XVII. NORTH-CAROLINA; according to their late e with Virginia to the North, and South-Carolina to he ſouthward.

XVIII. SOUTH-CAROLINA. The other government: the grant of Carolina, being very large, was divided into two governments.

XIX. GEORGIA. An Utopian property and government; granted by charter to certain truſtees. A favourite and chargeable colony, but hitherto unprofitable.

SECT. II.

n introductory ſhort account *of the ancient and modern navigation, diſcoveries, and ſettling of colonies, n* North-America, *diſtinguiſhed under the following heads or articles.*

ARTICLE I.

eral view of navigation *and* colonies *in remote times.*

trade and navigation, as in all other affairs of antiquity, we are not to go too far back; in the very e ages, the ancients did much indulge a poetical, rhetorical, enigmatical, and mythological vein; it poſſible at this diſtance of time and place, to diſh between their true and fabulous relations: their es and all other matters were wrote in verſe, adg of many poetical fancies [*a*].

[*a*] When we ſay, that the moſt ancient records are poetical, fabulous, gorical, not to be depended upon for a real, ſimple, true account s; we muſt except our ſcriptural book of religion, the oracles of nd the prophets, of CHRIST and his apoſtles, called, from its

Doubtleſs, from time to time, by famine, peſtilence and ſome implacable ſword, whole countries have bee depopulated, and conſequently their records deſtroyed we find that we cannot, with any certainty, go back ex ceeding 2500 years. From what we may collect, we find that China, the Eaſt-Indies, and Arabians, are prior to us in trade and navigation; at preſent we have much the advantage of them.

In the revolution of ages, the ſeveral countries upon the earth have been depopulated by peſtilence, famine, o wars; and afterwards ſettled from other countries; thu the origin of the ſeveral countries muſt be very variou and uncertain. The plains and overflowed lands, calle interval lands in New-England, upon the banks of th Tigris and Euphrates in Chaldea, and of the Nile in Egyp being very fertile and pleaſant, enticed people to ſettle the in a compact, political, improving manner; therefore o firſt certain records of things ſeem to originate there [*b*

Among the aborigines, the Arabians or Sara have been time out of mind, and are at preſent the p cipal aboriginal navigators of the Eaſt-India ſeas. Arabian Moors or Mahometans, long before we navig theſe parts, ſent colonies to almoſt all their ſea coaſts

excellency, The Bible or BOOK. Here we find ſhips upon the ranean, and merchants upon the Red-ſea, as early as the days and the primitive Iſraelites. Gen. xlix. 13. *Zebulon ſhall dw haven of the ſea, and he ſhall be for a haven of ſhips, and his borde unto Zidon.* Judges v. 17. *Gilead abode beyond Jordan: and why remain in ſhips? Aſher continued on the ſea-ſhore, and abode in his* the original ſignifies in creeks. Our tranſlation of the bible requ reviſed. The Midianites and Iſhmaelites, who bordered upon ſea, were ſeafaring men and merchants. Gen. xxxvii. 28. *T paſſed by Midianites merchant-men.*

[*b*] The lunar eclipſes, noted at Babylon by the ancient C are original ſtandards for the motions of the ſun and moon, v ſeveral inequalities for all future ages. The Chaldean was for univerſal or commercial eaſtern language, as at preſent the A their learned language, and the Latin the weſtern ſchool l The Thebans in the Upper Egypt, for the ſake of navigation, obſerve the ſtars, and from their heliacal riſings and ſettings CHRIST 1034 years, they rectified the year from 360 to 365 da

lands, and drove the natives up into the mountains. The Arabians and Egyptians, for many ages, navigated the Red-ſea and Indian-ſea. We have had Indian ſpices Europe above 2000 years. Suez, the ancient Arſinoe N. L. 30 D. was the barcadier or ſeaport of Grand airo for the Red-ſea, diſtant forty or fifty miles. The rabian gulph was the moſt frequented navigation upon ccount of the Eaſt-India trade, before the Portugueze loubled the Cape of Good-Hope. The Arabians, by heir ſituation upon the Red-ſea, drove a great trade be-ween the Indies and the Egyptians; this was at that time he greateſt trade of the known world. It is from the aracen navigation and colonies, that all Aſia and Africa xcepting the Tartars, China, Siam, and ſome inſignifi-nt Pagans) are of the Mahometan religion: doubtleſs, the ſame reaſon, all America, in proceſs of time, will come Chriſtians. The Arabian navigation was and is ry conſiderable, notwithſtanding there is not one na-ble river in all Arabia. The Saracens and Moors ſeveral colonies in Europe, they were not totally e out of Spain, until anno 1492.

fter the Egyptians and Arabians, the PHOENICIANS me the principal navigators; firſt the Sidonians, then yrians, and afterward their famous colony the Car-ians. The Phœnicians were originally mariners, d from the Red-ſea to the Mediterranean, before r 1047 years; being uſed to long voyages for in the Indies, they began the like long voyages in editerranean ſea to Greece, *&c.* The calamities of ars with the Edomites made them leave their na-bitations, and ſettle upon the Mediterranean. were the firſt who directed their courſe by the the night-time (the magnetical, or ſea-compaſs, dern diſcovery) their firſt navigation was in long ith ſails and one order of oars. They ſent many s abroad, *viz.* Byzantium or Conſtantinople in Byrſa or the famous Carthage in Barbary, Gadez iz in Spain, Caſſiterides (tin iſlands) Sicily iſlands

and Cornwal in Great-Britain, *&c.* Carthage, the moſt famous trading ancient Phœnician colony, founded 88[illegible] years before CHRIST, were maſters and ſettled colonies a[illegible] along the N. W. coaſt of Barbary, in the *Inſulæ fortunat[illegible]* or Canaries, and in the Heſperides or Cape de Verd iſlands, in N. Lat. 15 D. They had colonies in the *Ba[illegible]leares Inſulæ (Majorca, Minorca, & Yvica)* in Sardinia an[illegible] Sicily. Carthage was, for many years, the emporium [illegible] mart of trade in the weſt, as Corinth in Greece was th[illegible] emporium of the eaſt: they were both deſtroyed abou[illegible] the ſame time by the Romans, 146 years before CHRIS[illegible]

The Aſſyrians, an inland people, had no notion of na[illegible] vigation: by conquering Egypt and Phœnicia, they pu[illegible] a damp to trade and navigation: after ſome time, a ne[illegible] Tyre was built, and the Tyrians flouriſhed more tha[illegible] before, until Alexander the Great, a royal knight-errat[illegible] deſtroyed the city, and ſold the inhabitants for ſlaves.

In the hiſtory of navigation and colony ſettlers, ne[illegible] were the GREEKS; at firſt more for war-expeditions [illegible] invaſions than for traffic. The firſt account that [illegible] have of a long ſhip was that of Argos [*c*], who [illegible] fifty-three years after Solomon, or 939 years b[illegible] CHRIST, according to the computation of the moſt genious (I wiſh our language, as the Dutch, wou[illegible] mit of a degree of compariſon above the ſuperlati[illegible] penetrating Sir Iſaac Newton, in his *Chronology of kingdoms amended.* The Argonauts were the flo[illegible] Greece, fitted out to perſuade the nations upon the [illegible] of the Euxine and Mediterranean ſeas, to revolt [illegible] Egypt; they were a parcel of jolly young gent[illegible] *viz.* Caſtor and Pollux, Æſculapius, Orpheus, He[illegible] Deucalion the ſon of Minos, Bacchus's ſons, *&c.*

The ſeveral Græcian republics had their turns [illegible] tune of being more or leſs potent at ſea; the C[illegible] were the moſt noted for commerce. They ſettle[illegible]

[*c*] Chiron was the firſt who formed, or delineated, the conſt[illegible] being for the uſe of the Argonauts.

nies in the ſouthern parts of Italy and in Sicily, calling it *Magna Græcia*; this name was afterwards confined to *Calabria Superior*, in the kingdom of Naples; they built Marſeilles in Provence in France; they had ſettlements near Barcelona in Spain.

Before CHRIST 885 years, the Corinthians began to improve navigation by large ſhips and *triremes* [*d*].

Thucydides ſays, that in the 29th olympiad was the oldeſt ſea-fight mentioned in hiſtory; it was about 657 years before CHRIST, between the Corinthians and Corcyreans of Corfu. The Athenians (whoſe continent dominions were not larger than Yorkſhire) aſſiſted the Corcyreans, the Lacedemonians aided the Carthaginians (the Lacedemonians were more powerful by land, but the Athenians were more powerful by ſea) this gave occaſion to the famous Peloponneſian war, the ſubject of Thucydides' hiſtory: on one ſide and the other, almoſt all Greece were engaged. The Athenians and Lacedemonians diſputed the empire of the ſea for ſome time.

During the inteſtine feuds of the Græcian commonwealths, Philip, king of Macedon, invaded and conquered the countries in his neighbourhood, and at ſea enriched himſelf by piracies, and put an end to the Græcian liberties. His ſon Alexander the great, proceeded

[*d*] The moſt ancient water-conveyance (does not deſerve the name of navigation or navigation) was in rafts or floats, afterwards *monoxylæ*, or boats, cut out of an hollowed piece of timber, as amongſt the Weſt-India iſlands, and ſouth continent of America: as alſo bark of trees (generally ſewed) with wooden ribs, as amongſt the inland Indians of North-America: Cæſar ſays, that upon his expedition to Great-Britain, he found no other boats there, but ſmall boats made with wicker and hides; ſuch may, to this day, be ſeen in Wales and in the Weſt Highlands of Scotland. The Phœnicians introduced to the Mediterranean-ſea long ſhips with ſails and three tire of oars. When war was uſed at ſea, and the manner of fighting was to ſtrike their enemies ſhips with their *roſtra*, or *prow* (the Newcaſtle men call it, giving them the ſtern) for a greater ſtroke, *momentum*, or force, the bulk of their veſſels were gradually increaſed to the enormous *quinquiremes*, or five tire of oars.—Ships of war, were by the Romans called *claſſicæ*, merchant-men were called *onerariæ*.

to the Levant, and conquered (committed murders and robbery) ſo far as the river Indus [*e*]: upon his return intoxicated with wine, and his youthful vanity from conqueſts, he died at Babylon; and his depredations (they deſerve no better name) were cantoned among his generals in their ſeveral ſtations or commands, who after ſome bickerings, agreed to an *uti poſſidetis*.

Next in courſe at ſea appeared the Romans, who at firſt (like the preſent Turks) did only mind conqueſt, not trade; but in proceſs of time, finding that the Corinthians and Carthaginians, had the dominion of the ſeas, ſo as to land and make depredations when they pleaſed; to keep them within bounds, the Romans were obliged to mind the ſea out of neceſſity [*f*] and they were both deſtroyed about the ſame time by the Romans; a great wound to trade.

Julius Cæſar invaded Great-Britain from France in very ſmall veſſels or craft; they were all built and fitted in two months: the Britons, at that time, had no navigation; they were reduced to the Roman province, and a colony, and continued ſo above 400 years. As the people of Britain, at that time, were a ſort of *ſylveſtres* wild people, like our American Indians, Scots Highlanders, Miquelets of Spain, or Montenagrins; all particular accounts of Great-Britain may be reputed as fabulous before Cæſar's time. Upon the ſwarming out of gration of the northern Barbarians, the Roman troops Great-Britain were recalled to the defence of their own country; a party of the ſame northern nations, the Saxons, embraced the opportunity, invaded Great Britain in that part of it now called England; and

[*e*] The Græcian empire extended ſo far eaſt as the river Indus they conquered, or rather made the ſeveral countries pay tribute the modern phraſe, raiſed contributions to the river Indus: the Romans not bring the country under contribution further eaſt than the Euphrates.

[*f*] At the ſea-battle of Actium, before CHRIST thirty-one years Anthony had 500, and Auguſtus 250 ſhips of war: this was the ſtrongeſt force that ever the Romans were maſters of.

of their conſiderable tribes, the Angles, gave name to he country.

Pirates in the Mediterranean ſea have been formidable. LLUM PIRATICUM is ſometimes recorded by the oman hiſtorians. Pompey was delegated for one of heſe pirate-wars, and, in the ſpace of four months (to is great honour and glory, as it is ſaid) reduced all the irates.

The Romans with their conqueſts and colonies introuced their own language [*g*] all over Italy, into France, ain and Portugal, where it continues to this day, but uch intermixed with the languages of the aboriginals, id of ſome foreigners, who invaded them from time time. In other nations, which ſubmitted to the omans rather for patronage or protection than by conueſt (the Romans were, at that time, the general arbiators of all the known civilized nations [*h*]) the Roman nguage or Latin did not prevail.

The Goths, Vandals, and other barbarous nations, ho ſwarmed from the northern parts of Europe, and e locuſts, or caterpillars, over-ran the ſouthern parts of ope, may be ſaid, generally, to have ſuperſeded the nans; they had no notion of navigation and a ſea-e, and did not in the leaſt apply themſelves that Of theſe only the Normans and Danes (a ſort ates) became potent at ſea; their firſt expedition reat-Britain was about anno 800 [*i*]. They ſet- colony in the north parts of France, and called it ndy; in a courſe of years they made depreda- d, ſome ſettlements along the coaſts of Saxony, Britain, and France; as a monument of this, s to be found on the ſea-coaſts of thoſe countries, day, blond complexions, red and yellowiſh hairs.

[*h*] he Romans had letters from the Greeks, and the Greeks had the ters from the Phœnicians.

[*i*] The French have been aiming at this for above a ntury paſt.

N. B. By anno — we always mean anno *Ch* or the year of iſtian æra.

This

This Norman colony in France called Normandy, (I ſhall not ſay, conquered England) in proceſs of tim gave a king to England, called WILLIAM the Conquero whoſe eſtabliſhment continues to this day.

While the Mahometan Saracens prevailed, they we for a conſiderable time, maſters of the ſeas (eſpecially o the Mediterranean from the Red-ſea to Hercules's pil- lars) in the ſouthern parts of Europe while the Normans ravaged the northern parts. The Moors and Saracens reduced the greateſt part of Spain anno 714, and were not totally ſubjugated by the aboriginal Spaniards unti anno 1492 [*k*]: the Spaniſh blood is much tainted wit the Moreſco.

The next, and laſt, ſet to be mentioned in this articl are the ſeveral REPUBLICKS IN ITALY *(Venetian Genoeſe, Florentines, Piſans)* and Catalonia in Spain; th carried on the trade and navigation of the ſouthern part and the HANSE TOWNS in Germany; they had the tra and navigation of the northern parts of Europe. Th intercourſe was generally at Sluys and Bruges in Flande and exchanged or bartered naval ſtores, woollens, line *&c.* for Perſian and Eaſt-India goods, and ſpices, which in part were purchaſed at Grand Cairo, but m ly brought over land in caravans to ſeveral barcadier ſea-ports, in the bottom of the Mediterranean ſea.

The Genoeſe had many colonies in Leſſer A upon the Euxine ſea, and drove a great trade the the beginning of [illegible] thirteenth century, they w poſſeſſion of Nice [illegible] Ventimiglia in Italy, of T Syria, of Ceuta in Barbary, of Corſica and Sar their families of Doria and Spignola had the pr adminiſtration.

The Venetians formerly were in poſſeſſion of and of all the iſlands in the Archipelago and Ion in ſhort, their becoming ſo rich and powerf

[*k*] The commanding land and ſea-officers amongſt the Sarac called Emirs. Mr. Burchette, in his naval hiſtory, ſays, that, from thence we may have our deſignation of admiral.

je

ılouſy and umbrage to the other ſovereignties in
ırope, and occaſioned the famous league of Cambray,
no 1508.

The firſt diſcoveries made in America were generally
Italian navigators, or of Italian extract (Columbus
the Spaniſh ſervice, Cabots in the Engliſh, Americus
ſpucius in the Portugueze, Veruzani in the French
vice, *&c.*) employed by ſeveral European princes.

The Hanſe towns were an aſſociation of ſeveral
diſig towns in Germany; at one time they were in
mber about ſeventy; they are, at preſent, reduced
four; (there is conſtantly an Engliſh reſident or mini-
r with the Hanſe towns) Lubeck on the river Traave
principal, Dantzick on the Weiſſel or Viſtula,
mburg on the Elbe, and Bremen on the Weſer:
theſe are free towns with a territorial diſtrict.

The Venetians, more particularly, becoming vaſtly
h by their trade in Eaſt-India goods and ſpices, ſet
dry princes of Europe upon projecting a navigable
nſequently leſs chargeable way, ſo as to underſell the
netians, and out them of that trade) and uſefully
cticable paſſage from Europe, to the rich produce
manufactures of the eaſt. This leads to the ſubject
e [illegible]wing article.

ARTICLE II.

ing the ſeveral eſſays *or* adventures, *towards diſ-
ring navigable paſſages from* Europe *to the* Eaſt-
es, China, *and the* Spice-iſlands.

s ſaid, that one great inducement to Columbus's
enture weſtward, was to try for a weſtern naviga-
the Spice-iſlands; and luckily, by iſlands and
t continent intercepting him, America was diſ-
d.

he ſeveral great continents of Europe and Africa
d, and America weſtward, lay in the way; the
as, how to double the extreme north or ſouth
points,

points, or lands-ends, of theſe continents; or to find ſom practicable ſtraits or thorough-fares in theſe continen

Before we proceed, we ſhall inſert by way of amu ment, as not impertinent to the ſubject, the followi digreſſion.

Some Dutch fiſhers miſſing of whales, are ſaid to ha ſailed in queſt of them ſeveral degrees north of Ca Purchas of Eaſt-Greenland, which lies in N. lat. 82. I there was no ice, only an open ſea, but very hollow Whalers ſay, that the farther north, on Spitzbergen, c Eaſt-Greenland, they found the greater plenty of graſ and other green herbs; therefore towards the pole muſt be hotter: this ſeems to be probable from the na ture of things: in June, at the north pole, the ſun 23 D. 30 M. high, and for ſome months always abo the horizon; whereas, for inſtance, at London, the m tropolis of Great-Britain, in N. lat. 51 D. 30 M. the ſ in December, is only about 15 D. high, and only for third of its revolution or day above the horizon.

M. Frazier, a French navigator, ſays, in the acco of his South-ſea voyages; that on the 13th of Mar 1714, N. S. in returning to France, ſouth of Cape-H in lat. 58 D. 30 M. and 68 D. 30 M. W. longitude f Paris, he diſcovered ſeveral iſlands of ice, w to was four or five leagues long; ice is not freq ly with hereabouts, and as ice is formed by an en ſome land or ſhore, there muſt be land towa ſouth-pole; but not within 63 D. S. lat. for the of about 200 leagues from 55 D. to 80 D. we from Paris; becauſe this ſpace has been run by ſhips, which the S. W. and S. S. W. winds have to ſtand far to the ſouthward, to weather Cape the lands-end of South-America, in 55 D. 55 M This is the reaſon, why that chimera or fanc *terra auſtralis* is at preſent, left out of our charts o If lands are diſcovered ſouth of 64 D. S. lat. the be inhoſpitable and uninhabitable, conſidering t weather is more ſtormy, and winters more rigid

gh ſouth latitudes, than in the ſame northern lati-des; the ſame climates ſouth of the equator, are much lder than to the northward of the equator.

The ſouthern latitudes are much colder, than in the* he degrees of northern latitudes. 1. The ſun is an-ally eight days longer on the northern ſide of the uinoctial, than on its ſouthern ſide. 2. The ſun in r north country winters is in its perigee, that is, nearer e earth, than in the ſouthern winters, being then in his ogee. 3. The higheſt cod-fiſhery, according to Capt. azier, in the ſouthern latitudes, is in 31 D. S. lat. Our d-fiſhery in North-America (there are ſome ſtraggling d-fiſh caught more to the ſouthward) extends to Nan-ket, New-England, in 41 D. N. lat. therefore 41D. N. is nearly of the ſame temper or coolneſs as 31 D. S. lat.

To obtain navigable paſſages, into the Indian and ith-ſeas, the extreme north and ſouth promontories, ands-ends of the ſeveral continents above-mention-were to be doubled. They are reduceable to four, 1. The S. E. paſſage by doubling the Cape of Good-pe, the ſouth point of Africa. 2. The S. W. paſſage doubling Cape-Horn, the ſouth point of America, gellan's-ſtraits is a thorough-fare. 3. The N. E. ge, north of the north cape of Europe, but hither-diſcovered. 4. The N. W. paſſage, or rather gh-fare between the north ſhore of America, and h ſhore of Weſt-Greenland, commonly called Da-raits (to double the north parts of this Weſt-nd, has hitherto not been imagined) this has at cen endeavoured, in the laſt century and half: M. is at preſent, in purſuit of it. Laſtly, we ſhall n ſome tentatives for diſcovering thorough-fares in openings in the body of the continent of America. ancients had no knowledge of countries ſouth equator. John I, of Portugal, conquered Ceuta e Moors, 1409; Henry, third ſon of King John, n the humour of navigation diſcoveries, by his

encouragement, the Portugueze began, anno 1418, range the weſt coaſt of Africa: 1438 Alphonſus took Tangier, and ranged ſo far as Cape Negroe in D. ſouth latitude [*l*], and to this day have ſeveral c nies with territorial juriſdiction from thence to 7 D. S. in Congo, Angola, and Loango. Anno 1442, the P tugueze obtained of the pope a grant of all lands lyi S. and E. of Cape Bajador on the W. ſide of Africa, D. 30 M. N. lat. In the reign of Emanuel 1497, Vaſqu de Gamma doubles the cape; they had diſcovered t cape anno 1487, and called it the Cape of Good-Ho in expectation of doubling it; thence they coaſted alo the eaſtern ſhore of Africa; from Cape-Negroe on t weſt ſide of Africa, 16 D. S. lat. round (the Cape of Go Hope, a Dutch place of refreſhment excepted) to Rio Spirito Santo in S. lat. 18 D. on the eaſt ſhore of Afr is a very wild and ſavage country, no European Settl but from 18 D. S. lat. to 5 D. N. lat. the Portugu have poſſeſſions, the chief being Mozambique in 15 S. lat. and Melinda in 2 D. 30 M. S. lat.

From the eaſtern coaſt of Africa, the Portugueze ſ over to the Malabar coaſt on the Indian peninſula. next Portugal expedition for the Eaſt-Indies was upon the coaſt of Brazil, and after taking poſſeſſi it, proceeded to the Malabar coaſt. Anno 1510, kerk reduces Goa, takes Amboyna, Banda, and ſo

[*l*] The Portugueze in their adventures ſouthward, on the eaſt Atlantic Ocean diſcovered, and are ſtill in poſſeſſion of, ſevera iſlands; 1. The weſtern iſlands, formerly called Azores or T ing from 36 to 40 D. N. lat. about 300 leagues weſt of Por 300 leagues eaſt of Newfoundland; they are nine in Numbe tor, and after him, many Engliſh charts, place the firſt mer Michael's one of theſe iſlands, about 15 D. more weſt than canon. 2. Maderas, firſt diſcovered anno 1410, firſt ſettled a it was ſo called from its being well wooded: it produces t wines, the *delicie* of the Britiſh American colonies. 3. C iſlands, nine in number, about 160 leagues weſt of Cape d Africa; they were anciently called Heſperides, were diſcovered but not ſettled until 1572; the New-England fiſhery bring ſo ſalt from their iſland of May.

the Molucca iſlands, and returns home richly loaden
h ſpices; they ſailed along the coaſt of China. Thus
ng the reign of their good King Emanuel, who died
o 1521, they carried all before them at ſea, and ſu-
ſeded the Venetians in a trade which they had enjoyed
er ſince anno 1260. Having purchaſed of Charles V,
nperor, his claim, as king of Spain, of a pretended pri-
ity of diſcovery in the Spice-iſlands, they ſolely enjoyed
thout moleſtation for near a century of years the fa-
us and profitable trade and navigation to the Eaſt-
ies; as Spain did that to the Weſt-Indies.

Henry, king of Portugal, dying without children in
80, king Philip, by a powerful army under the duke
Alva, reduces Portugal; he claimed it in right of his
ther Elizabeth the empreſs; Spain became maſter of
the Portugeze dominions and rich trade; being in
height of glory, after a few years, anno 1588, the
g of Spain fits out the Invincible Armada (as he called
againſt England.

The Dutch [*m*] at this time, as revolted from the do-
ions of Spain, were prohibited by the king of Spain,

aptain Drake, afterwards Sir Francis Drake, by way of the ſtraits
llan and South-ſeas, or Pacifick-ocean, 1579, in the name of the
f England, took poſſeſſion (according to the formalities of thoſe
the Moluccas or Spice-iſlands, and carried a quantity of ſpices to
The Dutch did not come to the Eaſt-Indies until 1595; did
he Spice-iſlands until 1599. Some London merchants, anno
ne time before the eſtabliſhment of the Dutch Eaſt-India com-
ained letters-patent of incorporation, and formed themſelves
pany; their common ſtock was 72,000 *l.* ſterling. During
t reign of James I, the Engliſh were not well ſupported in the
s, and the Dutch over-reached them, notwithſtanding a ſo-
ention between the Engliſh and Dutch, July 7, 1619, whereby
f pepper, at Java, was to be equal; and the trade of the Mo-
da, or Spice-iſlands, was to be two thirds to the Dutch, one
e Engliſh; the Dutch in Amboyna (a principal Spice-iſland, in
M. S Lat. the beſt Dutch government next to that of Batavia)
e frivolous pretext, inhumanly and cruelly maſſacred the Engliſh
no 1622: ſoon after they ſeized all the Engliſh ſettlements and
the Spice-iſlands, and have monopolized the ſpice trade ever
his violent abuſe, or tranſaction, can never be forgot, and perhaps

to

to trade to Portugal, the only emporium of Eaſt-Ind
ſpices and other goods: this occaſioned their endeavo
to ſail directly to the Eaſt-Indies, and Spice-iſlands: t
firſt attempted a N. E. paſſage by Waygatz-ſtra
but in vain; afterwards, anno 1595, without ceremo
they doubled the Cape of Good-Hope, ſeized ſeveral
the Spaniſh or Portugueze colonies, got a great footin
in the Eaſt-Indies, and have eſtabliſhed a great trade, an
ſettled many conſiderable colonies.

Upon the expiration of the twelve years truce betw
Spain and Holland, anno 1621, the Dutch made ſeve
ſucceſsful expeditions to Brazil (at the ſame time mad
ſome ſettlements in Guiana) and got ſome footing ther
P. Maurice was appointed governor, and reſided the
from anno 1637 to anno 1644; for want of ſupplies
left it and returned home: the Dutch having a bet
game to play in the Eaſt-Indies, from whence they
moſt outed the Portugueze, they gave way in the Braz
and after ſome years the Portugueze recovered it entire
by anno 1660.

The following digreſſion, may perhaps be an agr
able amuſement to ſome readers.

To make ſome eſtimate of the Dutch Eaſt-
whaling, and ſugar trade (which, with their he

is never to be forgiven: the reſentment and reparation has long
mant, from James I indolence, the national confuſions during
war, the voluptuous reign of Charles II, the ſole application of
to introduce *deſpotiſm* and *popery*, and laterly from indulgence an
we bear to our natural and maritime allies, ſo the Dutch are
this time, from ſome corruption of the leading men, ſome evil
ſome abſtruſe myſtery of ſtate, they have, in the preſent war of Gr
with France, baulked us very much. Cromwel, a very great poli
general, who, though not legally, yet by divine permiſſion, or
deſignations, *divina providentia*, or by the providence of God
ſome years the direction of Britiſh affairs, in his declaratio
againſt the Dutch, anno 1652, demands ſatisfaction for the
affair, and the arrears of a certain ſum of 30,000*l.* ſterling *p*
for liberty of herring-fiſhing on the coaſt of Schetland, as *pe*
with the Engliſh court in Charles I reign; Cromwel's war
Dutch being ſoon over, their ſubmiſſiveneſs and uſefulneſs to h
him drop it.

ery and carrying, are the branches of their traffic) hall inſtance the year 1738 (perhaps a medium year uſineſs) that year arrived in the Texel, for Amſterdam, the ſmall towns in the Zuyder Zee, from the Eaſt- es fifteen ſhips; from Eaſt-Greenland, or Spitzbergen, y-two whalers; from Weſt-Greenland, or Davis's ights, fifty-five whalers; with ſugar, coffee, cocoa, m Surinam thirty-ſix; Curaſo eleven; other places in Weſt-Indies fourteen.

he Dutch at firſt carried on their trade in the Eaſt- ies, by factories in ſeveral parts; afterwards they ſet- d colonies with a territorial juriſdiction; they did not y monopolize the trade, until 1635. The ſubſcription a company trade was 6,440,200 guilders, or florins. he whole trade is ſuppoſed divided into ſixteen parts, the company into ſix chambers, each chamber hav- parts nearly in proportion to their ſubſcription; of e ſixteen parts eight belong to the chamber of Amſter- , four to Zealand, one to Rotterdam, one to Delft, o Horn, and one to Enchuyſen: each chamber has ular board of directors, called in Dutch Bewind- en; the chamber of Amſterdam conſiſts of twenty s, that of Zealand conſiſts of twelve directors, the our chambers each conſiſt of ſeven directors: and affairs of the united chambers are managed by council, which ſits at Amſterdam for ſix years, ely; this general council conſiſts of a deputation ach of the ſix chambers, Amſterdam ſends eight s, Zealand four deputies, the other four chambers e deputy each; and a ſeventeenth (this council of ſeventeen) is choſen alternately by the ſix rs, and is preſident, or chairman.

company is vaſtly rich, an original ſhare of ilders (3000 is reckoned a high ſhare) has been uently at 20,000 guilders; notwithſtanding at annual charges in building and repairing forti- , ſhips, ſtore houſes, ſalaries, ſoldiers pay, *&c.* ng ſometimes to upwards of a million and a half guilders

guilders per annum. They are the moſt powerful priva
ſociety in the world; ſome think them more power
than the government of their own ſeven united provin
at home in Europe; they have at times lent the gove
ment, or Sates general, great ſums of money for c
tinuing their privileges; anno 1688, they lent the Sta
general 8,000,000 guilders for continuing their privile
to anno 1740. It has been thought, that if the Dut
(I mean their people of quality and fortune) ſhould,
any time, foreſee a certain danger of being reduced b
more potent neighbour, they would tranſport their
milies and effects to the Eaſt-Indies, where they are m
ſters of the ſea: thus, in ancient times, the Tyrians, wh
in apparent danger of being reduced by Alexander
great, ſent their wives, children and effects to Cartha
This company exports very little bullion from Holl
(the Engliſh Eaſt-India company export too much ſil
their ſpices vended in that country, purchaſe all th
ther goods they may have occaſion for. The Eng
Eaſt-India company, in ſome articles of trade, have
advantage of the Dutch; for, in fact, the Hollanders
near half the goods ſold at the Engliſh Eaſt-India

The ſeat of government for all the Dutch Eaſt
colonies and factories is at Batavia; here reſide
governor-general with much greater ſtate, than th
ſident of the States-general of the united provinces
governor-general is choſen by the company, w
approbation of the States-general; he is electe
for three years, but frequently continued for l
has a council of ſix, *viz.* The major-general, a
officer; director-general, who has the inſpectio
trade, and gives orders or inſtructions to all u
rectors, factors, ſupercargoes, and maſters or
with four more named by the company. In ve
policy, they have an independent court of judica
civil and criminal matters, to whom the governo
is ſubject, and by whom he may be condemne
death. Under the governor-general are ſix con

vernments or colonies; each has a governor, director trade, *&c.* beſides ſeveral leſſer governments, com-anderies, and factories. This being only a digreſſion, muſt forbear to enumerate more particulars. As the ove obſervations are not public, that is in print, I ope they may be acceptable.

II. A ſhort hiſtory of the S. W. paſſages from Eupe to the Mare del Zur, South-ſea, or Pacifick-ocean; d to the Eaſt-Indies, or China, and the ſpice-Iſlands. the Portugueze formerly claimed an excluſive navi-tion by the S. E. paſſage, in like manner the Spani-ls pretended to the excluſive navigation of the S. W. ſſage, to the Eaſt-Indies. For the better underſtand-g of the affair, we may previouſly obſerve [*o*]:

The reaſon why ſeveral princes of Europe endeavour-other paſſages beſides that of the S. E. by the Cape of ood-Hope to the ſpice-iſlands, and the Indian ſeas, s as follows. Ever ſince anno 1410, the Portugueze ceeded, with infinite labour and much expenſe along weſt coaſt of Africk, to gain a paſſage to the Eaſt-ies; anno 1442, they obtained of Pope Martin a nt of the ſole navigation of ſeas, and property of s, lying S. and E. of Cape Bajador N. lat. 27 D. from London 15 D. in Africa; this includes the f Good-Hope, and the S. E. paſſage.

Pope anno 1493, having granted to the Spaniard ds beginning 100 leagues weſt from the Azores, ſtern iſlands (belonging to Portugal) and ſouth tely; occaſioned a diſpute between the Spaniards rtugueze. The Portugueze reckoned the Spa-covery of America anno 1492, and this bull, as an hment upon their right to the ocean, as being the

[*o*] In the courſe of this narrative concerning the colonies from Eu-ed in America, to render matters more obvious and diſtinct, we mes premiſe introductory accounts of affairs, and ſometimes ſub-ay of notes or annotations tranſient deſcriptions of incidental hich, although in every reſpect not conſiſtent with our intended nor ſtrictly within the limits of our deſign, may be of uſe for a formation, and not diſagreeable amuſement.

firſt navigators of this ocean; complained to Po Alexander VI, anno 1493; he compoſed this differen by the limits of a meridian, called, the line of dimarka on degrees weſt of St. Antonio, the weſtermoſt the Cape de Verde iſlands: St. Antonio lies 25 D. w from London [*p*].

As the Pope at that time, and for many years fo lowing, was univerſally in Europe regarded, as the ſo and abſolute arbitrator, or rather diſpoſer of all domin ons upon earth; the other princes of Europe did imp citly acquieſce in this fantaſtical, or rather FANATIC diviſion of the globe of the earth (its parts to be diſcove ed) between the Spaniards and Portugueze; and for ne a century, all the traffick of the Eaſt and Weſt-Indi was engroſſed reſpectively by the Portugueze and Spa ards; but in proceſs of time, the Britiſh, French, a Dutch have got into their hands the greateſt part of t traffic; gold, ſilver, and precious ſtones excepted.

There are three different ſouth-weſt paſſages.

1. The ſtraits of Magellan (it is properly a thorou fare, but near the land's-end of America;) the eaſt trance lies in 52 D. 30 M. S. lat. its weſt entrance in 5 S. lat. in all its turnings about 116 leagues long; Quaad not above four miles wide; at Batchelor's fifty leagues from its eaſt entrance, the flood be come from the weſtward, and makes a ripling w eaſtern flood. After the beginning of May to the September, theſe ſtraits are ſo full of ice, with ſtormy weſterly winds, there is no paſſing; a

[*p*] Cape St. Auguſtine, the weſtermoſt point of the Brazils America) lies in 53 D.W. from London: the line of dimarkati a ſlice of the eaſtern coaſt of America, now called Brazils; thus belong to the Portugueze, not only by priority of diſcovery and (this is at preſent the good title by the law of nations) but by antiquated, obſolete, diviſional decree: and as the oppoſite marcation muſt be 180 D. E. and W. from this line, it is th ſome part of the Moluccas or Spice-iſlands, if the pope's decr any force or obligation at this time, would fall within the Spani

es, it is very difficult and tedious, therefore it is now ſufed. Trees grow here to a conſiderable bigneſs; re are no pine-trees in theſe ſouthern latitudes, the like thern latitudes abound with them [*q*].

Ferdinand Magellanez, a native of Portugal, not ſufiently rewarded for his many good ſervices in the Porueze diſcoveries, offered his ſervice to the emperor rles V, king of Spain, to find a paſſage to the Spicends by ſailing weſtward, without any violation of the e's bull, or of the agreement with Portugal: with five ps and 300 men he ſailed from Seville in Spain, Aug. , anno 1519; he wooded and watered on the coaſt of azil in 22 D. S. lat. he firſt, but in vain, attempted a ſſage by the river of Plate; he diſcovered and paſſed ſtraits of his own name, November, anno 1520; proceeded to the Ladrones and Philippine-iſlands, ere he was killed in a ſkirmiſh with the Indians; his ps proceed and arrived at the Moluccas or Spice-iſlands November, 1521 [*r*], and ſettled a colony; they loadwith ſpices, and by way of the Cape of Good-Hope, ree years returned to Spain. After Magellan's paſit was diſcontinued (being repreſented ſo very difi) for many years. Camerga, a Spaniard, is ſaid to paſſed it anno 1539.

pt. Francis Drake is reckoned the ſecond who cirvigated our globe, or earth, by paſſing the ſtraits of lan; with five ſhips and 164 men he ſailed from ith, Dec. 13, anno 1577; he paſſed the ſtraits ellan in September, 1578, after a very difficult on of ſixteen days; he got much treaſure along

e are large trees with a pepperiſh aromatic-taſted bark, formerly edical uſe, the botanical name is, *cortex Winteranus laurifoliis cortice acri*; Winter's bark from the name of the firſt imis not at preſent to be found in the apothecaries ſhops in Euhe name is transferred to the *cortex elutheri*, from the Bahamaed *cinamomum ſive canella alba tubis minoribus* C. B. P.

e Spaniards were ſoon drove from the Spice-iſlands by the Porand the emperor king of Spain having preſſing occaſions for a certain ſum renounced all his pretenſions to the Spice-iſlands.

the coaſt of Chili and Peru; ſailed ſo far north as 43 N. lat. the inclemency of the weather obliged him to turn ſouthward; he took poſſeſſion, in form, of the N. parts of California for the crown of England, and cal it New-Albion. He arrived at Ternate, one of the M lucca or Spice-iſlands, Nov. 14, anno 1579, and load a quantity of cloves; arrived in England, Nov. 3, 15 He was knighted aboard of his own ſhip by queen El beth [*s*]. His journal differed one day from the acco of time in England [*t*].

[*s*] Good queen Elizabeth excelled in many things, particularly encouraging of trade and navigation: ſhe ſettled a trade with the Gra Seignior, with the Czar of Muſcovy, with India, and began our Amer colony ſettlements. To encourage navigation-diſcoveries, ſhe knigh the diſcoverers; ſhe was called the reſtorer of naval glory, and the mi of the ocean. Her expeditions againſt the Spaniards (the Dutch h under her protection) gave occaſion to many of our diſcoveries and ſe ments of colonies and factories. She formed an Engliſh Eaſt-India c pany by letters-patent of incorporation, Dec. 30, anno 1600; there 180 perſons named in the patent, their common ſtock was only 72,0 ſterling; whereas the Dutch Eaſt-India company incorporated b States-general anno 1602, their common ſtock was 6,440,200 gu or florins, being about 600,000 *l.* ſterling, and conſequently ſoon o us in the Eaſt-India trade and ſettlements.

[*t*] In fact, the Spaniards of Manila differ from the Portugue Macao, an iſland near Canton on the coaſt of China, about one day Spaniards came by the weſtern navigation from New-Spain or M the Portugueze came by an eaſtern navigation from Europe; this o a claſhing in their Sundays, and other holidays; and is a demon that the ſame identical ſeventh part of time for religious worſhip, and faſts, cannot, in the nature things, be obſerved, and conſeq not *jure divino*, but admits of a latitude or variation naturally, c inſtitution: thus naturally our New-England ſabbath differs forty-five minutes from our mother-country's Sunday, and is o cording to the courſe of nature; ſince the ſeventh part of ti and divine worſhip, cannot poſſibly be identically the ſame, but as longitudes do. Some other differences in obſervation of tim eſſential to religion; ſome reckon the day before the night night before the day, as do the Mahometans and others; t new-ſtyle makes a conſiderable difference in our holidays; th low the old-ſtyle in their holidays, are to a demonſtration, in yet notwithſtanding, ſome of the church of England, and othe who follow the old-ſtyle, clamour much againſt the Nonconfor do not obſerve their Chriſtmas, Eaſter, and other erroneouſly

apt. Thomas Cavendiſh (he was afterward knighted) the third adventurer and circumnavigator by this it; having paſſed, he diſtreſſed the Spaniards very ch along the South-ſea ſhore; he touched at Califor- took an Aquapulco ſhip; touched at the Philippine- ds and Java; he doubled the Cape of Good-Hope; hed at St. Helena in 15 D. S. lat. with much booty glory, he arrived at Plymouth, Sept. 9, anno 1591. he Spaniards having found two land-paſſes or con- nces, *viz.* The iſthmus of Darien, and from the ri- of Plate croſs the Andes to the South-Seas, they diſ- ntinued this navigation. Oliver Nort, anno 1598, d George Spilbergen, anno 1614, Dutchmen, paſſed. John Narborough, fitted out by king Charles II, and Duke of York, ſail'd from England May 15, anno 69; was only ſix months from Baldivia in Chili to gland; he repaſſed the ſtraits of Magellan, and made Lizard June 10, 1671; was only one year and nine ths in his voyage. M. de Beaucheſne a French- (perhaps the laſt in this navigation) paſſed anno ; he returned ſouth of Cape-Horn without making

The paſſage by ſtraits Le Maire and Cape-Horn. ſtrait lies between Terra del Fuego and Staten- , in 55 D. S. lat. being five leagues long, eight wide, good ſoundings; from thence they double Horn, the ſouth land's end of America, in 57 D. S. lat.

elius Schouten of Horn, and Jacob Le Maire of am, anno 1615, were the firſt who adventured Magellan-ſtraits. The iſland which makes the d its name from the States of Holland, the ere called by the name of one of the diſcover- cape was called after the name of the birth- the other diſcoverer. They performed their

in ſhort, it would appear to a man of an indifferent perſuaſion, prejudice, that, in the nature of things, divinity has left it with wer to regulate theſe matters.

circumnavigation in two years and eighteen days. T
paſſage has been much practiſed.

Commodore Anſon's (now lord Anſon) voya
through theſe ſtraits round our globe or earth, is t
lateſt we have any particular account of; he ſailed fr
England Sept. 18, 1741, to annoy and diſtreſs the S
niards in the South-ſeas; his ſquadron conſiſted of ſ
one 60 guns, two 50 guns, one 40 guns, one 20 gu
a ſloop or ſnow of 8 guns, 2 victuallers; he had twe
months proviſion aboard, 500 marines and invalids,
returned to England a ſingle ſhip: of the 510 men
board the Centurion the commodore, when he ſail
from England, not exceeding 130 returned to Englan
He was unfortunate as to wrong ſeaſons all the voyage,
ſet out too late, was thirty-eight days in his paſſage
Maderas, did not leave St. Catherine's [*u*] on the coaſt
Brazil, in 27 D. S. lat. until Jan. 18, paſſed in ſight of
Magellan-ſtraits in March, through ſtraits Le Ma
he was off of Cape-Horn in the height of their win
with hollow ſeas, and boiſterous adverſe winds
before hinted that the ſouth high latitudes, are in t
winters more tempeſtuous, than the like north
latitudes in the northern winters; thus Cape of the G
Hope, although in 34 D. S. lat. was at firſt called
Tormentoſa, the N. W. winds in May, June, July
Auguſt, being as it were fixed and very tempeſtuou
he departed from all his fleet; the Severn and E
50 and 40 gun, tired out (as it is ſuppoſed
tedious contrary winds, diſmal ſtorms, and a
grown ſea, left him and put back: ſome of
joined him again at the iſland of Juan Fernand
South-ſea, which is generally uſed as a place of
ment by enemies and interlopers. He had a
paſſage of 148 days from St. Catherine's to thi

[*u*] In this navigation, in time of a general peace, the prop
places, places of refreſhment, or to wood and water, are th
Verde iſlands, the coaſt of Brazil, and the iſland Ferdinando, in
ſeas, 34 D. 10 M. S. lat. 100 leagues weſt from the coaſt of

did not arrive off of Aquapulco until the end of uary, O. S. the Manila [*w*] ſhip being got in January From the weſt coaſt of Mexico he was 109 days he Ladrones (it is generally performed by heavy rs in ſixty or ſeventy days) from thence he proceeded Macao, a Portugueze ſettlement upon an iſland near ton, the chief place of trade in China; here he conti- l from November 1742 to April following. June 20, 1743, commodore Anſon by good chance (the ila ſhip might have got into her port, but being med at Aquapulco of Anſon's bad condition, he bore to him to take him) took the Manila ſhip bound from uapulco to Manila, about ſix leagues S. E. of Cape ritu Sancto off the iſland Mindora near Luconia or nila iſland, July 11; he anchored again in Macao road, l left it December 15, bound for England. Anno

w] The Aquapulco or Manila ſhips, are annually ſometimes three, rally two, ſometimes only one; they ſail from Aquapulco the latter end arch, near, or in, N. lat. 13 D. as freeſt from iſlands; have a run of leagues from Aquapulco in 16 D. 30 M. N. lat. and 106 D. 30 . from London, to Guyam one of the Ladrones in 13 M. 30 D. . 220 D. W. long. from London, or 140 D. E. from London governor is ſubordinate to the Spaniſh Captain-general of the Phi- es) the Ladrones, particularly Guyam, are of the ſame uſe of refreſh- for the Manila or Aquapulco ſhips, as the Cape of Good-Hope is to utch Eaſt-India ſhips, and the iſland of St. Helena to the Engliſh dia company ſhips—From Guyam they ſail 400 leagues to Manilas ſtance is the ſame to the Moluccas or Spice-iſlands) where they ar- me time in June: they ſet out from Manilas for Aquapulco in and are ſometimes under a neceſſity to ſtretch ſo high as 50 D. N. ome at the variable, or rather the weſterly, winds. They never any land, but have frequent ſoundings, in the high latitudes. ive at Aquapulco in December or January; the firſt land they e has ſometimes been St. Sebaſtian off California in N. lat. 42 D. D. W. long. from London, being the moſt weſterly known part of generally they make Cape St. Lucar the ſouth point of Cali- N. lat. 22 D. 30 M. ſometimes the firſt land they make is Cape on the weſt coaſt of Mexico in N. lat. 19 L.
he city of Mexico, by their barcadier of Aquapulco, they ſhip r to Manilas (commodore Anſon accounted for 1,300,000 pieces the Manila prize of 1743, June 20) which purchaſe in Japan a (they have a continued trade with theſe places) all ſorts of rich Mexico.

1744, April 3, he left the Cape of Good-Hope, and
12, made the Lizard point. The prize money of
Manila ſhip, and of ſome ſmall captures on the coaſt
Peru, accounted for, was in value 355,324*l.* ſterling.

3. The navigation eaſt of Staten-iſland, clear of
land, giving Cape-Horn the land's end of South-Am
rica, a good birth. This is the preſent practice of
French South-ſea-men, and is the moſt adviſeable.

Capt. Sharp, a Buccanier [*x*], anno 1681, came fr
the South-ſeas to the North-ſeas without making la
it was in their ſummer-ſeaſon; Nov. 17, he was in 58
30 M. S. lat. to the ſouthward of Cape-Horn, where
met with ſeveral iſlands of ice and hard froſts; he croſ
the equator or line Jan. 7.

Capt. Woods Rogers (afterwards governor of Pro
dence and the other Bahama-iſlands) with two good p
vateers, ſet out from Briſtol in Auguſt, anno 1708 (
pilot was Dampier, formerly a logwood cutter, who
been three times in the South-ſeas, and twice round
globe) he wooded and watered at Cape de Verde iſla
at Brazils, end of November, and at the iſland Fe

[*x*] The Buccaniers originally were a vagrant, vicious, ſeafaring, p
cal people, chiefly Engliſh and French: they were uſed to kill wild
and cows with long fuſees, called Buccanier-pieces, for their hide
tallow; at firſt they committed depredations only upon the Spaniard
Spaniſh ſettlements (Morgan took Porto-Bello and Panama, anno
and although a notorious pirate, was knighted by that prince of p
and whim king Charles II, but afterwards was in diſgrace. They
on this *Bellum Piraticum* againſt the Spaniards, in the Weſt-Indies
anno 1666 to anno 1688, madmen like, for ſmall booty, and t
conſumed; they ſuffered the greateſt fatigues, hunger, and riſqu
They firſt formed themſelves upon a ſmall iſland called Tortugas,
Hiſpaniola (all iſlands, where tortoiſe or turtle frequent, are by t
ards called Tortugas; that iſland near the Margaritas upon th
New-Spain, from whence, by a Spaniſh treaty at Madrid an
New-England brings ſalt for their fiſhery, is called Salt-Tortuga
upon the N. W. parts of Hiſpaniola; the court of France ſent
a governor, and colonized them; this is the original of the Fr
ſettlements there: it is true, when the French had the Spaniſ
contract for Negroes, Spain conſented to their having a lodge an
refreſhment there; by their uſual way of encroaching upon the
lours, they are now become ſuperior to the Spaniſh of Hiſpaniol

va[illegible]o, in the South-ſea; having ſea-room ſufficient, he r[illegible]ed into the South-ſeas without ſeeing of land; Jan. 1[illegible] he was ſouth of Cape-Horn in lat. 61 D. 53 M; [illegible] weeks from the Brazils, he was upon the coaſt of [illegible]li and Peru, where he continued making depredations [illegible]he month of December, then he lay in wait near the [illegible]h end of California. He took the ſmall Manila ſhip [illegible]. 22. He left California Jan. 12, arrived at Guam [illegible]ch 11, left Guam March 22, arrived in Batavia [illegible]e 20, left Java-head Octob. 24, arrived in the har-[illegible]r of Cape Good-Hope Dec. 28; ſailed from thence [illegible]ril 8, with the Dutch Eaſt-India fleet (they are gene-[illegible]y ſeventeen to twenty ſail homeward bound) paſſed in [illegible]ht of St. Helena April 30, off of Schetland-iſlands the north of Scotland July 16, and arrived in the Texel [illegible]ly 23; having encroached upon the excluſive trade [illegible] navigation of Engliſh Eaſt-India company, they did think it convenient to come to England, until they ſettled the affair with the company.

II. Thorough-fares [*y*] in the body of the American [illegible]nent from the eaſtern Ocean to the weſtern Ocean, [illegible]monly called from the North-ſea to the South-ſea Eaſt-Indies.

The ſtraits of Magellan, already diſcuſſed.

Rio de La Plata John Diaz de Solis, a Spaniard, [illegible]g ſouthward, fell in with this river of Plate anno [illegible]; the name was occaſioned by the firſt ſilver from [illegible]coming down this river (the native Indians call this [illegible]y Paraguay) they went up the river ſo far as was [illegible]ient, and thence travelled by land to the country [illegible]orded ſo much ſilver and gold, and made returns [illegible]Garcias, a Portugueze, was up this river anno [illegible]he was cut off by the Indians. Sebaſtian Cabot, [illegible]king of Spain's ſervice anno 1525, ſailed 200 [illegible] up the river of Plate. Anno 1535, Don Pedro

[illegible]is was deſigned as the laſt head of paſſages from the North to [illegible]-ſea, but as it ſeems to fall in more naturally in this place, we [illegible]ith it accordingly.

de

de Mendoza, with twelve ſhips, went up this river ; left ſome forces there, they conquered the country to mines of Potoſi, and town of La Plata, 500 leagu from their firſt ſettlements ; the Spaniards did not be to work the mines of Potoſi, until anno 1545. Bue Ayres is fifty leagues up from the mouth of the river Plate ; one branch of this river is called Paraguay; her the famous country Tucuman of the Jeſuits ; the Jeſ having, in ſome degree, civilized the native Indians, t divided it into diſtricts or miſſions, under the direction the Jeſuits to this day. St. Jago, in 29 D. S. Lat the capital of the Jeſuits country. At preſent there i good land communication from the river of Plate to Pe and Chili, ſo that the Aſſiento Negroes are conveyed fro Buenos Ayres to Peru and Chili : the road paſſes throug La Plata (the great river comes near to it) in 21 S. lat. the capital of the audience of Los Chercas Peru : the ſilver mines of Potoſi and Porco are in neighbourhood.

3. The river of Amazons [z]. Its mouth lies n the line or equinoctial, it is of a very long courſe, ab 1800 leagues (it is the largeſt river upon earth) from many windings and bad navigation, it is relinquiſhe a thorough-fare. Gonzalo Pizarro (brother to the mous Pizarro) governor of Quito in Peru, anno 1 with a ſmall army croſſed the Andes, and fell down river in queſt of gold ; here he built a brigantine w ſailed down the river, which went home to Spain b eaſt or north-ſea ; Pizarro himſelf returned by la Quito, he found no gold. Father d'Acuna from went down this river, and by the Eaſt ſea to Spai publiſhed an account of the country. The Sp endeavoured a ſettlement upon the river, anno 15

[z] Bacchus, when he conquered Thrace, had a corps of Li men in his army, called Amazons ; Minerva was their leader. Spaniſh expedition this way, a number of Indian women, huſbands, upon this river, oppoſed the Spaniards ; this was the of the river being ſo called.

relinquiſhed it. By the peace of Utrecht, France French have ſome ſmall ſettlements in Guiana, north his river) renounces both ſides of the river of Ama-s, and the navigation thereof.

. The river Oronoque. Its mouth lies in about 9 D. L. by this river no thorough-fare ever was effected; the ſouth-eaſterly boundary of the Spaniſh ſettle-on the eaſt or north ſea of America: St. Thomas e only ſettlement the Spaniards have ſouth-eaſt of river; ſome New-England privateers, in the begin-g of the preſent Spaniſh war, made ſome attempts n this place. Sir Walter Raleigh [*a*] took poſſeſſion the country of Guiana [*b*], anno 1595, for the crown England.

a] Sir Water Raleigh, for himſelf and aſſociates or aſſigns, anno 1584, ained a patent from the crown of England, for diſcovering and plant-lands in America, not actually in poſſeſſion of any chriſtian prince. firſt ſettlement was at Roanoke in North-Carolina, and encouraged ad-urers to plant ſome of thoſe lands now called Virginia: but his whim metals, minerals, and precious ſtones, was the reaſon of his neglect of ments. He was fitted out by queen Elizabeth, anno 1592, to annoy paniards (Drake and Hawkins were fitted out, anno 1595, upon the account; they both died in the Weſt-Indies) he neglected his adven-to Virginia, and made three unſucceſsful voyages up the river Oro-e, in queſt of metals and precious ſtones: he was told (as it is ſaid) as ſo credulous as to believe, that, in that country gold was ſo plenty e heaped up like firewood. In the beginning of king James the eign, he was convicted and condemned to die for a conſpiracy; was ed from time to time; and after being kept priſoner in the tower years, he propoſes to find gold mines in Guiana, and, notwith-his being under ſentence of death, was fitted out, but returned *re* Gundamar, the Spaniſh ambaſſador at the court of England, in e of the court of Spain, clamoured and ſtrongly complained of action of peace and amity; to make an atonement, Sir Walter acrifice, and his former ſentence of death was allowed to take e was executed anno 1618.

he country of Guiana lies between the rivers Oronoque and : the Spaniards to the northward, and Portugueze to the ſouth-t have no footing here. Its ſouthern parts have ſome ſmall ettlements, Cayenne, *&c.* the Engliſh ſettled the middle part, rinam; the Dutch took it from the Engliſh in the beginning of arles the ſecond's reign, in it was quit-claimed to the Dutch eace of Breda, anno 1667, in exchange for the Dutch quit-claim-

The

5. The gulph of Mexico and iſthmus of Dar
Vaſco Numes de Balboa, with 290 men, anno 1513, w
the firſt who croſſed this iſthmus, and diſcovered t
South-ſea in 8 D. 30 M. N. Lat. between Porto-Be
and Carthagena; at this place the iſthmus is about c
degree wide. This Vaſco received no benefit by t
diſcovery, being ſoon ſuperſeded by Padracias, who w
by the court of Spain, appointed vice-roy of Panar
originally and at that time capital of the South
Spaniſh colonies: there is a great ridge of mountains
rather of many diſtinct hills running along this iſthm
into the gulph of Darien; there come from the mou
tains many rivers, which formerly afforded much go
duſt or grains; this was the principal inducement to th
romantic, ill-contrived, badly executed, and therefo
ſhort-lived Scots ſettlement here, called the Darien
Caledonia [c] company, anno 1699.

ing to the Engliſh their colony of New-Netherland, now called N
York; the Dutch ſettled its northern parts of Eſquibe Barbice, &c.
Walter Raleigh, anno 1595, had taken poſſeſſion of the whole countr
the crown of England.

[c] Anno 1695, by an act of the Scots parliament, ſeveral foreig
as well as natives, of Scotland, with a joint ſtock with perpetual ſucce
were incorporated by the name of The company of Scotland, tradi
Africa and the Indies. One half at leaſt of the ſtock, to belo
Scotiſh-men reſiding in Scotland; not any one ſubſcription leſs than
and not exceeding 3000 *l.* ſterling: to plant colonies, to build forts
in any part of Aſia, Africa, and America, with conſent of the native
inhabitants thereof, and not poſſeſſed by any European ſovereign
an excluſive trade, but may grant-permiſſions to other traders, to
Africa, and America, for thirty-one years. The company to h
juriſdiction in their own colonies, where they may impoſe duties,
&c. Their trade in Scotland to be exempted from all duties for
one years. All concerned in the company are declared free De
Scotland. For form's ſake king William did grant to the compa
patent agreeable to this act. By the intereſt of ſome gentleme
concerned, the parliament in the ſame ſeſſions paſſed an act, of b
quence, impowering the managers for boroughs, companies incor
collegiate, to inveſt any part of their ſtock in this company.

They began to ſettle at Darien 1699; the ſaid act and lette
were rectified by a Scots act of parliament anno 1701; and
affair laboured much, by an act of queen Anne in a Scots parliam

nno 1680, ſome of the buccaniers went up the gulph iver of Darien, and from thence, by a ſhort land-ſage to St. Maria, in the bay of Panama: ſome buc-iers returned the ſame way to the north ſea. At he diſtance to the weſtward, ſix leagues is Nombre de os, *(nomen Dei)* eighteen leagues from Panama; here galleons formerly loaded, but becauſe of the ſickly here and in the gulph of Darien, they were both re-uiſhed by the Spaniards; this is the narroweſt place e neck: negroes from Jamaica, interlopers, have car-letters of advice from Nombre de Dios to Panama, brought back anſwers in thirty-ſix hours. Six gues weſt from Nombre de Dios is Porto-Bello[*d*]; it

s, all perſons and ſhips, natives and foreigners, trading to their colo-by the permiſſion of the company, and returning to Scotland, are in-d with all privileges and immunities of the company.

he project of ſettling a colony at Darien, well deſerves the name of a FOLLY: a country under ſubjection to Spain at that time in peace us, and upon any emergency by a fleet from Spain, capable of owing them up; beſides its being inhoſpitable from its unhealthful-

If inſtead of this they had procured of Spain an Aſſiento Negro act, with an annual dry-goods ſhip; if they followed a factory trade to a, to the bay of Bengal, to Hegly river, to Arabia, &c. perhaps it have turned to ſome account; they ſoon were in a ruinous con-, and a little before the union with England, 100 *l.* ſtock ſold *l.*

good ſometimes comes out of evil and folly, it happened ſo in this e: many of the Scots members of the union parliament and their were concerned and involved in this company; the happy union ch promoted by inſerting a clauſe in the articles of union, that all ed ſhould be repaid their principal with 5 *per cent.* from the time ng in their money to May 1, 1701; the whole amounted to . ſterling, to be paid out of the 398,085 *l.* ſterling, equivalent anted by England to Scotland, for that part of the Engliſh pub-which would be paid, by raiſing the cuſtoms and exciſe of Scot-equality with thoſe of England; the malecontents of Scotland the ſelling of the country.

to-Bello was taken by a ſmall ſquadron under the command of ernon, November anno 1739, much to his credit and the ho-he Britiſh nation. Porto-Bello taken from the Spaniards, bourg on Cape-Breton from the French, are the moſt ce-exploits this war, of the Britiſh people from home and in perhaps the moſt remarkable inſtances in hiſtory of the Spaniſh h puſillanimity and cowardice, and of the Britiſh temerity and

is

is the north ſea barcadier of Panama, about tw
leagues diſtant, and the fair for the Spaniſh galleons
the Britiſh South-ſea annual ſhip. A few leagues w
of Porto-Bello is the river Chagre (here Vernon, a
1740, ſeized the Spaniſh factory, and carried off go
to the value of 70,000*l.* ſterling) from the head of t
river is the ſhorteſt land-carriage to Panama, not exc
ing ſeven leagues.

5. The early adventurers to America; where they fo
any large opening or inlet, they had ſome ſmall hope
a thorough-fare to the South-ſeas, but proceeding on
ſmall way, they were baulked: thus it happened in Ch
peak-Bay of Virginia, in Hudſon's river of New-Yo
in St. Laurence's river of Canada the longeſt and larg
of theſe inlets: John Cartier, a Frenchman, anno 15
ſailed up the gulph and river of St. Laurence ſo fa
Montreal in Canada. Sir Humphry Gilbert from E
land, hearing of a ſtrait north of Virginia (New-E
land and Nova Scotia were at that time comprehen
in the denomination of Virginia) imagined, it migh
a thorough-fare to the Eaſt-Indies; he ſailed up
gulph and river of St. Laurence anno 1583, and
poſſeſſion for the crown of England.

6. The next and laſt thorough-fare northwar
Davis's-ſtraits; but as this is a very wide openin
rather ſea, dividing North-America from a nor
diſtinct continent called Weſt-Greenland or New-
mark, we muſt refer it to the paragraphs of a
weſt paſſage, and the ſection of Hudſon's-Bay
and trade.

bravery. The Cuba and Carthagena very chargeable, but ineff
expeditions, are notorious inſtances of a miniſtry (from corrup
humour the populace) wantonly playing away men and money
larly, their unnatural and barbarous demand of ſome thouſan
men from our infant colonies (who rather required large additi
ple, for planting and defending their ſettlements) as a ſacrifice;
men from Maſſachuſetts-Bay, not exceeding fifty returned.

IV

Eſſays towards a north-eaſt paſſage to China and ndian ſeas, come next in courſe of time; theſe ad- ures were prior to the outſets for the north-weſt diſ- ry. The Cabots, in queſt of a north-eaſt paſſage, firſt thered the north cape of Europe in 72 D. N. lat. by h ſolicitation, our ſovereigns of theſe times were pted to make ſome advances this way in favour of

In king Edward the ſixth's reign, was in- rated a company of merchants for diſcovering of unknown; in conſequence of this ſome Engliſh , by the White-ſea, came to Archangel; and the d duke of Muſcovy or Ruſſia, grants to an Engliſh ia-Company ſundry privileges. Anno regni 1, 2, ip and Mary, by patent, a ſociety was incorporated, he name of The governor, conſuls, aſſiſtants, fellow- and commonalty of merchant-adventurers to lands, tories, *&c.* unknown or unfrequented; this com- were in poſſeſſion of the Ruſſia trade twenty-five or y years before the Dutch attempted it.

owards the end of the ſixteenth century, the Engliſh Dutch began to try for a north-eaſt paſſage, and nany years loſt ſhips and their labour in impracti- adventures: it had an incidental good profitable it brought them into the Ruſſia trade and whale- . The north-eaſt and the north-weſt diſcoverers aced the whaling buſineſs. The Dutch have ed in 75 D. N. lat. in Nova-Zembla; the Engliſh intered in 78 D. N. lat. in Greenland; it was re- that Nova Zembla, although ſouthward of nd, is colder than Greenland. The Engliſh Ruſſia- y were the firſt who went a whaling at Eaſt- d; at that time they employed Biſcayers; af- the Dutch came into it, followed it more cloſe- re better acquainted. A few years ſince, the South-Sea-Company fitted out a great number large ſhips, whalers; they ſunk much money management, and ſoon abandoned the affair.

A north-

A north-eaſt paſſage has been eſſayed three di
ways, *viz.* Eaſt of Eaſt-Greenland or Spitzbe
between Eaſt-Greenland and Nova-Zembla, and
Wygatz-ſtraits, between Nova-Zembla and Ruſſia
on the continent.

The ſouthermoſt point of Eaſt-Greenland lies i
D. N. lat. almoſt due north from the north cape of
rope. This Greenland may reach the north pol
gions, but hitherto Point Purchas (ſo called b
name of the diſcoverer) in 82 D. N. lat. is the fur
north that has been diſcovered. The ſouthern
part of Eaſt-Greenland lies about 150 leagues
Nova-Zembla.

Anno 1671, a whaler ſailed the coaſt of Eaſt-Gr
land to 81 D. N. lat. there they found the ice firm
did not float; therefore it muſt adhere to ſome
backwards, conſequently there can be no north
paſſage that way. As the northerly and eaſterly
in theſe parts cauſe very intenſe froſts, there muſt
windward vaſt continents covered with ſnow or
fields of impenetrable ice. Thus the very hard
from the north and north-weſt winds in Baffin's
Davis's-ſtraits, and Hudſon's-Bay, indicate vaſt
tinents of ſnow and ice to the north-weſt.

Anno 1676, Capt. Wood was fitted out by the
of England in his Majeſty's ſhip Speedwell wi
Proſperous-pink, to diſcover a north-eaſt paſſage
Indian ſeas; the Speedwell was caſt away up
rocks of Nova-Zembla in 74 D. 30 M. N. l
men were ſaved, and came home in the Pro
pink) they found ice along to the northwa
ſoundings, therefore land is not far off, an
Zembla (a conjecture) may range north-weſtw
til it meets with Eaſt-Greenland, conſequently
eaſt paſſage between them, unleſs by ſome ſtra
flood ſets from the S. or S. W. therefore n
northward; beſides the water is rather ſalter t
mon ſea or ocean water.

ndeavouring a N. E. paſſage Nova-Zembla was ered, and Wygatz-ſtraits between Nova-Zem- and the continent of Tartary or Ruſſia: thoſe ſtraits lat. 70 D. are always frozen and full of ice, except- when for a very ſhort time by a N. E. hurricane or it is cleared; but this time being ſhort and wea- empeſtuous, it may be deemed impracticable.

Sundry writers give us various ſmall accounts or ſome favouring, ſome diſcouraging a N. E. paſſage; of them are ſufficiently vouched. Some have writ- at, upon the coaſts of Japan and China, drift whales been found with Dutch harping irons; theſe muſt

There was a conteſt of many years ſtanding, between Sir Iſaac with his followers, members of the Royal Society in London, Caſſinis with their followers, members of L'Academie Royale nces in Paris, concerning the figure of the earth. Sir Iſaac d, *It was an oblate ſpheroid*, that is, the earth riſes higher towards ator, and falls in towards the pole; Caſſini pretended from enſuration, that it was an *oblong ſpheroid*. The king of France ench court are much to be extolled for their generoſity in en- g and promoting of uſeful diſcoveries, but their agents or peo- loyed, are not always to be depended upon in the exactneſs of their reports) at a great charge employed his aſtronomers, r mathematicians, to meaſure the degrees of latitude from the the ſouth of France, by ſtations and triangles: their reports at are now, by their own confeſſion, found to be falſe by two of miſſions conſiſting of a parcel of Academicians; one was eru in America, to meaſure a degree of latitude near the they are lately returned to France: the other detachment was rneo in Finland in Sweden, to take the dimenſions of a de- tude under the polar circle; they returned anno 1737 (Torneo ttom of the Bothnick gulph in N. lat. 65 D. 50 M. and eaſt from Paris) from an obſerved eclipſe of the moon and ions of fixed ſtars, variation W. 5 D. 5 M. the refractions much from thoſe in France, the river was not ſhut up l Nov. 2; they found the length of a degree of latitude olar circle to be 57,437 toiſes or French fathoms, that longer than it ſhould be according to Caſſini: they pre- nch gaſcon, or romantick exactneſs, exceeding not only t credulity itſelf, *viz.* to find an aſcertained baſis for the f their triangles, in meaſuring by two companies, upon with four wooden rods thirty feet long, in 7406 fathoms differed only four inches.

have come by a N. E. paſſage. Some relate
barks that have ſailed from the Mare glaciale
Wygatz-ſtraits, by Cape Soutainos, in N. lat. 60
trade with the people who live on the Oriental oce
N. lat. 50 D. therefore Aſia and America are two ſe
continents. The Dutch (as it is ſaid) anno 1646
this paſſage backwards, from Japan to the north
but to no purpoſe; they were not obſtructed
ice, but puzzled by broken lands, head land,
bays, coves, inlets, and creeks. Some Dutch w
miſſing of whales proceeded farther north than
Purchas of Eaſt-Greenland in N. lat. 82 D. and fo
open ſea clear of ice, but very hollow. *N. B.* W
they not proceed in queſt of a paſſage? If a clear ſea
be found, that is, without continents or iſlands t
and fix the ice, a paſſage might be poſſible: but
ſage through ſtraits cannot be practicably ſafe; th
is generally fixed; if accidentally in the height o
ſummers they be open, it can be only for a ſho
and the uncertainty, when a froſt may ſet it,
the navigation too hazardous to run the riſk
veſſel being frozen up, and the people periſhing
bergen, or Eaſt-Greenland, ſeems to be a cl
broken iſlands.

V. Adventures of a north-weſt paſſage to th
Indian ſeas for the Spice-iſlands and China.
Cabot, a native of England, was fitted out by H
of England, anno 1497, to diſcover a north-
ſage to the Spice-Islands and Eaſt-Indies; he
in Weſt-Greenland in N. lat. 67 D. and calle
Viſta, and from thence coaſted to Florida,
ſeſſion, according to the forms of thoſe times
along, for the crown of England; but end
paſſage.

Sir Martin Frobiſher, at firſt fitted out by
venturers, made three voyages, anno 1576,
to a ſtrait in N. lat. 62 D. called by his
but ice and the inclemency of the weather

obliged him to return, without any north-weſt paſſage diſcovery. He took formal poſſeſſion of the north continent of Greenland, for the crown of England; but the Norwegians (at preſent the ſubjects of Denmark) pretended to have had ſettlements there prior by 200 years, from Iceland (its north parts are in N. lat. 66 D. 20 D. weſt from London;) but our firſt north-weſt adventurers Frobiſher, Davis, Hudſon, Baffin, *Smith*, *&c.* did not find the leaſt veſtige of the Norwegians ever being there; there was no bread-corn, no herbage, the aborigines had not altered their way of living, being cloathed with ſkins, and lodging in caves. This north continent the Danes call New-Denmark, and have a ſmall miſerable ſettlement there in Davis's-ſtraits in N. lat. 64 D. and a guard ſhip in the whaling ſeaſon: the ſoil and Indian trade are not worth contending for; the beſt of beaver and other fur is from hence, but in ſmall quantities; it is inhoſpitable. Hans Egeda, in his natural hiſtory of Greenland, 4^to^, 1741, ſays that Greenland was firſt diſcovered by the Norwegians and Icelanders, anno. 982, but the inclemency of the climate occaſioned their abandoning it; his relation of many colonies, abbeys, and churches is too romantic to obtain credit. Anno 1721, a company of merchants or trading men, by a royal Daniſh licence ſet up at Bergen of New-Denmark in N. Lat. 64 D. where the author and his family continued fifteen years: he ſays that barley does ripen there [*f*], that there is ſome tillage and paſture-land, only bruſh-wood, ſeveral ſhell-fiſh, land conſtantly covered with ice and ſnow, excepting near the ſea-ſhore, turneps grow well; muſketoes very troubleſome in July and Auguſt.

[*f*] There is a peculiar ſeed of grain for various climates: in Lapland, they have a ſpecies of barley ripe in ſix weeks from its being ſowed; the barley ſeed of the lands farther ſouth, as of Stockholm, do not ripen there: thus maze or Indian corn of Virginia does not ripen in New-England; that of New-England does not ripen in Nova Scotia and Canada. The farther north, the more vegetable growth is ſtunted and degenerates; far north grow only pine, fir, and birch wood. Farther north only bruſh, ſuch as heath, juniper, vitis, idæa, cranberries, *&c.* Still farther north only a looſe moſs.

There is no good whaling amongſt the looſe ice; the whales when ſtruck, dive, and it is uncertain where they may come up to blow; but near great iſlands of ice, and fields of ice or faſt ice, they muſt come up by the ſame ſide; as the American or weſt ſhore belongs to Great-Britain by the treaty of Utrecht, anno 1713, the winds, being generally from the north and north-weſt, it is the leeſhore and fields of ice; therefore if a monopoly of whaling could be allowed, by the law of nations, in Davis's-ſtraits, it muſt belong to Great-Britain; thus we claim, but for political reaſons do not proſecute our claim, to an excluſive herring-fiſhery at Schetland, or north parts at Scotland; this controverſy is well canvaſſed *pro* and *con* by Selden in his *Mare clauſum* and by Grotius, in his *Mare liberum*. At preſent the king of Denmark aſſumes the ſovereignty of the ſeas in Davis's-ſtraits.

John Davis, upon the north-weſt paſſage diſcovery, anno 1583, made Cape Deſolation about 62 D. N. Lat. and ſailed to no effect, ſo high as 66 D. 40 M. He made another voyage anno 1586, found among the natives ſome copper. Anno 1587, he made a third voyage, and ſailed ſo high as 72 D. 10 M. This opening is ſtill called *Fretum Davis*, or Davis's-ſtraits.

The king of Denmark, upon pretence of renewing his claims, fitted out ſome veſſels for this diſcovery anno 1605, 1606, 1607, *&c.* their adventures were of no conſequence. Anno 1619, John Munc ſailed into the northern parts of Davis's-ſtraits, and called it *Mare Chriſtianum* (the name of the king of Denmark at that time) he wintered in 63 D. 20 M. N. Lat. and called it Munc's winter harbour; and the country he called New-Denmark; few of his men ſurvived ſo as to return home and live.

In the beginning of the laſt century, Henry Hudſon, by two adventures, having ſatisfied himſelf that there was no north-eaſt paſſage to China, was ſent from England to try a north-weſt paſſage; as the weſt northward navigation had no ſucceſs, he ſailed by the weſt ſouth-

ward

ward opening, through the ſtraits, called by his name, into a bay called Hudſon's-Bay, where he periſhed by the inſidiouſneſs of his villainous crew.

Sir Thomas Button (in theſe times many ſeafaring commanders were knighted, to encourage diſcoveries) anno 1611, encouraged by Prince Henry, purſued the north-weſt diſcoveries, paſſed through Hudſon's-ſtraits and Bay, navigated and looked into the ſeveral creeks and inlets of its weſtern ſhore (water generally eighty fathom deep) he gave it the name of New-Wales; he, in much miſery, wintered in 57 D. 10 M. N. lat. he called the place Port Nelſon. This weſt coaſt was afterwards called Button's-Bay.

Sir Thomas Smith's ſound, diſcovered anno 1616, is in N. Lat. 78 D.

After Davis, M. Baffin proſecuted the north-north-weſtward paſſage, in the north parts of Davis's-ſtraits; there he found a great bay called Baffin's-Bay; he did not proſecute to the bottom, or farther extent of this bay, but deſpaired of finding a northweſt paſſage. In N. Lat. 78, the compaſs varied 57 D. W. the greateſt known variation.

No more voyages were made from England upon that deſign until anno 1631. Capt. Thomas James, of Briſtol, made ſome additional diſcoveries to thoſe of Hudſon, Button, and Baffin (here we anticipate a little the Hudſon's-Bay account) he wintered at Charleton-Iſland, near the bottom of Hudſon's-Bay: in this iſland, he ſays, in ſummer-ſeaſon, the days are exceſſive hot, and in the nights froſt: in the months of June and July, the muſketoes are intolerable; ſeveral kinds of flies and butterflies; no fiſh, nor fiſh-bones, or ſhells upon the ſhore, excepting cockle-ſhells; here were ſeveral kinds of fowl, deers, foxes, bears, and ſome ſmall quadrupedes; full of ſpruce, firs, and juniper. He printed his journal (a good performance) London 1633, 4^to^. He gave it as his opinion, that there can be no north-weſt paſſage.

Several others in the beginning of the ſeventeenth century, made attempts for a north-weſt paſſage. Weſt-Greenland and fields of ice obſtructed them; but an incidental very conſiderable benefit accrued, *viz.* the Davis's-ſtraits whale-fiſhery. None have proſecuted the navigation along the weſt ſide of Weſt-Greenland into very high latitudes, to diſcover whether Weſt-Greenland and Eaſt-Greenland do converge ſo as to join, or if there be a paſſage along by the north pole.

The many diſappointments and diſcouragements, as alſo the inteſtine broils and confuſions in England, did put a ſtand to all diſcoveries and other improvements. Upon the reſtoration of King Charles II. the diſcovery projects were again ſet on foot by ſome noblemen and merchants: Prince Rupert was concerned: Capt. Guillam, in the Nonſuch-ketch, was fitted out anno 1667; he ſailed up Baffin's-Bay ſo high as 75 D. N. Lat. and returned to Prince Rupert's river in N. Lat. 51 D. and laid the foundation of an advantageous fur-trade in the Hudſon's-Bay company, eſtabliſhed by royal patent anno 1670, to Prince Rupert and aſſociates.

Capt. Middleton, in his north-weſt diſcovery voyage, anno 1742, ſays, it is impoſſible in any part of the weſtern coaſt, lower than 67 D. N. Lat, called Cape Hope, weſt from London 87 D. He pretends to have inſpected this coaſt narrowly; and if there be any paſſage farther north, it muſt be impracticable, becauſe (if at all clear) it cannot be clear above one week in the year. His main attempt was in Wager river N. Lat. 65. D. 25 M. the entrance ſix to eight miles wide, tide five or ſix knots, ſoundings not leſs than ſixteen fathoms (many ſavages came aboard, but had no trade, they ſpoke of mines [g]) the farther he went up Wager river, the tides did riſe leſs

[g] Many of our adventurers to North and South-America (witneſs Sir Walter Raleigh in the river Oronoke) ſeem to have been more intent upon metals and minerals, than upon paſſages to the Eaſt-Indies, Indian trade, or ſettling of colonies.

(whereas

(whereas Sir John Narborough, in his paſſage through the ſtraits of Magellan, the nearer he approached the weſtern flood, the tide did riſe more) the water from ſalt became brackiſh, and gradually more freſh; therefor it muſt proceed from ſome freſh water river, and is no ſalt water thorough-fare.

If there were diſcovered a N. E. or N. W. paſſage to China, the difficulties in navigation would render it of little or no uſe, other, than to amuſe the curious in the hydrography of thoſe parts.

There is a river, which the French Coureur des Bois call St. Lawrence, coming from the weſtward; it falls into the northern parts of the upper lake, nearly 100 D. W. from London, and the ſame latitude with the bottom of Hudſon's-Bay, and communicated with it by Water canoe carriage; the north parts of California lie in about 130 D. weſt from London (according to Dr. Halley's accurate laying of it) and in Lat. 42 D. thus the difference of longitude is only 30 D. which, at the medium Lat. of 45 D. (fourteen leagues to a degree) makes only 420 leagues; and if California is divided from the continent by a ſinus or ſtrait, this will render the diſtance to that ſtrait ſtill ſhorter, by going up this river ſo far as Water canoe carriage will allow, and then perhaps only ſome ſhort land carrying place to ſome rivulet or river running weſtward towards the ſeas of California or weſtern ocean, if ſome ridge or chain of impracticable mountains do not intervene. But *cui bono* all this puzzle? only to aſcertain the geography of that country; it can be of no uſe in navigation.

Mr. Dobbs, who blamed Capt. Middleton very much for his bad management and unfaithfulneſs, did, anno 1745, procure an act of parliament, *viz.* Whereas a north-weſt paſſage through Hudſon's-ſtraits to the weſtern American ocean will be a great benefit to the trade of Great-Britain; there is enacted a public reward of 20,000*l.* ſterling, to any ſhip or veſſel belonging to ſub-

jects of Great-Britain, that ſhall find out any ſuch thorough-fare or paſſage. Upon this encouragement the Dobbs galley and California ſailed from England in May 1746; hitherto we have an account of them.

A digreſſion concerning whaling.

THE New-England whalers diſtinguiſhed ten or twelve different ſpecies of the whale-kind; the moſt beneficial is the black whale, whale-bone whale, or true whale, as they call it; in Davis's-ſtraits, in N. lat. 70 D. and upwards they are very large; ſome may yield 150 puncheons, being 400 or 500 barrels of oil, and bone of eighteen feet and upwards; they are a heavy loggy fiſh, and do not fight, as the New-England whalers expreſs it; they are eaſily ſtruck and faſtened, but not above one third of them are recovered; by ſinking and bewildering themſelves under the ice, two thirds of them are loſt irrecoverably; the whale-bone whales killed upon the coaſt of New-England, Terra de Labradore, and entrance of Davis's-ſtraits, are ſmaller; do yield not exceeding 120 to 130 barrels of oil, and of nine feet bone 140 lb. wt. they are wilder more agile and do fight.

Sperma ceti whales are to be found almoſt every where; they have no bone, ſo called; ſome may yield ſixty or ſeventy barrels of oil, called vicious oil, the fitteſt for lamps or a burning light. It is from this whale that we have the parmacitty or ſperma ceti (very improperly ſo called) the ancients were at a loſs whether it was an animal or mineral ſubſtance; Schroder a celebrated Pharmacopœia writer about the middle of the laſt century, calls it *Aliud genus bituminis, quod Sperma ceti officinæ vocant*; he deſcribes it *Pinguedo furfuroſa producta exhalatione terræ ſulphureæ*. We now find that any part of its oil, but more abundantly the head-matter as the whalers term it, if it ſtand at reſt, and in the ſun, will ſhoot into adipous flakes, reſembling in ſome manner the cryſtaliza-

tion

tion of ſalts: inſtead of *ſperma ceti*, it ought to be called *adeps ceti*, in the materia medica. This ſame whale gives the ambergris, a kind of perfume, as is muſk: anciently it was by the natural hiſtorians deſcribed as a kind of bitumen; hence the name *ambra griſea*. Dale, a noted author, in his pharmacologia, not long ſince publiſhes it as ſuch; it is now fully diſcovered to be ſome production from this ſpecies of whale; for ſome time it was imagined ſome peculiar concreted juice lodged in a peculiar cyſtis; in the ſame manner as is the caſtoreum of the beaver or Fiber Canadenſis, and the zibethum of the civit-cat or hyena, in cyſtis's both ſides in the Ani rima. Thus not long ſince, ſome of our Nantucket whalers imagined, that in ſome (very few and rare) of theſe male or bull whales, they had found the gland or cyſtis in the loins near the ſpermatic organs: late and more accurate obſervations ſeem to declare it to be ſome part of the ordure, dung, or alvine excrement of the whale; ſquid-fiſh, one of the Newfoundland baits for cod, are ſometimes in Newfoundland caſt aſhore in quantities, and as they corrupt and fry in the ſun they become a jelly or ſubſtance of an ambergris ſmell; therefore as ſquid bills are ſometimes found in the lumps of ambergris, it may be inferred, that ambergris is ſome of the excrement from ſquid-food, with ſome ſingular circumſtances or diſpoſitions that procure this quality, ſeldom concurring; thus the Nantucket whalers, for ſome years laſt, have found no ambergris in their whalers. The ſperma ceti whale has no bone or baleine in his mouth, but fine white teeth; they are moſt plentiful upon the coaſt of Virginia and Carolina.

The fin-back, beſide two ſmall ſide-fins, has a large fin upon his back; may yield fifty to ſixty barrels of oil; his bone is brittle, of little or no uſe; he ſwims ſwifter, and is very wild when ſtruck. The Bermudians ſome years catch twenty of theſe whales, not in ſloops, but in whale-boats from the ſhore as formerly at Cape-Cod; their governor

governor of Bermudas has a perquiſite of 10 *l.* out of each old whale.

The humpback has a bunch in the ſame part of his back, inſtead of a fin: the bone is not good; makes fifty to ſixty barrels of oil.

The ſcrag-whale has ſeveral of theſe bumps.

Black-fiſh, *i. e.* grampus of ſix to ten barrels of oil, bottle-noſe of three or four barrels, may (like ſheep) be drove aſhore by boats.

Liver-oil is reckoned the beſt, eſpecially for leather-dreſſers.

Whales are gregarious and great travellers or paſſengers; in the autumn they go ſouth; in the ſpring they return northward. They copulate like neat cattle, but the female in a ſupine poſture. The true or whale-bone whale's ſwallow is not much bigger than that of an ox; he feeds upon ſmall fiſh and ſea-inſects that keep in ſholes; has only one ſmall fin each ſide of his head of no great uſe to him in ſwimming, but with a large horizontal tail he ſculls himſelf in the water. The North Cape (in N. Lat. 72 D. in Europe) whales, are of the ſame ſmall kind as the New-England, and entrance of Davis's-ſtraits: here we may again obſerve, that the high European latitudes are not ſo cold as the ſame American latitudes [*b*], becauſe 72 D. is the proper N.

[*b*] The cold is much more intenſe in the north parts of America, than in the ſame latitudes in the northern parts of Europe. Capt. Middleton gives a diſmal account of his wintering, anno 1742, at Churchill river in Hudſon's-Bay N. L. 59 D. whereas the French mathematical miſſionaries at Torneo in Lapland, N. Lat. 66 D. anno 1737, to ſtation their triangles for the menſuration of a degree of latitude there under the polar circle, in winter did traverſe the mountains. At Enarba, near Enera lake in N. Lat. 69 D. the country is ſo populous as to have annual fairs for trade. At Wardhus, 70 D. 45 M. in Norway, the king of Denmark keeps a garriſon. The Dutch wintered in Nova-Zembla N. Lat. 75. The Engliſh in Greenland N. Lat. 76 D.

High north and high ſouth, the moſt conſtant winds are weſterly, being eddy or reflux winds, of the eaſterly trade winds between the tropics. In the European high latitudes, as alſo in the northern Ame-

lat.

lat. in Davis's-ſtraits for the large whales, and the Dutch fiſh for them long-ſide of fields or large iſlands of ice; they uſe long warps, not drudges as in New-England.

Nantucket men, are the only New-England whalers at preſent; this year 1746, not above three or four whales were caught in Cape Cod; the whales, as alſo the herrings, (our herrings are not of a good quality) ſeem to be drove off from thence. Laſt year Nantucket brought about 10,000 barrels to market; this year they do not follow it ſo much, becauſe of the low price of oil in Europe; notwithſtanding, this year they fit out ſix or ſeven veſſels for Davis's-ſtraits, and ſail in the end of March; they ſometimes make Cape Frewell in fifteen days, ſometimes in not leſs than ſix weeks. Upon a peace, they deſign to fiſh for whales in deep water, ſo far as the Weſt-Indies, and Weſtern-Iſlands. A whale may keep half an hour under water without blowing (breathing) but is obliged to blow many times before ſhe dives again.

Some New-England men, a few years ſince, attempted whaling in the entrance of Davis's-ſtraits, but to no advantage: they generally arrived there too late, in keep-

rican high latitudes, the winds are generally from the polar regions; the cold denſer air, by reaſon of its gravity, preſſing towards the equator, where the air is more rarified, lighter, and leſs elaſtic, to preſerve an equilibrium, which is natural to all fluids: in the European high north latitudes, this wind (it is frequently N. W. being a ſort of diagonal or compoſitum between the ſoutherly direction towards the ſouthern rarified air, and its weſterly reflux or eddy direction) croſſes a deep large ocean, conſequently warm and mellow: in the American high north latitudes, theſe winds glide along vaſt continents of ſnow and ice, and conſequently more and more chilled; this, *en paſſant*, may be a good ſurmiſe, againſt a practicable N. W. paſſage, becauſe the warm ocean and its influence muſt be at a great diſtance. This way of reaſoning does not hold good in the high ſouthern latitudes, where, from this doctrine, the winds ought to be S. W. whereas they are in a manner fixed at N. W. but perhaps may intimate, that there is no continent of land or ice to the S. W. and a vaſt ocean to the weſt, northward to windward, which, by a boiſterous hollow ſea, carries the wind along with it; in fact, the ſhips that ſailed to near 70 D. S. Lat. ſeldom found any floating ice.

ing too near the Labradore ſhore (they kept within fifty leagues of the ſhore, they ſhould have kept 150 leagues to ſea) they were embayed and impeded by the fields of ice.

Whales ſeems to have ſome degree of ſagacity. When much diſturbed, they quit their keeping ground, and the tracts of their uſual paſſages (the whale is a paſſenger from north to ſouth, and back again according to the ſeaſons) thus, as to New-England, formerly for many ſucceſſive years, they ſet in along ſhore by Cape-Cod. There was good whaling in boats, proper watchmen aſhore by ſignals gave notice when a whale appeared; after ſome years they left this ground, and paſſed farther off upon the banks at ſome diſtance from the ſhore; the whalers then uſed ſloops with whale-boats aboard, and this fiſhery turned to good account. At preſent they ſeem in a great meaſure, to be driven off from theſe banks, and take their courſe in deep water, that is, in the ocean; thither upon a peace our whalers deſign to follow them. In Davis's-ſtraits, at the firſt coming of the whaling ſhips, whales were plenty, but afterwards being much diſturbed, they became ſcarce, and the ſhips returned home, before the inclemencies of the weather ſet in. The whaling ſeaſon in both Greenlands is in May and June; the Dutch ſet out for Davis's-ſtraits the beginning of March; ſometimes they are a month in beating to weather Cape Farewell; they do not arrive in the fiſhing ground until May. Anno 1743, perhaps a medium year, the Dutch had in Davis's-ſtraits fifty whaling ſhips (at Spitzbergen, or Eaſt-Greenland, they had 137 whalers) and got ſeventy-ſix whales and a half.

Obſervation and experience or practice improves every affair; formerly the whalers (even at Spitzbergen) uſed to tow the whales they killed into harbours to cut them up; at preſent they cut them up at ſea and ſave much time: formerly they whaled in New-England and Bermudas only with boats from the ſhore (at Bermudas they continue ſo) afterwards by ſloops upon the adjacent banks,

banks, and do now proceed to catch them in deep water: formerly it was imagined that the true whale lived upon a kind of alga or ſea-graſs, or upon an oozy mud, now it is certain that they feed on ſhoals of ſmall fiſhes and ſea-inſects; formerly our naturaliſts judged the ſperma ceti and ambergris to be *bitumina ſui generis*; at preſent it is obvious that the firſt is only a concreted oil or flakey adeps of a certain ſpecies of whale; the other is an indurated part of the ordure of the ſame kind of whale when it feeds upon ſquids, with other circumſtances of ſex, ſeaſon, &c. and therefore but rarely found.

Some years ſince, the South-ſea company fitted out twenty-four large fine whaling ſhips; from miſmanagement it turned to no account, they ſunk about 100, 000 *l.* ſterling.

The Britiſh parliament, to encourage whaling, did paſs an act, anno 1733, to continue during the whaling act 5 George II. enacting, That there ſhould be paid by the receiver-general of the cuſtoms upon their return as a premium 20*s.* per ton of ſhipping, under the following qualifications; the ſhips not to be under 200 tons, having on board forty fiſhing-lines, of 120 fathom at leaſt each, forty harpoon irons, four boats with ſeven men to each (including the harponeer, ſteerſman, and line manager formerly employed in ſuch voyages) with the maſter and ſurgeon, in all thirty men. For ſhips exceeding 200 tons, for every one exceeding fifty tons, an addition of one boat, ſix men, ten lines, and ten harpoon irons: muſt carry ſix months proviſion: and oil and bone to be duty free.

This prolix digreſſion, as containing ſome things that are not generally attended to, may be amuſement to the curious; and does by anticipation abbreviate the article of fiſhery, in the hiſtory of New-England.

ARTICLE

ARTICLE III.

Some account of the diſcoveries and firſt ſettlements in America *from* Europe.

[*i*] THE only European navigators and planters of America are the Spaniſh, Portugueze, Dutch, and Engliſh; the Engliſh are the proper ſubject-matter of this hiſtory, and their diſcoveries ſhall be related in courſe; the others are the ſubject of this article of the introduction.

The continent of America at a medium eſtimate is about 1000 leagues (by leagues we always mean the twentieth part of a degree on the meridians) from Europe and Africa, upon the intervening Atlantick or northern, and the Ethiopick or ſouthern ocean, and Spaniards call the whole Mar del Nort; from Aſia about 2500 leagues upon the intervening South-ſea, Pacific Ocean, or Mar del Zur, which is reckoned to extend two fifths of the eaſt and weſt circumference of the earth.

At firſt the America navigations were *via* Canaries and the Caribbee-iſlands; a more direct navigation to its ſeveral parts is now practiſed; the ancients imagined that within the tropics *(non eſt habitabilis æſtu)* the earth was not habitable, whereas the fine rich countries of Mexico and Peru lie moſtly within the tropics.

America may be divided into the continents of North-America, called by the Spaniſh writers America Mexicana, the continent of South-America, called by the Spaniards America Peruviana, the intermediate iſthmus or audience of Guatimala, and Greenland north of Davis's-ſtraits.

[*i*] Conſidering that the accounts of the diſcoveries and firſt ſettlements in America from Europe, publiſhed in Engliſh by our hiſtorians, geographers, and atlas-makers are ſo confuſed and falſe, ſo romantic and imperfect; I am induced by ſome friends to inſert ſome better vouched and digeſted ſhort account of the matter; this, though not inconſiſtent with our ſubject, will render the introductory ſection, out of all proportion and ſymmetry, too prolix.

I. *Spaniſh*

I. *Spaniſh diſcoveries and firſt ſettlements.*

CHRISTOPHER COLON, or COLUMBUS, a Genoeſe mariner or pilot, a curious man in his way, ſedulous in making coaſting charts of his voyages, and naturally a projector; he was for ſome years an inhabitant of Terceras, one of the Portugueze weſtern iſlands, diſtant from Newfoundland not exceeding 300 leagues. He went to the court of Portugal, propoſed diſcoveries upon the weſt coaſt of Africa: having for ſome time frequented that coaſt and the Canary-iſlands [*k*], as he formerly did the weſtern iſlands; conſidering the ſun's diurnal motion, the weſterly winds, in certain ſeaſons, blowing with continuance, driving pine and other fallen wood aſhore, with ſome other ſymptoms, he conceived that there muſt be land to the weſtward.

Anno 1486, he propoſed to the ſtates of Genoa, to diſcover ſome countries weſtward, or to find a weſtern paſſage to the Spice-iſlands; they deemed it an idle fancy and took no notice of it. This ſeemingly whimſical projection, had the ſame fate at the court of Portugal, and with Henry VII of England, though a lover of all projects to get money, and at the court of France: after ſix years ſolicitation at the court of Spain, the Moors

[*k*] The Canary-iſlands ſo called, from many dogs found there, the *inſulæ fortunatæ* of the ancients, were diſcovered by ſome Guipuſcoans for the king of Caſtile, about 100 years before Columbus's diſcovery of America; after being relinquiſhed for many centuries by the Europeans: the Phœnicians, Carthaginians, and Romans, are ſaid to have planted colonies; it is certain they viſited theſe iſlands, although not the leaſt veſtige of their having ever been there appears. Ptolemy's canon was wrote in Alexandria of Egypt in the ſecond century, and reckons his longitudes from Palma, one of the Canary-iſlands, 26 D. N. lat. long. from London, W. 19 D. 44 M. Louis XIII of France, by an edict commands all French geographers, hydrographers, and mariners, in their journals to begin their accounts of longitude from Ferro (*L'Iſle de Fer*) the weſtermoſt of the Canary-iſlands 20 D. weſt from Paris; accordingly Sanſon, a noted French publiſher of maps, places his firſt meridian at Ferro; this is two degrees farther weſt than Teneriff, where De Wit, the Dutch map-maker, fixes his firſt meridian.

and

and Saracens being fully expelled (they were in poſſeſſion about 800 years) he obtained three ſhips and 120 men: he ſailed from St. Lucar upon the diſcovery in Auguſt, 1492, touched at the Canaries, and from thence in thirty-ſix days (in thoſe times a tedious voyage without ſight of land) and landed Octob. 11, on the iſland Guanchini, one of the Bahama or Lucayo-iſlands (ſo called, becauſe he arrived there on St. Luke's feſtival) he called it St. Salvador, now Cat-iſland, in N. lat. 25 D. 76 D. weſt from London; and from thence he ſailed to Hiſpaniola and Cuba-iſlands, and home, carrying with him ſome Indians, as a ſpecimen and vouchers of his diſcoveries; he returned by way of the Azores, and arrived March 13 following.

Anno 1493, Sept. 25, he ſet out again with his brother Bartholomew, ſeventeen ſail and 1500 men; he fell in with the Caribee-iſlands, and gave them names at pleaſure, which they generally retain to this day; he touched at Jamaica, and at Hiſpaniola (his thirty-nine men left there laſt voyage were all killed by the Indians) and at the Bahamas.

In his third voyage, anno 1498, he made the iſland Trinidad near the mouth of the river Oronoke, and coaſted from thence 200 leagues to Porto-Bello, and called that part of the country Terra-Firma; from thence he croſſed over to his firſt ſettlement in Hiſpaniola.

His fourth and laſt voyage was anno 1502: upon his return to Spain, for miſdemeanors he was in diſgrace at the court of Spain, while others were making further diſcoveries; he died in Spain, anno 1506, Æt. 64. His ſon Diego (the other ſon died a bachelor) ſucceeded him in the admiralty of the Indies, married the duke d'Alva's daughter, but died without iſſue.

Americus Veſpucius, a Florentine, was with Columbus in his firſt expeditions. Anno 1502, he left the Spaniſh ſervice, and was employed by Emanuel king of Portugal, to make diſcoveries in this new part of the world; he croſſed the equinoctial, and made land in 5 D. S. lat. on the

the coaſt of Guiana, now called Surinam; he diſcovered Brazil, and took poſſeſſion for the king of Portugal, in the formalities of thoſe times, and continued his range to 50 D. S. lat. The ſeverity of the winter ſtopped his further progreſs; he returned home by way of Africa: next year he attempted the ſame voyage, but falling in with the coaſt of Africa, he returned, and nothing further is recorded of him. The whole continent was called by his name AMERICA. Here is a notable inſtance of the caprice of mankind, in giving this newly diſcovered continent the name America inſtead of Columbia: Americus made no ſettlement; Columbus was not only the firſt, but alſo the more general diſcoverer of this land.

In the beginning of the Spaniſh ſettlements there were only two governors, both deputed by D. Diego ſon of Columbus, admiral of the Indies, *viz.* the governor of Cuba, and the governor of Panama.

Velaſquez the firſt governor of Cuba, entirely reduced that iſland, anno 1512, and ſucceſſively ſent forces to reduce the main land to no purpoſe. Ferdinando Cortez, a native of Spain, and well acquainted with the American navigation, upon a private adventure, anno 1519, ſet out from Spain with eleven ſhips and 550 men; arrived in the iſland St. Croix, and from thence weſtward to the continent, where, as he was informed, there was much gold; he landed on the eaſt ſide of Jucatan, and thence in the river Tabaſco, now called Vittoria, in the bay of Campechee 17 D. N. lat. and deſtroyed ſome of Montezuma's tributary Indians: having coaſted farther weſt, he landed his men at La Vera Cruz, and burnt his tranſport ſhips; not with a deſign as it is commonly imagined, by cutting off any retreat for his men, to make them the more deſperate, but leſt any of his men ſhould draw off and return to Cuba, and occaſion the adventure to miſcarry. Velaſquez, governor of Cuba, did frequently ſend him ſuperſeding orders, which he diſregarded; and marched

with 400 Spaniſh foot, fifteen horſe, and ſeven pieces of cannon, together with ſome malecontent Indians who joined them. Navarez, with a conſiderable force, was ſent by Velaſquez to recal Cortez; Cortez defeated him, and drove off his party. Cortez had many ſkirmiſhes with the Indians or Mexicans, with various ſucceſs: Montezuma, the chief or emperor of the Indian tribes, and his two ſons, were found dead after one of theſe ſkirmiſhes; at length, Aug. 13, anno 1521, Mexico and the Mexican Indians ſubmit to Spain. Notwithſtanding Cortez, repeated refuſals or diſobedience to ſuperior orders, and his cruelty to the Indians, being rich, he bought off all complaints at the court of Spain; he is made captain-general of New-Spain, and continued generaliſſimo until anno 1539, when he was recalled, and in Spain died a priſoner at large, December 1545, Æt. 62; his body was tranſported to Mexico, and buried there.

Vaſco Nunez de Balboa, was the firſt who croſſed the iſthmus, anno 1513; he ſettled at Panama, which continued for ſome time the capital of the South-Sea colonies; he was ſoon ſuperſeded by Padrarias, one of Cortez's commanders; he gave commiſſions to Pizarro and Almagra partners, private traders, for making diſcoveries in Peru; for want of ſufficient force, they returned from their firſt expedition, and differing with Padrarias governor of Panama, Pizarro went home to the court of Spain, and obtained a commiſſion diſtinct from that of Panama. Pizarro had a royal patent for 200 leagues along the ſhore of Peru, and Almagra for 200 leagues ſouth of this.

Pizarro, a healthy ſtout man, of mean parentage, of no learning, but very credulous, ſet out with 150 foot, and a few horſe, to conquer Peru; he was afterwards reinforced by more native Spaniards under Almagra; he arrived, anno 1532, at Cuſco, the Indian capital of Peru; inhumanly maſſacred many Indians, and Ataba-

liba

liba the Indian chief, by the contrivance of Pizarro, was inſidiouſly executed by the Spaniards. Three articles were alledged againſt him: 1. Killing of his brother. 2. An idolater. 3. Diſaffection to the Spaniſh. Pizarro and Almagra, from anno 1528 to anno 1533, ſubjugated Peru; and Lima, the preſent capital, was founded. Don Caſtro, anno 1530, with 700 men from Spain, was ſent governor of Peru; Almagra oppoſed him, defeated, tried, and executed him. Alvaredo, governor of Guatimala, hearing of Pizarro's acquiring great riches in Peru, ſet out for Peru with an army of 700, moſtly horſe, anno 1535; Pizarro bought him off, he returned to Guatimala, and left his troops with Pizarro.

Almagra was the firſt who went upon an expedition from Peru to Chili anno 1535, but ſoon returned, being jealous of his partner Pizarro. Anno 1540, Pizarro ſent Baldivia from Peru to conquer Chili; Baldivia, 1541, built its capital St. Jago in S. Lat. 34 D. eighteen miles from the ocean; Valparixo is its barcadier; he built Baldivia in S. Lat. 40. D. calling it by his own name, anno 1552; he continued his conqueſts to the iſland of Chiloe in S. lat. 43 D. at preſent the moſt ſouthern part of Chili or Spaniſh ſettlements. This ſettlement of Chili laboured hard for about fifty years, having continued wars and conſpiracies with the Indians; Baldivia was killed in a ſkirmiſh with the Indians. There was a general revolt of the Chiloeſe anno 1559.

Pizarro and Almagra differed much; Pizarro, at length, made Almagra priſoner, and, by a formal court of juſtice, he was put to death, and the Pizarro's ſeized his government, property, and treaſure. Almagra's partizans, anno 1541, aſſaſſinated Pizarro at Lima, and ſeized his treaſure. Almagra's ſon aſſumes the government. Blaſco Nunez Vala, a new vice-roy, was ſent from Spain; he was oppoſed by the Pizarro faction, and killed in an engagement anno 1546. Thus the Pizarro's became maſters of all America in the South-ſea; and to ſave Peru, the court of Spain was obliged

to temporize, and appointed one of the Pizarro's vice-roy of Peru; but ſoon after this, Gaſco, a cunning man, with 1600 veteran Spaniards, was ſent over as preſident of the royal court, with great powers: the vice-roy Gonzallo Pizarro, had a difference with him; Pizarro is defeated, tried, and executed. There were ſeveral other inſurrections; ſo that until anno 1554, King Philip of Spain could not be ſaid to be in peaceable poſſeſſion of Peru.

[*l*] For above fourſcore years after the firſt Spaniſh diſcoveries in America, no European nation attempted any ſettlement there.

Cortez's ſhips ſent to the Moluccas or ſpice-iſlands, by way of the South-ſea, were deſtroyed by the Portugueze, and the project miſcarried.

The Spaniards had ſcarce any communication with the Philippine and Ladrones iſlands until anno 1542; they made no great progreſs in ſettling of them till anno 1564, when the vice-roy of Mexico ſent a fleet to ſettle colonies, and eſtabliſh a trade there between Mexico, and Japan, and China. The Philippines have no trade with Europe: the Ladrones are a place of refreſhment between Mexico and the Philippines. It is ſaid, that anno 1732, the court of Spain had formed a project to ſend an Eaſt-India company to the Philippine Iſlands, by way of the Cape of Good-Hope, it came to nothing.

The coaſt of New-Spain (properly Mexico only is called New-Spain, as that part of the Britiſh ſettlements in America, between the provinces of New-York and Nova Scotia, only is called New-England) or Spaniſh America, may, in a few words, be deſcribed thus: The garriſon of St. Auguſtine in the gulph of Florida N. Lat. 29 D. here is no ſettlement. The ſmall ſettlement of

[*l*] I here annex ſome miſcellaneous looſe hints concerning the country and affairs of the Spaniſh Weſt-Indies.

In the conſiderable ſea-ports where the latitudes, longitudes, and the temporary variation of the compaſs or magnetic needle are well aſcertained, I mention them, and adduce my vouchers.

Penſacola

Penſacola in the bay of Appalachie, of the bay of Mexico, about 120 leagues due weſt from Auguſtine, and only fifteen leagues eaſt from l'Iſle Dauphine, a French fort and ſettlement, conſequently in a bad neighbourhood. After an interruption of a French ſea-line (Louiſiana or Miſſiſſippi country) upon the north ſhore of the gulph of Mexico of about 180 leagues, from Penſacola to St. Bernard or St. Louis-Bay, the coaſt of New-Spain begins again, and extends to the river Oronoke, in about 9 D. N. Lat. after another interruption of a ſea line ſettled by the Dutch, called Surinam, and the following ſmall French ſettlement of Cayenne, and the fine, rich, large Portugueze ſettlement of Brazil, to the river of Plate: the Spaniards have not ſettled much upon the ocean, but run up this river, and communicate with Peru and Chili. From the river of Plate in S. Lat. 35. on the eaſt ocean to Cape-Horn, and from Cape-Horn along the ſhore of the weſt ocean or South-ſea, to Chiloe in S. Lat. 43 D. the coaſt is a deſert. From the river of Plate to Cape-Horn, the navigation is good, the ſoundings are very regular, being ſixty to eighty fathom, at thirty to forty leagues from the land. From the iſland of Chiloe, in S. Lat. 43 D. to Cape St. Lucar of California, in N. Lat. 24 D. is the South-ſea Spaniſh coaſt of Chili, Peru, the Iſthmus, and Mexico.

Many of the Spaniſh ſettlements or provinces are ſo ſeparated by mountains and deſerts, they cannot be aſſiſting to one another. The Spaniards have not ſettled exceeding 200 leagues north from the city of Mexico. In the country of Mexico is ſcarce any gold, their ſilver mines are not ſo rich, but are eaſier wrought than thoſe of Peru. The quickſilver, for refining, comes from Old-Spain, and is a conſiderable article in the King of Spain's revenue. Peru produces quickſilver ſufficient for itſelf; in Chili ſilver is ſcarcer than gold.

From Mexico to Lima, in Peru, the country is full of rocky mountains, ſcarce or very ill inhabited: north of Mexico and ſouth of Peru are good countries. Upon

the coaſt of Peru and Chili, from 7 D. N. Lat. to 38 D. S. Lat. the winds are generally ſoutherly, and extend 140 to 150 leagues weſt from the ſhore. Chili reaches from the iſland Chiloe 43 D. to 25 D. S. Lat. Peru from thence to the equinoctial. Chili and Peru are narrow ſtrips of land upon the South-ſea; from the Andes a chain of mountains running north and ſouth, not exceeding twenty or thirty leagues from this ſhore. Peru may be divided into the ſea-coaſt, the high lands, and this ridge of mountains, where all the cloudy vapours ſeem to condenſe and ſettle into rain; there it rains almoſt inceſſantly, but upon the ſea-coaſt ſcarce any rain.

In the Weſt-India iſlands the ſhores are generally either ſandy bays or mangrave trees. In the Weſt-Indies, between the tropics, they have tides or reciprocations of air or winds, as well as of ſeas, but not from the ſame cauſe; the firſt ariſes from the viciſſitudes of day and night, that is from the ſhore or land being heated and cooled alternately; the other is from the influence of the moon.

In South-America is the longeſt chain of mountains upon earth, called the Andes or Cordilleras, extending from 10 D. N. Lat. to above 50 D. S. Lat. near the ſtraits of Magellan, not many leagues from the ſhore of the weſt or ſouth ſea.

In all New-Spain there are but four great rivers, and they all fall into the eaſt-ſea, *viz.* 1. Rio Grande, or de la Madalane, venting into the bay of Mexico near Carthagena; upon this river, up the country ſtands St. Fe, the capital of the audience of Terra-firma. 2. River of Oronoke, which diſcharges into the Eaſt-ſea, as do the following: 3. River of Amazons. And 4. Rio de la Plata; near its head ſtands the city of La Plata, the capital of the audience of Los Charcas; a branch of it called Paragua, comes from the northward, and ſeems naturally to be the weſtern boundary of Brazil. From the Andes there run a few rivers into the South-ſea of ſhort courſe, ſmall, and very rapid.

In all the Spaniſh ſettlements I find only two great lakes mentioned (in the northern parts of North-America we have many, eſpecially the five great lakes or ſeas in Canada.) 1. The city of Mexico ſtands between two communicating (therefore called the lake of Mexico) divided by a cauſeway leading to the city, built in this ſituation for its better ſecurity; the upper lake is freſh, the other ſalt [*m*]; they receive runs of water, but have no vent. 2. Titiaco in Peru, S. lat. 17 D. of about eighty leagues circumference; it communicates with a leſſer lake, Paria, about fifty leagues farther ſouth; it is ſalt, receives rivulets, but has no vent.

The vice-roys, preſidents, governors, and all other principal royal officers, are natives of Old-Spain; as are alſo their arch-biſhops and biſhops.

The church-juriſdiction conſiſts of five arch-biſhops, Mexico, St. Domingo, St. Fe, Lima, and La Plata; and about thirty biſhops.

The civil-juriſdiction conſiſts of the vice-roy of Mexico comprehending the [*n*] audiences of Mexico, Guadalagara and Guatimala; the vice-roy of Peru comprehending the audiences of Quito, Lima, and Los Charcas; and the independant audiences of St. Domingo (for all the iſlands) St. Fe, Panama, and Chili. I obſerve that the orders from the court of Spain, anno 1728, for a ſuſpenſion of arms to the ſeveral independant commanders in New-Spain, are directed to the vice-roy of Mexico, to the vice-roy of Peru, to the captain-general of the

[*m*] From the gradual increaſe of the ſalt impregnation of this lake, that of Titiaco in Peru, the Mediterranean ſea, and others in Europe, in a ſucceſſion of many ages, Dr. Halley propoſed to find out the age or ſtanding of our earth: this, with his two ſets of magnetic poles to account for the variations of the compaſs, are the only whims (though pleaſantly amuſing) that perhaps this man of great genius and induſtry, ever publiſhed.

[*n*] Audiences are ſupreme royal juriſdictions and courts, to which the provincial and other courts may appeal; but from theſe audiences there lies no appeal but to the council of the Indies in Old-Spain.

province and city of Carthagena, to the governor and captain-general of the province of Terra-Firma, to the preſident of Panama, to the governor of Buenos-Ayres, and to the commander of the galeons.

Their moſt conſiderable towns and ſea-ports are Mexico, the metropolis, in about 20 D. N. lat. inland, no water-carriage near it; its barcadier for the Philippines is Aquapulco upon the South-Sea 16 D. 40 M. N. lat. diſtance ninety leagues; farther north of Aquapulco are no places of note, and for 140 leagues ſouth of Aquapulco is a mere deſert. Its barcadier for Europe is La vera Cruz; the mart or fair for goods from Europe by the flota, flotilla, azogues, and the Britiſh annual ſhip, is at Japala thirty leagues inland. Mexico ſtands upon more ground, but is not ſo populous as Briſtol in England; is built with a rough hard ſtone (no freeſtone); an open town. La Vera Cruz, by the obſervations of Mr. Harris, who reſided there, anno 1727, and as adjuſted by Dr. Halley, is in N. lat. 19 D. 12 M. W. from London, 97 D. 30 M. variation at that time 2 D. 15 M. eaſterly.

Carthagena is the ſecond good town belonging to the Spaniards upon the eaſt ſide of America: from the ſame immerſions and emerſions of Jupiter's firſt ſatellite, obſerved at Carthagena, anno 1722, by Don Harrare principal engineer, and by M. Pound and Bradley at Wanſtead (twenty-eight horary minutes eaſt from London) Carthagena is W. from London 75 D. 30 m. longitude. Carthagena was taken by Sir Francis Drake, anno 1585; he brought away in money, cannon, and other effects, the value of 60,000 *l.* ſterling; the ſickneſs amongſt his men obliged him to return, ſooner than he deſigned, by the gulph of Florida, and a beginning ſettlement in Virginia: Ponti, with a large ſquadron, a private adventure, anno 1699, reduced it and brought off the value of eight millions of livres: admiral Vernon, with a very large ſea and land force of Great-Britain,

and

and of Britiſh North-America, came off *re infecta*, anno 1742.

Buenos Ayres is from London W. 3 H. 52 M. or W. Long. 58 D. by Pere Feuille's obſervation of the occultation of a fixed ſtar by the moon, anno 1708, and as computed by Dr. Halley for London. From the entrance of the river of Plate on the eaſt ocean, to St. Jago the capital of Chili on the weſt ocean, nearly in the ſame latitude of 34 D. ſouth, the width of South-America is 18 D. in longitude, or 300 leagues only.

All the trade from Old-Spain to New-Spain does not employ exceeding fifty ſhips (a ſmall nurſery for navigation). The Spaniards have generally a ſquadron of king's ſhips at Carthagena, a ſmall ſquadron at Callao, the barcadier of Lima; a ſhip or two at La Vera Cruz, called the Barleventa armada, being generally one fifty gun ſhip and one ſnow; they ſet out from La Vera Cruz of Mexico, in December, with money to pay the judges, clergy, and troops in the Havana, St. Domingo, Porto-Rico, and Comanas; a private ſhip is hired to carry the pay to St. Auguſtine. The ſhips at the Havana are only occaſional: the armada does not touch at Carthagena, it being the barcadier of St. Fe, the capital of Terra Firma, which produces much gold.

There is yearly a licence from 4000 or 5000 ton of dry goods to be ſhipped for New-Spain from Cadiz, annually, but alternately by the Flota for La Vera Cruz, and by the Galeons for Carthagena, the barcadier of St. Fe or Terra Firma, and for Porto-Bello the barcadier for Panama and Peru. The indulto or duty to the king upon ſhipped and regiſtered gold, ſilver, cochineal, &c. is from ſeven to fourteen *per cent.* The azogues or kings [a]

[a] The azogues quick-ſilver is only for refining the Mexico ſilver. Peru produces native cinnabar, the ore of quick-ſilver; the quick-ſilver mines of Peru were diſcovered anno 1567.

Virgin ſilver is ſpungy and brittle, being ſo called from its having no mixture of alloy or impregnation, but in the ſtate in which the quick-ſilver left it. Other metals with the denomination virgin (gold,

quick-

quickſilver ſhips have licences for ſome dry goods. The galeons from Porto-Bello may, at a medium, bring home twenty-five millions pieces of eight, the flota from La Vera Cruz about ſixteen millions, beſides what is ſhipped off in the regiſter ſhips. *N. B.* The council of ſtate in Holland, anno 1708, made a report that Spain brought from the Weſt-Indies, during the courſe of the laſt century, about twenty millions dollars *per annum*.

The regiſter ſhips are all upon the ſame footing; we ſhall only inſtance from the Canaries, they are allowed four or five regiſter ſhips of about 150 tons each, *viz.* two to Havana, one to Caraccas, one to Campeche, one to St. Jago de Cuba; to carry no dry goods, only wines and brandies; may bring home ſilver, and coarſe goods, *viz.* ſugar, hides, ſnuff, *&c.* but no cochineal, indigo, *&c.* are generally twelve months upon the voyage.

A digreſſion. A ſhort hiſtory of the South-Sea *company affairs.*

THIS was projected by Harley Earl of Oxford, and prime miniſter at that time, to induce the creditors of the government to be eaſy, and to incorporate their debts into a joint-ſtock, with proſpect of great profit: but as they are not properly a Britiſh ſettlement in America, I am obliged to annex this to the introductory article of Spaniſh ſettlements.

9. *Annæ.* A parcel of the public debts and deficiencies were incorporated by the name of the South-Sea company, being in all 10,000,000 *l.* ſterling, with an annuity of ſix *per cent.* The company to remain for ever, though the funds appropriated to them ſhould be redeemed; their limits are, on the eaſt ſide of America, from the river Oronoke to Cape-Horn (Surinam and Brazil not included) and from thence on the weſt coaſt

copper) ſignify grains or lumps of natural metal, requiring little or no refining.

of

of America, to the northernmoſt part of America (all other traders, within theſe bounds, to forfeit veſſel and cargo) to go and return by the ſouth capes of America, and never to ſail above 300 leagues weſt of the American continent. *N. B.* This ſeems to interfere with the limits of the Eaſt-India company's excluſive navigation, which, by charter, is to the weſt entrance of Magellan's-ſtraits.

I find from the public reports, that the balance, or neat profit of the South-ſea trade for ten years preceding, anno 1734, amounted only to 32,260 *l.* ſterling. The South-ſea company was only a cant name. Their whole trade and buſineſs was only the aſſiento for 4800 negroes *per annum*, and an annual ſhip of dry goods of 500 tons, whereof the king of Spain had one quarter of the profits, and the crown of England another quarter.

The Spaniards have no Guinea trade of their own, and but little navigation from Old-Spain to New or America Spain; they have been obliged, from time to time, to contract with ſome European maritime power for a ſupply of negro ſlaves: in King James the ſecond's and king William's reigns, they contracted with Don Nicolas Porcio, a Spaniard; his agent Don Caſtillo reſided in Jamaica, and was knighted by king William, Sir James Caſtillo. The Portugueze loſt by their contract; and, by the treaty of Baden, Spain was to pay to Portugal 600,000 crowns, for money due on the aſſiento contract and otherways. After the Portugueze, the French had the contract, but never furniſhed the numbers ſtipulated. Their place of refreſhment was on the N. W. ſide of Hiſpaniola, or St. Dominque, as the French call it, which gave them a further footing upon that iſland: the time of their contract being expired, the Britiſh South-Sea company had the contract upon the following terms:

The contract was for thirty years from May 1, 1713, and upon the expiration thereof three years more allow-

ed

ed to ſettle their affairs; the South-Sea company, or aſſientiſts, to furniſh annually 4800 merchantable negro ſlaves of both ſexes, paying to the king of Spain thirty-three and a third pieces of eight per ſlave in lieu of all duties upon 4000 of that number; may import, if they pleaſe, more than the ſtipulated number, the overplus paying only half that duty; may carry 1200 of theſe ſlaves yearly in four ſhips to the river of Plata, for the uſe of that country, and of the country of Chili; may be brought into any port of New-Spain where are Spaniſh royal officers; may be ſold for any price, excepting upon the windward coaſt, *viz.* at Comana, Maracaibo, and Sancta Martha, where the price ſhall not exceed 300 pieces of eight; may tranſport the ſlaves coaſt-ways from Panama, along the ſhore of the South-ſea, in ſhips of about 400 tons; they are allowed not exceeding ſix Britiſh in one factory; may have in each factory a Judge conſervator, a Spaniard of their own chuſing; the aſſiento ſhips not to be detained or embargoed upon any account; may make their returns in the company's ſhips, flota or galeons, duty free; may ſearch and ſeize any veſſels trading with ſlaves upon the coaſt; they are not to trade in any other merchandize; the crown of Great-Britain, and the crown of Spain, to be concerned each one quarter in the trade, and to ſettle accounts once in five years. In caſe of a war the aſſiento ſhall be ſuſpended, and eighteen months allowed to carry off the effects. Conſidering the loſſes which former aſſientiſts have ſuſtained, and to prevent any other kind of trade, the king of Spain, during the continuance of this contract, allows a ſhip of 500 tons yearly with dry goods, one quarter of the clear profit to the king of Spain, and 5 *per cent.* duty upon the other three quarters; they are not to ſell their goods, but in the times of the fairs upon the arrival of the flota or galeons; the queen or crown of Great-Britain was alſo to have one quarter of the neat gain, but this was afterwards given up to the company.

The South-Sea company aſſiento agents were ſettled for ſome time at Barbadoes for the Caraccas and Maracaibo buſineſs, and at Jamaica for the reſt of that trade. Jamaica lies the moſt convenient for carrying on this affair.

The South-Sea company have tried three methods of carrying on their negro buſineſs, *viz.* by their own ſhips, by contract and by chance purchaſe from private traders; this laſt was the cheapeſt: anno 1721, they contracted with the African company for a ſupply of 3600 negroes, two thirds males, ſix ſevenths to be from 16 to 30 Æt. the other ſeventh to conſiſt of equal numbers of boys and girls, none under 10 Æt. the contracted price was 22 *l.* 10 *s.* ſterling per piece for Gold-coaſt, Jackin, and Whidaw negroes; 18 *l.* 10 *s.* ſterling for Angola ſlaves. For ſome years they farmed out ſome of their aſſiento factories.

The South-Sea company's effects in New-Spain have been twice ſeized; anno 1718, upon our deſtroying the Spaniſh armada near Sicily; and anno 1727, when Gibraltar was beſieged; I ſhall not in this place mention the ſeizures in the beginning of this preſent war. Mr. Keene, for ſeveral years, had from the company 1500 *l.* ſterling *per annum*, as their agent at the court of Spain. The court of Spain made a demand of 60,000 *l.* ſterling, ariſing moſtly from a different way of reckoning the dollars payable as duty; the South-Sea company reckon at 42 *d.* ſterling per dollar, the court of Spain reckon at 52 *d.* ſterling per dollar; the reſt was the King of Spain's quarter of the neat gains of the annual ſhip the Royal Carolina. On the other ſide, the South-Sea company alledge the frequent ſeizure of their effects; the refuſals of licences or ſchedulas at times, as damages to be taken to account being one and a half million dollars damages ſuſtained; this affair is not as yet determined; it is ſaid that the majority of the South-Sea directors, at the deſire of the miniſtry of that time, has agreed to pay the 68,000 *l.* ſterling, upon a prolongation

longation of the term of their trade, and a ſpeedy reimburſement of the one and half million damages.

The next part in the South-Sea company hiſtory, is a diſmal, and for many ages not be forgotten tranſaction, a bubble, an epidemical, malignant, and mortal diſtemper of bodies politic; it came by way of France, where it was called Miſſiſſippi, with us it was called South-Sea; laying aſide allegory, it is a notorius inſtance of the bad conſtitution of paper effects, I mean paper common currency and transfers; and as it has ſome affinity with our plantations paper currency, I hope it may be of political uſe, with the cotemporary Miſſiſſippi [*p*] and French bank hiſtory annexed by way of an-

[*p*] This note naturally ſhould belong to the tranſient account to be given of the French colonies; but as it ſerves to illuſtrate our South-Sea bubble, a fatal imitation of Mr. Law's project, we have previouſly introduced it here; and the annexed account of the fate of the Royal Bank of France, which (linked to the Miſſiſſippi bubble) projected paper-currency for France, may be a proper warning or beacon to our America paper-money colonies.

Never was ſuch a barefaced iniquitous ſcheme endeavoured to be put in execution; their confidence was in the legiſlative power, which they imagined could do any thing, though inconſiſtent with natural juſtice. The ſubject of this annotation, will remain a curious incident in hiſtory. That a private perſon, Mr. Law, projector of the Miſſiſſippi company bubble (this name appeared too chimerical; it afterwards aſſumed, and ſtill retains the name of the French India Company) ſhould ſo infatuate, impoſe upon, or bubble, in a moſt public manner, the politer part of mankind; future ages will be aſtoniſhed, ſcarce credit, but admire. He roſe the ſtock of a chimerical company from ſixty to ſeventy *per cent.* diſcount (their firſt ſtock or ſubſcription was ſixty millions of livres in ſtate bills, or national debts ſettled at ſixty or ſeventy *per cent.* diſcount) to nineteen hundred *per cent.* advance.

By adding to this ſixty million ſubſcription in ſtate bills forty millions more money-ſubſcription, their ſtock became one hundred millions; and by the king's aſſigning to them the farm upon tobacco, which then was farmed at four millions, with the farmer's profit computed to three millions more, made ſeven *per cent.* to the proprietors: this gave them a great credit, and their ſtock roſe much above par: next, the Eaſt-India and China company was incorporated with it anno 1718, and actions roſe to 200 for 100 original. By ſeven ſucceſſive ſubſcriptions of ſixty, forty, twenty-five, twenty-five, fifty, fifty,

notations;

notations; it does alſo by anticipation take off ſome paragraph, which muſt have been premiſed in the

fifty millions, it became in all 300,000,000 livres principal or original ſtock. Their fund or government annuity, upon which they were to divide, was given out by Mr. Law to be as follows:

The farm, and its neat profits of tobacco	7 millions
Profits in the India trade	12
Out of the crown's general revenue	45
Out of the five great farms of impoſts	30
Profits (imaginary) in time from Miſſiſſippi	7
Fiſhery, ſole traffic of bullion, *&c.*	25
Coinage	5
	131 millions

is better than forty-three *per cent.* on the original ſtock.

In September, 1719, the ſubſcriptions (as above) taken in for increaſing their ſtock were at ten for one, and thoſe ſubſcriptions were negociated at cent per cent, that is, one principal ſold for twenty; the ſubſcriptions were to be made good by partial payments: but as many of the ſubſcribers could not make their ſubſequent parts of payments, without ſelling out their former ſtock; old actions fell to 760 for 100 (notwithſtanding this precedent warning, our South-Sea bubble ſplit upon the very ſame rock) but by enlarging the times for the ſubſcription payments, and the intereſt of their loans to the crown being augmented, ſtock roſe again to 1200 or 1300, their privileges being continued to anno 1770.

The money, which the company gained by the advanced prices upon the ſeveral additions, from time to time, made to their ſtock, was lent to the king at a certain intereſt; with this money the king paid off, or reduced, the ſtate debts, or annuities in the town-houſe of Paris, from four to three *per cent.* intereſt; which was a ſaving of about twelve millions *per annum* to the king.

In January N. S. 1720, the king had granted to the Miſſiſſippi, alias India company, the management and adminiſtration of the royal bank. About the ſame time the king ſold to the company his ſtock, conſiſting of 100 millions of livres original, for 900 millions livres in partial payments. Thus the king ſold all his ſtock at once by contract for money: thus the directors, and other great men, who were in the ſecret, ſold out their own South-Sea ſtock when the affair was tending towards a criſis.

This Miſſiſſippi-bubble began to collapſe in the end of May, 1720, and Mr. Law became a Profugus: to keep up the affair ſo far and ſo long as it could be, the company not being able to comply with the payment of the 900 million livres in money, the king accepts again of his 100 millions livres in original actions (an original ſhare or action was 1000 livres;) and upon the king and company's annihilating

article

article of plantation paper currencies. Perhaps it may be ſome amuſement to the curious; hitherto it has not

ſome of their actions, they were reduced to 200 millions of actions; the old actions were called in, and a new tenor of actions given for the ſame, and it was reſolved, that for three years next following, the dividend *per annum*, ſhould be 200 livres per action, which is twenty *per cent.* and a royal ſociety is erected to inſure this at three *per cent.* premium. As there remained a number of actions, the property and in poſſeſſion of the company, all perſons who formerly ſold out, were ordered to buy in again, at the rate of 13,500 livres per actions, in bank bills to be burnt. Notwithſtanding all theſe labouring expedients, the people's pannic could not be ſtopped, and the company fell into a languiſhing ſtate; it is not to our purpoſe to proſecute this affair any further.

This ſpring 1747, the French-India company's actions are at 1045.

That a paper currency, with any profit or duration, can never ſuperſede a gold and ſilver currency, will appear by the following ſhort hiſtory of the Royal Bank of France.

Mr. Law, in aid of the Miſſiſſippi-bubble, projected the Royal Bank in the following gradations: 1. All officers of the revenue were to receive bank bills or notes. 2. By the king's edict, anno 1719, bank notes were fixed at five *per cent.* better than gold or ſilver coin; bank bills, in the beginning of ſummer anno 1719, were increaſed to 400 millions of livres (a livre is in value above 11 *d* ſterling) in the end of ſummer the French court gave out (thus do ſome of the legiſlatures in our paper-money colonies) that this ſum was not ſufficient for a circulation, and 120 millions more were made. In October, 120 millions more, and ſoon after 360 millions more; being in all 1000 millions of livres, which is about forty-ſix millions pounds ſterling, which is more than all the banks in Europe put together do circulate. 3. Next ſpring in March, N. S. anno 1720, by an edict, gold and ſilver was gradually to be lowered, and after ſome months forbid to have any currency, with the penalties of counterband goods, if found in any perſon's poſſeſſion; Bank notes and Miſſiſſippi transfers to be the only currency; the importation of gold and ſilver ſpecies is forbid; even the payment of foreign bills of exchange, though ſpecified, muſt be made in Bank notes. 4. As the court of France had been for many years in the practice of altering the current coin, for the profit of their king, Mr. Law proceeded to make a like experiment upon their paper-currency. By an Edict of May 21, 1720, Bank notes were to be reduced gradually (the Miſſiſſippi, or India company's actions, were at the ſame time, and in the ſame manner, reduced from 10,000 livres, their ſtated price, to 5000 livres) ſo that after ſome months, *v. g.* 1000 livres Bank notes was to paſs for only 500 livres. This occaſioned ſuch an univerſal murmuring, that Mr. Law was obliged to ſave

by

by any writer been ſet in a ſtrong, full, and compacted light.

Mr. John Law, born at Edinburgh in Scotland, began his plan of the Miſſiſſippi bubble in France, anno 1717, of which he was afterwards conſtituted principal director, and at length comptroller-general of the finances of France. He was the moſt noted man in Europe for a gameſter and bubbler; he was perſuaded that paper effects, or paper currency, and transfers, admitted of the greateſt latitude for public cheat. In our American colonies, after having reduced the denomination of five ſhillings ſterling to a heavy piece of eight, and from this having reduced it to light pieces of eight ſo far as the cheat could go; they fell into a paper-currency, whoſe intrinſic value being nothing, its imaginary value admitted of any reduction: at preſent in New-England, by this contrivance and management, a perſon who pays an old debt, of book, note, or bond, in the preſent paper currency, pays only one in ten or two ſhillings in the pound.

Impregnated by the projection of Mr. Law (excuſe the metaphor) a national bubble began to be hatched in England; at length, the end of January, anno 1719-20, the Bank and South-Sea Company bid handſomely (that is apparently) great ſums for the benefit of the public, upon one another, to have all the other public debts ingrafted into their ſtocks; the South-Sea Company

himſelf from the rage of the populace, by leaving the kingdom, and thereby confeſſing himſelf a moſt EGREGIOUS CHEAT. To appeaſe the people, who ſuſpected frauds in the India Company and Bank, the court appointed ſham commiſſaries to inſpect their books; they ſoon made a favourable report, and that they found in the India company a fund for above 300 millions livres original ſtock; the nation were not ſatisfied, it ſtill remained in a ferment or fret; Mr. Law was obliged to abſcond May 29, and reſign his great office of comptroller-general of the finances; and the ſeals were taken from M. d'Argenſon his accomplice, May 31; the edict of laſt March for gradually aboliſhing a gold and ſilver currency was revoked; and by October following, Bank notes had no longer a currency; nothing was taken in payment but gold and ſilver ſpecies.

carried it by bribing ſome of the legiſlature, and ſome in the adminiſtration, by taking up great quantities of ſtore for their uſe. Mr. Walpole, doubtleſs, had a feeling, but ſecret and cautious, concern in this affair of corruption; and as the South-ſea bubble came near its criſis, he ſkreened himſelf by being made pay-maſter general of the land-forces; the Earl of Sunderland, May 27, 1720, being made firſt commiſſioner of the treaſury in his room. Mr. Walpole did not re-enter himſelf, as firſt commiſſioner of the treaſury, until April, 1721, the ſtorm being over; and we may obſerve, that next month the parliament allowed the South-Sea Company directors large ſums out of their forfeited eſtates, the parliament being then under the direction of Mr. Walpole; and towards the end of the ſame year, by the direction of our prime miniſter, admiral Norris landed Mr. Law, a fugitive from France, in England; (Mr. Law, at that time, was in caſh, the proper bait for corruption) he introduced himſelf by buying off the appeal of the relations, and producing at the bar of the King's-bench, the king's pardon for the murder of Edward Wilſon, Eſq. (Beau Wilſon) anno 1694: he was diſcharged: but his arrival in England being canvaſſed in parliament, and his infamous bubble in France being much clamoured againſt by the populace (Mr. Walpole, a conſummate politician, by experience, at times found that the *vox populi* was the *ſuprema lex*; witneſs the exciſe projection upon wines and tobacco) his addreſs, his money, the countenance of the court, availed nothing; he went off, and died obſcurely in Germany; may this be the exit of all notorious cunning leading impoſtors in any human ſociety or government.

The South-Sea propoſals were accepted by the houſe of Commons Feb. 1, 1719-20, and had the royal aſſent April 4, following. They were allowed to ingraft the irredeemable long and ſhort annuities, and the redeemables of five and of four *per cent. per annum* intereſt (the bank and Eaſt-India company annuities, or ſtock, not included)

included) to the value of 30,954,000 *l.* ſterling by purchaſe or by ſubſcription: the annnal payments from the government upon theſe ingrafted public debts, to be continued as at preſent, until anno 1727, Midſummer, and from thence the whole to be reduced to an annuity of four *per cent*; the South-Sea engage to circulate one million exchequer bills *gratis*, and to pay ſeven millions pounds ſterling to the government for this liberty and benefit of ingrafting ſo much of the public debts; the increaſed capital ſtock to be divided amongſt all the proprietors. In the progreſs of the year 1719, the South-Sea company by act of parliament, for a certain ſum to the public, had ingrafted a great part of the lottery anno 1710, by which, and by this great ingraftment, added to their original ſtock of 10,000,000 *l.* ſterling their capital became 37,802,483 *l.* ſterling (about 4,361,930 *l.* ſterling of the principal which they were allowed to take in, by purchaſe or ſubſcription could not be obtained, and remained as before) a vaſt and impolitic capital.

Next Day Feb. 2, after the bill paſſed the Commons, South-ſea ſtock roſe to 150, in May it was ſold at 375, all July (the transfer books being ſhut) it ſold at 930 to 1000. In Auguſt the South-ſea bubble began to loſe its credit; and the directors, to keep up the cheat, publiſhed, that thirty *per cent.* caſh, ſhould be the half year's dividend at Chriſtmas next, and not leſs than fifty *per cent. per annum* for the next following twelve years. Auguſt 17, ſtock was at 830, Sept. 8, at 550, Sept. 29, at 150; at Michaelmas, South-ſea bonds were at twenty-five *per cent.* diſcount.

At this time all the ſtocks (bank ſtock in July roſe to 245, but it ſoon fell again to its intrinſic value 130) and many ſchemes were made bubbles; the capitals propoſed by the ſeveral projectors and bubblers did not amount to leſs than 300 millions ſterling. Moſt people neglected their other buſineſs, and attended ſome favourite BUBBLE, and John Blunt of London, the arch-bubbler,

was erected a baronet, a ſcandal to that honourable order of knighthood.

This grand national cheat, became a parliamentary enquiry. In the report of the ſecret committee, forty members of the houſe of Commons were charged with having ſtock taken up for them in brokers names; it was found that the directors bought ſtock for the company at very high rates, while they were clandeſtinely ſelling out their own; that the directors had lent out by colluſion, about eleven millions of the company's money, with none or not ſufficient ſecurity. In the houſe of Lords, the whole of it was called a villainous artifice; and it was reſolved in parliament, that the directors ſo far as their eſtates would reach, ſhould make good the loſſes the company had ſuſtained by their fraudulent management; the eſtates of the directors, deputy caſhier, and accountant amounted to 2,014,123*l.* ſterling properly forfeited, but by management a great part of it was remitted to them. The reliefs allowed by parliament are too long to be related here; to the company was forgiven the ſeven millions which they contracted to pay to the government, upon condition of two millions of their capital being annihilated, but this was ſoon after reſtored to them. Anno 1722, the better to diſengage themſelves from incumbrances, they ſold to the bank 200,000 of their annuity, which is four millions principal.

Several government debts were by the Earl of Oxford, incorporated into one joint-ſtock of annuities, and were called, The corporation of the governor and company of merchants in Great-Britain trading to the South-ſea and other parts of America, and for encouraging the fiſhery. As Mr. Law borrowed his ſham name of Miſſiſippi Company, from our cant name of South-Sea Company; ſo we copied our South-Sea bubble from his Miſſiſſippi bubble.

After a further ingraftment of all the public debts (the Eaſt-India and bank government debts remained

diſtinct as formerly) that could be obtained, and the South-ſea bubble being ſettled, 1723 June 24, their whole capital was found to be 33,802,483 *l.* (without including the 4000,000 *l.* of their ſtock which they had aſſigned to the bank) the parliament converted 16,901,241 *l.* one moiety of it into South-Sea annuities, the other half to remain a joint-ſtock in trade.

Anno 1733, this moiety of joint-ſtock in trade, by ſundry government payments made from the ſinking fund [*q*], became 14,631,103 *l.* at Midſummer, three

[*q*] The ſinking fund was a projection of Mr. Walpole's, a conſummate politician, eſpecially in the affair of finances; it ariſes from public ſavings (the funds continuing the ſame) by reducing the intereſt of the public debts firſt to five *per cent.* anno 1717, afterwards to four *per cent.* and ſome (Eaſt-India company) to three *per cent.* This was not iniquitous, but natural juſtice; common intereſt had been reduced, by act of parliament, to five *per cent.* ever ſince anno 1714. It was left to the option of the creditors of the government either to be paid off, or to accept of a lower intereſt; they accepted of a lower intereſt: none of the companies or incorporated ſtocks chooſe to be paid off, but make intereſt that the ſinking fund may not be applied to them: all the national debt (navy debt, army debentures, and the like excepted) conſiſts in the ſtocks; theſe are as transferrable as is common caſh, and therefore may be called caſh in cheſt bearing intereſt. 2. When paid off, they loſe the advance which the part paid would ſell at, *e. g.* the Eaſt India company would loſe about ſeventy, the Bank about forty *per cent.* on any part off.

The annual produce of the ſinking fund is upwards of 1,200,000 *l.* and to this time, anno 1747, may amount to upwards of thirty-three millions of pounds, whereof about twelve millions has been applied to redeem ſo much of the public debts, and the remaining twenty-two millions has prevented our running twenty-two millions more in debt; it is a help at hand againſt any extraordinary exigency, to raiſe part of the ſupply (ſince the beginning of the preſent war anno 1739, it has contributed one million yearly to the ſupply) upon emergencies any ſum may be raiſed upon annuities, charged on the ſinking fund for a time, until further ſettled.

Walpole's ſcheme, 1733, of an exciſe upon wine and tobacco would have been of public advantage, but it was prevented taking effect, by the ſtrong fears of the populace, leſt it ſhould introduce a general exciſe upon the neceſſaries of life (as in Holland) as well as upon comforts and extravagancies: beſides, it would have multiplied the officers of the revenue, creatures of the court and miniſtry.

quarters of this was ſeparated, by the name of new joint-ſtock of South-ſea annuities; the remaining 3,662,775 continues as a trading or capital ſtock, ſolely chargeable with all the company's debts, and not to divide above four *per cent. per annum*, until their preſent debts are cleared and paid off. The qualifications in their preſent trading ſtock (in the former ſtock the qualifications were higher) are a concern at leaſt of 5000 *l.* for governor, 4000 *l.* for ſub-governor, 3000 *l.* for deputy-governor, 2000 *l.* for a director: at a general meeting a 500 *l.* concern has one vote, 2000 *l.* has two votes, 3000 *l.* has three votes, 5000 *l.* has four votes; no ſingle perſon to have more than four votes: no part of the trading ſtock to be redeemed, until the new joint-ſtock of annuities become reduced to 3,500,000 *l.* No new bonds to be made, but at the direction of a general meeting.

The ſinking fund has at times paid off to the old and new South-Sea annuitants about 6,500,000 *l.* and at this time the government debt to the South-Sea is 27,302,203 *l.* *viz.* ſtock 3,662,775 *l.* old annuities 13,651,100 *l.* new annuities, 9,988,328 *l.* At preſent, ſpring 1747, the price of South-Sea ſtock is 103; Eaſt-India company ſtock being 177. Here we may *en paſſant* obſerve the great difference of credit and intereſt in the affections of the people, in relation to a tory, jacobite, and popiſh adminiſtration; and to a whig (excuſe the cant name) revolution, and true proteſtant miniſtry: in the tory admi-

The ſtocks, or government debts, continued; and the church-lands in lay poſſeſſion, are infallible preventives againſt popery and a revolution in the civil government.

Our bad adminiſtration in the end of queen Anne's time, after a ſucceſsful war carried on for many years by a former good adminiſtration, inſtead of procuring advantageous terms of peace, conceded to the following diſadvantageous articles with Spain by the treaty of Utrecht, anno 1713. 1. An entailed charge of maintaining large garriſons in Gibraltar and Minorca. 2. The precarious demolition of Dunkirk by their friends the French. 3. The Aſſiento of Negroes, which had proved a loſing bagain to all former contractors. And 4. A ſham renunciation to the crown France.

niſtration,

niſtration, in the four laſt years of queen Anne, South-Sea ſtock, though bearing an intereſt of ſix *per cent.* ſold at a diſcount exceeding twenty *per cent.* at preſent, though the intereſt or annuity is reduced to four *per cent.* it ſells at a conſiderable advance *per cent.*

I muſt here inſert (I cannot find a place more proper) two affairs, not of property, but of indulgencies, and ſolemnly ſtipulated conceſſions from the court of Spain, to the ſubjects of Great-Britain, and more particularly in favour of our ſettlements in North-America, *viz.* log-wood from the bays of Campeachy and Honduras, and ſalt from the Spaniſh iſland of Tortuga.

The cutting and carrying of log-wood, formerly from the bay of Campeachy, and latterly from the bay of Honduras, in the gulph of Mexico, to Great-Britain and ſundry European markets, has been for ſome time a branch of the Britiſh America trade, but more eſpecially of New-England. This log-wood buſineſs has been carried on for about eighty years, ever ſince anno 1667, by a ſort of indulgence; this indulgence was confirmed, anno 1670, by the American treaty with Spain, *viz.* The Engliſh to remain in the occupancy of all territories and indulgencies of which they were then in poſſeſſion.

Anno 1716, the Spaniſh ambaſſador at the court of Great-Britain entered a complaint to the king in council, againſt the Engliſh ſubjects cutters of log-wood in the bays of Campeachy, *&c.* This was referred to the board of trade and plantations; they made report, that "by "the American treaty anno 1670, there was confirmed "to the crown of Great-Britain, a right to the *Laguna de* "*Terminos* (bay of Campeachy) and parts adjacent in the "province of Jucatan; theſe places, at the time of the "treaty, and ſome years before, being actually in poſ-"ſeſſion of the Britiſh ſubjects through right of ſufferance "or indulgence." This ſame right or liberty is abſolutely granted and confirmed by the treaty of Utrecht 1713.

Notwithſtanding this repreſentation, and without allowing ſufficient time for the logwood cutters to withdraw (if the court of Great-Britain had judged it proper) the Spaniard from the Tobaſco, drove them off; it has never ſince been uſed by the Britiſh.

This bay lies on the weſt ſide of the promontory or province of Jucatan: Campeachy is a good town, large as Newport of Rhode-Iſland, built with a white free ſtone; it ſtands on the ſea. This port or branch of the Aſſiento was farmed out by the South-Sea directors to Blockwood and Cathcart, at forty pieces of eight for every negro ſlave they imported; they ſent four or five ſhips of about 300 tons each per annum, with a few negroes for a blind; their profit being from dry goods, which they ſold, by the connivance of the royal officers bribed, at twelve to fifteen *per cent.* their chief returns were in logwood bought from the Spaniards, and carried to London and Holland; they alſo carried off ſome drugs, viz. *Gum. Elemi, Rad. Contrayerva, Rad. Sarſaparil,* &c. That year in which this logwood-bay was cut off, anno 1717, were imported into the port of London 5863 tons of logwood.

Since our people have been diſlodged from the bay of Campeachey they followed the ſame buſineſs in the bay of Honduras on the eaſt ſide of Jucatan; their die-wood is not ſo good, and the mouths of their rivers (Old and New-river) are more ſhallow. Becauſe of the preſent war with Spain, this trade for ſome years has almoſt been diſcontinued.

Logwood is their currency or medium at 5 *l.* per ton denomination.

From this logwood cutting maroon life, there is a ſmall incidental political advantage; as the logwood-cutters called bay-men, live a maroon, licentious, lawleſs life, it becomes in times of peace a receptacle for, and diverts, ſome ſailors and others from the more wicked life of pirating.

A little

A little to the eaſtward of the bay of Honduras are a ſmall tribe of Indians, the good friends and allies of the bay men, and Spaniard haters: that is, they affect the Engliſh more than they do the Spaniards, and they reckon the governor of Jamaica, as their patron and protector: our trade with them is of no conſequence, being only ſome tortoiſe-ſhell, wild cocoa, and ſarſaparille.

The iſland of Ratan lies about eight leagues from the Muſkitoe-ſhore, and about 150 leagues W. by S. from Jamaica; here we have lately fixed a garriſon, and ſtation-ſhips, but *cui bono* I cannot ſay.

The privilege of making and carrying ſalt from the iſland of Salt Tortugas, in the gulph of Mexico, near the Comanas or windward part of the Spaniſh coaſt, was expreſly confirmed to us by the treaty of commerce between his Catholic Majeſty, and the King of Great-Britain, at Madrid, Dec. 14, anno 1716. "Whereas "notwithſtanding the treaties of peace and commerce, "which were concluded at Utrecht, July 13, and "Dec. 9, 1713, there ſtill remained ſome miſunder-"ſtandings concerning the trade of the two nations, and "the courſe of it. Article 3. Morever his Catholic "Majeſty permits the ſaid ſubjects of Great-Britain to "gather ſalt in the iſland of Tortuga, in the gulph of "Mexico; they having enjoyed that privilege in the "reign of king Charles II, without hindrance or inter-"ruption."

Notwithſtanding this plain ſtipulation, anno 1733, in the ſpring, a Britiſh plantation's ſalt-fleet, under convoy of a 20 gun Britiſh man of war, as they came to ſail from Tortugas, were attacked by two large Spaniſh men of war from the Margaritas, and four of the fleet were carried off; hitherto no recompence has been obtained.

In times of peace, for the uſe of the dry cod-fiſhery, are imported in Maſſachuſetts-Bay, *communibus annis*,

1200

1200 tons Tortugas ſalt; and about as much more from other ports, *viz.* The Iſle of May, or Cape de Verde iſlands, Exeuma or Bahamas, St. Martins or Rochelle, Liſbon, Ivica, Cagliari in Sardinia, *&c.*

The reaſon why New-England dry cod is frequently ſalt-burnt, is from the uſe of Tortuga and iſle of May ſalt, which are too hot. In Newfoundland they generally uſe Liſbon and French ſalt.

By late acts of the Britiſh parliament, ſalt is allowed to be imported directly from any part of Europe, to the colonies of New-York and Penſylvania; in the ſame manner as ſalt may be imported into New-England and Newfoundland, by an act made 15 Car. II. for the encouragement of trade.

II. *French diſcoveries and ſettlements.*

THE French American colonies may be diſtinguiſhed into their north continent America ſettlements, and thoſe of the Weſt-India iſlands, Cayenne, near the coaſt of Guiana or Surinam included. Their iſlands do not fall within the compaſs of our deſign; and having only tranſiently viſited them without any view of enquiry, my fixed reſolution is not to borrow or tranſcribe from common authors [r]; therefore the reader may excuſe my laying them aſide.

The continent French ſettlements, I divide into Canada or New-France, and Miſſiſſippi or Louiſiana: ſome French writers, mention a French province called Hanoiſe, inhabited by above 16,000 whites, above half way between the mouth of the river Miſſiſſippi, and Quebec in Canada; this is only an imaginary or romantic colony; we take no notice of it, leaving it to the profeſſed writers of novels.

[r] No perſon can trace me as a plagiary; my own obſervations, hints from correſpondents and well-approved authors, and from public records, are the materials of this eſſay.

1. Canada.

1. Canada. The original of the name is uncertain, ſome ſay, it was named from Monſieur Cane, who early ſailed into that river: if ſo, O caprice! why ſhould ſo obſcure a man (his voyage is not mentioned in hiſtory) give name to New-France, as it is called?

Verazani, a Florentine in the king of France's ſervice (Francis I. was an active prince) coaſted along the eaſt ſide of North-America, and went aſhore in ſeveral places; according to the humour of thoſe times, took a nominal poſſeſſion for France, from 37 D. the mouth of Cheſepeak-Bay, to 50 D. N. lat. the mouth of the river St. Laurence, ſo called, becauſe firſt diſcovered upon that ſaint's day; he ſailed up the river of St. Laurence. Two ſhips from England ſailed up that river, anno 1527. J. Cartier, a native of St. Malo, made two voyages to this river anno 1534 and 1535, he proceeded ſo far as Montreal, and called the country New-France. Anno 1542, Roberval from Rochelle carried thither, a few people to ſettle; they did not continue their ſettlements. About the middle of the ſixteenth century, the French and Spaniards diſputed ſettlements upon the coaſt of Florida. Secretary Walſingham of England, being informed of an opening ſouth of Newfoundland, fitted out Sir Humphry Gilbert; he ſailed up St. Laurence river, and took poſſeſſion for the crown of England. Anno 1604, Henry IV [*s*] of France made further diſcoveries in L'Acadie, now Nova Scotia; and in Canada or New-France he planted a colony which ſubſiſts to this day; may it not ſubſiſt long; it is a nuſance to our North-

[*s*] Henry IV was the firſt of the French kings, who, to any purpoſe, encouraged trade and manufactures. After him, for ſome time in the reign of Louis XIV, Colbert (of Scots extraction) ſecretary of ſtate in France, was a great patron and promoter of the ſame, as alſo of all polite learning, *viz.* The Academy of ſciences for all parts of natural hiſtory, geometry, aſtronomy, mechanics, anatomy, chimiſtry, and botany; the French Academy, for the French language and other parts of the Belles-lettres; the academy for inſcriptions and medals; the academy for architecture, painting, and ſculpture.

America

America ſettlements; *delenda eſt Carthago.* Anno 1608, Quebec [*t*] on an iſthmus on the river St. Laurence began to be ſettled, and is now increaſed to about 7000 people of all colours, ſexes, and ages; it is the reſidence of the governor-general, intendant, and ſupreme council; tide flows about eighteen feet.

Canada is no otherways a company, only for the Caſtor or Beaver fur-trade; as they have no ſettlements, but upon rivers and creeks, by giving ſome delineation of theſe, we deſcribe that country. The gulph of St. Laurence, from Cape Raze of Newfoundland, the Cape Roſier in 50 D. 30 M. N. lat. the mouth of the river St. Laurence (here the river is about thirty leagues wide) about eighty-eight leagues; in this gulph are the iſlands of Cape-Breton [*u*], Anticoſti, St. Johns, Madalene, and ſome other ſmall iſlands, given to the French by the infamous treaty of Utrecht 1713. From Cape Roſier to Tadouſac, on the north ſide of the river, are eighty leagues bad navigation. Tadouſac is no town, but a good harbour for large ſhips, navigable for ſhips twenty-five miles; has a water communication by the river Seguany, *&c.* with Hudſon's-Bay. From Tadouſac to Quebec are thirty leagues, from Quebec to Les Trois Rivieres, on the north ſide of the river, thirty leagues; this was the firſt French ſettlement, it abounds with iron ore, is

[*t*] Quebeis, in the Indian Algonquin language, ſignifies a ſtrait, Quebec, from De Hayes obſervations, anno 1686, lies in 46 D. 55 M. N. lat. and W. from Paris 72 D. 30 M. (Paris is E. from London 2 D. 30 M. circiter) is 70 D. W. from London; variation 15 D. 30 M. anno 1649, it was 16 D. W.

[*u*] Cape Breton is a late acquiſition, or New-England conqueſt from the French; may it be permanent, but without any extraordinary garriſon charge! It ſtretches from 45 D. to 47 D. 5 M. N. lat. ſeparated from Nova Scotia, by the gut of Canſo, five leagues long, and one league broad. Cape-Breton iſland lies in length from N. E. to S. W. ſcarce fifty leagues, its greateſt breadth eaſt and weſt about thirty-three leagues. Louiſbourg, formerly called Engliſh harbour, is a good port and ſtrong fortreſs: as this formerly belonged to Nova Scotia, we ſhall refer any further account of it to that ſection.

the

the reſidence of a ſub-governor; this government (there are three governments in Canada) extends twelve miles up the great river, and twelve miles down the river: the tide does not flow much higher; from Les Trois Rivieres to Montreal, the ſeat of the next ſub-governor, are thirty leagues.

From Cape Roſier, along the ſouth ſide of St. Laurence to Montreal, is an almoſt continued chain of hills or mountains, and the runs of water ſhort and rapid, it is ſcarce habitable. A little above Montreal, the two rivers of Outauawas (comes from a country N. W. belonging to a large and powerful Indian nation) and Cataraqui meet; Cataraqui river comes about fifty leagues S. W. from the lake of the ſame name; from fort Frontenac, at the head of this river by water-carriage to Montreal, are four days travel, but from Montreal to fort Frontenac are ten or more days travel, becauſe of many carrying-places at ſeveral cataracts called falls or ſauts.

The communicating five great lakes of Canada, *viz.* Cataraqui or Ontario, Erie, Ilenois, Hurons, and Upper lake may be called inland ſeas, lying from 39 D. to 51 D. N. Lat. The ſmalleſt Ontario is about eighty leagues long, thirty-five leagues wide; the lake Superieure is 200 leagues long, it is larger than the Caſpian-ſea. They do not freeze over; ſnow does not lie long within ten or twelve miles of them; their ſoft mellow circum-ambient vapour mollifies the air; the Indians ſay, that in hot weather the wind blows from the lake, and in cold weather into the lake, as do the land and ſea-breezes in the Weſt-Indies within the tropics.

All the French colonies are under the direction of the council of the navy of France, and of one of the four ſecretaries of France, called ſecretary for the Marine and Plantations; at preſent, anno 1747, M. Maurepas. The French King's charge *per annum* for Canada is about 200,000 crowns; but the high duty upon ſalt ſent from France, and the duty upon furs and ſkins ſent from Canada

to

to France, overbalances this charge. The king's bills of exchange upon the treaſury are paid at fifteen days ſight; the caſtor bills upon the company are paid at three months ſight. Their currency is the ſame as in France, being twenty-five *per cent.* better than that of the French Weſt-India iſlands.

By information from capt. La Rondde and lieut. de Ramſay, envoys from the governor-general of Canada, concerning the French inſtigating and furniſhing our enemy Indians with war ammunition, anno 1723, there ſailed from Quebec nineteen veſſels for the ocean; built in the river of St. Laurence, ſix veſſels fit for the ocean. *N. B.* Up the river to the ſouthward, is good ſhip-timber; lately they have built two or three men of war for France.

The ſeaſon of navigation in the river St. Laurence, are the months of Auguſt and September, for the ſtore-ſhips and caſtor-company ſhips. Ships have ſailed from Quebec to Rochelle in 18 days. Beſides pelterie they ſend to France a ſmall matter of lumber, timber, ſlaves, tar, tobacco. Ships from France bring wines, brandies, and dry goods, and ſail with flour, peaſe, and pork to the Weſt-India iſlands; and from thence home to France with ſugars, *&c.* In Canada from the ſetting in of the froſt until ſummer, no news from France and other foreign parts, excepting what is conveyed to them by way of Albany: many of the French furs are clandeſtinely carried to Albany; this is the reaſon, why our Dutch ſubjects there are averſe to a war with the Canada French, and their Indians. At Oſwego, the mouth of Onondaguas river upon the eaſt-ſide of lake Ontario, there is a trading fair from Albany all ſummer; Indians of above twenty different nations reſort thither, from South-Carolina in N. lat. 32 D. to the bottom of Hudſon's-Bay in N. lat 51 D. Therefore there certainly is a good water communication inland, in all that extent, and conſequently a vaſt Indian ſkin and fur-trade; furs are more

more plenty to the ſouthward, but not of ſo good a ſtaple, as to the northward.

Canada is ſettled only, near the rivers and creeks; they ſow no winter-grain. The produce of the country is not much more than is requiſite for their own ſubſiſtence: the quality of their ſummer-wheat is ſuch, that a baker gives 38lb. wt. fine bread, for a buſhel of wheat: apples grow well; pears, plumbs, and cherries not plenty; peaches will ſcarce do: they kill their ſtore of poultry when the froſts ſet in, and keep them frozen in their garrets during the winter ſeaſon, which ſaves grain, their food.

They have only three towns of any conſideration, *viz.* Quebec, the metropolis and reſidence of the governor-general of Canada or New-France; it is their principal fortreſs; the Cathedral is their only pariſh church; in the lower town there is a chapel of eaſe; here are two convents (Jeſuits and Recolects) of men, and three convents of women, or nunneries. Montreal more pleaſantly ſituated, the reſidence of a deputy-governor, ſixty leagues above Quebec upon the ſame river, is near as populous as Quebec, but not ſo well fortified. Les Trois Rivieres, a ſmall town and trifling fortification, lies midway upon the river, between theſe two; it is the ſeat of the third government.

The country is divided into about eighty diſtricts, ſomewhat in the manner of our New-England townſhips (the New-England townſhips, in Old-England would be called country pariſhes, and their ſeveral precincts, chapels of eaſe.)

All their militia, or fencible men, capable of marching, at this writing, anno 1747, do not exceed 12,000 men, with about 1000 regular troops independent marine companies, and about 1000 Indians that may be perſuaded to march.

Beſides the three towns, or ſtrong places, already mentioned, there are, 1. Crown-Point as above, a late intruſion upon the juriſdiction of New-York; laſt year it

was

was propoſed to reclaim it by force, but the projection ſeems to vaniſh. 2. Fort Chamblais, a conſiderable fort or paſs from the Engliſh ſettlements to the upper French ſettlements in Canada. 3. Fort Sorrel, where the river Chamblais, the diſcharge of lake Champlain, enters the river of Canada or St. Laurence, an inſignificant fort. 4. Fort Frontenac, where the diſcharge of lake Ontario, and the other great inland lakes, forms the Cataraqui branch of the river St. Laurence. 5. Fort Denonville near Niagara Falls (governor Vaudrueil had it accurately examined; it was twenty-ſix fathom perpendicular) between the lakes Ontario and Erie. 6. La Trouette at Les Detroits, between the lakes Erie and Hurons. *N. B.* Theſe three laſt mentioned forts, have bread and peaſe from Montreal, but no other proviſions.

Beſides theſe, by way of oſtentation, we find in the French maps of Canada and Miſſiſſippi, many forts marked out: Theſe are only extempore ſtockades or block-houſes made for a ſhort time of reſidence in their travelling trade with the Indians; ſome French Indian traders when they ſet out, obtain (a certain perquiſite) from the governor an eſcorte of a ſerjeant and a few private ſoldiers for protection againſt any Indian inſults.

There is an annual patrole of this nature from Quebec in Canada to fort Orleanſe, near the mouth of the Miſſiſſippi; it is about 600 leagues travel with its detours of rivers and carrying-places; the direct diſtance or difference in latitude falls ſhort of 400 leagues: this long route is not attended with ſuch difficulties and hardſhips as is commonly imagined; there is a river falls into the ſouth ſide of lake Erie, which leads to a carrying-place to the river Ohio, a branch of the river Miſſiſſippi; the Indians hereabouts are, by the French, called Miamis.

The French, in their Weſt-India or America ſettlements, have four governor-generals, the ſmall ſettlement

ment at Cayenne in Guiana not included, 1. The governor-general of Canada, in his commiſſion, is ſtyled governor and lieutenant-general of French North-America; he has under his direction the governments of Quebec, Les Trois Rivieres, and Montreal, with the commandants of the ſeveral out-forts already mentioned. 2. The governor-general of Louiſiana or Miſſiſſippi; his reſidence is at Orleans upon the river Miſſiſſippi; the other government upon the river Mobile, or Moville, is under his direction; the diſtance is about forty leagues. 3. The governor-general of the [*w*] French

[*w*] The preſent conſtitution of the Weſt-India French governments is a governor-general, and intendant, who is their chief judge in all affairs, and a check upon the general, and a ſupreme council; under their direction are ſeveral ſmall governments, departments, or commanderies, but under the immediate command of a ſub-governor, or lieut. du Roy, or commandant; and theſe diſtricts are divided into pariſhes under the command of a kind of militia officer and ſheriff called Capitain du Quartier.

Under the governor-general of the French Caribbee-iſlands are the governments of Martinique (this is divided into three, *viz.* Fort Royal, St. Pierre, and La Trinité) Guardeloupe (including the commandaries of the Grand Terre, and of the Les Saints) Marigalante, Grenades (including the commandaries of the Grenadillas) upon the death of the governor-general, or in his abſence, the governor of the Grenades commands in chief; as happened anno 1717, when Les Habitants or planters, by an inſurrection ſeized their governor-general Le Marquis de Varennes, and the intendant, and ſent them home priſoners, with a proceſs againſt them. In the French Caribbee-iſlands, in time of peace, are kept three companies of Swiſs, of 100 men per company, ten companies of French independant marines, not exceeding fifty men each. The preſent governor-general is —— who lately ſuperſeded Le Marquis de Champigny; the intendant is De la Croix. St. Bartholomew is a neutral iſland; the property and juriſdiction of it has not been ſettled by any treaty; it is frequented by ſome French marooners. Fort-Royal in Martinique (from P. Feuille) N. lat. 14 D. 43 M. W. from Paris 63 D 22 M. anno 1704, variation 6 D. 10 M. E. increaſing about a degree in ten years; a pendulum that vibrates ſeconds in Martinique, is in length three feet, ſix and half lines, French meaſure. *N. B.* Such pendulums increaſe in length in ſome proportion or regularity from the equator to the poles, but hitherto have not been reduced to a table; at Paris its length, as obſerved by the Academy Royal of Sciences, is three feet, eight and half lines.

Caribbee-iſlands, or Les Iſles au Vent; his reſidence is at the iſland Martinique. 4. The governor-general of St. Domingue [x] (Hiſpaniola is ſo called by the French) or Les Iſles ſous le Vent; his reſidence is at Leogane; the middlemoſt of their ſettlements in N. Lat. 18 D. 40 M.

In the dominions of Canada, Quebec is the metropolis and place of greateſt ſtrength [y]; when this is re-

[x] Upon the weſt part of the iſland Hiſpaniola the French are become more numerous, and have much more conſiderable ſettlements than the Spaniards upon its eaſt part; they have about eight ſhipping or delivery ports, each with a military commanding officer, whereof ſome are called governors, others only lieut. du Roy, ſome go by the name of commandants, all under the governor-general who reſides at Leogane. Cape St. Nicholas of St. Domingue, and Cape Mayeze of Cuba, diſtance twelves leagues make the windward paſſage. Neareſt to the Spaniard on the north ſide is their ſettlement of Ville du Cape, N. lat. 19 D. 48 M. W. from Paris 73 D. 35 M. we call it Cape François; it is their principal ſettlement, and ſends off more produce of ſugars, &c. than all the other French ſettlements there, and has a reſident governor: on the ſouth ſide next to the Spaniſh ſettlements is Fort Louis, N. lat. 18 D. 18 M. in the bay of L'Iſle des Vaches. Here lay, anno 1741, the famous French ſquadron under the Marquis d'Antin, deſigned either to convoy the Spaniſh Plate-fleet to Europe, or to hinder the junction of Vernon and Ogle, or to invade Jamaica upon admiral Vernon's proceeding againſt Carthagena: although they eſcaped an engagement with our fleet (reaſons of ſtate are above my reach) in the utmoſt diſtreſs for want of proviſion, with the death of many men and loſs of ſome ſhips, they returned to France, having effected nothing; and d'Antin ſoon after died, ſome ſay killed in a duel by Marquis de Rocheville, a commodore under him in this expedition. The intermediate ſettlements are Port de Paix, Leogane, Grande Gouave, Petite Gouave, &c. they have ſeveral independant marine companies, but depend much upon their militia. The preſent governor-general is M. de Larnage, the intendant is M. Maillot. Some of our northern colonies at all times carry on a clandeſtine trade with them lately; though in time of war a neighbouring colony has been detected in carrying ſupplies thither, and returns from thence in molaſſes and indigo, under the blind of flags of truce.

[y] The reduction of Canada might have been effected without the leaſt riſk of miſcarriage, and the poſſeſſion maintained (not by putting the French inhabitants to the ſword, as was the Spaniſh principle in their Indian conqueſts) by tranſporting the French ſettlers to France, partly at their own charge where able, partly at our charge where

duced,

duced, all their New-France falls inſtantly. Our pretenſions to Canada ſhall be enumerated in the ſection of Nova Scotia. Quebec (from De Hayes) is in Lat. 46 D. 55 M. W. from Paris 72 D. 30 M. that is, from London 70 D. 30 M. Boſton (from T. Robie) is in N. Lat. 42 D. 25 M. weſt from London 71 D. 30 M. therefore Quebec is 4 D. 30 M. north, and 1 D. 30 M. E. of Boſton; that is, in geographical miles 270 north, and ſixty-eight miles (reckoning forty-five miles to a degree of longitude in theſe parallels) eaſt from Boſton.

Champlain was their firſt governor; he gave name to the lake Champlain (the Dutch call it Corlaers lake) the

poor; and cantoning a great part of the country in property to the ſoldiers who ſerved in the reduction. The Britiſh freedom of the preſs allows of ſurmiſes, where nothing is poſitively aſſerted. Perhaps our miniſtry may judge, that no peace could be made with France, unleſs France were ſo reduced as to accept the law, in making of peace at any rate; this might require many years expenſive war; or without delivering up Louiſbourg: The Britiſh people would never be reconciled to this, and might occaſion a diſlike to the miniſters in adminiſtration, and perhaps a diſaffection to the preſent civil government or eſtabliſhed ſucceſſion. This probably may be the reaſon with our miniſters, that the fleet and land forces, apparently deſigned to obſerve duke d'Anville's ſquadron with land forces on board for recovering of Louiſbourg, did not proceed to prevent Louiſbourg's falling again into the French poſſeſſion; that they might obviate a popular puzzle in making of peace. Thus our fleet and land forces aboard, apparently deſigned againſt Canada, were, by way of blind, ſent upon that romantic deſcent on Britany in France. It has been thought that our reduction of Louiſbourg, the key of the North America COD-FISHERY and FUR-TRADE, was not ſo agreeable to our miniſtry, as to the populace of Great-Britain; a real war between people of the different nations, but only a colluſive war between their miniſters. But providence, or, as ſome expreſs it, a concurrence of many extraordinary chances or incidents, in our miraculous reduction of Louiſbourg, and a train of diſaſters attending the French fleet and land troops deſigned for its recovery, ſeem to encourage that fondneſs which the Britiſh people have for keeping of Louiſbourg. This year, anno 1747, notwithſtanding many American troops are kept on foot, by the direction of the court of Great-Britain, at a great charge, deſigned for the reduction of Canada, the land forces deſtined from home for this expedition, are diverted from a Canada expedition this ſeaſon, and ſent to Flanders, for a grand effort, or critical trial of ſkill, and likely may prove the criſis of the preſent war.

paſſage from Albany, or New-York government, to Montreal, or the weſt parts of Canada; it is 150 miles long, and thirty miles wide. M. Frontenac, who ſucceeded anno 1672, gave name to the fort at the diſcharge of lake Ontario, being the ſource of the Cataraqui branch of the river St. Laurence. Le Marquis de Nonville ſucceeded to the government anno 1685, and gave name to the fort near Niagara falls, between the lakes Ontario and Erie; anno 1687, with 1500 French and Indians, he invaded the Senekas country: the year following, anno 1688, in revenge the Five Nations, with about 1200 Indians, invaded the iſland of Montreal (the governor general and wife being then in the town of Montreal), ravaged the country, killed about 1000 perſons, and carried off a few captives. To return this in ſome meaſure, in the beginning of king William's reign, the French and their Indians, to the number of about 300 men, in the night-time ſurprized Schenectaday in New-York government, and murdered ſixty-three people. In the beginning of queen Anne's war, the colonies of Canada and New-York agreed for a neutrality between their reſpective Indians during the war; and an advantageous Dutch trade all that time was carried on from Albany to Montreal by means of the Indians.

The commanders in chief formerly were called admirals of New-France, afterwards vice-roys, at preſent governors and lieutenant-generals. Anno 1665, M. de Traci, vice-roy of French America, brought to Canada four independant companies of regular troops; and in September the ſame year, M. Courſal governor-general of Canada, arrived with a regiment of ſoldiers, and ſome families, for ſettlers: at preſent their regular troops conſiſt of about twenty-eight independant marine companies very incomplete; a parcel of racaille or goal-birds from France, not to be depended upon. Anno 1714, father Charlevoix writes, that Vaudrueil, governor-general of Canada, at that time, acquainted M. Ponchartrain miniſter in France, *viz.* Canada has actually in it but 4480 fencible

fencible men; the twenty-eight companies of the king's regular troops amount only to 628 men (like our late Nova Scotia companies) and diſperſed in the extent of 100 leagues. Their preſent governor-general is Le Marquis de Beauharnoes (ſome returned priſoners ſay he is lately dead) the intendant is M. Champarni.

The French Canada Indians. On our ſide, which is the ſouth ſide of the river St. Laurence, they are tribes of the New-England nation of Abnaqui Indians, *viz.* De Lorette, a very ſmall tribe a little below Quebec; Wanonoak on the river Beſancourt or Puante, over-againſt Les Trois Rivieres, not exceeding forty fighting men; about ten leagues higher is the tribe of Arouſiguntecook on the river St. François, about 160 fighting men; on the eaſt ſide of lake Champlain, is the tribe of Meſſaſſuck, ſixty fighting men; a little above Montreal are the Kahnuagas, about eighty men, being a parcel of idle *Ave Maria* praying Indians, runaways from the New-York Mohawks and river Indians. Their Indians on the north ſide of St. Laurence river, are Les Eſkimaux, or Barbares of Terra de Labradore; they eat their fleſh and fiſh raw, and go naked, or covered with ſeals and other ſkins; they are in ſmall clans, very idle, and of no great benefit to trade; are much diſperſed; Papinchos near the mouth of the river St. Laurence; Algonquins, about 1500 men about Quebec, in faſt friendſhip with the French; Outawawaas a very large nation, extending back of the other N. W. to near the bottom of Hudſon's-Bay; S. W. are Les Renards; farther ſouth we muſt leave the Indians for future diſcoveries. The general farms out the Indian trade to private companies or partnerſhips of Indian traders in certain diſtricts.

2. Miſſiſſippi, or Louiſiana. It was firſt diſcovered by Joliet a Frenchman, anno 1673. De la Salle, commandant of fort Frontenac, traverſed the wilderneſs with much fatigue, equal to the greateſt of penances, anno 1679, 1680, 1681, 1682, and 1683. He went by the way

32396

of lakes Erie and Ontario (in their communication he built a fort called La Trouette) to Miſſiſſipi. Anno 1684, he obtained of the court of France four veſſels, with 200 ſoldiers aboard, and ſailed from Rochelle to diſcover and fall in with the mouth of the river Miſſiſſipi; it lies about the middle of the north ſhore of the bay of Mexico; he expected to find it in the weſternmoſt parts of this north ſhore, according as it was laid down in the erroneous ſea-charts of that time, and accordingly landed in the bay St. Bernard, which he called bay St. Louis; here he built fort St. Louis but ſoon neglected; it is nearly in the ſame meridian with St. Cruz 97 D. 30 M. W. from London: the French maps extend the Louiſiana farther ſouth to Rio Bravo in 25 D. N. lat. From bay St. Louis, he travelled by land and diſcovered the mouth of the Miſſiſſippi 1685; in his return for Canada, anno 1686, he was killed by a mutiny of his men.

The ſource of the Miſſiſſipi is near Hudſon's-Bay, weſt of the great lakes; the French have travelled up this river in canoes to 45 D. N. lat.

The firſt eſtabliſhment of the colony was by captain d'Iberville, anno 1698; and although a natural and true Spaniſh property, the French ſettlements were connived at by Philip V, king of Spain, grandſon to Louis XIV of France. Anno 1712, M. Crozat, ſecretary of finances or treaſury, obtained from the king of France the ſole privilege of trading to and from the Miſſiſſippi for fifteen years; this turning to no account, he relinquiſhed it to the regent of France, and by the projection of M. Law, it was converted into the memorable bubble of the Miſſiſſippi-company (any out of the way, not eaſily to be inveſtigated ſcheme of colony and profitable trade would have anſwered;) which Miſſiſſippi ſham company firſt began to be hatched anno 1717.

This Miſſiſſippi colony extends from bay St. Louis to Penſacola, in a ſea-line of near 200 leagues, but all along the water is ſo ſhoal, it is of no uſe in trade, excepting the mouth of the Miſſiſſippi, and there the country is unhealthful

healthful from the inundations or floods at certain ſeaſons by the diſſolving of the northward ſnow; they have a ſmall fur-trade, and begin to plant indigo; the bay of Movile, or L'Iſle Dauphine, admits only of veſſels of ſmall draught.

From bay St. Louis or Bernard to Orleans upon the Miſſiſſippi, the reſidence of the governor-general, are about 140 leagues; thence to L'Iſle Dauphine, where a ſub-governor reſides, are forty leagues; thence to Penſacola, a Spaniſh ſettlement, are fifteen leagues; from L'Iſle Dauphine, in N. lat. 30 M. 30 D. W. long. from Paris 92 D. or 89 D. 30 M. weſt from London, are 7. 30 M. long. eaſt to Cape Florida.

[z] III. *Portugueze diſcoveries and ſettlements.*

BRAZIL is a narrow ſlip, its ſea-line extends from the river Amazons under the equinoctial, to Rio de la Plata. By the treaty of Baden, anno 1714, Spain reſigns to Portugal, in full property and juriſdiction, the territory and colony of the Sacrament on the north branch of Rio de la Plata; Portugal not to allow of any traders to Brazil, but the European Portugueze. The Portugueze have a fort on the north ſide of the entrance of La Plata in S. lat. 34 D.

Brazil was a Portugueze accidental diſcovery; in ſailing for their ſettlements and factories in the Eaſt-Indies, anno 1500, a Brazil fleet, by the eaſterly trade-winds, was drove upon the coaſt of Brazil. They made no ſettlement of conſequence until anno 1549, king John ſent over ſettlers and ſoldiers.

It is divided into fourteen captain-ſhips, whereof eight belong to the king, and ſix to private proprietors; all

[z] As a few additional pages may conduce towards a full and diſtinct, but contracted, view of all the American colonies from the ſeveral European nations, we diſpenſe a little with our limits firſt propoſed.

under one vice-roy, who reſides at Bahia, or the Bay of all Saints, in S. lat. 12 D. 45 M.

The Portugueze, upon their firſt arrival in Brazil, cruelly murdered the Indians in the ſame manner as the Spaniards had done in Mexico and Peru; doubtleſs, the political reaſon was, their being too numerous to be kept under a continued ſubjection; but their religious evaſion was, dominion is founded upon grace, therefore none, have any right to life or land but the true Roman Catholics, *Tantum potuit ſuadere malorum Relligio.*

Portugal, conſequently Brazil, was in the Spaniſh juriſdiction from anno 1580 to 1640. Philip II of Spain claimed, as he was the ſon of the eldeſt daughter of king Emanuel of Portugal; whereas the ducheſs of Braganza was a daughter of the ſon of king Emanuel, a better title. The Dutch revolted from and at war with Spain, become maſters of the northern parts of the Brazils for ſome years; upon the revolution of Portugal, in favour of the houſe of Braganza, anno 1640, the Dutch gradually loſt ground; the Dutch chuſing rather to out the Portugueze from the Spice-iſlands, than divert their force to keep poſſeſſion of Brazil. By Cromwell's war with the Dutch, anno 1642 May, to anno 1654 April, they could not afford ſufficient protection to their conqueſts there (anno 1641, the Dutch made a truce with the Portugueze, *uti poſſidetis*, for ten years) and from the above conſiderations, and their ſmall country not affording ſpare people ſufficient to ſettle there, the Dutch made a total ſurrender by a treaty anno 1661.

Their rich mines diverted them from their former ſugar buſineſs, and the other European colonies have got into it. The yearly import of gold to Portugal, for ſome years paſt, has been about three millions ſterling *per annum.*

Anno 1711, the French took Rio de Janeiro, and brought it to contribution; it is from thence that moſt of their gold is ſhipped. The Brazil fleet for that port, in S. Lat. 23 D. ſets out in January; for Bahia, in near 13 D.

13 D. S. Lat. they ſet out in February; for Fernambuca, in 8 D. S. Lat. ſet out in March; and upon their return leave theſe parts in May and June. Moſt of the Brazil harbours are a dangerous navigation, becauſe of ſunken rocks at a ſmall depth.

The moſt valuable imports to Portugal from the Brazils are gold (generally coined there at Bahia marked B. and Rio de Janeiro marked R.) found in ſeparate grains or ſmall pieces, or intermixed with ſpar, but not extracted or ſeparated from ſilver and other metals as in Mexico; and of late diamonds, generally [*a*] ſmall and of a bad water.

IV. *Dutch diſcoveries and ſettlements.*

THE Dutch Weſt-India company is of little or no conſideration; the price of their actions (or ſtock as it is called in London) thirty to thirty-five; whereas the Dutch Eaſt-India company actions at preſent are about 350 [*b*]. For many years their whole buſineſs was de-

[*a*] We have lately in the news-papers from Europe, a romantic account of a huge diamond ſent home from the Brazils to the king of Portugal of 1880 carats (a carat is four grains) the news-writers, to heighten the romance, put it at 224 millions ſterling value; whereas even according to the ancient high valuation of diamonds (formerly a diamond of one carat, of a good water and well poliſhed, was valued at 10*l.* ſterling, or 110 Dutch florins, the value of thoſe more weighty was the ſquare of carats multiplied into the value of one carat; diamonds moſt in demand are from one grain and a half to ſix grains) if cut and poliſhed of the beſt water would not exceed twenty-eight millions ſterling, and if only brute or not cut, not above half that value; and if we ſuppoſe it of a bad water, as are moſt of the Brazil diamonds, perhaps not much better than ſome curious well cut and poliſhed pebbles, this will reduce the value very much. Formerly the largeſt diamonds known were, 1. That of the Great Mogul (formerly all diamonds of any value came from the Mogul's dominions) of 279 carats. 2. That of the Grand Duke of Tuſcany of 139 carats, but inclining to a citron colour. 3. Governor Pitt's diamond ſold to the crown of France for two millions of livres, or 135,000*l.* ſterling, it was of 127 carats.

[*b*] In AMSTERDAM BANK, there is no ſale of actions or ſtock, it is not properly a company. It was eſtabliſhed, anno 1609, by a pla-

predations

predations or piracies upon the Spaniards and Portugueze, in which they were very ſucceſsful; firſt they took a Brazil fleet in Bahia, or the bay of All-Saints; next they took two ſhips of the Spaniſh plate-fleet near Cuba; ſome time after they took a Spaniſh plate-fleet worth twelve millions of florins. At preſent the interlopers run away with the company's trade and profits.

After anno 1621, upon the expiration of the Dutch twelve years truce with Spain, they diſturbed the Brazil ſettlements (the Portugueze dominions were at that time under the Spaniſh juriſdiction) and were troubleſome in Chili; they got ſome footing in Guiana, and retained a conſiderable footing in the north parts of Brazil for ſome years.

The Dutch ſettlements in America are not conſiderable, *viz.*

1. Amongſt the Caribbee iſlands, the ſmall iſland of Statia or St. Euſtace, a few leagues weſt from St. Kits; here is a Dutch Weſt-India company-governor; not-

cart, or act of the vroedſchap or town-council; the ſtate of Amſterdam oblige themſelves to make good all monies lodged in this bank. They retain the ſame intrinſic value of denominations, as they were at the time of the erection of this bank; thus for inſtance, a ducatoon at that time was three guilders, and ſo continues to be received and paid away there; whereas in the common currency of Holland, it is reckoned ſixty-three ſtivers, and the par of the agio is five *per cent.* *N. B.* Here is a method to prevent depreciation, and qualifies this bank for that univerſal credit, which it has obtained in all foreign trade; notwithſtanding, we may obſerve that the beſt conſtitutions, upon earth are ſhocked by very extraordinary events; for anno 1672, upon that ſudden rapid invaſion of the ſeven united provinces by France, the transfers in this bank were ſold at ten *per cent.* diſcount, for current money, which with the addition of the agio is in effect fifteen *per cent.* This bank is the merchant's caſhier, and he negotiates his affairs by transfers in his folio; a bank transfer is a legal tender; when the bank pays out ſpecie, which ſeldom happens, they retain one eighth *per cent.* for keeping, ſelling, *&c.* Merchants of great dealings, for ten ducatoons *per annum*, have the ſtate of their account ſent to their lodgings every morning; the charge of transferring a ſum exceeding 300 guilders coſts only one ſtiver or penny. There was a bank eſtabliſhed at Rotterdam anno 1636; it is of no note.

withſtanding

withſtanding the Dutch interlopers carry on here a conſiderable trade with the French and Britiſh people of the Caribbee iſlands; in this port the Britiſh and French Americans carry on a conſiderable intercourſe of trade; and from St. Kits much ſugar and molaſſes are brought clandeſtinely to ſave the four and an half *per cent.* and the plantation-duty, and plantation-bonds. This iſland is not capable of making above 100,000 lb. wt. of ſugar *per annum.* The governor of Statia ſends a commandant to the ſmall iſland of Sabia, which raiſes only ſome ſtock or market proviſions; he has alſo a commandant in St. Martin's iſland; this ſeems to be a neutral iſland; at preſent a few Dutch and ſome French live there, but of no conſideration.

2. Amongſt the leſſer Antilles (Cuba, Jamaica, Hiſpaniola, and Porto-Rico are called the greater Antilles) upon the coaſt of Curaccoes, or windward coaſt of the Spaniſh main, their principal ſettlement is the ſmall iſland of Curaſo, lies about eight leagues from the Terra Firma, in 12 D. N. Lat. The Dutch took it from the Spaniards anno 1634; their chief buſineſs is an interloping ſmuggling trade with the windward coaſt of the Spaniſh main. Adjoining to it are the Dutch ſmall iſlands of Aruba eaſtward, and weſtward are Bonaire, Aves, Roca, and Orcilla, of no conſideration.

3. Guiana; their chief ſettlement is Surinam. It was taken by the Dutch from the Engliſh in the beginning of king Charles the ſecond's reign, and confirmed to them by the treaty of Breda anno 1667, in exchange for New-York confirmed to the Engliſh. Here are three proprietors concerned, *viz.* The Dutch Weſt-India company, the town of Amſterdam, and admiral Somelſdike's heirs. It is garriſoned by a detachment of one man out of each Dutch foot company of regular troops. It is a ſugar colony; they keep their books in light pieces of eight, royals, and ſtivers; ſix ſtivers make a royal; eight royals make a piece of eight. Their currency twenty *per cent.* worſe than the currency in Holland; a Holland's guilder

guilder paſſes for twenty-four ſtivers; their large currency is transferring bills of exchange upon Amſterdam, at the difference of twenty *per cent.* a heavy piece of eight paſſes for three guilders.

New-England has a conſiderable trade with Surinam for molaſſes. Surinam government, by proclamation Jan. 27, 1705, N. S. allow the importation of [*c*] horſes and neat cattle from our colonies, at an impoſt of ſeven guilders per head, with tonnage of ſeven guilders per laſt of two ton ſhipping; there is alſo a duty of five *per cent.* out (ſix *per cent.* inward) upon two third value of goods.

Weſt or to the leeward of Surinam is Barbice, a new ſettlement, belonging to a ſeparate company, in a very thriving way; ſhares are ſold at a very great advance.

Weſt of Barbice is another Dutch ſettlement Eſquibe (the Engliſh ſeamen, much guilty of corrupting foreign words, call it Iſe a Cape) this furniſhes good mill timber for all the Weſt-India ſugar ſettlements, and produces quantities of Balſam Capivi, the beſt of all the medicinal natural balſams.

Cayenne, a ſmall French ſettlement in Guiana, eaſt, that is to windward of Surinam; it lies in N. Lat. 4 D. 55 M. it is a ſugar colony. New-England ſends two or three ſloops to Cayenne yearly for molaſſes.

St. Thomas [*d*], one of the Virgin-iſlands, is comprehended in the commiſſion of the governor-general of our leeward iſlands; at preſent it is in poſſeſſion of a Daniſh company; ſeldom any company's ſhips to be ſeen there. The king of Denmark has a negative in all their proceedings; they may raiſe about 2,500,000 lb. weight of ſugar *per annum*; they raiſe ſome cotton; here is a

[*c*] In New-England there is a breed of ſmall mean horſes called Jades or Surinamers; theſe run and feed in the waſte lands at little or no charge, and are ſhipped off to Surinam for the uſe of their mills, *&c.* in the ſugar plantations.

[*d*] We annex the following ſhort paragraphs to render our enumeration of the American ſettlements from Europe complete.

Brande-

Brandebourg or Pruſſian factory. All their ordinances and public writings are in Hollands or low Dutch, which is the mother-tongue of the iſland. Their currency is as in Surinam. It is a ſort of neutral port, but under good œconomy.

Tobago lies in 11 D. 30 M. N. lat. 59 D. W. from London, about forty leagues ſouth from Barbadoes, near the Spaniſh iſland Trinadad, which lies near the mouth of the river Oranoke. King Charles II made a grant of it to the duke of Courland, to be ſettled only by the ſubjects of England and Courland. The duke of Courland made ſeveral grants in it to Engliſhmen, but it continues not ſettled.

St. Crux. The Engliſh, French, and Daniſh have at times claimed it; it continues a neutral iſland, lies ſouth from the Virgin-iſlands.

V. Britiſh *firſt* American *diſcoveries, and* Weſt-India *iſland ſettlements.*

I COME to a cloſe of the introductory account of American affairs in general, which has inſenſibly ſwelled in the handling, much beyond my firſt plan; I hope it is not tedious to the curious and intelligent reader. We now enter upon the principally intended ſubject, the Britiſh ſettlements in America. An author, without oſtentation deſigning a common good, may endeavour to conciliate attention and faith in his readers. As no man is born with the inſtinct or innate knowledge of his native or mother country, and does not generally enter upon ſuch reſearches until 25 Æt. the air of the ſoil and juvenile converſation do not much contribute towards this: therefore a perſon not a native, but not a foreigner, who comes into any country at that age, and enters upon and proſecutes ſuch inveſtigations from perſonal obſervations, and credible correſpondencies for a courſe of thirty years, may write, as if born in the country. I hope critics, natives of any of theſe our colonies, will not reckon

reckon it a preſumption in me to aſſay the following accounts; eſpecially as at preſent, no native appears to undertake this laborious, but uſeful, performance; I acknowledge it to be a performance not of genius, but of labour and method to render it diſtinct and clear.

The American colonies cannot be claimed by the ſeveral European nations from preoccupancy (they were not derelicts, but in poſſeſſion of the aboriginal Indians) nor by inheritance, nor by what the law of nature and nations deem a juſtifiable conqueſt; therefore the adventuring European powers, could only give to ſome of their particular ſubjects an excluſive grant of negociating and purchaſing from the natural proprietors the native Indians, and thereupon a power of juriſdiction.

Formerly priority of diſcovery, even without a continued occupancy or poſſeſſion, was deemed a good claim: Thus we originate our claims in North-America from the Cabots coaſting from Prima Viſta in 66 D. to 34 D. N. lat. although for near a century following, we made no ſettlements there, and did not ſo much as navigate the coaſt; becauſe Henry VIII was a vicious prince, the affairs of his wives, and perplexities with the church, gave him full employment; Edward VI was a minor; queen Mary a wicked woman and bigotted Roman Catholic, her ſole attention was to re-eſtabliſh popery, at that time wearing out of faſhion, in a moſt inhuman, execrable, furious, zealous manner; good queen Elizabeth, a great encourager of trade and navigation in ſome reſpects, but had the diſtreſſing of the Spaniards, and protection of the Dutch, more in her intentions, than the making of diſcoveries and ſettlements in America. Royal grants of lands if not occupied, and in proceſs of time if another grant (with occupancy) is made to others, the firſt grant becomes void. Thus duke Hamilton's grant in the Naraganſet country; Mr. Maſon's grant of New-Hampſhire; and many grants in the N. E. parts of New England are become void.

The

The Cabots of Venetian extract, anno 1495, obtained from king Henry VII a patent for the property of all lands they ſhould diſcover weſtward of Europe; one fifth of the clear profit is reſerved to the king. Henry VII was a lover and hoarder up of money. They fitted out from Briſtol anno 1496; proceeded along the north ſhore of America till obſtructed by the ice; then they turned their courſe ſouthward; and at length their proviſions proving ſcanty, they were obliged to put off for England. Thus the Cabots in the name of, and by commiſſions from, the crown of England, began to range the continent of North-America, before Columbus from the crown of Spain diſcovered any part of the continent of America; from 1492 to 1498, Columbus diſcovered only the iſlands in the gulph of Mexico. The Cabots were good induſtrious navigators, they were the firſt who weathered the north Cape of Europe.

The next patent for diſcoveries and ſettlements in America was March 25, 1584, to [*e*] Sir Walter Raleigh and aſſociates, for diſcovering and planting lands in North-America, not actually poſſeſſed by any Chriſtian prince: that ſame year two ſmall veſſels were ſent *via* Canaries and the Caribbee-iſlands (this, in theſe days was reckoned the only route of navigation for any part of America) to trade upon that coaſt; upon their return, in honour to the virgin queen Elizabeth, it was called Virginia, reaching ſo far north as the gulph of St. Lau-

[*e*] Sir Walter Raleigh, of a good but reduced family in Devonſhire, was handſome, robuſt, and eloquent, had a liberal education, and was brought up at the inns of court; he was much in favour with queen Elizabeth, and diſcovered Guiana anno 1595. He was in the plot againſt king James I, with lord Cobham, Grey, *&c.* convicted and condemned for high treaſon; he was thirteen years in priſon, and wrote the hiſtory of the world; he projected a ſcheme to liberate himſelf, by propoſing to the court the diſcovery of a gold mine in Guiana (he was naturally a mighty hunter after mines of minerals, metals, and precious ſtones) was fitted out, proceeded, and returned empty; being unſucceſsful, and by the reſentment of Gundamore the Spaniſh ambaſſador at the court of England, his former ſentence was averred, and he was beheaded.

rence.

rence. Anno 1585, Sir Walter ſent Sir Richard Grenville, with ſeveral veſſels and 108 people, to begin a plantation; they landed upon the iſland Roanoke near the mouth of Albemarle river in North-Carolina. Sir Francis Drake, from the Spaniſh Weſt-Indies, by way of the gulph of Florida ſtream, touched in Roanoke anno 1586; theſe people ſettlers diſſatisfied, moſt of them returned with him to England. Anno 1587 and 1589, Mr. White, with the character of governor, brought over ſome people to Cape Hatteras, but effected no ſettlement.

No further attempt worth mentioning was made until anno 1606, Sir Walter Raleigh, by his attainder, having forfeited his patent, ſeveral adventurers petitioned the king for grants, and a grant was made to two companies, in one charter, *viz.* to the London adventurers from 34 D. to 41 D. N. lat. the other company was the Briſtol, Exeter, Plymouth, *&c.* adventurers, from 38 D. to 45 D. N. lat. Thus perhaps the uncommon and conſequently neglected part from Cape Charles to Connecticut might fall into the Dutch hands. In the firſt company of adventurers ſeveral noblemen and gentlemen obtained a patent with power of government for a certain diſtrict, the juriſdiction to be in a preſident and ſtanding council; they fitted out Capt. Newport, with three ſhips and 106 ſettlers; they ſailed into Cheſepeak-Bay, and fifty miles up James river, and began a ſettlement called James-town. Here properly begins the firſt planting of our eldeſt colony Virginia; the further narrative of this colony belongs to the ſection of Virginia.

The other company in the ſame charter of anno 1606, called the company of Plymouth, or Weſt-country adventurers, *viz.* Sir John Popham chief-juſtice, Sir Ferdinand Gorge governor of Plymouth, *&c.* began their adventures in trade and ſettlements at Sagadahoc in New-England, about the ſame time.

Their firſt adventure was taken by the Spaniard: anno 1608, they fitted out captains Popham and Gilbert with

with people or ſettlers, and ſtores, and built a fort, St. George, near Sagadahock; it came to nothing. Anno 1614, Capt. Smith, ſome time preſident of Virginia, called the traveller, a good ſolid judicious writer in general, fitted out two ſhips and made a good voyage in trade; upon his return to England, he preſented a plan of the country to the court, and it was called New-England. As after a few years the London company diſſolved, ſo, it ſeems, was the fate of this company; and anno 1620, Nov. 3, king James I granted to a company of adventurers called the council of Plymouth, forty in number, all lands from 40 D. to 48 D. N. lat. keeping up the claim to New Netherlands, or *Nova Belgia*, at that time in poſſeſſion of the Dutch, at preſent the Britiſh colonies of New-York, New-Jerſies, and Penſylvania. This [*f*] council of Plymouth made ſeveral grants which were found faulty from their indiſtinctneſs, and having no power to delegate juriſdiction. Here we muſt break off, and refer the further Narration to the ſections of the New-England colonies, which were the council of Plymouth grants.

The firſt inducements of the Engliſh adventurers to take out patents for countries or lands in America, and to ſuffer ſo much in ſettling, were the hopes of finding rich mines of minerals, metals, and precious ſtones, and a thorough-fare to the Eaſt-Indies or Spice-iſlands. After ſome time theſe projectors finding themſelves diſappointed, the old patents were neglected or annihilated: in the end of James the firſt's reign, and beginning of Charles I, new grants were procured; but by reaſon of the following civil confuſions and diviſions, the conditions of theſe new grants were not complied with; and people ſit down at pleaſure and at random. Upon the

[*f*] The company or council of Plymouth, by their charter or patent, had a power to convey any portion of their granted lands to any of his majeſty's ſubjects: after having made many indiſtinct and interfering grants, they ſurrendered their charter to the crown, by an inſtrument under their common ſeal, June 7, 1635.

reſtoration of king Charles II, theſe ſettlers petitioned for peculiar grants (as we ſhall obſerve in the ſeveral ſections of colonies) particularly of Maryland, Carolina, New-York, Connecticut, Rhode-iſlands.

The firſt grants from the crown were generally expreſſed to run back inland 100 miles; afterwards the ſtyle was due weſt to the South-ſeas, or until they met with ſome other Chriſtian ſettlement; ſometimes it is expreſſed from ſea to ſea, eaſt and weſt: at preſent the words are to run back indefinitely. Many of the firſt grants were by falſe or uncertain deſcriptions, and did interfere with one another; as we may obſerve in the hiſtory of their ſeveral boundaries in proceſs of time rectified and at preſent ſettled.

The ſettling of our ſundry colonies have been upon ſeveral occaſions, and from various beginnings. New-England was firſt ſettled by people from England, tenacious of their own non-conformiſt way of religious worſhip, and reſolved to endure any hardſhips, *viz.* a very diſtant removal, inclemencies of the climate, barrenneſs of the ſoil, *&c.* in order to enjoy their own way of thinking, called goſpel-privileges, in peace and purity. Our Weſt-India iſlands have been ſettled or increaſed, ſome of them by Royaliſts, ſome by Parliamentarians; ſome by [*g*] Tories, ſome by Whigs, at different times fugitives or exiles from their native country. Virginia and Maryland have been for many years, and continue to be a ſink for tranſported criminals. Pennſylvania being the property of Mr. Penn, a Quaker; he planted it with Quakers (as Lord Baltimore for the ſame reaſon at firſt planted Maryland with Roman Cartholics) it is lately very much increaſed by huſbandmen ſwarming from Ireland and Germany.

[*g*] Whig and Tory, originally were reciprocal party cant names of contempt, they began in the reign of king Charles II, Tories aſſerted paſſive-obedience and non-reſiſtance, as a prerogative of the crown; whigs maintained that liberty and property was a natural privilege of the people.

2. The

2. *The* Britiſh *iſland ſettlements.*

THE Britiſh American colonies, eſpecially their iſlands in and near the gulph of Mexico, are the Spaniſh leavings; the Spaniards, their firſt diſcoverers, made no account of them; and when the Engliſh began to ſettle them, they were not diſturbed by the Spaniard, as if below their notice. The Engliſh at firſt had no other deſign there, only to diſtreſs the Spaniards. Thus Sir Francis Drake made ſeveral depredations there, but no ſettlement; anno 1585 he took St. Domingo, Carthagena, and St. Auguſtine, and ſoon quitted them. Anno 1597, Porto Rico was conquered by the Engliſh, but dropped.

The Britiſh American iſland governments may be enumerated under theſe heads, *viz.* The two ſmall ſettlements of Bermudas and Providence, or Bahama-Iſlands, and the three general governments of Barbadoes, Leeward-Iſlands, and Jamaica: theſe three governments are called the Britiſh ſugar iſlands. As at preſent ſugar is of general uſe, and occaſions a vaſt branch of public revenue to the nations of Great-Britain, France, and Holland, a digreſſion concerning ſugar may be acceptable.

A digreſſion concerning ſugar.

THE ancient Greeks and Romans uſed honey only for ſweetning; ſugar was not known amongſt them. Paulus Ægineta, a noted compiler of medical hiſtory, and one of the laſt Greek writers upon that ſubject, about anno 625, is the firſt who expreſly mentions ſugar; it was at firſt called, *Mel arundinaceum*, that is, reed or cane honey. It came from China, by way of the Eaſt-Indies and Arabia to Europe. As ſpirits *(ſpiritus ardentes)* not above a century ago were uſed only as officinal cordials, but now are become an endemical plague every where, being a pernicious ingredient in moſt of our beverages:

ſo formerly ſugar was only uſed in ſyrups, conſerves, and ſuch like Arabian medicinal compoſitions. It is at preſent become of univerſal and moſt noxious uſe; it fouls our animal juices, and produces ſcrophulas, ſcurvys, and other putrid diſorders; by relaxing the ſolids, it occaſions watery ſwellings, and catarrhous ails; it induces hyſteric and other nervous diſorders; therefore ſhould be ſparingly uſed, eſpecially by our weaker ſex; they are naturally of a *Fibra laxa.*

The iſland colonies (in a peculiar manner they are called the Weſt-Indies) had the ſugar-cane from the Brazils; the Portugueze of Brazil might have them from their ſettlements in the [*b*] Eaſt-Indies. At preſent the flavour and ſmell of our ſugars, and of thoſe from Brazil differ conſiderably; this may be attributed to what the French call, *Le gout de terroir*; thus it is with with wines from tranſplanted vines; Virginia tobacco, and Brazil, and Varinas tobacco differ upon this account.

Arundo ſaccharifera C. B. P. ſugar-cane, are the botanical Latin and Engliſh tribe names; it grows to five, ſix, or more feet high; articulated or jointed with a gramineous or reed leaf. The canes are generally planted in Auguſt, and cut down from Chriſtmas to June of the following, not the ſame, year; they are from ſixteen to twenty-two months upon the ground. This produce allows of a great latitude as to gathering in, without any

[*b*] China boaſts much of the antiquity of its policy, and not without reaſon. They ſeem to be the elder brother of all the nations in Aſia, Africa, and Europe; we can trace, even in our records, which do not go back exceeding 2500 years, many notable things from thence, ſuch as the ſilk-worm, the ſugar-cane, the ſmall-pox, &c. America having no known land communication with them, and the intermediate navigation ſo long, that until the late improvements in navigation, America and the moon were much upon the ſame footing with reſpect to Europe, Aſia, and Africa. Hence it is, that upon our diſcoveries of America, exceepting ſpeech, which is natural to mankind, they ſeem to have been only a gregarious ſort of man-brutes; that is, they lived in tribes or herds and nations, without letters or arts further than to acquire the neceſſaries of life.

conſiderable

conſiderable loſs: if cut reaſonably and ſoon, they yield more juice, but leſs rich than if left ſtanding a few months longer: moreover, canes that might have been cut at the end of December, the planters are under a neceſſity to keep ſome of them growing until June, to furniſh provender, which is cane-tops, for their cattle. One gallon of cane liquor may yield about one pound three quarters of ſugar; a pot of 60 wt. of ſugar, may drop about three gallons molaſſes; one gallon molaſſes, if good, yields near one gallon rum or proof ſpirit; by claying ſugars loſe above two ſevenths, which runs into molaſſes: the difference upon the improvement of ſugars generally is in this proportion, *viz.* If muſcovadoe ſell at 25 *s. per cent.* wt. firſt clays ſell at 35, ſecond clays at 45, third clays at 55.

The manufacture is reckoned equal in value to the produce or cultivation; it has many chargeable articles, the mill, the boiling-houſe, the curing-houſe, ſtill-houſe, ſtore-houſe. Sugars are diſtinguiſhed into muſcavadoes, by the French called *Sugar bis or brute*, firſt, ſecond, and third clayings or refinings.

The cultivation of the cane; a length of few joints or knots laid flat or horizontally in holes; theſe holes are half a foot deep or better, three feet long, two feet wide; thirty good field negroes may hoe an acre a day; from each joint or oculus proceeds a reed of canes.

In Barbadoes the charge of cultivation and manufacture of ſugar (ſuppoſing the labour hired, as it happens in ſome particular circumſtances) is about 15 *l.* per acre, an acre at a medium is reckoned to produce 2500 *l.* wt. ſugar; therefore all exceeding 12 *s. per cent.* wt. in the price of ſugars, is clear profit to the planter. *N. B.* The rum defrays the ordinary expence of the plantation. They allow one good field negro for one acre canes, all labour included. The labour is very conſiderable (ſuppoſing the ground well cleared and brought to) *viz.* holling, planting, dunging, weeding, hilling, and cutting.

After the firſt purchaſe, the charge of a ſugar plantation negro, is very ſmall, not exceeding 40 *s. per annum.* for cloathing and feeding; when full cloathed, it is jacket and breeches for the men; jacket and petticoats for the women of Oznabrigs at 9*d.* per yard, and a coarſe red milled cap; the negroes of one plantation live in contiguous huts like an African town; are allowed ſome ſhort time, *viz.* Saturday afternoon, and Sundays, with a ſmall ſpot of ground to raiſe proviſions for themſelves; or, if new negroes, are allowed one pint of Guinea corn, one ſalt herring, or an equivalent per day in other proviſions of ſalt mackarel, dryed ſalt-fiſh, Indian corn, *&c.* Barbadoes requires a ſupply of 4000 or 5000 new negroes *per annum.*

The planters divide their cane-lands into thirds, *viz.* one third ſtanding canes, another third new-planted canes, and the other third fallow. In Barbadoes they plant every crop or ſecond crop; in the other iſlands they have ratoons, or ſecond, third, fourth, *&c.* crops from the ſame roots, but every ſucceeding year they yield leſs.

The quantity of ſugar imported *per annum* from the Britiſh ſugar-iſlands to Great-Britain is about 80,000 to 85,000 hogſheads, at 1000 wt. per hogſhead.

In imitation of the French, by an act of parliament 1739, Britiſh ſugars are allowed to be carried directly, without entring in Great-Britain, to any foreign port ſouth of Cape Finiſterre, under certain reſtrictions too long for our enumeration. About fifty years ago the French were chiefly ſupplied with ſugars from Great-Britain; at preſent they ſupply themſelves, and can afford to underſell us in all markets, the Mediterranean, Holland, Hamburgh, *&c.*

An exact minute liſt of the ſucceſſive governors in the ſeveral iſlands, is ſcarce of any hiſtorical uſe, unleſs where ſome things remarkable have happened during their government; therefore without making much enquiry, I ſhall only mention thoſe who eaſily occur.

The

The Weſt-India iſlands, together with Virginia, Maryland, and the Carolinas, are of vaſt profit to Great-Britain, by the labour of above three hundred thouſand ſlaves, maintained at a very ſmall charge. Here we obſerve a ſort of puritanical, groſs error, in the Utopian charter-conſtitution of the colony of Georgia, not allowing of the labour of ſlaves, and, by the experience of ſeveral years, this ſeems to be a principal reaſon of the ſettlement coming to nothing. By acts of their aſſemblies, ſlaves or negroes are real eſtate, but may be ſued for and recovered by perſonal action. If it were not for the negroes and Mulattoes born in theſe colonies reckoning themſelves natives, it would be impoſſible to keep ſo many able-bodied ſlaves in ſubjection by a few valetudinary white men: there have been, from time to time, inſurrections of negroes; but were diſcovered, and the ringleaders executed in the moſt cruel and deterring manner that could be contrived. Slaves in any felonious caſe are tried, not by a jury and grand ſeſſions, but by two juſtices, and three freeholders; a majority condemns them and orders execution. They generally value new negroes in this manner; a negro of 10 Æt. and of 40 Æt. are upon a par; from 20 to 25 Æt. is reckoned their prime; from 40 Æt. upwards, their value gradually decreaſes, as it does from 10 Æt. downwards.

Their voyages from London to Barbadoes or Leeward iſlands are ſix to ſeven weeks; but home to London not ſo much; when out of the trade-winds, the weſterly winds and a weſterly ſwell or ſea generally prevail.

In theſe iſlands the rains (within the tropics, the Indians number their years by rains; without the tropics, they reckon by ſucceſſion of winters) begin at the end of May, continue frequent for three months, and abate gradually to December. Hurricanes are from the middle of July to the middle of September: Barbadoes and the Leeward-iſlands are not much troubled

with hurricanes; but have at times violent guſts of wind, when the trade or eaſterly winds change per north (ſailors call it going againſt the ſun) to weſt, with a rolling ſea from the Leeward. The ſea breeze begins between eight and nine hours morning, increaſes till noon, retains its full ſtrength till three afternoon, and gradually decreaſes to about five in the evening.

Even in their breezes, the air ſeems to reſemble the ſuffocating breezes along the ſands of the deſerts of Libya, or like the ſteam and exhalation from burning charcoal: their air ſeems to be impregnated with ſome volatile acid ſulphur, which, to a very inconvenient degree, ruſts iron, and cankers other metals: it keeps the blood and ſpirits in a continued fret. In that climate I never could apply myſelf to a ſerious intenſe way of thinking exceeding half an hour; ſome conſtitutions are kept in a continued ſmall degree of a phrenzy; hence proceed the many raſh, paſſionate actions amongſt the Creoles. In the north continent of America, for two or three weeks in July (dog-days are only aſtrological cant names amongſt the vulgar; the hot weather of the ſeaſon, not the influence of the ſtars are in the caſe) the weather is ſometimes ſo hot, as to rarify the air too much; by relaxing its ſpring and action occaſions ſudden deaths, palſies, and the like nervous affections *(inaſſuetis)* in the human ſpecies and other animals; beginning of July, 1734, unuſually hot; for a continuance of ſome days, eight or nine people die ſuddenly: at the writing of this July 8, and 15, 16, little wind ſouth-weſterly, intenſely melting hot, but not ſulphureous and ſtifling as in the Weſt-Indies; ſcarce any thunder hitherto.

Beſides regular tides, they have uncertain windward and leeward currents: with a windward current, new and full moon tides flow about three feet; they flow longer than they ebb.

Their general ſupply for charges of government is a poll-tax upon negroes, and an exciſe upon liquors imported.

imported. They have a very good regulation, that no freeholder's perſon can be arreſted for debt; thus his labour is not loſt to the public by a time of confinement, and he cannot readily run in debt exceeding the value of his freehold. It is to be wiſhed, that this wiſe regulation may be introduced into our continent colonies.

The Spaniards and Portugueſe in their firſt American navigations, very providently put on ſhore upon the intervening head-lands and iſlands, ſome live ſtock, particularly neat cattle and ſwine, to multiply by propagation, towards a future refreſhment and ſupply of proviſions in their voyages.

The general food of the Europeans there, and of their ſlaves, comes next in courſe; it is moſtly vegetable [*i*].

Here we may previouſly obſerve, that the plants or vegetables between the tropics are ſo various from our European tribes, they ſeem to require a diſtinct ſyſtem of botany, or ought to be reduced to ſome order by annexing to each tribe of European plants, ſome corollaries of the affines; but without coming much into natural hiſtory, I am afraid ſome readers judge me too prolix.

The food of their negro ſlaves, and of the common labourers and white ſervants, may be divided into,

[*i*] Dr. Sloane, afterward Sir Hans Sloane, anno 1696, publiſhed a book *Catalogus plantarum quæ in inſula* Jamaica, Madera, Barbadoes, Nevis *et* St. Chriſtophori *naſcuntur; ſeu prodromus hiſtoriæ naturalis Jamaicæ, pars prima.* He has been ſufficiently burleſqued on this affair; he gives no account of any part of natural hiſtory excepting of plants, and of thoſe no deſcription, only pedantic long liſts of inſipid ſynonyma from various authors: Dr. De Ruiſeau of Barbadoes told me, that he was only eleven days upon that iſland, and pretends to give the natural hiſtory of the iſland. Thus de la Motray publiſhed ſeveral volumes in folio of his travels, amongſt others, his travels in New England; who to my certain knowledge reſided there only a few days, and was very conſtantly at home in his lodgings in Boſton, with company of no intelligence.

I. Their

I. Their bread kind. 1. Cerealia, [*k*] rice, [*l*] Guinea corn, [*m*] Indian corn. 2. Legumina, or pulſe kind, *viz.* [*n*] kidney-beans, [*o*] peas. 3. Roots, *viz.* [*p*] yams, [*q*] po-

[*k*] Rice is referred to the ſection of Carolina.

[*l*] *Milium Indicum album et nigrum Plinii*; *Camer*; Sorgum. tab. Guinea corn: it may be called a perennial, holding good many years from the ſame root; the grain is more nouriſhing and wholſome than Indian corn, and goes farther: the leaves and tops are good provender for cattle.

[*m*] *Mays granis aureis* T. *Frumentum Indicum Mays dictum.* C. B. P. Indican corn: this is a principal American bread kind: a further account of it is referred to the ſections of New-England.

[*n*] *Phaſeolus Indicus annuus Glaber, fructu tumidiore minore variorum colorum abſque hilo.* Kidney-beans, which in North-America are called Indian or French beans. This we refer to New-England.

Phaſeolus maximus perennis, floribus ſpicatis ſpecioſis, albis, ſiliquis brevibus latis, ſemen album hilo albido. Sloane. White bonaviſta, large as a common kidney-bean, much eat with boiled meat.

Do. *Semine rufo*, red bonaviſt.

Phaſeolus erectus minor, ſemine ſphærico albido, hilo nigro; *Piſum quartum ſeu piſa Virginiana.* C. B. P. Calavances, this properly belongs to the ſection of Virginia.

Do. *Fructu rubro*, red calavances.

[*o*] *Piſum hortenſe majus, flore fructuque albo.* C. B. P. Garden peas, from Europe planted thrive well.

Anagyris Indica leguminoſa, ſiliquis toroſis. Herm. Par. Bat. Pigeon Peas: this ſhrub, or ſmall tree, grows to twelve or fifteen feet high, and holds for ſome years; the fruit reſembles a *vicia*, called horſe peas: they eat it with boiled meat.

[*p*] *Volubulis nigra, radice alba aut purpuraſcente, maxima, tuberoſa, eſculenta, farinacea, caule membranulis extantibus alato, folio cordato nervoſo.* Sloane. *Inhama Luſitanorum Cluſii*, H. LXXVIII. probably it came from Guinea. It is the principal and beſt food of the negroes; hence it is that in general to eat, is called to yaam. This root grows ſometimes as big as a man's thigh; the reddiſh are more ſpungy; the white are beſt, and not ſo cloyingly ſweet as the Weſt-India potatoes; many of the beſt white people uſe it for bread; to me it was more agreeable than bread of wheat-flower.

[*q*] Potatoes of two different kinds or tribes.

Convolvulus radice tuberoſa eſculenta dulci, ſpinachiæ folio, flore magno, purpuraſcente, petula. Batatas Cluſii, H. LXXVIII. Weſt-India, Bermudas, Carolina potatoes; they are natives of America, but do not thrive to the northward of Maryland, becauſe of the coldneſs of the climate. Cluſius's deſcription and icons are good; it is planted from ſome ſmall incipient roots, or ſome ſlices of the large roots, having an

tatoes,

tatoes, [*r*] caſſada. 4. Fruits, *viz.* [*s*] plantanes, [*t*] bananes.

oculus or bud, in the ſame manner as the ſolanum tuberoſum, called Iriſh potatoes; the leaves ſpread along the ground like convolvulus; the flower is pentapetalous; the piſtillum becomes the fruit containing many ſmall ſeeds.

Do. *Radice rufuſcente.*

Do. *Radice alba.*

Do. *Radice cæruleſcente.*

Theſe continue permanently the ſame, are luſciouſly ſweet; when too ripe or long kept, they become fibrous or ſtringy; the yellow is the moſt common and beſt flavoured.

Solanum eſculentum tuberoſum, C. B. P. *Arachidna Theophraſti forte, papas Peruanorum Cluſii*, H. LXXIX. his icons are very good. Iriſh potatoes; they grow kindly all over America; in the northern parts the froſt takes them ſoon; the roots are a number of tubers of various ſizes connected by filaments, ſtalks, two or three feet erect; the leaves alternate, conjugated with an impar, of a dark green, the whole habit hairy; the flowers monopetalous in umbels whitiſh, fruit ſoft, with many flat ſeeds; the large bulbs are uſed for food; the ſmall bulbs are committed to the earth again, and are called ſeed potatoes; an Iriſh idiom, roots for ſeed. They are planted in the ſpring, and dug up in September for uſe. Gaſpar Bauhine ſays, they were brought from Virginia to England, thence to France and the other countries of Europe. Cluſius thinks it was carried from New Spain to Old Spain, and from thence to Italy and the Netherlands, and propagated at preſent all over Europe.

Do. *Radice alba*, whitiſh potatoes.

Do. *Radice rufuſcente*, reddiſh potatoes.

Do. *Radice flaveſcente*, potatoes with a bluiſh caſt.

Do. *Flore albo*, H. R. P. French potatoes; theſe are flatter, larger, leſs lobated, of a finer texture; this at preſent is much admired, does not yield ſo well, is not ſo eaſily hurt by the froſt.

[*r*] *Ricinus minor viticis obtuſo folio, caule verrucoſo, flore pentapetalo albido, ex cujus radice tuberoſa (ſucco venenato turgido) Americani panem conficiunt*, Caſſada. The Engliſh, after it is well dried, grind it and bake it into cakes. The French eat it in crumbles, called farine, or farine de Manihot; they victual their Weſt-India coaſting veſſels with this.

[*s*] *Muſa fructu cucumerino longiori*, Plumer. *Muſa caudice viridi, fructu longiori ſucculento Anguloſo*, Sloane. *Palma humilis longis latiſque foliis*, plantanes. This tree grows from ſixteen to twenty feet high; a very large, firm, long palm-leaf, uſed in thatching of huts, and good bedding for the poor; boiled or roaſted it is uſed in place of bread.

[*t*] *Muſa caudice maculato fructu recto rotundo, breviore odorato. Hort. Beamont*, Bananas. Does not differ much from the former.

II. Fiſh

II. Fiſh and fleſh are moſtly a foreign importation, *viz.* ſalt herrings from Scotland and Ireland; one barrel of herrings is reckoned equivalent to two quintals dried ſalt-fiſh, dried refuſe ſalt-fiſh (cod, haddock, haake, and polluck) from New-England and Newfoundland, barreled ſalt mackarel from New-England; they ſometimes uſe the country freſh produce of [*u*] flying fiſh, and [*w*] land-crabs, and [*x*] ſoldiers. They ſeldom are allowed any Iriſh ſalt-beef; it is reſerved for the planters or landlords, their managers, overſeers, and other white ſervants. Some negroes are allowed for their own account and profit to raiſe young pork (Weſt-India young pork is delicious) and poultry, which they carry to market, but ſeldom eat of it. Their moſt delicious diſh for a regale, is a pepper-pot or negro-pot compounded of ſalt-fiſh, ſalt-fleſh of any kind, grain and pulſe of all kinds, much ſeaſoned with [*y*] capſicum or Guinea-pepper; it is ſomething like a Spaniſh oleo, or Newfoundland ſhowdder.

[*u*] *Hirundo*, Cateſby: the flying-fiſh, called alſo by the native herrings. By a pair of large fins it bears itſelf up in the air for a ſhort time, and to a ſmall diſtance.

[*w*] *Cancer terreſtris cuniculos ſub terra agens*, Sloane. They are very plenty, and good food, called land-crabs.

[*x*] *Cancellus terreſtris*, Carib. The hermit crab, or ſoldier, from their red colour. Their fore-part and claws are cruſtaceous; their hinder part ſoft, only a membranous integument, which they ſecure in the empty ſhells of ſizable buccinums, and carry the ſhell along with them, not as an original property but as a derelict.

[*y*] There are many kinds of capſicums; we ſhall only mention three; they are a monapetalous, membranous fruit.

Capſicum ſiliqua lata et rugoſa, Park. Bell or long-pepper; it is annual, has a longer leaf than moſt capſicums; is larger than a walnut, and when firſt ripe, red, and membranous. Planted in New-England; it comes to maturity, but is pickled when green.

Capſicum minus fructu parvo pyramidali erecto, Sloane. *Piper Indicum minimum, turrectis ſiliquis oblongis erectis parvis.* This is much uſed in Barbadoes, and is called Barbadoes piemento, or Barbary pepper.

Capſicum minus fructu rotundo erecto parvo acerrimo, Sloane. Bird-pepper. Theſe laſt two dried and powdered, are intenſely hot (almoſt cauſtic) and ſold over America by the name of Cayenne-butter, or Surinam pepper.

The

The provender for their neat cattle and horſes beſides cane-tops, and tops of Guinea corn already mentioned, [z] is Scotch graſs.

Scorpions, ſcolopendras or forty legs, chigoes, ſand-flies, vena medini, or Guinea worm, muſketoes, ants, bed-bugs cimices lectularii, *&c.* very troubleſome and great nuſances in theſe climates, we ſhall not deſcribe, having already tired the readers who have no notion of natural hiſtory: but we cannot omit that great nuſance to navigation called the [a] worm, pernicious eſpecially to new ſhips; at firſt only in the Weſt-Indies, but have from thence been carried with ſhips, and do propagate in Carolinia, Virgina, Maryland. They have got ſo far north as New-England, and lately have done conſiderable damage in the port of Newport, colony of Rhode-Iſland: it is to be hoped, that a ſevere freezing winter may deſtroy them, as it did in Holland anno 1730, when thoſe worms, by eating and honey-combing of the piles of their dikes, between the higheſt and loweſt water-marks, put the country in danger of being undammed or drowned.

I inſenſibly deviate into ſomething of the natural hiſtory of theſe countries; but as it is not within the compaſs of my original deſign, which was their current and political hiſtory in a ſummary way; I ſhall only briefly relate and deſcribe by the proper claſſical names (which hitherto has not been done by authors) that part of their natural produce which is uſed in common food, in delicacies, and as commodities in trade.

[z] *Panicum vulgare ſpica multiplici aſperiuſcula*, T. *Gramen paniceum ſpica diviſa*, C. B. P. Scots graſs: perhaps ſo called, becauſe plenty in the diſtrict of Barbadoes called Scotland; and not as a plant or herbage from Scotland in Great-Britain: it is perennial, and affords many cuttings or crops *per annum*.

[a] *Terredo* or *Xylophagus marinus, tubulo concholidis*, from one inch to one foot long; the extremity of their head reſembles a double bit of that kind of borer called an augur.

1. The

1. The common food is moſtly already mentioned, to theſe we may add ducks of ſeveral kinds, plover, wild [*b*] pigeons, wild hogs, [*c*] lobſters, [*d*] cray-fiſh, [*e*] river-crabs, [*f*] ſea-crabs, the [*g*] ſea-tortoiſe or turtle as the ſailors call them.

2. Some of their delicacies are many ſorts of cucumbers, melons, and the like of the gourd kind; [*h*] citrons [*i*] oranges, [*k*] lemons, ſugar-cane already men-

[*b*] *Palumbus migratorius.* Cateſby. *Palumbus torquatus.* Aldrovand. The wild pigeon, pigeon of paſſage, or ring dove: theſe are plenty at certain ſeaſons all over America, and of great benefit in feeding the poor. The French call them *ramier*; the Dutch call them *ringle duif, wilde duif, boom duif.*

[*c*] *Aſtacus marinus*; lobſter.

[*d*] *Aſtacus fluviatilis*, the cray-fiſh.

[*e*] *Cancer fluviatilis*; river crab. Theſe two periodically quit their old cruſtaceous exuviæ, and at that time have a kind of ſickneſs (as we obſerve in ſilk-worms in their ſeniums, ſo called) and do diſgorge from their ſtomach ſome *lapilli, calculi*, or bezoar called *oculi cancri*, or crabs eyes. *N. B.* The teſtacea ſo called, *viz* bezoars, corals, corallines, crabs eyes, and crabs claws are inſipid, uſeleſs medicines; they are generally exhibited in ſmall doſes; but if given in doſes of ten times the quantity, they do no good nor no hurt, as I have frequently tried; if in a continued uſe and in large quantities, they have the ſame bad effect, that chalk, clay, and the like have in the *pica virginum.*

[*f*] *Cancer marinus chelis rubris.*

Cancer marinus chelis nigris.

[*g*] *Teſtudo marina.* They are two weeks in coitu; hatch their eggs in the ſand; they are caught either by turning them upon their back, or by harpooning: they are of various kinds, I ſhall mention only two ſorts.

Teſtudo marina viridis. Green turtle, ſo called from the colour of its fat; this is reckoned wholeſome and delicious food.

Teſtudo caretta. Rochefort. hiſt. *des Antilles*; hawks-bill turtle, ſo called from the form of its mouth; the outſide plates or ſcales of its boney covering, workmen call tortoiſe-ſhell.

[*h*] *Malus citrea ſive medica.* Raij. H. The citron tree, or *pome-citron: Follis laurinis rigidis*, like the orange-tree, but without an appendix. The fruit is larger and rougher than a lemon, with a thick rind which is made into ſuccades or ſweet-meats, and is uſed in making citron-water, called by the French *Peau de barbade*; they grow moſtly in Scotland diſtrict of Barbadoes, and are ſold a rial per couple.

[*i*] *Aurantium medulla dulci vulgare.* Ferrar. Heſp. Common

tioned;

tioned; cocoa we refer to the paragraph of produce for trade and [*l*] cocoa, [*m*] cabbage-tree, [*n*] pine-apple, ſo called from its reſemblance of the fruit or cones of ſome pine-trees.

orange: perennial large rigid leaves, with a heart-like appendix; the fruit is fragrant, of a reddiſh yellow colour, and tough peel.

Aurantium acri medulla vulgare. Ferrar. Heſp. *Aurantia malus.* J. B. Seville, or ſour orange. This is the medicinal orange.

Aurantium Sinenſe. Ferrar. Heſp. China orange, is eat only for pleaſure.

Aurantium ſylveſtre medulla acri. T. *Aurantia ſylveſtris.* J. B. *fructu limonis puſillo, limas de Oviedo.* The lime-tree; this is more pungent and leſs agreeable, and not ſo wholeſome as the lemon; it is much uſed in the American beverage called punch.

Aurantium maximum. Ferrarij, Shadock-tree. It is ſometimes large as a human head, with a thick rind, a flat diſagreeable taſte to my palate.

[*k*] *Limon vulgaris.* Ferrar. Heſp. *Malus limonia acida,* C. B. P. Sour limons; like the others of this kind, has perennial thick ſtiff green leaves, but without an appendix: the fruit is more oval than the orange, and with a nipple-like proceſs at the extremity or end, of a pale yellow; it is the moſt delicious ſowering for that julep-faſhion drink called punch.

Limon dulci medulla vulgaris. Ferrar. Heſp. Sweet limon; it is not in much eſteem.

[*l*] *Palma indica nucifera coccus dicta,* Raij H. *Palma nucifera arbor,* J. B. Cocoa-tree; palmetto leaves very large; every year it emits a racemus of cocoa-nuts, whereof ſome hold a pint of cool, pleaſant lymph or drink; this nut remains upon the tree good for many years.

[*m*] *Palma altiſſima non ſpinoſa, fructu pruniformi, minore racemoſa ſparſo,* Sloane. *Palma quinta ſeu Americana fructu racemoſo,* C. B. P. cabbage-tree. The wood is very ſpungy or pithy; grows very tall; every year near its top, about Midſummer, is emitted a large racemus of flowers, which make a good pickle.

[*n*] *Ananas aculeatus fructu pyramidato, carne aureo.* Plumer. Pine-apple; ſee T. I. R. *Tab.* 426, 427, 428. where it is moſt elegantly delineated. They plant it as artichokes are planted in Europe. It is a moſt delicious fruit, not luſcious, but a ſmart briſk fragrant ſweetneſs; it may be called the ambroſia of the gods: but as the higheſt ſweets degenerate into the moſt penetrating and vellicating acids; ſo this, if eat in quantities, occaſions moſt violent cholic pains; for the ſame reaſon, ſugar and honey are cholicy.

3. The

3. Produce that are commodities in trade [*o*] cocoa, [*p*] zingiber or ginger, [*q*] indigo, [*r*] cotton-wool, [*s*] a-

[*o*] Cacao, Raij. H. *Amygdalus ſexta ſeu Amygdalis ſimilis Guatimalenſis.* C. B. P. Cacao-tree: at a diſtance it reſembles a ſmall European tilia, or lime-tree. It is planted from the ſeed or nut. Diſtances five feet; after three years it begins to bear, and may continue to bear from twelve to twenty years: riſes to the height of twenty feet or more, flowers and fruit at the ſame time, not from the ends of the twigs, but from the trunks of the body and large branches of the tree: the flowers are whitiſh, *five petala*, without a calix; the fruit when ripe reſembles a large cucumber, is red or yellow, containing twenty to forty cocoa nuts in a pulp. In ſome parts of New Spain they are uſed as money for ſmall change, in Guatimala, Comanas, *&c.* Theſe nuts made into paſte called chocolate, and this diſſolved in boiling water, is become a very general ſorbition or liquid food for nouriſhment and pleaſure.

[*p*] Zingiber, C. B. P. ginger. A tuberous root as an iris, reed or flag-leaves; the flower is of five petala, anomalous, as if bilabiated, *fructu trigono, triloculari.* They do not allow it to flower, becauſe it exhauſts the root. It is planted from cuts of the roots, and continues twelve months in the ground; it requires ſix or ſeven weeks to cure it, or dry it, in the ſun as the French do; in Barbadoes they ſcald it, or ſcrape it, to prevent its ſprouting: it is a very great produce, but forces and impoveriſhes the land very much.

[*q*] *Anonis Americana folio latiori ſubrotundo.* T. *Annil ſive indigo Guadaloupenſis.* H. R. P. Indigo. A pinnated leaf, red papilionaceous flowers, ſeed reſembles cabbage-ſeed. It is planted by throwing ten or twelve ſeeds into each hole; after three months it is fit to be cut, and cut again ſeveral times or crops in the year. Indigo is the expreſſion from the leaves macerated in water, and dried in the ſun; the roots afford crops for ſeveral years. There are ſeveral degrees of its goodneſs, *viz.* copper, purple, blue, iron-coloured the worſt. They have lately, with good ſucceſs, gone into this cultivation in South-Carolina, and have three crops *per annum.*

[*r*] *Xylon Braſilianum.* J. B. *Goſſipium Braſilianum flore flavo.* Herm. Par. Bat. Cotton. A ſhrub eight or ten feet high, reſembling the rubus or raſpberry at a diſtance. An acre of cotton ſhrubs may yearly produce one ct. wt. cotton; the poorer ſort of planters follow it, requiring no great upſet, and is a ready money commodity.

Xylon lana flaveſcente Yellow cotton.

[*s*] *Aloe Dioſcoridis et aliorum.* Its leaves are like thoſe of the jucca; from their juice is the aloes hepatica or Barbadoes, of a dark liver colour, and nauſeous ſmell. The ſuccotrine-aloes of the ſhops comes from the Levant in ſkins; Barbadoes or horſe aloes is put up in large gourds.

loes,

loes, [*t*] caſſia fiſtula, [*u*] tamarinds, [*w*] lignum vitæ, [*x*] white cinnamon, [*y*] coffee, [*z*] fuſtick, [*a*] braziletto, campeachy wood or logwood, nicaraga wood, by the Dutch called ſtockfiſh-hout; theſe laſt two commodities

[*t*] *Caſſia fiſtula Americana:* Caſſia. A large tree, winged leaves reſembling the walnut, yellow five petal flowers; the piſtillum becomes a long round woody pod, inch diameter and under, a foot long more or leſs, inſide is divided into many tranſverſe cells, covered with a black ſweet pulp, and in each cell a flat ſmooth oval ſeed. The *Caſſia fiſtula Alexandrina*, C. B. P. which comes from the Levant, is preferable to that of the Weſt-Indies.

[*u*] *Tamarindus.* Ray H. A large tree with pinnated leaves, no impar; the flowers are roſaceous and grow in cluſters; the piſtillum becomes a flatiſh, woody pod, three or four inches long, in two or three protuberances, containing a ſtringy dark acid pulp with hard flat ſeeds. The Tamarinds from the Levant and Eaſt-Indies are of a better kind.

[*w*] *Guiacum, lignum ſenatum, ſive lignum vitæ* Park. Pock wood. A large tree, ſmooth bark, ponderous wood, in the middle, of a dark colour, aromatic taſte; ſmall pinnated leaves, no impar; flowers of ſix petala in umbels; the ſeed veſſel reſembles ſhepherds purſe. In the Weſt-Indies they call it junk-wood. It was formerly reckoned a ſpecific in the venereal pox; it has loſt that reputation, but is ſtill uſed in ſcorbutic ails, and its roſin in rheumatiſms.

[*x*] *Ricinoides oleagini folio, cortex elutheriæ,* ſo called from one of the Bahama iſlands, almoſt exhauſted; it is a grateful aromatic bitter, gives a good perfume; bay-tree leaves, berries in branches; this bark is of a yellowiſh white, rolled up in quills like cinamon, but much thicker; it is uſed in place of the *cortex Winterianus.*

[*y*] *Jaſminum Arabicum caſtaneæ folio, flore albo odoratiſſimo, cujus fructus, coffy, in officinis dicuntur nobis.* Comm. coffee-tree Britannis Plukn. The Dutch Eaſt-India company carried ſome plants from Mecca, N. lat. 21 D. in Arabia-felix to Java, and from thence to Amſterdam in Holland, where the berries may be ſeen in perfection; lately it is cultivated in Surinam, Martinico, and Jamaica.

[*z*] *Morus fructu viridi, ligno ſulphureo tinctorio, Buxei coloris, lignum Americanum*; fuſtic wood. It is a large tree, leaf like the elm, grows in the manner of aſh tree leaves.

[*a*] *Pſeudo-ſantalum croceum.* Sloane; braziletto uſed in dying. It is almoſt exhauſted in the Bahama-iſlands.

Thus, I hope, I have given an exact and regular account (ſuch accounts are wanted) of the uſeful part of the produce of the Britiſh Weſt-India iſlands under the heads of food, delicacies, or friandiſes, and commodities in trade: I am ſenſible, that it will not ſuit the taſte of ſome of our readers, therefore, henceforward ſhall not diſtaſte them much with the like excurſions.

or die-woods are not the produce of our Weſt-India iſlands, but are imported to Jamaica from the Spaniſh main.

The general ſupply for charges of government in all our Weſt-India iſlands is a poll-tax upon negroes, and exciſe upon liquors.

Generally for every twenty to thirty negroes, a planter is obliged to keep one white man; two artificers or handicrafts men are allowed equal to three common labourers; 120 head of cattle require alſo one white man.

The regular troops from Great-Britain to the Weſt-India iſlands are allowed by their aſſemblies for further ſubſiſtence per week 20*s.* to a commiſſion officer, and 3*s.* and 9*d.* to the other men.

In ſome of theſe iſlands, the nominal price of the ſame ſugars differ; for inſtance, ſugar per ct. wt. if paid in ready caſh, at 16*s.* in goods is 18*s.* in paying off old debts 20*s.*

The four and a half per ct. upon the produce exports of Bardadoes and the Leeward-iſlands, granted to the crown by their ſeveral aſſemblies in perpetuity, ſeems to be in lieu of quit-rents. L. Baltimore, ſome few years ago in Maryland, to make an experiment of this nature, procured an act of aſſembly for 3*s.* 6*d.* per hogſhead tobacco in room of quit-rents: it was found inconvenient, and quit-rents were allowed to take place again.

Being prolix in the general account of the ſugar iſlands, will render the accounts of the particular iſlands more ſuccinct.

BARBADOES.

BARBADOES is the moſt windward of all the iſlands in or near the gulph of Mexico; it lies in about 13 D. N. lat. 59 D. 30 M. W. from London, by the obſervations of Capt. Candler [*b*]. Sir William Curteens, an

[*b*] Capt. Candler, in the Launceſton man of war, was ſent out anno 1717, by the board of admiralty, to aſcertain by good obſervations the latitudes and longitudes of the Britiſh Weſt-India iſlands, with the reſpective variations of the compaſs at that time.

adventurer

adventurer in trade, anno 1624, in ſailing home to England from Fernambuc of the Brazils, at that time in the poſſeſſion of the Dutch, touched at this iſland, and, as it is ſaid, gave the name Barbadoes, from large quantities of a bearded tree [*c*] growing there, it was overſpread with a ſort of Purſlain [*d*]: Here he found ſome human bones, but not a living man: abundance of ſwine.

The earl of Carliſle, a court favourite, in the beginning of the reign of Charles I, had a grant of it from the crown. This iſland continued in the poſſeſſion of the proprietary and his heirs about thirty years. Anno 1661, the crown purchaſed it of lord Kinnoul, heir to the earl of Carliſle; their family name was Hay, and allows to the heirs 1000*l. per annum* out of the four and a half *per cent.* duty.

The greateſt length of the iſland is about twenty-ſix miles; its greateſt width about fourteen miles; contents not exceeding 100,000 acres. Every freeholder is obliged to keep a plan of his land atteſted by a ſworn ſurveyor: ten acres, valued at 20*s. per annum* per acre, qualifies a voter in elections.

At firſt they planted tobacco, ſome indigo, ſome cotton, and cut fuſtic a die-wood; at preſent they plant no tobacco, no indigo. Their firſt ſugar-canes they had from the Brazils anno 1645: this iſland was generally ſettled by cavaliers in the time of the civil wars in England.

[*c*] *Strians arbor Americana, Arbuti foliis non ſerratis, fructu Piſi magnitudine, funiculis e ramis ad terram demiſſis, prolifera.* Pluk. Barbadoes fig-tree. It is a large tree, with a laurel or pear-tree leaf; the fruit adheres to the trunks of the body, and great branches large as the top of a man's finger, containing ſmall ſeeds fig-faſhion.

[*d*] *Portulaca Curaſavica procumbens folio ſubrotundo.* Parad. Bat. Not much differing from that Purſlain, which is a troubleſome ſpreading weed in many of our gardens at Boſton in New-England.

The governor's ſtyle in his commiſſion, is captain-general and chief-governor of the iſlands of Barbadoes, St. Lucia, St. Vincent's, Dominica, and the reſt of his Majeſty's iſland colonies and plantations in America, known by the name of the Caribbee-iſlands lying and being to windward of Guardeloupe: excepting Barbadoes; the other iſlands are called Neutrals[*e*], becauſe the government and property of them, hitherto has not been ſettled by any ſolemn authentic treaty between Great-Britain and France.

In the time of the civil wars, Barbadoes and Virginia were ſettled by cavaliers and ruffians (excuſe my coupling of them, I mean no reflection.) In the ſummer 1650, lord Willoughby proclaimed king Charles II, in Barbadoes, and adminiſtred the government in his name: but in January, anno 1651-2, he ſurrendered Barbadoes and the neighbouring iſlands to Sir George Aſcew admiral for the parliament. About the ſame time Virginia ſubmitted to the parliament.

Their legiſlature conſiſts of three negatives, *viz.* the governor, the council (their full complement is twelve) and houſe of repreſentatives (in all our colonies, in a particular manner called the aſſembly) compoſed of twenty-two deputies, that is, two from each of the eleven pariſhes without wages, or any allowance; the eldeſt counſellor in the pariſh is generally appointed the returning officer. Their aſſemblies are annual.

[*e*] Anno 1722, a patent paſſed the great ſeal of Great-Britain, granting the government and property of St. Vincent and St. Lucia, in the Weſt-India Caribbee-iſlands, to the duke of Montague: he attempted a ſettlement at a conſiderable charge, but was drove off, by the French, from Martinique, becauſe of its being a neutral iſland not adjuſted. This iſland is about ſeven leagues eaſt of Martinique, and about twenty-five leagues weſt from Barbadoes.

Upon St. Vincent's, are ſubſiſting ſome aboriginal Indians: as alſo a community of negroes, which began from the negro cargo of a Guinea ſhip caſt away there, and daily increaſes by the acceſſion of runaway negroes from Barbadoes.

At Dominique is a large tribe of aboriginal Indians; they affect the French moſt.

Their

Their courts of judicature. The courts of error, chancery, and probate of wills, are in the governor and council. The courts of common law are in five diſtricts, *viz.* Bridgetown diſtrict conſiſts of three pariſhes, the others of two pariſhes each. Each court has one judge and four aſſiſtants.

Only one collection or cuſtom-houſe office at Bridgetown: there are three more entry and delivery ports, *viz.* Oſtines, Holetown, and Speights. This collection is under the inſpection of a ſurveyor-general of the cuſtoms reſiding at Antigua.

Their currency is ſilver, Mexico ſtandard by weight, whereof 17*d.* half *d.* wt. paſſes for 6*s.* Upwards of forty years ſince they borrowed from New-England, by a projection of Mr. Woodbridge, the fallacious ſcheme of a public paper-credit, or paper currency; but by orders from the court of England it was ſoon ſuppreſſed, and governor Crow had an inſtruction TO REMOVE FROM THE COUNCIL, AND ALL OTHER PLACES OF TRUST, ANY WHO HAD BEEN CONCERNED IN THE LATE PAPER-CREDIT. Theſe bills, ſoon after their emiſſion, fell forty *per cent.* below ſilver, and occaſioned a great confuſion and convulſion in the affairs of the iſland.

Anno 1717, peaceable times, when I was in Barbadoes, all along its lee-ſhore was a breaſt-work and trench, in which at proper places were twenty-nine forts and batteries, having 308 cannon mounted. The windward ſhore is ſecured by high rocks, ſteep cliffs, and foul ground. Anno 1736, in the iſland were 17,680 whites; whereof 4326 were fencible men, diſpoſed into one troop of guards, two regiments of horſe, and ſeven regiments of foot. The beginning of king William's war, Barbadoes furniſhed from 700 to 800 militia [*f*], with ſome militia

[*f*] Sir Francis Wheeler 1693, with a ſquadron of ſhips, two regiments of regular troops from England, and ſome militia from Barbadoes and the Leeward-iſlands, made deſcents upon the French iſlands

from our Leeward-iſlands to join the regular troops and ſquadron from England againſt the neighbouring French iſlands.

There may be about 80,000 negroes in Barbadoes, may ſhip off about 30,000 hogſheads of ſugar, beſides ginger ſcalded and ſcraped, cotton-wool, and aloes. Their duty of four and a half *per cent.* in ſpecie upon produce exported, is perpetual, and given immediately to the crown's diſpoſal: out of this the governor has 2000*l.* *per annum*, ſalary, beſides large gratuities and perquiſites. The tax on negroes, mills and pot-kills, is generally 10,000*l.* *per annum*; exciſe upon liquors imported 7000*l.* *per annum*, for defraying the ordinary charges of government.

Returned proteſted bills of exchange, are allowed ten *per cent.* and all charges.

They generally worſhip, or profeſs to worſhip, after the mode of the church of England; no diſſenting congregation, a few quakers excepted; New-England had ſome of their firſt ſeminary of quakers from Barbadoes.

Some looſe account of their governors. Lord Willoughby of Parham, at the reſtoration, was appointed governor of Barbadoes under the earl of Carliſle; he was at the ſame time governor-general of the Leeward-iſlands, and a proprietor of Antigua.

Upon the reſtoration James Kendal, Eſq; was appointed governor.

Upon Kendal's returning to England, colonel Francis Ruſſel, brother to the earl of Orford, came over governor, with a regiment of regular troops, and ſubſiſted by the country; he died anno 1695, and Bond was preſident until July 1698.

April 2; they landed in Martinique at Col de ſac Marine, plundered and came on board again. April 17, they landed at St. Pierre, did nothing, and returned to Barbadoes; and from thence to New-England; they unluckily imported a malignant fever (from 1692 to 1698 Barbadoes continued ſickly) from thence to Newfoundland, and home to England.

1698,

1698, Ralph Grey, Eſq; brother to the Earl of Tankerville arrived governor; he went to England for his health anno 1701, and John Farmer, Eſq; was preſident and commander in chief.

1703, Sir Bevil Grenville, appointed governor; his home ſalary was increaſed from 1200 *l.* to 2000 *l. per annum*, that he might not deſire gratuities from the country; they alſo built for him a governor's houſe in Pilgrim's plantation.

1707, Milford Crow, a London merchant, ſucceeded him.

1711, Robert Lowther, Eſq; ſucceeded, and was continued upon the acceſſion of king George I; by reaſon of ſeveral complaints (the chief complainer was the Rev. Mr. Gordon of Bridgetown, an eminent Martinico trader) he was ordered into the cuſtody of a meſſenger, and called to account in the proper courts of Weſtminſter-hall, which coſt him a conſiderable ſum of money. This affair of my name-ſake general Douglaſs, of the Leeward-iſlands, may be a warning to all governors, that they are liable to be called to account upon ſmall ſuggeſtions when their friends die, or are otherways out of place.

After a preſidentſhip of ſome continuance; Henry Worſley, Eſq; (who for ſome time had been Britiſh envoy at the court of Portugal) anno 1721, was appointed governor, beſides his ſalary of 2000 *l.* out of the four and a half *per cent*, by his fineſſe the aſſembly voted him 6000 *l. per annum*, during his government: they ſoon found, that this was more than they could afford. There intervened two commiſſions which did not take effect, *viz.* Lord Irwin, who died of the ſmall-pox before he ſet out from England; and lord Belhaven, upon his paſſage aboard the Royal-Anne galley, was caſt away and drowned near the Lizard-point.

After this Sir Olando Bridgman and others were appointed, but never in poſſeſſion.

L. How was a much eſteemed governor, and died in Barbadoes.

1742, Sir Thomas Robinſon, of him we have not much to ſay.

1747, Arrives Mr. Grenville governor; over and above his home ſalary, they allow him 3000 *l. per annum*, during his adminiſtration, and to his ſatisfaction.

Britiſh Leeward *iſlands.*

THESE were firſt diſcovered in the ſecond voyage of Columbus, the Spaniards deſpiſed them, and made no ſettlements there: they were ſeverally ſettled by the Engliſh at different times, and are all under the command and inſpection of one governor-general; in each of the four iſlands of Antigua, Montſerrat, Nevis, and St. Chriſtophers, there is commiſſioned from Great-Britain a lieutenant-governor; in the ſmall iſlands are militia captains, or capitaine de quartier, commiſſioned by the governor-general.

The general's commiſſion is in this ſtyle; captain-general and commander in chief of the iſlands of Antigua, Montſerrat, Nevis, St. Chriſtopher's, and all the Caribbee-iſlands from Guardeloupe to St. John de Porto Rico. In the abſence of the captain-general and lieutenant-general (the lieutenant-general reſides at St. Kit's) formerly the commander of Nevis, as being the oldeſt ſettlement, was commander in chief of theſe Caribbee-iſlands; but by a new regulation, the ſenior of the lieutenant-governors is to command. Each of the four iſlands has a diſtinct legiſlature, of a governor, council, and repreſentatives.

Out of the four and a half *per cent.* duty on produce exported, are paid ſalaries *per annum* to the governor-general 1200 *l.* to each of the four lieutenant-governors 200 *l.* ſterling. The preſent general Matthews obtained an inſtruction, that conſidering the 1200 *l. per annum* was not a ſufficient and honourable ſupport, he was allowed

lowed to accept of additional gratuity ſalaries, and the reſpective iſlands ſettled upon him during his adminiſtration, *viz.* Antigua 1000 *l.* Nevis 300 *l.* St. Kit's 800 *l. per annum*; Montſerrat did not ſettle the gratuity, but does generally give about 300 *l.* yearly: the perquiſites are of the ſame nature with Barbadoes.

Anno 1736, in all the Leeward-iſlands were 10,520 whites; whereof fencible men in Antigua 1500, in St. Kit's 1340, in Nevis 300, in Montſerrat 360, in Anguilla 80, in Spaniſh-town, or Virgin Gorda 120.

Soon after the reſtoration, Lord Willoughby of Parham was governor-general of the Leeward-iſlands, and at the ſame time governor of Barbadoes.

Sir William Stapleton.

King James II appointed Sir Nathanael Johnſon; upon the revolution he abdicated and withdrew to Carolina, and was ſucceeded by

Chriſtopher Codrington, Eſq; he died 1698, and was ſucceeded by his ſon Chriſtopher Codrington, Eſq; the greateſt proprietor in Antigua, a great proprietor in Barbadoes, and ſole proprietor of the iſland of Barbuda. This family has been a great benefactor in pious uſes and in ſeminaries for learning.

Sir William Mathews ſucceeded Col. Codrington anno 1704; he died ſoon.

1706 arrived for governor-general Col. Parks. He had been Aid de Camp to the moſt renowned duke of Marlborough, and carried to the court of England the news of the critical and great victory at Hochſtet, near the Danube in Germany; anno 1710, he was murdered by an inſurrection of the people or inhabitants; he is ſaid to have been a vicious man, eſpecially in his amours with the planters wives.

He was ſucceeded by Col. Walter Douglaſs, who was ſuperſeded anno 1714, and in the courts of Weſtminſter-hall, was called to account for mal-adminiſtration; and Nov. 19, 1716, by the court of King's-bench, was fined 500 *l.* ſterling, and five years impriſonment.

1714,

1714, Col. Hamilton appointed governor.

To him ſucceeded general Hart.

1726, To general Hart ſucceeded Thomas Pit, Lord Londonderry; he died in Antigua September, 1729.

Lord Forbes, next Col. Coſby were appointed.

April 1733, Matthews, formerly lieutenant-general, is appointed captain-general, and is at preſent continued in the adminiſtration.

During theſe forty years laſt and upwards, a regiment of regular troops from Great-Britain, has been ſtationed in the Leeward-iſlands, always very incomplete; our troops, as alſo the French in the plantations, generally ſpeaking, are only corps of officers at a very great charge.

Their medium, is produce at ſettled prices from time to time; their caſh conſiſts of black-dogs (old French ſols pieces) nine black-dogs make a ryal, eight ryals make a light or current piece of eight, ten ryals make a heavy piece of eight.

ANTIGUA began to ſettle about anno 1632; generally ſettled by the moderate or low church, afterwards called Whigs. May contain about 56,000 acres, 20,000 negroes. No river; ſcarce any good ſprings of freſh water; they generally uſe ciſtern water. The negro poll-tax is generally very high; exciſe upon liquors imported about 2000 *l. per annum.*

Their aſſembly, or lower houſe, conſiſts of twenty-four repreſentatives from eleven diſtricts, *viz.* Four from the diſtrict of St. John's, and two from each of the other diſtricts. Six pariſhes; each miniſter or rector is allowed as ſalary 16,000 wt. Muſcovado ſugar, with a manſion-houſe and glebe-land of ten or twelve acres. Only one collection with four entry and delivery ports, *viz.* St. John's, Parham, Falmouth, and Willoughby-Bay: the collector keeps his office at St. John's; where alſo reſides the ſurveyor-general of the cuſtoms of all the iſlands,

Jamaica

Jamaica excepted. About 250 veſſels enter in *per annum*.

Courts of juſtice. For common law, there are two precincts, St. John's and Falmouth, each one judge, and four aſſiſtants; there is alſo a court-merchant, being a ſummary way of diſpatching debts, owing to tranſient traders. The governor and council are the judges of errors, chancery, and probates.

St. John's is a good harbour, ſmooth water, with good wharfs; Engliſh harbour, lately fortified by the care of commodore Charles Knowles, is a ſafe retreat for king's ſhips and others.

Chief produce is ſugar and ſome cotton; no indigo.

MONTSERRAT is a ſmall hilly iſland, ſettled moſtly by Iriſh, two thirds Roman Catholics; about 4500 negroes; their whole annual charge of government does not much exceed 1500 *l. per annum:* not above five veſſels *per annum* export their produce. One collection at Plymouth, have three entry and delivery-ports, *viz.* Plymouth, Old-harbour, and Kers-bay: three pariſhes; four diviſions; each diviſion ſends two repreſentatives, being eight in all; the pariſh miniſters have 130 *l. per annum* from the country-treaſury. Two regiments of foot, one troop, and horſe-militia.

Courts of judicature. For common pleas only one precinct court held at Plymouth: the firſt court to which a caſe or action is brought, is called a court of grace (the inferior courts of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay in New-England, in ſome reſpect may be called courts of grace); the next court is a court of judgment, and may appeal to a third court; their grand ſeſſion conſiſts of the lieutenant-governor, council, and chief judge.

Their ſugars are very ill cured in caſk; are ſold green, retaining much molaſſes: a planter, if much preſſed by a merchant for debt, in five or ſix days from cutting the canes,

canes, the ſugars are aboard. They plant alſo ſome cotton, and much indigo of the iron colour or worſt ſort; have four crops of indigo *per annum*; *viz.* April, Midſummer, Michaelmas, and Chriſtmas.

Nevis is one conical hill; good harbour, but great ſurf at landing, as is generally in the Weſt-Indies; have about 6000 negroes (the French ſquadron, under M. d'Iberville, in queen Anne's war carried off ſo many negroes as were afterwards ſold to the Spaniards for 400,000 pieces of eight. Only one collection at Charles-Town; three entry and delivery ports, *viz.* Charles-Town, Morton's-Bay, and Newcaſtle; they load about twenty veſſels *per annum* for Europe.

Five diviſions or pariſhes; each diviſion ſends three repreſentatives, in all fifteen aſſembly men. Judicature, only one precinct; courts as in Antigua.

They cure their ſugar in ſquare potts, is better than that of Montſerrat; ſome cotton; no indigo, no ginger; ciſtern-water chiefly.

St. Christopher's about three or four leagues from Nevis. Upon its eaſt end are ſalt-ponds and many ſmall naked hills. The French formerly were in poſſeſſion of its eaſt end to Palmetto-point, and of its weſt end to near Sandy-point; but by the treaty of Utrecht anno 1713, quit-claimed the whole to Great-Britain. Have only one collection at Old-road, the court or ſhire-town; ſeveral entering and delivery ports: Baſſe-terre ſhips off moſt, next for ſhipping off is Sandy-point. They bring their ſugars to the ſhipping places in hogſheads, not in bags, as in Nevis and Montſerrat: they ſhip off much molaſſes; do not raiſe much cotton; no indigo, no ginger: they run much ſugar aboard the Dutch interlopers at Statia, to ſave the four and a half *per cent.* the plantation duties, *&c.*

May have about 25,000 negroes; about nine pariſhes, each ſends two aſſembly men. Good river-water from the mountains.

VIRGIN-ISLANDS. The eaſtermoſt is called St. Thomas, at preſent in the poſſeſſion of the Danes; a good harbour, ſcarce any ſurf at landing; good careening at this iſland; a good town; the governor is Lutheran; the congregation and mother tongue is low Dutch. The iſland is ſmall; they raiſe cotton and ſugar; it is a neutral and free port, ſome ſay, to pirates not excepted. Salt-key, from which ſome veſſels bring ſalt.—St. John's-iſland, two or three gentlemen of Antigua have a patent for; they raiſe cotton, and cut junk-wood, or lignum vitæ.—Tortola produces the ſame.—Beef-iſland cuts junk-wood.—Spaniſh-Town, or Virgin Gorda, is the weſtermoſt of the Virgins; they plant cotton only, being a mixture of Curaſo white and yellow revel indifferently planted together.

Other ſmall iſlands ſtraggling between the Virgins and St. Chriſtophers, *viz.* Anagada not ſettled; Sambrero not ſettled; Anguilla raiſes cotton; St. Martin's; ſome Dutch on one part, and ſome French on another part; St. Bartholomew, a neutral iſland not ſettled; Barbuda, the property of Codrington, is improved for grazing.

JAMAICA.

JAMAICA is a long oval of about fifty leagues in length; the diſcoverer Columbus, and his heirs were proprietors of the iſland: he called it St. Jago or St. James, we call it Jamaica in our idiom.

Cromwel, without declaring war, [g] ſent admiral Pen and general Venables with a conſiderable ſea and land-

[g] Sovereign powers frequently diſpenſe with the law of nations (honour and honeſty.) Thus the Spaniards, in the ſpring 1727, laid force,

force, to annoy the Spaniſh Weſt-Indies: they miſcarried at St. Domingo; but reduced Jamaica, anno 1655, which remains with the Engliſh to this day.

Jamaica is much ſubject to hurricanes and earthquakes. Anno 1693, Port-Royal, during an earthquake was ſwallowed up: it may be ſuppoſed, that for many years preceding, the ſea did gradually undermine it, and upon occaſion of this earthquake Port-Royal ſubſided.

They carry on a conſiderable illicit but profitable trade to the Spaniſh Main, and return pieces of eight; and with the French of Hiſpaniola or St. Domingo, the returns are moſtly indigo.

Port-Royal of Jamaica is 76 D. 37 M. weſt from London [*b*], and in about 18 D. 30 M. N. lat.

The quit-rents were generouſly given by the crown, to the treaſury or revenue of the iſland. Lands granted before anno 1684, were at 2 *s.* 6 *d.* per 100 acres quit-rent; the new grants are a half-penny per acre *per annum* quit-rent. The rent-roll was loſt, or pretended

ſiege to Gibraltar; the French lately refortified Dunkirk, before any declaration of war; there can be no other reſtraint upon princes but a balance of power: thus France, a nation too potent, can never be bound over to the peace, without being diſmembered.

[*b*] By the ſame eclipſe of the moon June 1722, obſerved by captain Candler of the Launceſton man of war at Port-Royal in Jamaica, and by Chriſtopher Kirch at Berlin in Brandenburg of Germany, allowing Berlin fifty-two horary minutes eaſt of London. The difference of longitude between two places found by actual obſervation of the ſame eclipſes, appulſes, occultations of the celeſtial bodies, called luminaries, in both places, for the ſame phænomenon, is more exact, than where an obſervation is uſed for one place, and a calculation from tables for the other. Thus I judge the difference of longitude, between London and Boſton, or Cambridge adjoining, is well determined by the ſame eclipſe of the moon, March 15, 1717; obſerved at Cambridge near Boſton by Mr. Thomas Robie, fellow and tutor in the college there; and obſerved at Paris by Caſſini and de la Hire, academicians of the Royal Academy of Sciences; the difference in time was 4 H. 55 M. 40 Sec. As Paris is 9 M. 40 Sec. horary eaſt of London; therefore the horary difference is about 4 H. 46 M. or 71 D. 30 M. Cambridge and Boſton are weſt from London.

to

to be loſt, in the great earthquake, and never ſettled ſince; the quit-rents ſometimes amount to 2000 *l. per annum*. Their revenue acts are temporary, but for a long period; theſe acts made anno 1684, expired anno 1722, and were not renewed and confirmed (by the intereſt and application of governor Hunter) till anno 1726.

A few years ſince in Jamaica were 3000 fencible men white, in nine regiments, beſides eight independent companies of regular troops; 100 men per company is their full compliment. The receiver-general, Mr. Croſs, ſome years ſince in Boſton for his health, told me, that ſome years he had 90,000 negroes in his liſt.

From Jamaica are exported ſugar about 25000, hogſheads, very large, ſome of a ton weight; lately they have altered freights from number of hogſheads, to weight, and their hogſheads will be ſmaller in conſequence. They have only water-mills and cattle-mills for their canes; about nineteen pariſhes. Lately they begin to raiſe ſome coffee, and have planted ſome logwood trees.

There is always ſtationed here a ſquadron of Britiſh men of war, generally under the command of an admiral. The governor has a ſtanding ſalary of 2500 *l. per annum* out of the country treaſury in courſe: the aſſembly generally allow him a gratuity of 2500 *l. per annum* more; theſe, with eſcheats and all other perquiſites, do make it a government of about 10,000 *l. per annum*.

Duke of Albemarle concerned in Sir William Phips's fiſhing for a Spaniſh plate wreck, had good ſucceſs; and in caſe ſuch another fiſhing voyage ſhould preſent, that he might be near at hand, obtained the government of Jamaica: he ſoon died, and was ſucceeded by colonel Moleſworth.

Upon the revolution, anno 1690, the earl of Inchiquin was appointed governor; he died upon the iſland, and was ſucceeded by Sir William Beeſton, lieutenant-governor and commander in chief, anno 1692; he died anno 1700.

Major-

Major-general Selwin was appointed captain-general and governor 1701; he died ſoon.

1702, the earl of Peterborough (famous in queen Anne's wars in Spain) was appointed captain-general of the iſland, and admiral in the Weſt-India iſlands; he never ſet out for this government, and colonel Handaſyde was appointed lieutenant-governor of Jamaica. Anno 1696, Ponti, with a French ſquadron, made a feint againſt Jamaica, but without making any real attempt; he put off for Carthagena, where he had good ſucceſs.

1710, Lord Archibald Hamilton was appointed governour, and ſuperſeded the command of colonel Handaſyde; he was continued anno 1714, upon king George the firſt's acceſſion.

1716, Mr. Pit (formerly governor of fort St. George in the Eaſt-Indies, commonly called Diamond Pit) was appointed governor, and colonel Otway lieutenant governor.

1717, Mr. Pit reſigns in favour of Mr. Laws a planter, afterwards Sir Nicholas Laws; colonel Dubourgay lieutenant-governor. About this time the militia of Jamaica were diſpoſed into one regiment horſe, eight regiments foot.

1721, Duke of Portland appointed governor (a retreat from South-ſea diſaſters) he died in ſummer 1726, and was ſucceeded by

Colonel Hunter, who went thither, by advice of his phyſicians, for his health; and thereby did certainly obtain a reprieve for ſome years.

1734, Upon col. Hunter's death, Henry Cunningham, anno 1734, went governor; but ſoon died after his arrival.

1736, Edward Trelawney, Eſq; appointed governor; anno 1744, he was appointed colonel of a regiment of foot to be raiſed in England, for his good ſervices. He continues governor at this time 1747.

BAHAMA-ISLANDS,

Commonly called the government of Providence, the principal iſland. One of theſe iſlands, called St. Salvador or Cat-iſland, was the firſt diſcovery that Columbus made in America.

They were granted by the crown of England to the eight proprietors of Carolina, anno 1663; but as the proprietors took no care to prevent enemies and pirates from harbouring and rendezvouſing there, anno 1710, it was reſolved in the council of Great-Britain, "That "the queen do take the Bahama-iſlands into her im- "mediate protection, and ſend a governor to fortify "Providence."

The proprietors formerly granted a leaſe of theſe iſlands to a number of merchants called the Bahama-company: this turned to no account.

In the ſpring anno 1720, there ſet out from the Havanna an expedition of 1200 men in fourteen veſſels againſt Providence and South-Carolina; they viſited Providence without doing any damage, and were ſcattered in a ſtorm.

The banks belonging to this cluſter of iſlands and keys are called Bahama-banks, and made the eaſt ſide of the gulph-ſtream of Florida; Providence the chief iſland where the governor and garriſon are ſtationed, lies in about 25 D. N. lat. It is a place of no trade, and ſeems to be only a preventive ſettlement, that pirates and privateers may not harbour there, and that the Spaniards may not be maſters of both ſides the gulph-ſtreams. Their ſmall trade has been Braziletto, die-wood, cortex Elutheræ, from the iſland of that name, ſalt from Exeuma, and ambergris by drift-whales: at preſent they afford ſea-turtle, limes, and ſour oranges for the Bons Vivants of North-America.

They have one company of independent regular troops from Great-Britain. Capt. Woods Rogers, com-

modore of the two famous Briſtol South-ſea privateers, in the end of queen Anne's reign, was, anno 1717, appointed governor with an independent company. 1721, he was ſuperſeded by Capt. Finny. 1728, upon Capt. Finny's death, Capt. Woods Rogers is again appointed governor. Capt. Rogers died anno 1733, and Richard Fitz-Williams, Eſq; is appointed governor. Fitz-Williams reſigned anno 1738, and John Tinker, Eſq; ſon-in-law to Col. Bladen, late of the board of trade, ſucceeded; and continues governor at this preſent writing, Auguſt 1747.

BERMUDAS.

THIS name is ſaid to be from John Bermudas a Spaniard, who diſcovered it, in his way to the Weſt-Indies. Henry May, a paſſenger aboard Barbotier, caſt away here, 1593, and tarried five months, we do not mention, becauſe of no conſequence. Sir George Sommers and Sir Thomas Gates, adventurers in the Virginia company, were ſhipwrecked here 1609, found abundance of hogs; a certain ſign that the Spaniards had been there; theſe iſlands are ſometimes called in public writings Sommers, or corruptly Summer-iſlands. Some gentlemen obtained a character from king James I. and became proprietors of it: Mr. Moor was their firſt governor; Mr. Thomas Smith appointed governor 1612, and after three years, ſucceeded by Capt. Daniel Tucker 1616. Mr. Richard Norwood, a ſurveyor, was ſent over by the company to make diviſions; 1618 he divided it into eight tribes, by the names of the eight proprietors or adventurers, *viz.* Marquis of Hamilton, Sir Thomas Smith many years treaſurer, earl of Devonſhire, earl of Pembroke, lord Paget, earl of Warwick, earl of Southamton, and Sir Edwin Sands. Each tribe was divided into fifty ſhares; every adventurer to have his ſhare by caſting of lots in England, ſome had from one to twelve ſhares; beſides a great deal of land left for common

or public uſes; each ſhare conſiſted of about twenty-five acres, and remains ſo to this day; the value of a ſhare is 300 to 500 *l.* proclamation money; no wheel-carriages, no encloſures; they tether their cattle; high ways only from five to ſeven feet wide.

At firſt they went upon tobacco, as the humour then was in all the Weſt-India iſlands—1619, Capt. Butler, with a large recruit of ſettlers from England, was governor, and the legiſlature was ſettled in governor, council, and aſſembly; being formerly in a governor and council.

Anno 1698, Samuel Day, Eſq; was governor; anno 1700, Capt. Bennet was appointed governor.

The preſent governor is —— Popple, Eſq; Anno 1747, upon his brother's death he ſucceeded, his brother Alured Popple, Eſq; formerly ſecretary to the board of trade and plantations, was appointed lieutenant-governor (the commander in chief is deſigned only lieutenant-governor) anno 1737.

Bermudas is in 32 D. 30 M. N. lat. about 65 D. weſt from London, lies 200 to 300 leagues diſtance from the neareſt lands, *viz.* New-England, Virginia, South-Carolina, and Providence, or the Bahama-iſlands. Tide flows five feet; is well ſecured by ſunken rocks, but water ſufficient, in narrow channels and turnings requiring a good pilot. Their only ſettlement of notice is upon St. George's-iſland, about ſixteen miles long from E. N. E. to W. S. W. ſcarce a league wide in the broadeſt place; in ſome places the ſpray of the ſea croſſes the iſland. The winds from the north to the north-weſt, are the moſt prevalent; ſubject to ſmart guſts of wind, thunder, and lightning. March, April, and May is their whaling time, but of no conſiderable account; their whale-oil and ambergris are inconſiderable, the governor has a perquiſite from the royal fiſh about 10 *l.* per whale.

In Bermudas there may be about 5000 whites; their ſenſible men not much exceeding 1000 men, and many

of theſe generally at ſea; their militia conſiſt of 100 horſe, and one company of foot from each of the eight tribes; there is in garriſon one company of independent regular troops from Great-Britain always incomplete (as are all our plantation-troops for want of a proper check) the perquiſite of the governor.

Their diet is mean, and the people generally poor, ſimply honeſt; but gay in a ruſtic manner (Bermudas giggs) they have the beſt breed of negroes, equal to white men in their navigation.

Their trade is of ſmall account; they build their own ſloops of cedar [*i*] of their own growth; fit for uſe in twenty years intervals or growth; their keel-pieces, wales, and beams are of oak; their maſts are of white pine, from New-England.

Their chief buſineſs is building ſloops of cedar, their own growth, light runners; their exports are inconſiderable, *viz.* ſome pot-herbs and roots for the other parts of America; a white chalk-ſtone eaſily chiſeled for building gentlemens houſes in the Weſt-India iſlands; Palmetto [*k*] leaves manufactured into plait, better than the ſtraw-work of Italy and of nuns in ſome countries: they are noted for going to fiſh upon Spaniſh wrecks; they excel in diving [*l*].

This iſland (or rather iſlands) is generally healthful. The famous Mr. Waller, a gentleman of fortune and wit, a member of the long parliament, reſided here

[*i*] *Cedrus Bermudiana, vulgo H. Juniperus Bermudiana*, H. L. Bermudas cedar; it is harder than the cedar of Carolina and Virginia; they are all diſtinct ſpecies, as are the red and white cedars of New-England: we ſhall give a more claſſic, practical, or mechanic and commercial account of them when we come to treat of timber and naval ſtores uſed in, and exported from, New-England.

[*k*] *Palma pruniſera Bermud.* (of the palms ſome are cocciferous, ſome pruniferous) with a very long and wide leaf.

[*l*] Bermudas is noted for divers: an Indian born there of Florida parents, dived eighteen fathom (common diving is eight to ten fathom) and clapped lathings to an anchor; was near three minutes under water; upon his emerſion or coming up, he bled much at mouth, noſe, and ears.

ſome

ſome years during the civil wars of England, and ſays of Bermudas,

[*m*] None ſickly lives, or dies before his time;
So ſweet the air, ſo moderate the clime.

[*m*] This notion of a healthful climate, gave occaſion to a late ſcheme projected by a whimſical man, dean B——ly, ſince biſhop of Cl—ne in Ireland, of founding in Bermudas an univerſity college or ſeminary for the education of the Britiſh American youth. Projectors are generally inconſiderate, raſh, and run too faſt He did not conſider that places for health are accommodated for valetudinarians and old people; whereas young people, where the ſtamina vitæ are good, ſeldom want health, as at Harvard-college in Cambridge, near Boſton in New-England, not exceeding one or two *per cent. per annum* die; that this place is of very difficult acceſs or navigation; does not produce a ſufficiency for the preſent parſimonious inhabitants This abſtracted notion ſeems only adequate to the conceptions of a common ſchool-maſter, to keep his boys together (as a ſhepherd does by folding of his ſheep) while they learn to read Engliſh, and labour at the rudiments of the Latin language; whereas young gentlemen, ſtudents of the belles lettres, civil hiſtory, natural hiſtory, or any of the three learned profeſſions, require a larger field than that of a ſmall iſland diviſed (if we may ſo expreſs it) from the world or continents of the earth. He hired a ſhip, put on board a good library (ſome part of it he bountifully beſtowed upon the colleges of Maſſachuſetts-Bay and Connecticut in New-England) and in company with ſome gentlemen of great worth, after a tedious winter paſſage, put in at Rhode-iſland, a ſmall colony of New-England; built a kind of a cell, lived there a recluſe life for ſome time, until this fit of ENTHUSIASM deferveſced, and, convinced of the idleneſs of the whim, did not proceed, but returned to England.

There are enthuſiaſts in all affairs of life; this man of himſelf was an enthuſiaſt in many affairs of life; not confined to religion and the education of youth, he invaded another of the learned profeſſions, Medicine, which, in a peculiar manner, is called the learned profeſſion; he publiſhed a book called *Siris*, (the *ratio nominis* I cannot inveſtigate) or tar-water, an univerſal medicine or *panacea*; he never knew it fail, if copiouſly adminiſtered, of curing any fever; whereas many fevers, *viz.* that of the plague, of the ſmall-pox, with ſymptoms of purples and general hæmorrhages, *&c.* in their own nature, to moſt conſtitutions from firſt ſeizure are mortal, by an univerſal necroſis or ſudden blaſt of the conſtitution. It cures the murrain, rot, and all other malignant diſtempers amongſt cattle, ſheep, *&c.* The continued or long uſe of it does violence to the conſtitution; in aſthmas and rheumatic diſorders, a ſhort uſe of it has been beneficial, but our materia medica affords more efficacious and ſafe medicines; it is at

Formerly pine-apples, and ſome other delicious fruits of the Caribbee-iſlands, were cultivated in Bermudas; by cutting down the timber and wood, the iſland is become ſo open and expoſed to the bleak winds, that tender exotics do not thrive.

preſent almoſt worn out of faſhion. Tar is only turpentine by fire rendered of a cauſtic quality; whereas turpentine (and conſequently its water or decoction) by the experience of many ages, has been found a moſt beneficent, medicinal, natural balſam.

He ought to have checked this officious genius (unleſs in his own profeſſion way he had acquired this noſtrum by inſpiration) from intruding into the affairs of a diſtinct profeſſion. Should a doctor in medicine practice public praying and preaching (though only in a quack or W—d vagrant manner) with pious, private, ghoſtly advice and exhortations to his patients, alias penitents, the clergy would immediately take the alarm, and uſe their Bruta Fulmina againſt this other profeſſion. This ſeems to be well expreſſed in a London newspaper by way of banter or ridicule:

The biſhop's book annoys the learned tribe;
They threaten hard, "We'll preach, if you preſcribe."

As his Bermudas college projection, and his reſidence in New-England, have rendered him famous in North America, perhaps it may not be impertinent to give ſome further hiſtory of Mr. B——ly, in his proper character as a divine: I ſhall take it from his Minute Philoſopher, a book compoſed in New-England, and confine it to his wild notions of myſteries in religion. He ſays, that from a certain enthuſiaſm in human nature all religions ſprout; from the faith which children have in the directions of their parents; from the great ſhare that faith has in the policy of nations (he means the Arcana Imperii) and in common commerce or trade, we are led to faith in religious revelations. Since we cannot explain many obvious things in nature, why ſhould we be obliged to do ſo in religion? In a very looſe expreſſion, he compares myſteries in religion to the enthuſiaſtic, and to demonſtration non-entities of the philoſopher's ſtone in chemiſtry, and of perpetual motion in mechanics. The abſtracted idea of a triangle is as difficult as that of the trinity; that of the communication of motion, as difficult as that of the communication of grace. We ought to have the ſame reaſon for truſting the PRIEST in religion, that we have for truſting the lawyer or phyſician with our fortune or life; thus every man ought to have a liberty of chuſing his own prieſt and religion. This is too general a toleration, and puts an end to all ſocial religion.

To conclude, the right reverend the biſhop of Cl—ne, notwithſtanding his peculiarities, is a moſt generous, beneficent, and benevolent gentleman, as appears by his donations in New-England.

SECT.

SECT. III.

Concerning the Indian tribes and nations; intermixed with, under the protection of, and in alliance with, Great-Britain: alſo ſome hints of the French Indians.

THAT the contents of this ſection may be the more eaſily comprehended, perhaps it may be convenient to diſtinguiſh it into ſome ſeparate articles, 1. A general hiſtory of the Weſt-Indians, or aboriginal Americans. 2. Their religion, language, manners, arts, and improvements in nature. 3. Their tribes or nations lying upon or near the eaſtern ſhore of North-America. 4. Their wars with, and incurſions upon, the Britiſh North-America colonies.

ARTICLE I.

A general hiſtory of the aboriginal Americans.

AS to the origin of things, particularly of mankind, we have no other account in credit with chriſtians, whether allegorical or literal is not my affair, but that of Moſes in the ſcriptural books of our Bible or religion. Doubtleſs there have been at times general or almoſt univerſal peſtilences, famines, deluges, implacable wars, which have almoſt extinguiſhed the race of mankind in the countries where theſe general calamities prevailed; and muſt require many centuries to repeople them from the ſmall remaining ſtock, and to reduce them by gradations [*n*] to large ſocieties called tribes or cantons, nations, and empires.

[*n*] From a country or continent thus reduced to a very ſmall ſtock, we may inveſtigate the various degrees of civil government. At firſt they were only diſtinct families, left Iſolé, and their government was

The boundaries of their united tribes called nations or empires, are natural, *viz.* ſeas, bays, lakes, great rivers, high mountains; thus for inſtance, our neigh-

patriarchial, that is, by heads of families: theſe heads of families ſoon became acquainted and neighbourly, and for mutual protection and good neighbourhood, entered into aſſociations, by us called tribes, cantons, or clans: ſeveral of theſe tribes, upon ſuſpicion of ſome ambitious deſign of ſome neighbouring powerful tribes, or confederacy of tribes, for their better defence were obliged to enter into a federal union, and at length were incorporated into one general direction called a nation or empire. Perhaps we may ſuppoſe that ſuch were the empires of Mexico and Peru in America.

Sir Iſaac Newton, in his chronology of ancient kingdoms amended, by his incomparable ſagacity inveſtigates, that in ancient times Greece and all Europe were peopled by wandering Cimerians and Scythians; the emigrations or excuſſions which in ſeveral ages have occaſioned revolutions, and new-peopling of the ſouthern parts of Europe: Goths, Vandals *&c.* came from thence by ſwarming, that is, leaving their native country for want of room or ſubſiſtence. Northern countries are the leaſt liable to the abovementioned calamities, and may be called nurſeries: they had lived a rambling life, like the Tartars, in the northern parts of Aſia.

We ſhould have previouſly obſerved, that mankind is naturally a gregarious animal, does not love ſolitude, but has a ſtrong paſſion or propenſity for ſociety; their natural reaſon, and capacity of ſpeech or communication of thoughts, inclines them to it.

Dr. Heylin, from him moſt of our modern hiſtorians of this kind tranſcribe, gives a very eaſy novel manner of the peopling the ſeveral nations from the poſterity of Noah; we ſhall not impoſe this upon our readers. He ſays the Americans proceeded from Noah, by way of Tartary.

Others publiſh their conjectures, that North-America was peopled from Scythia and Tartary; that South-America was peopled from China and Japan, without reflecting, that according to the ſituation of theſe countries it is impracticable; our modern large ſhips cannot perform the navigation from China in leſs than ſix or ſeven months: how can it be performed in canoes? The Americans had no large embarkations; this requires no ſerious animadverſions.

Some authors whimſically alledge, that the Phœnicians or Carthaginians might have been drove thither by ſome continued freſh eaſterly winds; but the Phœnicians, Carthaginians, Grecians, Romans, and Arabians, who were ſucceſſively the great navigators, make no mention of America; and upon our arrival in America, we could not find the leaſt monument or token of their ever being there.

Therefore we can carry the hiſtory of the American countries no higher than Columbus's diſcovery, anno 1492. See p. 25. 63.

bouring

bouring nation of Abnaquies are bounded by the Atlantic ocean, or rather at preſent by the Engliſh ſettlements upon the Atlantic ſhore, by the bay of Fundi, by the great river St. Laurence, by lake Champlain and Hudſon's river.

The tribes which, at leaſt nominally, compoſe their general denomination of a nation, are generally named from the rivers upon which they live; as in Lapland of Sweden, the Laplanders are diſtinguiſhed by the names of the rivers Uma, Pitha, Lula, Tarneo, and Kimi.

As China ſeems to be elder brother of all the nations of mankind as to their politia and improvements in nature; ſo America may, with much propriety, be called the youngeſt brother and meaneſt of mankind; no civil government, no religion, no letters; the French call them *les hommes des bois*, or men-brutes of the foreſt: they do not cultivate the earth by planting or grazing, excepting a very inconſiderable quantity of maye or indian corn, and of kidney-beans (in New-England they are called Indian beans) which ſome of their ſquaas or women plant; they do not provide for to-morrow; their hunting is their neceſſary ſubſiſtence, not diverſion; when they have good luck in hunting, they eat and ſleep until all is conſumed, and then go a hunting again.

The higher the latitudes, the Indians are fewer in numbers and more ſtraggling, nature not affording neceſſary ſubſiſtence for many, and only in ſmall bodies or herds: their trade or commerce is trifling, having no produce, no manufacture, but little game; the difficulty of ſubſiſting requires almoſt their whole time to provide for themſelves.

Excepting that conſtitution of body, which by uſe they have acquired from their birth, of enduring hardſhips of hunger and weather; they are tender, and not long-lived, and generally very ſimple and ignorant; ſome of their old men, by uſe and experience in the world,

world, acquire a conſiderable degree of ſagacity. New negroes from Guinea generally exceed them much in conſtitution of body and mind. In the province of Maſſachuſſetts Bay New-England, there was formerly a very good project or deſign, to educate at college ſome of their moſt promiſing youths, to ſerve as miſſionaries for civilizing, inſtructing, and converting of the wild Indians: this good purpoſe turned abortive from the tenderneſs of their conſtitution and aukwardneſs in learning, and at preſent is laid aſide.

They are not ſo polite as the wandering Tartars; no dairies. Like the wild Iriſh they dread labour more than poverty; like dogs they are always either eating or ſleeping, excepting in travelling, hunting, and their dances; their ſloth and indolence inclines them to ſottiſhneſs; before chriſtians arrived amongſt them, they had no knowledge of ſtrong drink; this chriſtian vice not only deſtroys their bodily health, and that of their progeny, but creates feuds, outrages, and horrid murders. They are much given to deceit and lying, ſo as ſcarce to be believed when they ſpeak truth. See annotations, page 116. Their temper is the reverſe of the Eaſt-Indies, whereof ſome caſts or ſects will not kill any animal; the Weſt-Indians or Americans are barbarous, and upon ſmall provocations kill their own ſpecies; ſome of them exceed in barbarity, and in revenge and fury eat the fleſh of their enemies, not from hunger or delicacy; ſuch formerly were the Florida Indians; they ſaid that the fleſh of the Engliſh eat mellow and tender, that of the Spaniard hard and tough, the Bermudian fiſhy.

The aboriginal Americans have no honeſty, no honour, that is, they are of no faith, but mere brutes in that reſpect. They generally have great fortitude of mind; without any appearance of fear or concern, they ſuffer any torture and death. In revenge they are barbarous and implacable; they never forget nor forgive injuries; if one man kills another, the neareſt in kindred to the murdered

murdered watches an opportunity to kill the murderer; and the death of one man may occaſion the deaths of many; therefore when a man is guilty of murder, he generally leaves the tribe, and goes into a voluntary kind of baniſhment. They are a ſullen cloſe people. The Indian wars ought to be called maſſacres, or inhuman barbarous outrages, rather than neceſſary acts of hoſtility.

The Indians have their hunting, fowling and fiſhing grounds; by a forked pointed pole, they ſtrike or harpoon their fiſh; but their wives and children reſide moſtly on their planting grounds; they plant but little. They do not wander like the Tartars; there are ſaid to be ſome wandering Indians; they cannot be many; becauſe the ſettling Indians are very jealous of their hunting and fiſhing grounds or properties.

Their ancient navigation was only croſſing of rivers upon bark-logs; travelling along rivers, rivulets, and ſides of lakes in canoes or ſchuyties, portable by two men in their carrying-places from one river or pond to another; they are of birch-bark upon ribs of aſh, ſowed together by ſome tough wooden fibres, and paid (as ſailors expreſs it) with roſin from ſome pine kind; they uſe no ſails and oars, only paddles and ſetting-poles; they are capable of carrying a man, his wife, children, and baggage. Narrow rivers are better travelling than ponds or lakes, becauſe upon the lakes, if ſtormy or much wind, they cannot proceed, but muſt put to the ſhore.

Many of our intermixed Indians are of good uſe as ſervants. It is obſervable, that amongſt the Indian ſervants and negro ſlaves, the ſilly, thoughtleſs, and puſillanimous anſwer beſt; ſome perhaps may obſerve from this, that the blind paſſive obedience and non-reſiſtance men, make the beſt ſubjects and court ſlaves in Europe.

The Indians between the Tropics; their complexion is not of ſo good a metalline copper luſtre, but paler,

ſtature

ſtature ſmaller, not ſo robuſt and courageous; but, by reaſon of the fertility of the country, are in larger tribes, and conſequently more civilized; and from being civilized, their confederacies and federal unions reduced them into vaſt empires [*o*]. Such were the empire of Mexico, their moderator or principal man was Montezuma; and in the empire of Peru the more rich, as having vaſt treaſures of ſilver and gold.

The northern tribes are ſmall and diſtinct; a large parcel of land lying waſte (in winter-countries) for many months in the year, not fertile, and not cleared of woods, cannot ſubſiſt many people, but theſe ſmall [*p*] tribes, though much diſperſed are allied by contiguity, language, and intermarriages; thus it is with our neighbouring Abnaquies, who border upon New-England; the Iroquois or Mohawks, who border upon New-York, Penſylvania, and Virginia; and the Cherokees, who border upon Carolina; theſe may be called three diſtinct great nations.

The Indians in the high latitudes are paler, ſhort, thick, ſquat; cloathed with ſkins (generally ſeals-ſkins) ſowed with thongs; no bread-kind, no fire; live upon whale and ſeal-blubber, and other fiſh, and what beaſts they may kill with their arrows and darts; their boats and canoes are of a ſingular make, adapted only for one perſon; in the winter they live in caves.

[*o*] A Spaniſh biſhop of the Weſt-Indies, a man of obſervation, many years ſince wrote, "That the Indians are of a tender conſtitution: no part of Europe was more populous than Mexico, upon the Spaniards firſt arrival. The Spaniards, in the firſt forty years, deſtroyed about twenty millions of Indians; they left but a few Indians in Hiſpaniola, none upon Cuba, Jamaica, the Bahama-iſlands, Porto-Rico, and Caribbee iſlands, excepting upon Dominica and St. Vincent, where they remain to this day.

[*p*] In Bible-hiſtory we read, that all mankind anciently lived in ſmall tribes; Abraham and his allies could muſter only 318 men; with theſe he defeated four great kings, who had conquered ſeveral kings. Where lands lie not cultivated, the tribes muſt be ſmall and inhabitants few for want of ſubſiſtence.

Indians

Indians in general paint their bodies, eſpecially their faces (they affect red colour) as the Picts and Britons of Great-Britain formerly were accuſtomed.

In the higher latitudes the Indians reckon by winters (years) moons (months) and ſleeps (nights.) Between the tropics they reckon by rains (the ſeaſons of rains, end of ſummer and beginning of autumn are periodical, as are our winters) moons and ſleeps. In computing diſtances, they reckon by ſleeps or days travels (as the Dutch do by hours) *viz.* ſo many ſleeps or days travel from one place to another.

Notwithſtanding the unpoliteneſs and want of fire-arms amongſt the American aboriginals, the Europeans could not have effected their ſettlements, becauſe of vaſt diſparity in numbers, if ſome diſaffected tribes, to be revenged of the impoſitions and encroachments of ſome neighbouring tribes, had not joined the European ſmall-arms. Thus Cortez againſt Mexico was joined by ſeveral diſaffected tribes; when the ſettlers of New-Plymouth firſt landed, Maſſaſoit was glad of the countenance of their ſmall-arms againſt the Naraganſets.

As to their make and complexion [*q*]. They have thin lips, flattiſh faces, languid countenance, ſmall black

[*q*] We cannot account for the aboriginal differences of complexions in the various nations, and the variety of their features. The people of the middle and ſouth parts of Africa are black, of various conſtant permanent ſhades or degrees, with flat noſes, thick lips, ſhort frizzled or criſp black hair; perhaps the complexion of the tawney-moor of Barbary the ancient Mauritania, is not aboriginal, but a complication of the European white, and the African black; our American complexion ſeems to be native and ſincere. The natives of the Indian peninſula, betwixt the rivers Indus and Ganges in the Eaſt-Indies, have the African black complexion, the European features, and the American lank black hair or crin, but all native and genuine, not from a mixed breed. Extreme hot or extreme cold weather, do equally tawn white people, but not permanently; tranſplantation or tranſportation recovers their native complexion.

It is not various climates that gives the various complexions; America lies from 65 D. N. lat. to 55 D. S. lat. comprehending all eyes,

eyes, imberbes and impuberes, ſtature various as in Europe; in the higheſt north and ſouth latitudes, they are taller and more robuſt than between the tropics; their hair jet black, lank (between the tropics not ſo lank) ſtiff, called by the French *crin*. The Spaniards found it more tedious and much more difficult to reduce Chili, than their other American conqueſts. Their complexion is of a ſplendid reddiſh brown, or metalline luſtre, which is well expreſſed by a copper colour: thus a ſplendid white, is called ſilver-colour: not of an olive-colour or tawney (a tanned leather yellowiſh colour) as are the Aborigines of Barbary, and ſome of their progeny in the ſouth parts of France, Spain, and Portugal. Some Indians upon the iſthmus of Darien, are of a milk-white complexion, which is not natural and hereditary; but proceeds from a tender morbid conſtitution; their parents were copper-coloured, and their children become copper-coloured.

Their poſture is not croſs-legged as among the Aſiatics; accumbent as formerly with the Greeek and Romans,

the various climates of Europe, Aſia, and Africa; the American complexion is permanently every where the ſame, only with a more or leſs of the metalline luſtre. Salmon, a late diſaffected ſcribler, in his modern hiſtory, ſays, the blacks after ſome generations will become white; in New-England there are Guinea ſlaves in ſucceſſion of ſeveral generations, they continue the ſame in feature and complexion; it is true, that in the Weſt-India iſlands ſome diſſolute planters are ſaid to waſh the blackmoor white; by generating with the ſucceſſive ſhades of their own iſſue, children, grandchildren, *&c.* the progeny at length becomes *blonde*, or of a pale white.

Upon this ſubject there are ſeveral intricacies in nature not to be unravelled. Why the negroes of Guinea ſhould have woolly criſp black hair, and thoſe of the Indian peninſula have lank black hair? Why the wool of northern ſheep carried into a hot climate becomes like goats hair, and returned to a northern climate, they recover their wool again? How near neighbouring nations, if they do not intermarry, differ in features and complexions: the Circaſſians are very beautiful, their neighbouring Tartars are extremely ugly: the Laplanders are ruddy and freſh, the adjoining Ruſſians and Tartars are tawney and ſqualid.

mans, lying on their left ſide, leaning upon their elbow; nor cowring as the women call it, the manner of the African negroes, knees bent and legs parallel to their thighs; not ſitting upon their buttocks and thighs with their legs dependant as in Europe; but ſitting on their buttocks erect, with their thighs and legs in a ſtrait line extended horizontally.

Our general trade with the Indians is fire-arms, powder, and ſhot, for war and hunting; ſtrouds and blankets for cloathing, ſpirits, rum, and brandy for indolence; formerly toys, which were as conſiderable though ſilly amuſement to them, as jewels are to us.

In travelling they direct their courſe by noted mountains, by the ſun when viſible, by the moſſy or north ſide of trees. As moſt inſects avoid oils, the Indians greaſe themſelves as a defence againſt muſketoes and other troubleſome flies.

Many of our European purchaſes of lands can ſcarce be ſaid to be for valuable conſiderations; but a long poſſeſſion, and in conſequence preſcription, have made our title good. Father Ralle, a late ingenious jeſuit, and French miſſionary with the New-England Abnaquie Indians, about twenty-ſix years ſince did kindle a war or inſurrection of thoſe Indians in New-England, by inculcating, that they held their lands of GOD and nature in ſucceeding generations; that fathers could not alienate the earth from their ſons. We uſe no other artifice to keep the Indians in our intereſt, but, by underſelling the French, and giving a higher price for Indian commodities; this is fair and juſt.

Our printed hiſtories of the Indian countries, their governments, religion, languages, and cuſtoms, are credulouſly copied from credulous authors, and full of ſilly conceits; a very late and notable inſtance of this, we find in the journal of Anſon's voyage to the South-ſeas, publiſhed by the mathematical maſter of the Centurion, anno 1745.

Strictly

Strictly ſpeaking, they ſeem to have no government, no laws, and are only cemented by friendſhip and good neighbourhood; this is only a kind of tacit federal union between the many tribes, who compoſe the general denomination of a nation; every individual man ſeems to be independent and *ſui juris*, as to government, and is only in friendſhip and neighbourly relation with others of the ſame tribe: Notwithſtanding, we ſometimes find heads of tribes mentioned as if in ſucceſſion, nay even female ſucceſſions; in the New-England Pocanoket, Mount-hope, or king Philip's war, anno 1675, there is mentioned the ſquaa-ſachem of Pocaſſet, and a ſquaa-ſachem amongſt the Naraganſets. In other parts of the earth all ſocieties or cohabitants have government, and an abſolute compelling power is lodged ſomewhere, and in ſome manner; but the American Indians have no compulſive power over one another: when a tribe or neighbourhood ſends delegates, to treat with other bodies of men, whites or Indians, the concluſions are carried home *memoriter*, and the young men muſt be perſuaded to come into theſe articles; when the Indians at any time are forced into a peace, the blame of the war is laid upon their young men.

The aboriginal cloathing of the northern Indians was ſkins of ſeals cut in particular faſhions, and ſewed together with thongs (they had no threads of flax, hemp, or any other herbs) in other parts they wore ſkins of the various beaſts of the foreſt. At preſent the Indians, who have commerce with the colonies from Europe, wear duffils and blanketing of about two yards ſquare, which the Romans called a [r] toga; their ſegamores or ſa-

[r] The Toga ſeems to be the moſt ancient, natural, and ſimple wear uſed by mankind; the Scots highlanders have wore it further back than our records reach, ſtriped and chequered variouſly according to the humours of different ages; but of late years it ſeeming to be uſed as a badge of diſaffection to the preſent happy eſtabliſhed government in Great-Britain, the parliament in their great wiſdom have aboliſhed it.

chems

ems wear blankets, with a border of a different colour, and may be called prætextati.

ARTICLE II.

The religion, language, food, and medicine, with ſome other looſe particulars relating to the American Indians.

AS the Americans before the arrival of colonies from Europe, ſeem to have been, and ſtill continue, in general, the moſt barbarous and the leaſt poliſhed people upon earth; a clear, exact, and full account of theſe things cannot be expected; but for the greater perſpicuity we reduce them under diſtinct heads.

I. *Religion of the* Americans.

SOME Indians of ſagacity, a little civilized and inſtructed towards the Chriſtian religion, can give no diſtinct account of any Indian religion, and ſtumble much at the myſteries of our Chriſtian religion, being indiſcreetly crouded upon them at once, and with too much impetuoſity, without previous inſtruction. If you do not believe immediately, you will be damned, is the expreſſion of our zealots; whereas they ought to be firſt tamed by familiarity and fair dealing; in friendly converſation upon proper occaſions, without any appearance of officiouſneſs, inſtruct them in natural religion and morality; theſe are plain and eaſily comprehended; afterwards with diſcretion, they may be by degrees initiated into the myſteries of our religion. Our miſſionaries, void of common prudence, in a reverſe prepoſterous manner begin with the abſtruſe articles of the Chriſtian religion, and thence proceed to inſtruct them in the plain eaſy dictates of nature. In a ſilly, low, cant way, ſome of our preachers tell the Indians, that the Chriſtians GOD is a better GOD than the Indians GOD; whereas, they ought

to inform them, that there is but one ſupreme GOD, and that one manner of worſhiping this GOD is more agreeable to the GODHEAD, as being more natural and decent. If ſome of our Indian traders, were inſtructed, and at a public charge capacitated to ſell cheap amongſt the Indians, they would gain their affections in this trading familiar friendly manner, and lay a good foundation for their converſion towards Chriſtianity: an abrupt Chriſtian religious miſſion amongſt them ſeems abſurd; if the Emperor of China, or the Grand Turk, ſhould ſend ſuch miſſionaries into Great-Britain to convert the people there to the doctrines of Confucius or Mahomet, inſtead of gaining proſelytes, it would avert them. The following digreſſion may be acceptable to ſome of our readers.

A digreſſion concerning the religions *of ancient nations.*

I do not preſume to write concerning the controverſial or devotional points of our modern religions, national, or private opinions; that is the buſineſs of a peculiar profeſſion or craft, called prieſts.

Religion improves in nations, hand in hand with good policy, and as they become more and more civilized. It may be called the cement of ſociety. The Romans did fight *pro aris et focis*, for their religion, as well as for their country. Amongſt the Weſt-India buccaneers, the moſt morally vicious of mankind; the French immovably adhered to one another, becauſe of their being all Roman catholics; the Engliſh to one another, as being proteſtants, and not from any other regard. Otherways both agreed and acted jointly as pirates.

As to religion, all mankind may be divided into three ſects.

I. They who believe in a ſupreme intelligence (or intelligences) who by omnipotence created and framed the world, and by infinite wiſdom manages it: they may

may be called the godly. With this claſs, the divine attribute INCOMPREHENSIBLE ought to reſolve and compoſe all altercations concerning this being: Plutarch ſays, there is but one and the ſame ſupreme being or providence, that governs the world, though worſhiped by multiplicity of names, by various nations and ſectaries. This ſect admits of three ſub-diviſions.

1. Theiſts, commonly called deiſts, who admit of no modifications in the deity; in ancient times, and to this day, they are improperly called atheiſts. Amongſt us, he who denies the Trinity, is in law deemed atheiſt and blaſphemer. Anaxagoras, the philoſopher, paſſed at Athens for an atheiſt, becauſe he denied that the ſun, the other planets, and the ſtars were gods. Socrates is ſaid to have been a martyr for the unity of the Godhead, refuſing to pay homage to the various gods of Greece. This is the national (if we may thus expreſs) religion of the Mahometans, having the large extent of all national religions. It is the private opinion of many who are intermixed with and go by the name of Chriſtians, and are generally deſigned Arians, or Socinians, (Socinus of Sienna in Italy;) they alſo deny original-ſin, and providence.

2. Tritheiſts or Trinitarians. The diſtinguiſhing tenet of all true orthodox Chriſtians: they worſhip divinity under three diſtinct modifications, which I ſhall not pretend to explain or illuſtrate, becauſe a myſtery.

3. Polytheiſts. Such were the ancient Egyptians, Greeks, and Romans: the poets had a greater variety of gods than the philoſophers, many of them to be looked upon as a machinery introduced to embelliſh a poem, and to amuſe the mind: they deified various parts of nature, and were great promoters of polytheiſm. All the gods and goddeſſes of the ancients were only modifications, words, or names, to expreſs ſeveral attributes of a ſupreme Being, the excellencies in nature, and the virtues of heroes, and very eminent men; as if in Britain

we ſhould ſay Newton, the god of natural philoſophy and mathematics; Addiſon, the god of the belles lettres, and polite learning.

II. They who admit of no ſupreme Intelligence, but ſay that blind matter is the extent of our knowledge; theſe are the literal and true atheiſts. Anaximander was the firſt noted atheiſt upon record, about 600 years before CHRIST; his noted followers were Lucippus, Democritus, Epicurus, Lucretius, *&c.* In theſe late times, [*s*] ſome, ſingularly ſelf-conceited of their own penetration, have avowedly declared themſelves ſuch, in deſpite of all the polite part of mankind.

III. The third ſect made its firſt appearance by means of Pyrrho, in the 120 olympiad; they doubted of every thing. Cicero and Seneca, two great men, were inclined this way; the late duke of Buckingham, an ingenious man, the epitaph which he made for himſelf begins, *Dubius vixi, incertus morior*, &c. Dr. B——ly, biſhop of Cl—ne, ſeems to affirm, in a whimſical manner, that every thing we ſee is an illuſion, that the whole ſeries of life is a continued dream.

To theſe we may add, that, there is with all ſober-minded men only one general religion. THE PRACTICE OF TRUE AND SOLID VIRTUE. The belief in certain vague opinions, the obſerving of fixed or appointed external rites and ceremonies, do not enlighten the underſtanding, or purify the heart, by rectifying the paſſions. Mr. Pope, in his eſſay upon man, well expreſſes it:

For modes of faith, let wicked zealots fight:
He can't be wrong, who's life is in the right.

[*s*] Spinoſa, a Jew, in his *Tractatus Theologico-Politicus*.
Vanini, born at Naples in Italy, taught atheiſm in France, was convicted thereof, and burnt at Thoulouſe, anno 1619.
Jordano Bruno wrote a book, *De tribus Impoſtoribus*; meaning Moſes, CHRIST, and Mahomet.
Hobbes, in his Leviathan, advanced ſeveral wild notions of this kind, but not conſiſtent; he died anno 1679, *Æt.* 91.

Sir Iſaac Newton uſed to ſay, when the converſation ran upon differences in religion, "He knew of no "heretics or ſchiſmatics, but the wicked and the "vicious."

Let us inveſtigate the origin and progreſs of religion from the nature of things. Mankind is naturally a ſuperſtitious *pavidum animal*, ſome few cunning deſigning men, take the [*t*] advantage of this general weakneſs of human nature; and as nurſes frighten and awe children by hobgoblings and bugbears, ſo they, by vociferations, geſticulations, and pretended familiarity with ſome ſuperior inviſible being, promiſe to conciliate his benevolence, in procuring good luck in their affair of life (thus Powowers promiſe good luck in hunting to the Indians) they avert ſickneſs and other calamities; ſometimes from the ſaid familiarity, they impoſe pretended dreams, viſions, and impulſes, as do our preſent new-light diſciples of a vagrant or ſtrolling actor of enthuſiaſm. The Chineſe, though a polite people, their commonalty are much addicted to ſuperſtition and magic.

From this the wiſemen, that is, the lawgivers and miniſters of ſtate in Greece, and elſewhere, took the hint, and ſet up oracles, which were abſolutely under their own direction and influence; theſe were of good uſe to reconcile the ſilly (but *varium et mutabile vulgus*) people, to what the ſtate in wiſdom had propoſed upon any extraordinary occaſions: theſe oracles were delivered by women; the Sibyls were called *fatidicæ*, that is, prophecying and fortune-telling women; our women exhorters among the Quakers and Methodiſts, are not of the ſame good uſe.

Herodotus writes (Cicero calls him the father of hiſtory) that the ancient Perſians had neither temples,

[*t*] Perhaps prieſts of all religions are the ſame; we muſt except a ſober-minded, regular, truly pious and exemplary clergy; they are of the greateſt uſe in cementing ſociety.

altars, nor ſtatues; in this condition we found the aboriginal Indians or Americans. When nations began to be civilized, we find the firſt objects of adoration (proceeding from admiration) were the ſun, moon, other planets, and the ſtars, in Egypt; and the periods of their revolutions were uſed in the computation of time. The revolution of the ſun was called a year, that of the moon a month; every planet had one day aſſigned him, and theſe ſeven planetary days were called a week: if there had been more or fewer planets, the days of the week would have been more or fewer; Moſes, brought up in all the learning of the Egyptians, retained the ſame in his hiſtory part of our Bible, and carries on the allegory (as ſome free-thinkers call it) of the creation accordingly. Our American Indians had no knowledge of the planets, and therefore had no reckonings by weeks, or returns of ſeven days. The planetary names of the days of the week, at firſt view, ſeem confuſed and at random; but, in fact they were methodically ſo called. They began by the Sun, as being the moſt glorious planet, and aſſigned to him the firſt day of the week, *dies ſolis*, or Sunday (Sabbath-day is of a Jewiſh ſignification, and properly the ſeventh day of the week; Lord's-day is novel and peculiar to chriſtians) from thence reckoning in the natural order of the planets, allowed a planet to every hour of the twenty-four, which compoſe a day; the next in courſe, according to the aſtronomy of theſe days, was Venus, Mercury, Moon, Saturn, Jupiter, Mars, and conſequently the Sun had the eighth hour, the fifteenth and twenty-ſecond hour; Venus the twenty-third; Mercury the twenty-fourth; conſequently the Moon had the firſt hour of the next parcel of twenty-four hours, and gave name to the ſecond day of the week, *dies lunæ*, or Monday; and in the ſame rotation Mercury gives name to the third; Jupiter to the fourth day of the week, *&c.* In Britain we have ſubſtituted four of our north-country or Gothic

Gothic gods in the place of Mercury, Mars, Jupiter, and Venus.

So far back as ancient records inform, we find that amongſt the Egyptians and Orientals, religion firſt began to acquire a national conſiſtence or ſyſtem. The philoſophers of Greece went to Egypt and Aſia to ſtudy wiſdom, learning, and religion; thoſe of Rome went to Greece. They all did ſo much indulge a poetical or mythological vein, that it is difficult to diſtinguiſh between their true eſtabliſhed religion and gods, from the fabulous.

The various religions at this time amongſt the nations of this earth (the ſeveral parts of the earth that can be of any conſequence, are now well explored, and the Americans may be well ſaid to be of no religion) may be reduced to theſe general heads: 1. The chriſtian, or believers in Jeſus Chriſt, which perhaps is that of Moſes with additions and emendations: this may be called the religion of Europe, ſome few Turkiſh dominions in Europe excepted. 2. The Mahometan, which is much more extenſive, and prevails in a great part of Africa, in a great part of Aſia, and in ſome part of Europe. 3. That of Confucius, being the followers of the doctrines of Confucius in China, and the neighbouring parts of Tartary. 4. May be comprehended under the general name of idolaters, who worſhip the objects, or the images and repreſentations of the objects which they adore from love or fear; the Lama of the eaſtern Tartars I call an idol.

The negroes of Africa have a kind of religion which may be called idolatry; they worſhip ſome material objects, which in their nature may be extremely beneficial or very hurtful to mankind; the firſt through admiration and love, the other through fear. But our ſtupid American Indians had no temples, no altars, no idols or images, no ſet times for worſhip, if it may be called

worſhip; it is only occaſional, with frantic and ridiculous vociferations and geſticulations, in caſes of ſickneſs or great calamities, performed by ſome of their cunning men called Powowers: they never harraſs European captives to change their religion; no religious wars [*u*]; no confuſions from convocations.

The Powowers, are not pariſh-prieſts or clergy, regularly ſet apart to initiate the people into the myſteries of religion, and to perform ſome rites and ceremonies called religious: they are of the ſame nature with raſcally cheats and pretended conjurers, that in the moſt civilized nations of Europe (intirely diſtinct from any ſort of religion) impoſe upon ignorant and weak people, by pretending to ſome familiar converſation with ſome ſuperior ſecret Being. Their Powowers, by aid of this influence, become alſo their phyſicians; this ſeems to be natural; even with us a civilized people, our prieſts, or Goſpel-miniſters, by the ſame aid, are very apt officiouſly to intrude into the office of a phyſician, and uſe the ſick as their patients as well as their penitents: prieſts and old women of both ſexes (as dean Swift humourouſly expreſſed it) are the great nuſances to a regular medical practice. *Expertus loquor.* This perhaps may be the natural reaſon, why ſome phyſicians uſe the clergy with contempt.

I do not find that Chriſtianity is like to have any good footing among the Indians: 1. We are not exemplary enough in common life, and commercial dealings: the Indians ſay, that they cannot perceive mankind the better for being chriſtians: chriſtians cheat them out of their lands and other effects, and ſometimes deprive them of

[*u*] The civil adminiſtration in England, from experience, are ſenſible of the inconveniences ariſing from the meetings of the convocations of the clergy, and for many years have not allowed them to ſit: they are not eſſential to epiſcopal church-government; and when they meet, they naturally ferment or rather effervece, and occaſion feveriſh paroxyſms in the church, and ſometimes convulſions in the ſtate.

their

their lives. 2. Our miſſionaries are generally void of diſcretion; the Indians are, in all reſpects wild, know nothing of the general rudiments of religion [*w*]: The miſſionaries inſtead of firſt taming and civilizing the Indians, and next inſtructing them in the principles of natural religion and morality, begin with the ſublime myſteries of our religion, ſuch as, *How many perſons are there in the Godhead?* and the like. Thus from the beginning they are bewildered and loſt for ever. 3. Some *piæ fraudes*, which at firſt may amuſe, but afterwards when diſcovered, leave a permanent prejudice againſt the chriſtian religion; thus it is ſaid, that ſome French miſſionaries in relating to the Indians the hiſtory of our Saviour's birth and ſufferings, tell them that the virgin Mary was a French woman, that the Engliſh crucified JESUS CHRIST.

LANGUAGES.

THEIR manner of expreſſion is vehement and emphatic; their ideas being few, their language is not copious; it conſiſts only of a few words, and many of theſe ill-contrived; by a rumbling noiſe or ſound of many ſyllables, they expreſs an idea or thing, which, in the

[*w*] Mr. Brainerd, a miſſionary from a ſociety in Scotland for propagating chriſtian knowledge by Indian converſions amongſt the De la Ware, and the Seſquahana Indians, in his journey printed at Philadelphia, anno 1745, ſays, that his ſtation was from Croſweekſung in New-Jerſies, about eighty miles from the forks of De la Ware river to Shaumaking on Seſquahana river, about 120 miles weſt of the ſaid forks; that he travelled more than 130 miles above the Engliſh ſettlements upon Seſquahana river, and was with about ſeven or eight diſtinct tribes there, ſpeaking ſo many different languages, moſtly belonging to the Sennekas: he was three or four years upon this miſſion, ſometimes did not ſee an Engliſhman for a month or ſix weeks together; all his exerciſes were in Engliſh. Mere journals are dry, but otherwiſe it ſeems naif or natural. At that time there was no other miſſionary amongſt the Indians of Jerſies and Penſylvania. Notwithſtanding all his perſonal penances, and charge to the ſociety, he effected nothing, though a pious laborious miſſionary.

European

European languages, is done by a ſyllable or two; as their ideas increaſe, they are obliged to adopt the European words of adjoining colonies. In numbering they uſe the ſame natural way of reckoning by tens, as in Europe; ten being the number of human fingers. No chronicles, ſcarce any traditionary accounts of thinks extending back further than two or three generations; ſcarce any Indians can tell their own age.

They had no [x] characters, that is, hieroglyphics, or letters; they had a few ſymbols or ſignatures, as if in a heraldry way to diſtinguiſh tribes; the principal were the tortoiſe, the bear, the wolf. There was not the leaſt veſtige of letters in America; ſome years ſince a certain credulous perſon, and voluminous author, impoſed upon himſelf and others; he obſerved in a tiding river, a rock, which, as it was not of an uniform ſubſtance, the ebbing and the flowing of the tide made a ſort of vermoulure, honey-combing, or etching on its face; here he imagined, that he had diſcovered the America Indian characters, and overjoyed remits ſome lines of his imaginary characters to the Royal Society in

[x] There are ſundry ways of expreſſing our thoughts and ſounds. 1. The Egyptian hieroglyphics ſeem to be the moſt ancient: they were delineations, drawings, and paintings, or images of material things, or allegorical expreſſions of tranſactions in figures real or chimerical; mutes ſeem to expreſs themſelves in hieroglyphical motions: the defect of this character ſeems to be, that ideas which have no material figure could not be well expreſſed, and the writing too tedious and imperfect.

2. The Chineſe have no letters or compounding characters; every word has a peculiar character, and inſtead of being unreaſonably long, as with the Americans, there is in ſome manner a neceſſity for all their words being monoſyllables; thus their characters are ſo numerous, that a man of letters is a trade, not ſoon to be learnt.

3. In Europe a few arbitrary characters, called letters, were firſt brought to us from Phœnicia via Greece, and are in different nations in number from twenty to twenty-four; by theſe variouſly mixed, all European words are compoſed and well diſtinguiſhed; they expreſs words or ſounds only, not things as in hieroglyphics.

London:

London: ſee Philoſophical Tranſactions, Numb. 339. "At Taunton, by the ſide of a tiding river, part in, part "out of, the river there is a large rock, on the perpendi- "cular ſide of which, next to the ſtream, are ſeven or "eight lines, about ſeven or eight feet long, and about a "foot wide each of them, ingraven with unaccountable "characters, not like any known character." This may be ſuppoſed wrote anno 1714: at preſent, anno 1747, by the continued ebbing and flowing the honey-combing is ſo altered as not in the leaſt to reſemble his draught of the characters.

As the Indians were ſo rude, as to have no letters or other characters, there is no certain way of writing their names of things; all we can do is to expreſs their ſounds or pronunciations as near as may be in our own letters. Father Ralle of Noridgwog, and ſome other ſcholaſtic French miſſionaries, have imagined that the Greek alphabet ſuits their pronunciation beſt. The Indians have a figurative way of expreſſing themſelves as if in hieroglyphics; thus, the renewing of alliances they call brightening of the chain.

There is no general fixed way of writing Indian words, therefore we ſhall not mind any particular orthography in that reſpect, only we ſhall endeavour to be underſtood: for inſtance, the Indian tribe upon Quenebec river in New-England, we write and pronounce it Naridgwoag, the French miſſionaries write it Narantſoack: the tribe of the Iroquois or five New-York allied Indian nations, which we call Sennekas, the French call them *Sonontouans*.

There is not the ſame reaſon for preſerving the Indian names of their countries, nations, tribes, mountains, and rivers, as there is for preſerving the Greek, Roman, and other more modern names of ſuch things in Europe; the Indians have no civil or claſſical hiſtory to require it. The Indians change their own perſonal names, and the names of other things upon trifling occaſions: our Indians

affect to have Engliſh names; thus Maſſaſoit's two ſons deſired of the court of Plymouth to give them Engliſh names; they were accordingly named Alexander and Philip; this Philip, formerly Metacomet, was chief in a ſubſequent Indian war, called king Philip's war. Captain Smith the traveller reſided nineteen years in Virginia and New-England, and wrote a hiſtory of thoſe parts, anno 1624; he enumerates the names of many tribes, rivers, and other things, which are now irrecoverably loſt.

As the Indian dealings and mutual correſpondence is much confined, their ſeveral languages are of ſmall extent [*y*].

III. *Food and medicine of the aboriginal Indians.*

OUR Indians do not imitate the bees, ants, *&c.* in laying up ſtores, but like rapacious animals, live from hand to mouth; after long faſting they are voracious, and upon a gluttonous repaſt can faſt many days, by bracing in, or reefing their girdles or belts.

The far-north Indians of Weſt-Greenland, Terra de Labarador, *&c.* live upon the blubber of whales, ſeals,

[*y*] Mr. Elliot, formerly miniſter of Roxbury, adjoining to Boſton, with immenſe labour tranſlated and printed our Bible into Indian; it was done with a good pious deſign, but muſt be reckoned among the *Otioſorum hominum negotia*; it was done in the Natic language; of the Naties at preſent there are not twenty families ſubſiſting, and ſcarce any of theſe can read: *Cui bono!*

The countries in Europe being well civilized, with a great mutual intercourſe and uſe of letters, their general languages, but in various dialects, are very extenſive; the ancient Latin, in its various dialects and words, adopted from neighbouring nations, extends over Italy, France, Spain, and Portugal; the Celtic in Bretagne of France, Cornwall and Wales of England, Iſle of Man, great part of Ireland, and the Highlands of Scotland; the Teutonic in Germany, Great-Britain, Low-countries, in Belgia, Denmark, Sweden, and Norway; the Sclavonian in Muſcovy and Ruſſia, in Poland, in Hungary, and the other countries weſt of theſe ſo far as to the Turkiſh dominions.

and

and other fiſh, and their moſt generous beverage is fiſh-oil; ſcarce any quadrupeds or fowls, not only from the ſeverity and long continuance of their cold weather, froſt and ſnow, but alſo becauſe their meadows and other lands, inſtead of graſs and other herbage, bear only moſs.

The Indians, in the more moderate climates, live by hunting, fowling, and fiſh; they do not clear and cultivate the foreſt by planting and grazing; lately ſome of their ſquaas or women improve in planting of maize and Indian beans. Their bread-kind are maize [z], or Indian corn, phaſeolus, kidney or Indian beans, ſeveral ſorts of tuberous roots called ground-nuts; ſeveral ſorts of berries, particularly ſeveral ſorts of *vitis Idæa*, in New-England, called huckle-berries. Upon a continued march, where hunting and fowling is inconſiderable, they carry with them, for ſubſiſtence, parched Indian corn called no-cake.

The Abnaquies, or New-England northern and eaſtern Indians, becauſe of the hunting and fowling failing during the winter, are obliged to remove to the ſea-ſide, and live upon clams, baſs, ſturgeon, *&c.*

Their medical practice reſembles that of officious old women in ſome remote country villages of Europe; mere empiriciſm, or rather a traditionary blind practice; they regard only the ſymptoms that ſtrike the groſs ſenſes moſt, without reſpect to any leſs obvious principal ſymp-

[z] This hiſtory was not compoſed into a regular, full body, before it began to be publiſhed; and its being publiſhed only at various times of leiſure, and humour of the writer, it ſeems to become too much of a miſcellany, but without neglecting the principal view or deſign. Notwithſtanding the deſigned brevity, conciſeneſs, or ſummary (which ſpoils the fluidity or fluency of ſtyle) it ſwells too much; therefore at preſent to eaſe ſome of our readers, we lay aſide or defer the deſigned ſhort deſcription or natural hiſtory of theſe things, which are uſed by the Indians as food, medicine, or traffic.

tom,

tom, which may be called the diſeaſe, or to conſtitution, ſex, and age. The Powowers, conjurers, or wizards, are their principal phyſicians.

They do not uſe our way of veneſection, but practiſe cupping; they vomit and purge by particular herbs or roots; inſtead of veſicatories and cauſtics, they burn with touchwood. Their principal remedy is ſweating in huts warmed by heated ſtones, and thereupon immediate immerſion in cold water: this ſeems to be a rational practice, firſt by relaxing to give a free paſſage to the obſtructed circulatory juices; and after a free paſſage is ſuppoſed to be obtained, by cold immerſion to brace up again: in inflammatory and eruptive epidemical fevers, *e. g.* ſmall-pox, this practice depopulates them.

Their medicines are only ſimple indigenous herbs; they uſe no exotic plants, no minerals, no medicinal compoſitions, or chemical preparations. The virtues or proper uſes of their herbs were diſcovered by chance, and their ſimples, which have had a peculiar continued ſucceſs, have been handed down or tranſmitted from generation to generation. As it is amongſt brutes of a ſimple ſteady manner of regimen and living, ſo with our Indians there is no multiplicity of diſtempers, therefore their [*a*] materia medica is not copious.

Our Indians are ſo tender, and habituated to a certain way of living, that they do not bear tranſplantation; for

[*a*] In Europe our materia medica is too luxuriant, and the greateſt part of it trifling; many of our medicinal preparations and compoſitions are filly and of no real uſe to the patient; it is with pleaſure that I obſerve, the various conſerves, ſyrups, diſtilled waters, and ſome other Arabian medicines, wear out of faſhion in Great-Britain amongſt the regular phyſicians, and are uſed only by quacks and practiſing apothecaries. A proper regimen diet, and not exceeding a dozen notedly efficacious medicines properly applied (this, by ſome of the clergy, old women, and nurſes, is repreſented as doing nothing) is the true effectual materia medica: where the nature of the diſtemper and indications of cure are aſcertained (in this conſiſts the art of phyſic.) D. Pitcairn's problem, *Dato morbo remedium invenire*, is not very intricate, where incurable is not in the caſe.

inſtance,

inſtance, the Spaniſh Indians, captivated in the St. Auguſtine war, anno 1702, and ſold for ſlaves in New-England, ſoon died conſumptive; this occaſioned an act of aſſembly to diſcourage their importation. Europeans ſeem to thrive the better for being tranſplanted; the progeny of Europeans born in America do not bear removals, the reaſons I cannot aſſign: for inſtance, from Maſſachuſetts-Bay Province in New-England of 500 men upon the Cuba and Carthagena expedition, not exceeding fifty ſurvived; of 3000 men upon the Cape-Breton expedition, near one half died naturally in Louiſbourg, or ſoon after their arrival in New-England; of about 300 perſons late priſoners and captives in Quebec of Canada, about ſeventy died there.

They are not ſo laſcivious as Europeans (Aſiatics are more laſcivious than Europeans, witneſs the ſeraglios and harams of the great men in Turkey and Perſia, and the diſperſed Jews in Europe) they never offer violence to our women captives: but are not ſo continent as is generally repreſented by authors; Mrs. Rowlandſon, wife to the miniſter of Lancaſter in New-England, captivated by the Indians anno 1676, writes, that her Indian maſter had three ſquaas or wives; Mr. Brainerd, a Scotland miſſionary, in the journal of his miſſion, printed anno 1746, mentions "the abuſive practice of "Indian huſbands and wives, putting away each other, "and taking others in their ſtead."

IV. *The American Indians trade and currencies.*

TRADE. Their chief trade is ſkins and furs, the produce of their hunting, moſtly deer-ſkins and beaver.

Beaver the farther ſouth, have leſs fur and more hair; the farther north the ſtaple is the longer: they reckon eight ſorts of beaver, *viz.* winter, and ſummer, fat, and dry, *&c.* The winter fat is the beſt, next to coat-beaver, which is beaver wore till it is well greaſed.

A beaver-

A beaver-ſkin may weigh from one pound and a half to two pound; an Indian pack of beaver may weigh about 80 lb. wt. Beaver breed once a year, ten to fifteen at a litter. In the very high latitudes there are no beaver, becauſe no wood; beaver require wood, which they cut, or rather gnaw with their teeth (thus ſquirrels and rats gnaw timber) into lengths called junks or logs for making their dams, and part of their food or ſubſiſtence is the bark of trees. Three quarters of the returns of the Hudſon's-Bay company is in beaver, to about the value of 40,000 *l.* ſterling *per annum*. The ſame good animal affords another commodity, caſtoreum, called beaver-ſtone; this is not according to a vulgar error, the teſticles, but ſome inſpiſſated ſecretion contained in a couple of glands near the anus of both males and females.

Deer-ſkins much more plenty ſouthward; South-Carolina does export *per annum*, the value of 25,000 *l.* to 30,000 *l.* ſterling in deer-ſkins.

In the high latitudes, they deal with a ſmall matter of feathers, whale-bone, and blubber, or fiſh-oil.

Currencies. Their commercial ſtandard of currencies is to the northward (I mean in North-America) per pound beaver-ſkin value, to the ſouthward per pound deer-ſkin value.

They formerly had, and in ſome places ſtill retain, for ſmall currency (in New-England, in old charter times, they were a tender for any ſum not exceeding forty ſhillings) wampum or wampum-peag, being ſmall bits of the ſpiral turns of a buccinum or whelk. This done up into ſtrings, and certain plaits or belts, was a large denomination, and large ſums were reckoned by the number of fathoms of this wampum-plait: thus we read in the hiſtories of former times, for inſtance, that the Naraganſet Indians, ſent 200 fathom of wampum, to pay in part a debt to Boſton colony; Uncas, ſachem of the Moheags in Connecticut, paid 100 fathom of wampum for monies due to the Engliſh.

ARTICL

ARTICLE III.

The Indian nations and tribes upon the eaſtern ſide of North-America.

WE may diſtinguiſh the Indians by their relation or poſition with regard to the European colonies ſettled in North-America. 1. The Indian nations (we cannot particularize their ſeveral tribes or clans) without, but bordering upon the Britiſh grants, ſuch are the French Indians of Canada, and the Spaniſh Indians of Florida. 2. Indian tribes within our grants or charters, but without our ſettlements, ſuch are the Mikamakes of Nova Scotia, the Abnaquies of New-England, the Mohawks, or five nations of New-York; the emigrant Tuſcararoes I do not call a nation, *&c.* 3. Indian families, interſperſed with our ſettlements upon Indian reſerved lands; theſe are uſeful to the Europeans, particularly to the Britiſh, as domeſtic ſervants, labourers, ſailors, whalers, and other fiſhers: many of the Indian reſerves are extinct, and their lands lapſed to the provinces.

The preſent names of the ſeven Indian nations, or general great diviſions, may continue in perpetuity, as claſſical names in hiſtory: for the many particular tribes included or which compoſe the ſeveral nations or general diviſions, their names are ſo various and changeable, we cannot enumerate them; and ſtill leſs known are the names and numbers of the villages or caſtles in the ſeveral tribes.

The Indian nations or general diviſions, which lie upon or near the eaſtern ſhore of North-America, are the Indians of Weſt-Greenland, commonly called Davis's-ſtraits, Eſkimaux, Algonquins, Tahſagrondie, Owtawaes, Miamis, Chikeſaus: Mikamakis, Abnaquies, Iroqois or Mohawks, Chawans, Old Tuſcararoes, Cuttumbaes,

Cherokees, and Creek-Indians: ſome ſhort deſcriptions or delineation of theſe will make the face of the eaſt ſide of North-America more apparent and familiar to us, before we ſet down the ſeveral modern colonies ſettled there; in imitation, *ſi parva magnis componere*, of the *Europæ antiquæ & modernæ* tables or maps.

I. The Indians of Weſt-Greenland, or of a north-eaſt continent from Davis-ſtraits reaching from Cape Farewel in N. lat. 60 D. northward indefinitely, and all the Indians in the ſame latitudes, are a few ſtraggling miſerable people; live in caves or dens under ground, becauſe of the ſeverity of the cold [*b*]; have no fire (no fuel) eat their fleſh and fiſh raw; are cloathed in ſeal-ſkins; much ſubject to the ſcurvy [*c*] or itch (the French call thoſe of Terra de Labradore ſouth of Davis's-ſtraits, for this reaſon, the ſcabbed indians) have no produce or ſubject for trade.

The Eſkimaux extend from Davis's and Hudſon's ſtraits north, along the weſt ſide of the Atlantic ocean to the mouth of St. Laurence river ſouth; thence range weſtward croſs the lower parts of the ſeveral rivers which fall into the bottom of Hudſon's-Bay, and then northward along the weſtern ſhore of Hudſon's-Bay to the polar circle [*d*] in 66 D. or 67 D. N. Lat. as Mr. Dobbs writes, Thus the Eſkimaux, excepting a ſmall narrow tract upon the Labradore ſhore, are all quit-

[*b*] Extremity of cold, may equally be called hell, as extremity of heat; our ſcriptural writers lived in a hot country, not in a cold climate. In the government of Muſcovy or Ruſſia, tranſlation or exile to Siberia the northern parts of Ruſſia in a high latitude, is uſed as a degree of puniſhment next to death, in felonious criminal caſes, particularly in miniſterial treachery.

[*c*] Their fiſh coarſe diet, extremity of cold, and long winter confinements, render their circulating juices rancid or putrid, and conſequently are very ſcorbutic.

[*d*] Here I cannot underſtand what Mr. Dobbs and Capt. Middleton write; they mention northern Indians in Lat. 62 D. and 63 D. and ſome Eſkimaux in Lat. 66 D. to 67 D. and theſe two nations in a natural or continued enmity; how ſhall we reconcile this intermixture?

claimed

claimed to us by France in the treaty of Utrecht, anno 1713: excepting thoſe who frequent the bottom of Hudſon's Bay; the others can be of no commercial benefit, they afford a very ſmall matter of feathers, whale-oil, and blubber.

Mr. Dobbs of Ireland, the preſent enthuſiaſtic follower of a N. W. paſſage projection, very credulous, gives the name of many imaginary tribes weſt of Hudſon's-Bay; but as in high latitudes not many people can ſubſiſt [*e*], and his tribes are not well vouched, we cannot mention them. Mr. Dobbs is an enemy of the Hudſon's-Bay company; he ſays, that trade is got into the hands of about nine or ten of their principal men, who export not exceeding 3000 *l.* ſterling *per annum*, in Britiſh produce and manufacture; and keep up their prices ſo high, that the French ſupply them cheaper, and carry away the trade; whereas if their charter was vacated, and the trade laid open, many traders would ſettle factories or trading houſes up the rivers towards the French, and, by underſelling them, much increaſe our fur-trade.

ALGONQUINS in ſeveral tribes reach from the mouth of St. Laurence river along its north ſide, extending about 150 leagues; they are the French beſt Indian friends; but frequently upon little differences give the French ſettlers much diſturbance; may be about 1500 fighting men.

TAHSAGRONDIE indians are between the lakes Erie and Hurons; perhaps from the barrenneſs of the country, they are of ſmall numbers, diſperſed, and of no great notice: they are friends of the New-York nations.

[*e*] In the high latitudes, towards winter, ſome of their animals become grey or ſilver-coloured; and next ſummer recover their native colours; not from the ſame hairs or feathers re-aſſuming their native colour, but by a new growth or coat: perhaps a like decay of native heat in the aged of mankind, occaſions their becoming grey.

OUTAWAES, a great and powerful nation, they live upon the Outawae river, which joins upon the Cataraqui river (the outlet of the great lakes) a little above Montreal, and upon the great lakes, and extend N. W. to near the S. W. part of Hudſon's-Bay; they deal conſiderably with the New-York trading houſes at Oſwego [*f*], upon the lake Ontario in the Onondaguee country. In May, anno 1723, about eighty men, beſides women and children, from a large tribe belonging to the Outawaes came to Albany in the province of New-York, and deſired to be admitted as another friend-nation amongſt the Mohawk nations; this tribe lies between the lake of Hurons and the upper lake, and call themſelves Necarageés, of ſix caſtles or villages, near the ſtraits between theſe two lakes, adjoining to a tribe called by the

[*f*] Indians of above twenty nations, or large tribes, come here to trade in the ſeaſon of their fairs; theſe Indians are diſtinguiſhable, by the variety and different faſhions of their canoes; the very remote Indians are clothed in ſkins of various ſorts; they all have fire-arms; ſome come ſo far north as Port-Nelſon in Hudſon's-Bay N. Lat. 57 D. and ſome are from the Cherokees, weſt of South-Carolina in N. Lat. 32 D. This ſeems to be a vaſt extent of inland water-carriage, but it is only for canoes the ſmalleſt of craft. In Europe our inland water-carriage vaſtly excels this: for inſtance (I do not mention the royal canal in France from the weſtern ocean to the Mediterranean-ſea, nor the many canals finiſhed, and projected in Muſcovy and Ruſſia, by Peter the Great, becauſe they are artificial) from Aſia and the black-ſea, up the Danube river, to near the head thereof; and thence a ſmall carrying place to the head of the river Rhine, which, by its many branchings, has an extenſive communication, and falls into the northern ocean in Holland; and from the ſources of the Danube a ſmall carrying-place to the head of the river Rhone, which falls into the Mediterranean ſea, in the ſouth of France; up the river Rhone, and the Saone, and the Ouſche; then a ſmall carrying-place to the head of the Seine river, which, by way of Paris, Rouen, and Havre-de-Grace, carries into the northern ocean; and from the Seine by a canal to the river Loire by way of Orleans and Nants to the weſtern ocean. Our navigation and carriages in Europe are much improved beyond this wild manner, incommoded by cataracts, falls, or ſautes; by trees which accidentally fall acroſs their rivulets, *&c.* In Europe their carriage is in ſhips and large craft for the ocean, ſeas, and large rivers, and from thence an eaſy wheel-land carriage at pleaſure.

French [g] Miſilimackinac. There is a large nation ſouth-weſt of the Outawaes, called by the French, Les Renards; they are not within our knowledge.

MIAMIES, ſo called by the French (we call them Twightwies) or Ilinois; they live generally upon the river Miamis, and the lake and river Ilinois which receives the river Miamis. The Ilinois is a great river, and by it

[g] Mr. Kellogg, anno 1710, from Maſſachuſetts-Bay, captivated by the Indians; in curioſity, and from a laudable public ſpirit for information, travelled with ſix French Indian traders, from Montreal in Canada up the Outawaes river, N. W. to Matawaen; thence they carry a little way to a ſmall lake, Nipiſing, and by the French river to the great lake of the Hurons (a miſerable country) about fifty leagues in length, never froze over, but is like an open ſea (no ſpruce, that is fir, or pine in this country) they coaſted to its N. W. corner, and wintered at a village or tribe of the Outawaes, called Miſilimackinac, in N. Lat. 46 D. upon the ſtr. its between the lakes Hurons and Ilinois; this ſtrait is frozen over in winter; here he wintered; he killed trout of 50 l. wt. from theſe ſtraits they entered the lake Ilionis, and coaſted in courſe of its length S. S. W. to its ſouth-weſterly corner; thence they carried one league (the longeſt carriage in their journey or voyage) to a branch of the river Ilinois: the river Miamis, which gives name to a large nation of Indians, and comes from near the lake Ilinois, and by which theſe traders with Mr. Kellogg returned to Montreal, falls into the river Ilinois. The river Ilinois runs a courſe of about 130 leagues, and falls into the river Miſſiſippi. Mr. Kellogg, upon the river Ilinois, ſaw the remains of ſome former French ſettlements, but no preſent inhabitants, ſome tufts of clover, and a few European fruit-trees; this is what ſome French writers call the province of Hanois (perhaps corruptly for Ilinois) inhabited by above 6,000 whites; on the river Ilinois was a French fort, called fort Louis or Crevecœur. Five leagues below the mouth of river Ilinois, falls into the Miſſiſippi the great river Miſouris from the north-weſt. Farther down is a French village and wind-will, ſome maize, a few vines, and other European produce. A little farther down the Miſſiſippi, falls in the river Owbache, Ohio, or Belle-Riviere; it heads near the weſt branch of the Sefquahana in Penſylvania. This is another rout for the French trade, and patrole to the mouth of the Miſſiſippi. Hereabouts the French traders and Mr. Kellogg ended their voyage, and returned to Montreal in Canada by the river Miamis. We may ſuppoſe that about 37 D. N. Lat. is the boundary between the French two general colonies of Canada and Louiſiana of Miſſiſippi, and that their Canada trading licence extends no further.

is one of Canada routs for their patrole and trade to the Miſſiſſippi.

CHICKESAUS ſeem to lie next to the Miamis, on the eaſtern ſide of the Miſſiſſippi; they are allies of and traders with the people of Carolinas. The Cherokees are next in courſe upon the eaſt ſide of Miſſiſſippi river; but as they lie both ſides, and upon the Apalachian mountains, we ſhall for method's ſake (method renders every thing diſtinct and eaſy) refer it to the next range of Indian nations.

We have given a general view of the more remote nations of Indians, that is, of the nations that live north, and weſt, and ſouth-weſt of the great river St. Laurence, and weſt of the Apalachian mountains to the great river of Miſſiſſippi: we now proceed to the next range that lies from the mouth of St. Laurence river north, to the bay of Apalachia in the gulph of Mexico ſouth; being upon the ſouth and ſouth-eaſt ſide of the river St. Laurence, and eaſt ſide of the Apalachian mountains, or great blue-hills; which reach from the [*b*] Niagara falls, in the ſtraits between lake Ontario and Erie N. lat. 43 D. to the bay of Apalachia in N. lat. 30 D. Theſe mountains are generally 300 miles from the Atlantic ſhore; all the runs of water from their eaſt ſide, fall into the Atlantic ocean, and thoſe from the weſt-ſide into the grand river Miſſiſſippi.

II. The Mikamakes of *l'Accadie* or Nova Scotia, ſome of them live along Cape-Sable ſhore, ſome at Green-Bay, Menis, and Chicanicto, ſome in Cape-Breton iſland, and St. John's iſland: they do not much exceed 350 fighting men; they continue in the French intereſt, from our

[*b*] M. Vaudreuil, late governor-general of Canada, cauſed theſe famous falls to be narrowly examined; reduced to a perpendicular height, they were only twenty ſix fathom; father Hennopin writes it 100 fathom. It is true, that from the great falls, it continues ſtill to deſcend ſomewhat further by ledges or ſtairs.

bad

bad management; notwithſtanding that the whole province was quit-claimed to us by the peace of Utrecht 1713: from this ſame neglect or wrong conduct it proceeds, that the French are allowed to keep five miſſions in this province, *viz.* That of Annapolis River, of Cape-Sable ſhore, of Monis, of Chicanicto, and St. John's river. The biſhop of Quebec in Canada is allowed to be their ſuperior and conſtituent, and they act by his direction.

The Abnaquies, properly the New-England Indian nation, reach eaſt and weſt from the bay of Fundy (to deſcribe the Indian nations as geographers in Europe do countries, by latitudes and longitudes, would be ſtiff, pedantic, not accurate, and of no uſe) to Hudſon's or New-York river and lake Champlian or Corlaer; north and ſouth from the St. Laurence or Canada great river, to the Atlantic ocean. They are in many tribes, but dwindle much and become leſs formidable; their intercourſe with the Britiſh and French has introduced additional diſtempers amongſt them, particularly thoſe which proceed from the immoderate uſe of ſpirits, brandy or rum; hence they become more indolent, and are ſtraightned for ſubſiſtence; their hunting fails them, they have but few deer and beaver; a ſmall matter of Indian corn and kidney-beans, which their ſquaas or women plant, is at preſent a conſiderable part of their ſubſiſtence; they conſiſted of many tribes, ſome extinct, ſome extinguiſhing, and the others much reduced [*i*]; let us enumerate them in their natural order. 1. The Indians of St. John's river, theſe belong to Nova Scotia, and have a

[*i*] The proprietors of the eaſtern lands in New-England, for ſome ſcores of years, have been much incommoded by the incurſions of theſe Indians, which renders their intereſt there a mere dead ſtock; but very ſoon theſe Indians will not be capable to annoy them any more, and by a law for ſettling quiet poſſeſſion (this country being ſo often ſettled and unſettled, bought and ſold, the various claims are very intricate and title precarious) the lands there will become valuable.

French miſſionary prieſt; the mouth of St. John's river, in the bay of Fundy, is about ten leagues from Annapolis-Royal. The St. John's river Indians, in travelling to Quebec, go up this long river, and ſo on to a ſhort rapid river which falls into the river of St. Laurence a few leagues below Quebec; they do not exceed 150 fighting men. 2. Penobſcot Indians are within the Maſſachuſetts-Bay grant, have a French miſſionary; they lie upon a great bay of the ſame name; their numbers not exceeding 150 men fit to march; they travel to Quebec up the ſmall river of Penobſcot, which comes from the weſtward, and go on to Quenebec river a little above Taconic falls, and thence follow the ſame rout with the Quenebec Indians. 3. Sheepſcut Indians in the Maſſachuſetts grant, upon a river of the ſame name, which falls into Sagadahoc (formerly called Sagatawooke) river, or rather bay, from the eaſtward; not exceeding two or three families exiſting anno 1747. 4. Quenebec Indians, in the foreſaid grant, upon the river of the ſame name, being the middle and principal river of Sagadahoc; their principal ſettlement or head-quarters is at Norridgwoag, about 100 miles up northward from the entrance of Sagadahoc; they were much reduced in their war or rebellion, in the time of the wiſe adminiſtration of William Dummer, Eſq; they have a French miſſionary, and travel to Quebec up Quenebec river, and from the head thereof, by ſeveral ponds and carrying-places to the ſhort rapid river La Chaudiere, which falls into St. Laurence river, about four leagues above Quebec; at preſent they do not exceed ſixty fighting men. 5. Amereſcogin Indians upon Pegepſcut or Brunſwic river, which falls into the weſt ſide of Sagadahoc, they may be ſaid to be extinct. 6. Pigwacket Indians on Saco river (they are in two ſettlements) Pigwoket and Oſſepee at Oſſepee pond (Lovel, and his party of voluntiers were cut off by the Indians, anno 1724) lie about fifty miles about Winter-Harbour, the mouth of Saco river; at preſent not exceeding a dozen fighting men, and formerly travelled (at preſent they are

in

in the Britiſh intereſt) to Quebec via Connecticut river up, and St. François river down to Canada river. 7. The Pennycook Indians, upon Merrimac river in New-Hampſhire juriſdiction, but lately quite extinct. 8. The Walnonoak Indians, on the river Puante, called the miſſion of Beſancourt, over-againſt Les Trois Rivieres, thirty leagues above Quebec, at this time in the Canada juriſdiction, about forty fighting men. 9. The Arouſeguntecook Indians, upon the river and miſſion of St. François, about forty leagues above Quebec, in the Canada juriſdiction, not exceeding 160 men fit to march. 10. Maſiaſſuc Indians, on the eaſt or Dutch ſide of lake Champlain, in the French intereſt, do not exceed ſixty fighting men. Thus the Abnaquie extenſive nation of Indians, does not exceed 640 fighting men fit to march.

The Iroquois Indians. We call them Mohawks, the name of one of the five or ſix united nations; thus the ſeven united provinces of the Belgic Netherlands are called Holland from the province of Holland; and the ten Spaniſh, now Auſtrian, provinces there, are called Flanders, from the province of Flanders: they head or lie north of our provinces of New-York, Penſylvania, Maryland, and ſome part of Virginia; the Senaccaas reach a great way down Seſquahana river; the tribe of about 100 ſouls called Shaumakins, lie below the forks of Seſquahana, about 120 miles weſt from the forks of De la Ware river. In all public accounts, they are lately called the ſix nations of New-York friend Indians; the Tuſcararoes, emigrants from the old Tuſcararoes of North-Carolina, lately are reckoned as the ſixth; we ſhall reckon them as formerly. 1. The Mohawks; they live upon the Mohawks or Schenectady river; they have a caſtle or village weſtward from Albany forty miles, another ſixty-five miles weſt from Albany: the number of their fencible men about 160. 2. Oneideas, about eighty miles from the Mohawks ſecond village, conſiſting of near 200 fighting men. 3. Onondagues, about

twenty-

twenty-five miles farther (the famous Oſwego trading place on the lake Ontario, about 200 miles weſt from Albany, is in their country) conſiſt of about 250 men. 4. Cayugeas, about ſeventy miles farther, of about 130 men. 5. Senekeas, further weſt about 700 marching fighting men. The fighting men of the five or ſix nations of Mohawks, may be reckoned at 1500 men, and extend from Albany weſt about 400 miles, lying in the New-York, Pennſylvania, Maryland, and Virginia governments, in about thirty tribes or villages. Beſides theſe, there is ſettled a little above Montreal, a tribe of ſcoundrel runaways from the Mohawks; they are called Kahnuages, of about eighty men.

The CHOWANS, on the eaſt ſide of the Apalachian mountains, or great Blue-hills, are reduced to a ſmall number; they lie weſt of Virginia and North-Carolina; they live north of Roanoke river. Lately our Indian traders have found ſeveral practicable paſſes croſs theſe mountains, and keep ſtores in their weſt ſide, or intervals of ridges; they are in continued or natural enmity with the Tuſcararoes.

The TUSCARAROES lie between Roanoke and Pemlico rivers in North-Carolina; do not exceed 200 fighting men, being much reduced upon their North-Carolina inſurrection, anno 1711, and many of their nation drove off; now ſettled with the New-York five nations.

CATABAWS in courſe lie ſouth of the Tuſcararoes, a ſmall nation, of about 300 men. The Catabaws, Cherokees, and ſome of the Creeks, are not ſtyled ſubjects, but allies and good friends of Great-Britain.

CHEROKEES [*k*] live upon the ſouthern parts and both ſides of the Apalachian mountains; are a populous extenſive nation of about 6000 men. Anno 1722, in a congreſs with governor Nicholſon of South-Carolina, there

[*k*] The Cherokees are a conſtant and ſure barrier between the French upon the Miſſiſſippi and the Britiſh colonies of Carolina: why ſhould not the Abnaquies, by good management, be made a good barrier between New-England and Canada?

were

were preſent of the lower and middle Cherokees the chiefs of thirty-ſeven towns or tribes; and, with their conſent general Nicholſon appointed Wroſetaſatow their commander in chief. The people of South-Carolina have a conſiderable trade or trucking factory at Tuniſec, a Cherokee tribe upon the river Miſſiſſippi.

CREEK Indians of Florida about 2000 men. The lower Creeks conſiſt of eight to ten tribes, and run weſt to Flint river, which falls into the bay of Apalchia or gulf of Mexico; by inſtigation of the Spaniards particularly of St. Auguſtine, are very troubleſome to our Carolina and Georgia ſettlements, eſpecially the adjoining tribe of Yamaſſes. For inſtance, anno 1719, there was ſome French and Spaniſh projection againſt Great-Britain in embryo; the Abnaquies of New-England, by the inſtigation of the French, began to be troubleſome upon the ſame projection; this projection in Europe came to no maturity.

III. Indian families, or ſmall tribes upon reſerved lands, interſperſed with the Britiſh ſettlements in North-America. Upon the lower parts of the ſeveral rivers, which run into the Atlantic ocean in the Britiſh ſettlements, are ſeveral ſmall diſtinct tribes or related families, which are not reckoned as belonging to the farther inland large nations: they extinguiſh apace from the infection of our European diſtempers and vices; it can be of no uſe to follow a detail of theſe periſhing tranſitory ſmall tribes or families; as a ſample I ſhall enumerate thoſe in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

By act of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay aſſembly, anno 1746, the Indian reſerves being diſtinguiſhed into eight parcels, guardians, or managers, for theſe ſilly Indians were appointed. 1. Upon the eaſtern part of the promontary or peninſula of Cape-Cod, in the townſhips of Truro, Eaſtham, Chatham, Harwich, and Yarmouth; theſe Indians go by the ſeveral names of Pamet, Noſſet, Pachee, Potowmaket (here is an Indian congregation with a miniſter)

niſter) Sochtoowoket, and Nobſcuſſet. 2. The weſtern part of the ſaid peninſula of Cape-Cod in the townſhips of Barnſtable, Sandwich, and Falmouth, called the Indians of Wayanaes (the name of a formerly greateſt ſachem in that country) or Hyaneas, Coſtoweet, Maſhpe, Waquoit (Oyſter harbour) Scootin, and Saconoſſet or Woods-hole, the ferry-place to Martha's-Vineyard. 3. The Indians of the iſland of Nantucket about 900 ſouls, being more than all the others together, are very uſeful in the whale and cod-fiſhery. 4. Indians of Martha's-Vineyard iſland about 450; lately many of them have gone to ſettle in Nantucket, being a place of better employment. 5. The Indians of Plymouth, Pembroke, and Middleborough, called Namaſket. 7. The Nipmugs (formerly comprehending all the ſmall inland tribes from Connecticut river to Merrimac river; Blackſtone or Patucket river, which falls into the Naraganſet-Bay, was formerly called Nipmug river) formerly known by the names of Cutamogs, or Nipnets, in the townſhips and diſtricts of Dudley, Oxford, Woodſtock, Killinſbay, and Douglaſs; the Haſanamiſſets in Grafton and Sutton; the Naſhobies in Littleton, Stow, Acton, and Concord; Naſhaways in Lancaſter and Groton. 7. The Indian plantation of Natic, with a miniſter and ſalary from an Engliſh ſociety for propagating the goſpel amongſt the Indians in New-England; he officiates in Engliſh, and his congregation are moſtly Engliſh; it lies about eighteen miles weſt from Boſton, not exceeding twenty families of Indians. 8. Puncopag Indians, in the townſhip of Stoughton, being three or four families. Beſides theſe, there is in the S. W. corner of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, about twenty-five miles eaſt from Hudſon's or York river, a ſmall tribe of Indians, called Houſatonics, upon a river of that name, called Weſtenhoek by the Dutch: they are lately intermixed with the Engliſh in the townſhips of Sheffield and Stockbridge.

Excepting the Indians of Nantucket and Martha's-Vineyard (better employed) all the others in a few years will

will be extinct; moſt of their men were perſuaded to enliſt as ſoldiers in the late expeditions to Cuba and Carthagena againſt the Spaniards, and to Cape-Breton, and Nova Scotia againſt the French; ſcarce any of them ſurvived, and the names and memory of their tribes not worth preſerving.

In the other Britiſh colonies, where any tribes intermixed with our ſettlements require notice, they ſhall be mentioned in the proper ſections. This article I proſecute no further.

ARTICLE IV.

Indian *wars with the* Britiſh *colonies in* North-America.

WHEN the country of the Indians at war with us, lies upon our frontiers, but without our grants, I call it a war in the common acceptation; if within our grants, but without our ſettlements, I call it an eruption, in our proclamations againſt them it is called rebellion, as in all the New-England wars with the Abnaquies; if intermixed with our ſettlements, it is an inſurrection, ſuch were the wars of the Pequods, anno 1637, and of king Philip and his confederates, anno 1675.

In this article I only mention the Indian inſurrections or commotions which happened from the firſt landing of the Engliſh in the American countries, until the Britiſh [*l*] revolution in favour of the Prince of Orange, anno 1688: after this period, though our Indian wars were generally executed by the bordering Indians, they were under the influence, and by the direction of the Canada French; therefore I do not reckon them as mere Indian

[*l*] The revolution in a ſtrict ſenſe, was not the landing of the prince of Orange, afterwards king WILLIAM of bleſſed memory; it was a parliamentary excluſion of all the Popiſh branches of the Britiſh royal family, and ſettling the ſucceſſion to the crown in the Proteſtant branches thereof.

wars,

wars, but as French wars in America; they went *pari paſſu* with the Britiſh and French wars in Europe, and being intermixed with the European and New-England Britiſh expeditions againſt Canada, Nova Scotia, or L'Accadie, and Cape-Breton, or L'Iſle Royale, we ſhall give ſome ſhort account of them in the proper ſections.

A detail of the ſmall Indian ſkirmiſhes, at our firſt ſettling, can be of no uſeful information, and at this diſtance of time is no amuſement. A raſcally fellow, Capt. Hunt, anno 1614, by ſtealth carried off ſome Indians, and in the Mediterranean of Europe, ſold them to the Spaniards as Moors captivated from Barbary; this occaſioned a diffidence and diſguſt againſt the Engliſh traders upon that coaſt for ſome time. In New-England, excepting the Indian wars with the Pequods 1637, and with the Packenokets (called king Philip's war) and their confederates, anno 1675; and the French Indian wars with us during king William's and queen Anne's wars in Europe; and an eruption anno 1722, to 1725, when the French and Spaniards were hatching a war againſt us in Europe, which proved abortive; and our preſent war with the French and their aſſociated Indians; we had no Indian war of any kind. It is true, there have been private rencounters between the Engliſh and Indians at times from ſudden flights of paſſion or drunkenneſs; as happens all the world over.

Upon good enquiry it will be found, that our properly ſpeaking Indian wars have not been ſo frequent, ſo tedious, and ſo deſolating, as is commonly repreſented in too ſtrong a light (hunger-ſtarved, and cold-ſtarved were our greateſt hardſhips in ſettling;) In New-England our only Indian wars, properly ſo called, were the Pequod war, anno 1637, which laſted three months; and king Philip's war, anno 1675, and 1676, of about fourteen months continuance; and the war of 1722, to 1725.

In our northern parts, the Indians generally appear in ſmall ſkulking parties, with yellings, ſhoutings, and antic

antic poſtures, inſtead of trumpets and drums; their Indian wood-cry is jo-hau; their war-cry may be expreſſed, woach, woach, ha, ha, hach, woach.

The Indians are not wanderers like the Tartars, but are ramblers; and in time of war, according to the ſeaſons, they may be annoyed at their head-quarters, and ambuſcaded or way-laid at their carrying or land travelling places. Their retreats or ſtrong places are the ſwamps (copſes in a moraſs.) Dr. Cotton Mather, with good propriety calls it, being inſwamped, in imitation of the European term intrenched. Like the French in Europe, without regard to faith of treaties, they ſuddenly break out into furious, rapid outrages and devaſtations; but ſoon retire precipitately, having no ſtores for ſubſiſtence; the country is not cleared and cultivated. Their captives if they ſicken, or are otherways incapable of travelling, they kill them, and ſave their ſcalps; the Engliſh thus captivated are ſold to French families in Canada, but redeemable upon reimburſing the price paid, by an order from the governor-general of Canada.

Their head-warriors are men noted for ſtrength and courage; ſometimes in their wars they chuſe a temporary chief of all the tribes of one nation engaged (at times ſome particular tribe or village have declined joining in war with the general nation.) Thus the Niantics in the Pequod war; thus the Saco Indians in the preſent war, or rebellion of the Abnaquies; but not with a Roman dictatorial power: anno 1676, Madacawando of Penobſcot was chief of all the eaſtern or Abnaquie Indians, and Squando of Saco was his ſecond; anno 1637, Saſſacous was chief of the Pequod caſtles or villages.

Our ſcouts or Indian hunters, in the time of war, carry packs, which at firſt ſetting out may weigh 70 wt. being about thirty days proviſion of biſcuit, or parched Indian corn, ſalt pork, ſugar and ginger to qualify and animate their drink, which is water: their method of lodging,

lodging, pitching, or camping at night, is in parcels of ten or twelve men to a fire; they lie upon bruſh, wrapt up in a blanket, with their feet to the fire.

Towards the better underſtanding of the Pequod or Poquot, and king Philip's wars, it may be proper to know the ſituation and circumſtances of their adjoining Indians, as they were anno 1637. Along ſhore firſt were the Cape-Cod, peninſula Indians in ſeveral tribes; the Nantucket, and Martha's-Vineyard iſland Indians; theſe were always in friendſhip with the Engliſh ſettlers: next were the Pocaſſets (at preſent called Seconet) of about 300 fighting men; the Pockanokets, or king Philip's men, about 300 fighting men; the Nipmugs, adjoining to the Pockanokets inland, in ſeveral tribes, extending from Connecticut river to Merrimack river; the Naraganſets from Naraganſet-Bay to Pakatuke river, the boundary between Connecticut and Rhode-iſland colonies, about 1000 men; the Pequods from Pakatuck river to near Hudſon's or New-York river, the Moheags at the head of New-London or Thames river, about 400 men; the Connecticut river Indians in ſeveral tribes.

PEQUOD WAR. The occaſions of this war were, 1. A barbarous warlike nation; they killed, anno 1634, captains Stone and Norton, traders. 2. Lords Say and Brook 1636, building a fort at the mouth of Connecticut-river, near their head quarters, offended them. 3. Their continued killing, upon Connecticut-river, of Engliſh traders, upon frivolous pretences, to the number of thirty; at length the Engliſh could not avoid a proper reſentment.

Anno 1635, July 15, the aſſociated colonies of New-England made a league offenſive and defenſive with the ſix Naraganſet ſachems: by one of the articles, the Naraganſet Indians confirm all former grants of lands made to the Engliſh. The Naraganſet and Pequods were not cordial friends with one another.

1637,

1637, in May 20, a body of ſeventy-ſeven Engliſh, ſixty Connecticut-river Indians, 200 Naraganſet Indians, 100 Niantics (a village of the Pequods in friendſhip with the Engliſh) and twenty men from the garriſon of Saybrooke-fort, under the direction of [*m*] captain Maſon, afterwards deputy-governor of Connecticut (the 160 men from Maſſachuſetts-Bay under Mr. Stoughton, and the fifty men from Plymouth colony, had not then joined them) took and burnt the Pequod fort near Myſtic river (this river divides Stonington from Grotten in Connecticut) and killed about 140 Indians: a great body of Pequods came down from their neighbouring principal fort, but the Engliſh and their auxiliary Indians made a good retreat to their boats; in all they had only two men killed, and ſixteen wounded. The Engliſh purſued the Pequods from ſwamp to ſwamp with great havock: at length, in a ſwamp of Fairfield, towards New-Netherlands, they were routed; their captivated children were ſent to Bermudas, and ſold for ſlaves. Saſſacous, their leading ſachem, with about thirty more Pequods, fled to the Mohawks, and were murdered by them. In leſs than three months war, about 700 Pequods were deſtroyed, and that nation reduced to about 200 men, who ſued for peace; which was granted them upon condition of their abandoning their name and country, which accordingly they did, and incorporated themſelves with the Naraganſets and Moheags [*n*]. *N. B.* They had not many fire-arms.

After the Pequod war, there were at times between the Indians and Engliſh private mutual injuries, ſometimes more general miſunderſtandings, and threatened ruptures; but the union offenſive and defenſive of the

[*m*] This captain Maſon, for his good ſervice, had a colony grant of a large extent of land; theſe lands are now in diſpute between the colony of Connecticut and Mr. Maſon's heirs.

[*n*] Perhaps ſome expedient of this nature might be uſed with regard to ſome of the incorrigible clans of Highlanders in the northern and weſtern parts of Scotland.

united colonies of New-England awed them. By this union the proportions were, Maſſachuſetts 100, Plymouth, Hartford, and New-Haven, each forty-five men; this union was made anno 1643, the 19th day of the third month.

Anno 1645 and 1646, the Naraganſets were privately hatching an inſurrection, but were ſoon brought to an open declaration of a ſettled friendſhip with the Engliſh.

1653, the [o] Dutch of New Netherlands were forming a confederacy with our Indians, to cut off all the

[o] The Dutch have generally been called our natural and good friends, but as there can be no real friendſhip amongſt rivals in trade, it is a maxim with merchants, *there is no friendſhip in trade*; the Dutch carry this higher, *that there is no humanity in trade*; we ought to be equally jealous of the French and Dutch. The French faith is in our times as notoriouſly bad, as the *Punica* and *Græca fides* was in ancient times, therefore I ſhall not enumerate any inſtances of it. I ſhall give a few inſtances how faulty the Dutch have been in this reſpect. 1. Not long after we had relieved them from the Spaniſh bondage in their vaderland, or native country, they maſſacred our factory at Amboyna in the Eaſt-Indies, never to be forgiven nor forgotten. 2. In our New-England wars with the Pequod Indians, anno 1637, and with king Philip's Indians, anno 1675, they ſupplied our enemy Indians with ammunition, &c. from New-York and Albany. 3. Anno 1653, when the Engliſh and Dutch were at war in Europe, our Dutch neighbours of New-Netherlands had formed a plot, in conjunction with the Mohawks and eaſtern Indians, to cut off the Britiſh colonies in New-England; but a peace in Europe ſoon happening, prevented this maſſacre. 4. A few years ſince in the iſland of Java in the Eaſt-Indies, in the ſuburbs and country adjacent to Batavia, were ſettled about 90,000 Chineſe, multiplying very faſt: the Dutch, jealous of their numbers and growth, upon a pretended umbrage of an intended inſurrection, ſurprized, in cold blood, and maſſacred many thouſands of them, in order to reduce their numbers: gain is their God; to this they ſacrifice every thing, even their own ſpecies, mankind. 5. In the autumn, anno 746, when a French ſquadron invaded Fort St. George in the Eaſt-Indies, the Engliſh women of the town and its territory fled to Pallicut, a Dutch ſettlement, three hours or twelve miles north from St. George's; but the Dutch would not receive them. 6. The ſilent conſent of the Dutch to the French attacking and taking of the Auſtrian towns in the Netherlands: it is ſuſpected in all our battles or engagements againſt the French in Flanders

New-

New-England ſettlements, but a peace between England and Holland prevented it.

Anno 1654, the Naraganſet and Niantic Indians made war againſt the Montaoke Indians at the eaſt end of Long-iſland; but the united colonies of New-England, by fitting out 270 foot and forty horſe, ſoon brought the Naraganſets to an accommodation.

PACONOKET, OR KING PHILIP'S WAR. Maſſaſoit, chief of the Wampanogoes, whereof Paconoket or Mount Hope Neck was a tribe, was a good friend to the firſt Plymouth ſettlers. He left two ſons, Wamſucket and Metacomet; at their own deſire the government of Plymouth gave them the Engliſh names of Alexander and Philip; Alexander died anno 1662; Philip, by a formal inſtrument to the government of Plymouth anno 1671, reſtricted himſelf from diſpoſing of any of his lands without their conſent.

This Philip, ſachem of the Wampanogoes or Pacanoket Indians, was naturally a man of penetration, cunning, and courage; he formed a deep plot anno 1675, to extirpate the Engliſh of New-England: with profound ſecrecy he effected an extenſive confederacy with other tribes of Indians, *viz.* Pocaſſet, Naraganſets, Nipmugs, Connecticut-river Indians, ſeveral tribes of the Abnaquies our eaſtern Indians. The Canada French were in the ſcheme, and, by their emiſſaries, endeavoured to keep up the ſpirit of inſurrection; the Dutch from Albany were ſuſpected of ſupplying theſe Indians with ammunition. By the New-Plymouth grant, we find the Pacanoket Indians extended up Patuket or Blackſtone, formerly Nipmug-river, to the Nipmug country; but this boundary could not be aſcertained by the late com-

this war, that the Dutch general officers had private inſtructions, *to give way*, as if in colluſion with the French court. The Dutch is an oligarchy, or a government of few, and therefore liable to corruption, and would even bring their own country to a market, and ſell one another upon occaſion. The Dutch, if they could be ſincere, are our moſt natural allies againſt the encroaching French.

miſſioners for ſettling the line between Plymouth and Rhode-iſland colonies.

Philip began his inſurrection June 24, 1675, by killing nine Engliſhmen in Swanzey, adjoining to Mount-hope, his head quarters. The Engliſh ſuſpecting the Naraganſets, a powerful nation, might join Philip, marched an armed force into the Naraganſet country, and awed them into a treaty of peace and friendſhip; but notwithſtanding (ſuch is Indian Faith) they joined Philip, as will appear in the ſequel.

Beginning of July, the Pocaſſets begin hoſtilities. In a Pocaſſet ſwamp, king Philip and his confederate Pocaſſets, were environed by the Engliſh, but by night made their eſcape to the Nipmug country, leaving about 100 women and children. Middle of July, the Nipmugs begin hoſtilities by depredations in Mendon. Auguſt 25, the Connecticut-river Indians begin hoſtilities by annoying the neighbouring Engliſh ſettlements.

In Auguſt the eaſtern Indians, *viz.* Pennycooks of Merrimack, Pigwokets of Saco, and Amareſcogins of Pegepſcut-rivers break out, and by December they killed about fifty Engliſh, with their own loſs about ninety Indians. The ſeverity of the winter brought theſe tribes of eaſtern Indians to a formal peace; but by ſolicitation of Philip they broke out again next ſummer, and were joined by the Quenebec Indians, kill ſeveral Engliſh, and deſtroy their ſtock; but Philip being killed, they ſoon came in and ſubmitted.

The enemy Indians, imagining that upon the footing of the late treaty, the Engliſh would deem the Naraganſets as neutrals, in winter retired to the Naraganſet country; but for very good reaſons, the Engliſh, jealous of the Naraganſets, ſent thither 1000 men, 527 whereof from Maſſachuſetts, under the command of governor Winſlow of Plymouth; they were increaſed to 1500 men by an addition of ſome neighbouring friend Indians; December 19, they attack the Indians in their

fort

fort or ſwamp, and killed about 700 Indians, beſides women and children, with the loſs of about eighty-five Engliſh killed, and 150 wounded; the ſwamp is called Patty-ſquamſcut.

Notwithſtanding this diſaſter, the Indians had ſkulking parties out all winter; they kept the field better than the Engliſh, and harraſſed our people much; they did damage in the town of Plymouth, and within a few miles of Boſton, and the Engliſh were obliged to keep cloſe in garriſon-houſes. In the ſpring, the Mohawks having ſome difference with the Abnaquies, favoured the Engliſh; and the Indians being much harraſſed by famine (they had little produce, becauſe of the war, from their planting grounds laſt crop) fevers and fluxes, the Maſſachuſetts government very wiſely iſſued a proclamation July 8, 1676, promiſing the hopes of a pardon to all Indian enemies or rebels, who ſhould come in within fourteen days. Many ſubmitted, many withdrew to their reſpective peculiar abodes; ſome travelled weſtward towards Hudſon's river, were purſued and killed. Philip was reduced to ſkulk about, and, in a ſwamp of Mount Hope, his own country, with ſix or ſeven of his followers was killed Auguſt 12, 1676.

During Philip's war about 3000 Indians were killed, captivated, and ſubmitted; the Naraganſets from a large body reduced to about 100 men. The war being over, about 400 Indians by order met at major Waldron's of Catchecho; 200 were culled out, who had been notoriouſly, wicked, and miſchievous; of theſe a few ſuffered death; the others (of the 200) were tranſported and ſold for ſlaves.

King Philip's, or Briſtol neck, was ſold towards defraying the charges of the war, and afterwards, by the general court, incorporated by the name of Briſtol with ſome peculiar privileges and exemptions.

The colony of Connecticut was ſcarce touched in this war. We have no record of Rhode-iſland aſſiſtance.

After Philip's war, there were no more inſurrections or rebellions of our intermixed Indians: the following wars were by eruptions and incurſions of the Indians within our grants, but without our ſettlements, by inſtigation of our natural enemies the French of Canada, *viz.* from autumn anno 1688 (ſome ſhort truces intervening) to Jan. 7, anno 1698-9, and from Aug. 16, anno 1703, to July 17, anno 1713, and from ſpring 1744, when there were mutual declarations of war in Europe of the Britiſh and French; this war ſtill ſubſiſts at this preſent writing September, 1747. Here we may obſerve, that our eaſtern Indians in this pending war have not annoyed our ſettlements eaſtward, being called off by the French to Crown-Point; from Crown-Point the French and their Indians have done conſiderable damage upon the New-York and Maſſachuſetts weſtern frontiers; and to Nova Scotia, by inveſting the fort of Annapolis-Royal; and by the maſſacre of our people at Menis, they have conſiderably incommoded us. The late diſaſters of the French expeditions, under the duke d'Anville and M. La Jonquiere, againſt Cape-Breton, Nova Scotia, and our other ſettlements in North-America, have made the French deſiſt from any further enterprizes in Nova Scotia and our eaſtern Indians, being diſmiſſed from that ſervice, have lately appeared againſt our forts of Pemaquid and Georges.

Our wars with the Indians in the reigns of king William and of queen Anne, and the preſent war, are intermixed with expeditions from Europe; they are not merely Indian; we refer them to the ſubſequent ſections.

Governor Dummer's war againſt the Indians may be reckoned purely Indian, we ſhall give ſome ſhort account of it. The Canada French perceiving our eaſtern ſettlements advance apace, ſet their Quenebec miſſionary, father Ralle a jeſuite, to work; he made theſe Indians jealous of the Engliſh, by telling them, that theſe lands were given by God unalienably to the Indians and their children for ever, according to the chriſtian ſacred oracles.

cles. Anno 1717, the Indians began to murmur, and after ſome time gave the Engliſh ſettlers formal warning to leave the lands within a ſet time; at the expiration of that time they committed depredations, by deſtroying their cattle and other ſtock: the miſſionary, with a prieſtly heat, began the affair too precipitately, before the receiving of directions from France, as appears by a letter from M. Vandreuil, governor-general of Canada, to this father, "He could not tell how far he might "intermeddle in the affair, until he had particular in-"ſtructions from the council of the navy in France;" all the French colonies are under the direction of that board: and the ſmall-pox (which the Indians with good reaſon dread) prevailing in New-England, anno 1721, prevented a declared rupture until anno 1722, July 5; the government of Maſſachuſetts-Bay proclaimed them rebels, and ordered 100*l.* per ſcalp to volunteers fitted out at their own charge, and afterwards 4*s.* per day beſides. Our moſt conſiderable action againſt them was at Noridgwoag of Quenebec river, Auguſt 12, anno 1724; their fighting men being juſt come home from ſcouting. Captain Harman, with 200 men in ſeventeen whale-boats go up Quenebec river, ſurprize the Indians at Naridgwoag, bring off twenty ſix Indian ſcalps, and that of father Ralle; Indians killed and drowned, in their flight croſs the river, were computed to be eighty. Captain Lovel, a volunteer with forty-four men, ſets out, via Oſſipi pond, for Pigocket, was intercepted by about ſeventy Indians; he and about fourteen of his men were killed, and many wounded.

The French and Indians of Nova Scotia were concerned in this war; they made a vain aſſault upon the fort of Annapolis-Royal, and did ſome damage at Canſo.

The delegates from the five or ſix New-York Indian nations, and from the Moheign or Hudſon's river Indians, and from the Scatacooks, came to Boſton, re-

ceived preſents, gave fair promiſes of acting in our favour, but did nothing.

We ſent commiſſioners to the governor-general of Canada, to expoſtulate with him concerning his encouraging the Indian depredations, and to reclaim captives: his anſwer was, That theſe Indians were independent nations, and not under his direction; this was a mere evaſion.

After many bickerings, by good management in the wiſe adminiſtration of lieutenant-governor Dummer, the Indians begged and obtained a ceſſation of arms, Dec. 15, anno 1725, and a peace the May following at Caſco; ſaving to the Indians all their lands not hitherto conveyed, with the privilege of hunting, fowling, and fiſhing as formerly: ſigned by the Noridgwoag, Penobſcot, St. John's, and Cape-Sable Indians.

Three or four years ſince, ſome interſperſed Indians in Maryland were troubleſome, and occaſionally killed ſome Engliſhmen; they were ſoon quelled.

In Virginia, in the beginning, the Indian incurſions retarded them much; anno 1610, from 500 they were reduced to eighty; from 1712, there was uninterrupted peace with the Indians till 1622; by a ſudden general inſurrection, they maſſacred 347 Engliſh people, reckoned at that time half of the colony. Sir John Harvey, a very arbitrary governor, encroached much upon the Indians by making enormous grants of their lands; this occaſioned another maſſacre from the Indians anno 1639, 500 Engliſh were cut off, eſpecially about the head of York river; this was ſoon over, and peace laſted many years. Anno 1676, ſome mutual murders happened between the Engliſh and Indians in the out-ſettlements. Bacon, a hotheaded young gentleman of the council, becauſe, as he thought, the aſſembly was too dilatory in fitting out againſt the Indians; in contempt of the government, and without a proper commiſſion, inliſting ſoldiers of his own accord, occaſioned an inteſtine civil mutiny

of

of the white people againſt the government, and obliged the governor Berkley to fly to the remote county of Accomack upon the eaſtern ſhore of Cheſepeak-Bay: to quell this commotion a regiment of ſoldiers was ſent from England; but Bacon dying, the commotion was over, before the regiment arrived: this corps continued there three years, and were diſbanded in Virginia; Bacon's body could not be found to be expoſed to infamy. This anticipates, but at the ſame time it helps to ſhorten the ſection of Virginia.

In NORTH-CAROLINA, anno 1711, in November the Cape-Fear Indians broke out, and deſtroyed about twenty families, and much ſtock: by ſuccours from Virginia and South-Carolina, they were ſoon reduced; and many of the Tuſcararoes obliged to take refuge amongſt the New-York Indian nations, where they continue, and are generally called the ſixth nation.

SECT. IV.

General remarks concerning the Britiſh *colonies in* America

THE ſubject-matters of this ſection according to my firſt plan, are prolix, being various and copious, and perhaps would be the moſt curious and informing piece of the performance to ſome readers; but as many of our readers in theſe colonies ſeem impatient for our entering upon the affairs of their ſeveral ſettlements, we ſhall contract the preſent ſection, and ſhall defer ſeveral articles to the appendix; ſuch as, the riſe, progreſs, and preſent ſtate of the pernicious paper-currencies; ſome account of the prevailing or endemial diſeaſes in our North-America colonies, and many other looſe particulars; the various ſectaries in religion, which have any footing in our

our American colonies, ſhall be enumerated in the ſection of Rhode-iſland, where we find all degrees of ſectaries (ſome perhaps not known in Europe) from [*p*] NO RELI-

[*p*] Some facetious gentlemen, perhaps, uſe too much of a ſarcaſtic freedom with our colony governments: for inſtance, that, in the ſmall colony of R——de I——d, ANARCHY is their civil conſtitution; NO RELIGION is in the room of an eccleſiaſtical conſtitution, and they who are of any well-regulated religion are non-conformiſts; in ſea-affairs they are the PORTO-RICO of New-England; for many years they have been the moſt noted paper-money bankers or BUBBLERS in New-England, but at preſent are in this caſe eclipſed by a more eminent enterpriſing neighbouring colony: by this contrivance in over-ſtretching a provincial public paper credit, they may, in ſome ſenſe, be ſaid to have become bankrupts. At preſent they pay 2*s.* 3*d.* in the pound; ſuch is the preſent difference between 3*l.* (the price of one ounce of Mexico ſilver ſtandard, October 1747) denomination depreciated, and 6*s.* 8*d.* the price of ſilver, the rate at which their notes of credit were firſt emitted.

To render this intelligible to the loweſt capacities: if this loſing negotiation of public bills of credit proceeds, a Britiſh half-penny will exchange for a ſhilling New-England baſe currency, and a corkin pin for a penny in ſmall change.

Oldmixon, an erroneous ſcribler, in his Britiſh empire in America, printed in London 1708 (he died 1742) without any deſign ſeems to favour the other colonies of New-England; he writes, the government of Rhode-iſland is ſtill ſeparate from that of New-England.

No religion (I hope the above character may admit of conſiderable abatements) is inconſiſtent with ſociety. The form of the judicial oath in that colony, "Upon the peril of the penalty of perjury," ſeems not to anſwer the intention of an oath, which is a ſolemn invocation of God's judgments hereafter, over and above the penalties which may be inflicted in this world; thus by cunning and ſecrecy they may evade the one, but by no means can be ſuppoſed to eſcape the other. It is true, that in Great-Britain the affirmation of Quakers, and in Holland the declaration of the Meniſts, are equivalent to our oaths. Upon the other hand, the frequency of oaths upon ſmall occaſions, makes them too familiar, and by taking off the ſolemnity and awe of an oath renders them nearly upon a par with common profane ſwearing; the many oaths in the ſeveral branches of the revenue, particularly in the cuſtoms, are of bad effect; hence the proverb, a cuſtom-houſe oath, that is, an oath that may be diſpenſed with. Oaths give a profligate man of no religion (that is, who does not think himſelf bound by an oath) a vaſt advantage over an honeſt conſcientious religious man: the ſame may be ſaid of the ſacramental teſts of conformity, and occaſional conformity practiſed by the church of England.

GION

GION to that of the moſt wild enthuſiaſts. Religious affairs, ſo far as they may in ſome manner appertain to the conſtitution of the colonies, make an article in this ſection.

ARTICLE I.

Concerning our firſt diſcoveries of, and trade to the Britiſh North America; *before, it was by royal grants, patents, and charters divided into the colonies at preſent ſubſiſting.*

IN page 109, &c. I gave ſome anticipating account of theſe our firſt diſcoveries. I ſhall further add:

Sebaſtian Cabot, commiſſioned by king Henry VII of England, to endeavour diſcoveries of the north-weſt paſſage to China and the Eaſt-Indies, anno 1497, diſcovered and took poſſeſſion, according to the forms uſed in thoſe times, of all the eaſtern coaſt of North-America, from about the north polar circle to Cape Florida, (as is related) in the name of the crown of England; the Cabots had a royal Engliſh grant of the property of all lands they ſhould diſcover and ſettle weſtward of Europe; they made no ſettlement, and their grant dropt.

Sir Walter Raleigh a favourite, by order of queen Elizabeth, anno 1584, ſent two veſſels to North-America, to land people that were to remain there; they landed at Roanoke in North-Carolina, where they remained and planted for ſome ſhort time. Raleigh gave to all that part of America the name VIRGINIA, in honour or memory of the virginity of queen Elizabeth; a continued but ſmall trade was carried on from England to theſe countries for ſome time, and, by landing at times in ſundry places, took farther poſſeſſion for the crown of England.

Anno 1606, April 10, king James in one patent incorporated two companies called the ſouth and north Virginia companies; the ſouth Virginia company to reach

from

from 34 D. to 41 D. N. Lat. They began a ſettlement, anno 1607, on Cheſepeak-Bay, and this part of the country retains the name Virginia in a peculiar manner to this day; here we muſt drop it, and reaſſume in the proper ſection of Virginia: the north Virginia company, called alſo the weſt-country company, had liberty to ſettle upon the ſame eaſtern coaſt of America from 38 D. to 45 D. N. Lat. They kept a conſtant ſmall trade on foot, and ſometimes wintered aſhore, as, for inſtance, at Sagadahoc anno 1608; but made no formal laſting ſettlement, until that of New-Plymouth anno 1620; here we muſt ſtop, and reaſſume in the ſections of New-England colonies. Theſe ſettlements were to have been at 100 miles diſtance from one another, that is, from their chief place; each territory or colony was to extend fifty miles both ways along ſhore, and 100 miles back into the country, ſo as to make a diſtrict of 100 miles ſquare: thus from the gulph of St. Laurence to Cape-Fear we ſhould have had ſeven colonies of equal dimenſions, but not of equal quality; at preſent in that ſpace we have about a dozen colonies very unequal and irregular, becauſe granted at different times; moſt of them run back into the wilderneſs indefinitely. This patent did not ſubſiſt long; the companies were managed by preſidents and council, but in a few years, made a ſurrender. The Dutch took the opportunity to ſit down in ſome parts of the degrees of latitude, that were in common to both companies, and kept poſſeſſion of property and juriſdiction, almoſt threeſcore years.

Capt. Henry Hudſon, anno 1608, diſcovered the mouth of Hudſon's river in N. L. 40 D. 30 M. upon his own account, as he imagined, and ſold it, or rather imparted the diſcovery to the Dutch. The Dutch made ſome ſettlements there, but were drove off by Sir Samuel Argol, governor of a ſecond Virginia-company, anno 1618, becauſe within the limits of that company's grant; but anno 1620, king James gave the Dutch ſome liberty of refreſhment for their ſhips bound to Brazils, which they afterwards

afterwards in the times of the civil wars and confuſions in England, improved to the ſettling of a colony there, which they called New-Netherlands, comprehending all the preſent provinces of New-York and New-Jerſies, and ſome part of Penſylvania. Their principal ſettlements were New-Amſterdam, at preſent called the city of New-York on Hudſon's river, and fort Caſimir, ſince called New-Caſtle upon Delaware river, weſt ſide of it; Hudſon's river was called by the Dutch, Nord-Rivier, and Delaware river was called Zuid-Rivier. Beginning of king Charles the ſecond's reign, by conqueſt 1664, and the ſubſequent ceſſion by the Breda treaty 1667, it reverted to the crown of England. The further account of this territory belongs to the ſections of New-York and New-Jerſies.

We may in general obſerve, that ſpices, precious ſtones, gold, ſilver, other metals and minerals, were the firſt inducements and objects of our Eaſt and Weſt-India diſcoveries (the trade for tobacco, rice, fiſh, furs, ſkins, and naval ſtores, ſeem to have been only incidental.) As theſe did not ſucceed, our firſt endeavours or adventures for ſettlements did not proceed.

From hiſtorical obſervations during the laſt century and half, we may learn many of the ſucceſsful methods to be uſed, and the inconveniences to be avoided, in ſettling of colonies.

ARTICLE II.

Concerning the general nature and conſtitution of the Britiſh North-America *colonies.*

ALL our American ſettlements are properly colonies, not provinces as they are generally called: province reſpects a conquered people (the Spaniards in Mexico and Peru may perhaps in propriety bear this appellation) under a juriſdiction impoſed upon them by the conqueror; colonies are formed, of national people, *e. g.* Britiſh in the

the Britiſh colonies, tranſported to form a ſettlement in a foreign or remote country.

The firſt ſettlers of our colonies were formed from various ſorts of people. 1. Laudably ambitious adventurers. 2. The mal-contents, the unfortunate, the neceſſitous from home. 3. Tranſported criminals. The preſent proportion of theſe ingredients in the ſeveral plantations varies much, for reaſons which ſhall be mentioned in the particular ſections of colonies, and does depend much upon the condition of the firſt ſettlers: ſome were peopled by rebel Tories; ſome by rebel Whigs (that principle which at one time is called loyalty, at another time is called rebellion) ſome by church of England men; ſome by Congregationaliſts or Independents; ſome by Quakers, ſome by Papiſts (Maryland and Monſerrat) the moſt unfit people to incorporate with our conſtitution.

Colonies have an incidental good effect, they drain from the mother-country the diſaffected and the vicious (in the ſame manner, ſubſequent colonies purge the more ancient colonies;) Rhode iſland and Providence-plantations drained from Maſſachuſetts-Bay the Antinomians, Quakers, and other wild ſectaries. Perhaps in after-times (as it is at times with the lord-lieutenants and other high officers in Ireland) ſome mal-contents of figure, capable of being troubleſome to the adminiſtration at home, may be ſent in ſome great offices to the plantations.

In our colonies we have four ſorts of people. 1. Maſters, that is planters and merchants. 2. White ſervants. 3. Indian ſervants. 4. Slaves for life, moſtly Negroes. White ſervants are of two ſorts, *viz.* poor people from Great-Britain, and Ireland moſtly; theſe are bound, or ſold as ſome expreſs it, for a certain number of years, to reimburſe the tranſporting charges, with ſome additional profit; the others are criminals judicially tranſported, and their time of exile and ſervitude ſold by certain undertakers, and their agents.

In

In our American ſettlements, generally the deſignations are, Province, where the king appoints a governor; colony, where the freemen elect their own governor: this cuſtomary acceptation is not univerſal; Virginia is called a colony, perhaps becauſe formerly a colony, and the moſt ancient.

We have ſome ſettlements with a governor only; others with governor and council, ſuch as Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, Hudſon's-Bay, and Georgia, without any houſe or negative deputed by the planters, according to the eſſence of a Britiſh conſtitution: theſe, may be ſaid, not colonized.

There are various ſorts of royal grants of colonies. 1. To one or more perſonal proprietors, their heirs and aſſigns; ſuch are Maryland and Penſylvania; both property and government. 2. The property to perſonal proprietors; the government and juriſdiction in the crown; this is the ſtate of the Carolinas and Jerſeys. 3. Property and government in the crown, *viz.* Virginia, New-York, and New-Hampſhire, commonly called Piſcataqua. 4. Property in the people and their repreſentatives, the government in the crown; as is Maſſachuſetts-Bay. 5. Property and government in the governor and company, called the freemen of the colony, ſuch are Connecticut and Rhode-iſland.

This laſt ſeems to be the moſt effectual method of the firſt ſettling and peopling of a colony. Mankind are naturally deſirous of a parity and leveling, without any fixed ſuperiority; but when a ſociety is come to maturity, a more diſtinct fixed ſubordination is found to be requiſite. Connecticut, Rhode-iſland, and ſome of the proprietary governments, are of opinion, that they are not obliged to attend to, or follow, any inſtructions or orders from their mother-country, or court of Great-Britain. They do not ſend their laws home to the plantation-offices to be preſented to the king in council for approbation or diſallowance: they aſſume the command of the militia, which by the Britiſh conſtitution, is a prerogative of the

crown. Some time ago, they refuſed not only a preventive cuſtom-houſe office, but likewiſe a court of vice-admiralty's officers appointed from home; but theſe points they have given up, eſpecially conſidering that the royal charter grants them only the privilege of trying cauſes, *Intra corpus comitatus*, but not a-float or *ſuper altum mare*.

As a ſmall country, though rich and thriving, cannot afford large numbers of people; it ought not to run upon diſcoveries and conqueſts beyond what they can well improve and protect; becauſe by over-ſtretching, they weaken or break the ſtaple of their conſtitution: but they may in good policy diſtreſs as much of the enemy's country as is poſſible, and, for ſome ſhort time, keep poſſeſſion of ſome of their moſt important places, though at a great charge, even, by hiring of foreign troops, in order to obtain ſome ſuitable, profitable equivalent. New-England, with the incidental countenance of a ſmall Britiſh ſquadron, eaſily reduced the North-America Dunkirk, or Louiſbourg in Cape-Breton iſland; and perhaps luckily, without waiting for the direction of the Britiſh miniſtry. Conſidering our large ſea and land-force, well fitted, upon the expeditions, againſt Havanah and its territory in the iſland of Cuba, the rendezvous of all the Spaniſh Plate-fleets; and againſt Carthagena, the beſt ſtrong-hold the Spaniards have in America; and againſt Canada, called the New-France in North-America, which would have given us the monopoly of the cod-fiſh and fur-trade; many of our American militia voluntarily formed themſelves into companies and regiments for that purpoſe; but the miniſtry at home, perhaps for good reaſons beſt known to themſelves, ſeem to have balked theſe affairs. The above apparently intended conqueſts would have been eaſy.

Great-Britain does not, like France, ſwarm with a numerous people, therefore cannot ſettle colonies ſo faſt, without allowing of a general naturalization. From Germany we had many emigrant Palatines and Saltſburghers,

burghers, and in time may have more: foreigners imported, ſhould not be allowed to ſettle in large ſeparate diſtricts, as is the preſent bad practice; becauſe for many generations they may continue, as it were, a ſeparate people in language, modes of religion, cuſtoms, and manners; they ought to be intermixed with the Britiſh ſettlers, Engliſh ſchools only allowed for the education of their children; their public worſhip for the firſt generation, or twenty years, may be allowed in their original language in the forenoon, and in Engliſh in the afternoon, according to any tolerated religion. As our miſſionaries do not attend the ſervice of Indian converſions, ſome of them may be employed in this ſervice. After the firſt twenty years from their firſt arrival, their public worſhip ſhall for ever be in Engliſh; all their conveyances, bonds, and other public writings, to be in Engliſh; thus, in two or three generations (as de Foe humorouſly expreſſes it) they will all become true-born Engliſhmen. We have an inſtance of this in New-England, where many Iriſh, in language and religion (I mean Roman catholics) have been imported ſome years ſince; their children have loſt their language and religion, and are good ſubjects. We have a notorious inſtance of the bad effects, in not obſerving this regulation in Nova Scotia; the French inhabitants, though in allegiance to the crown of Great-Britain ever ſince anno 1710, by allowing them a ſeparate reſidence, with their language and religion continued, are at preſent, as much eſtranged from, and enemies to, the Britiſh intereſt, as they were thirty-ſeven years ago; witneſs their behaviour in our preſent French war, by their favouring and concurring with our French Canada enemies, and the late expeditions from France. The D—ch, in a neighbouring province, becauſe not well daſhed or intermixed with the Engliſh, though in allegiance above eighty years, do not ſeem to conſult our intereſt ſo much as might be expected.

Although the colonies of various nations may learn the *juvantia* and the *lædentia* from one another; there may be ſeveral political regulations in colonies foreign to us, which may have a good effect with themſelves, but may not fit our conſtitution; for inſtance, 1. The Spaniards ſay, that their vaſt extenſive ſettlements in America, have continued in due ſubjection about 250 years, by their principal officers eccleſiaſtical, civil, and military, being from Old-Spain; in China (a polite nation) no man can be a Mandarin in his own country or diſtrict, where he was born. 2. The French, Spaniſh, and Portugueze colonies, are not allowed to make wines, and diſtil ſpirits of ſugar for merchandize, becauſe it would hurt the vent of the wines and brandies of their mother-countries: ſome ſuch regulations, with regard to things commonly manufactured in Great-Britain, not to be manufactured in the plantations, have from time to time been laid before the court of Great-Britain, by people diſaffected to the plantations, *e. g.* by Col. D——r not long ſince; but happily, have had little or no effect.

The ſeveral colonies, particularly thoſe of New-England, the moſt ſuſpected, have it neither in their power nor inclination to withdraw from their dependence upon Great-Britain: of themſelves, they are comparatively nothing, without the aſſiſtance and protection of ſome European maritime power; amongſt thoſe, the French, Spaniſh, and Portugueze differ ſo much from them in religion, the moſt popular affair, and in an abſolute monarchical government, inconſiſtent with our plantation levelling ſpirit, that we have nothing to fear from them: the Dutch being nearly the ſame with us in religion, and apparently (though not really) the ſame as to a popular government, they bid the faireſt for carrying off our plantations from their allegiance, and ought, in a particular manner, to be guarded againſt; if in time of ſome general diſcontent, a war ſhould happen with the Dutch.

As

As in natural parentage, ſo infant colonies ought to be tenderly and filially uſed, without any ſuſpicion or ſurmiſe of a future obſtinate diſobedience, deſertion, or revolt. Some of the American colony-legiſlatures, have at times been drawn into errors and inadvertencies, by ſome popular, wicked, leading men, which has obliged the court of Great-Britain to make ſome alterations in their peculiar conſtitutions: we ſhall enumerate them in the reſpective colony-ſections; at preſent we ſhall only inſtance a few relating to this province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay. 1. Upon a *quo warranto* from the court of King's-bench, iſſued in trinity-term anno 1635, againſt the governor and company of the colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; and in trinity-term, anno 1637, judgment was given for the king to ſeize the ſaid colony, and to take governor Cradock's body into cuſtody; but, by reaſon of the enſuing troubles, this judgment was never put in execution. 2. The heirs of Maſon and George, proprietors of the provinces of New-Hampſhire and Main, complained to the king of the uſurpations of the government of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; the king, by a mandatory letter, anno 1676, to Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, required an anſwer to thoſe complaints: the agents for Maſſachuſetts-Bay, before the court of King's-bench, diſclaimed theſe lands, and, by an act of aſſembly of the colony 1679, all their encroaching grants were vacated. 3. Upon ſeveral pretended complaints their charter was vacated in chancery 1684, but they obtained a new and more perfect charter anno 1691. 4. Governor Shute, anno 1722, carried home ſeven articles of complaints concerning their houſe of repreſentatives encroaching upon the prerogative; by their agent in England, they ſubmiſſively gave up five of theſe articles, and the general aſſembly accepted of an explanatory charter, whereby the other two articles were explained away: all theſe ſhall be related more at large in their proper place. 5. Several bubbling banks and ſchemes deſigned to defraud creditors and others, by depreciating the currency in New-

England, being on foot, and not ſuppreſſed by the proper legiſlature (perhaps becauſe many of their leading members were concerned) ſeveral worthy gentlemen applied home for redreſs, and obtained, anno 1741, an act of parliament againſt unwarrantable ſchemes in America.

Upwards of thirty years ſince, upon ſome complaints concerning the colonies, particularly of South-Carolina; the court of Great-Britain judged, that it might be for the general Britiſh intereſt, to have all charter and proprietary governments vacated by act of parliament, and accordingly a bill was brought into the houſe of commons; but the New-England agent Dummer, by an ingenious piece which he publiſhed at that time, giving the true ſtate of the colonies, by his vigilancy, aſſiduity, proper ſolicitations and perſonal addreſs, and intereſt with ſome of the leading men, occaſioned the bill to be dropped.

The vacating of all charter and proprietary governments is not the ultimate chaſtiſement that may be uſed with delinquent colonies; the parliament of Great-Britain may abridge them of many valuable privileges which they enjoy at preſent; as happened in an affair relating to Ireland: the parliament of Great-Britain, anno 1720, paſſed an act for the better ſecuring the dependence of the kingdom of Ireland upon the crown of Great-Britain: therefore the colonies ought to be circumſpect, and not offend their mother-country; as for inſtance, 1. In abuſing that privilege which our colonies have of raiſing taxes and aſſeſſing of themſelves: South-Carolina had not ſupplied the neceſſary charges of government, for four years preceding anno 1731; New-Hampſhire for five years preceding anno 1736. 2. In time of peace emitting of depreciating public bills of credit for a medium of trade and commerce, and making them legal tenders; this is equivalent to coinage (and of a baſe ſtandard) a prerogative of the crown.

Our

Our Britiſh American colonies have many valuable privileges: 1. Enacting their own laws, with condition of their not being repugnant to the laws of Great-Britain, but may be otherways various from them. 2. Raiſing their own taxes. 3. No act of the Britiſh parliament made ſince the firſt ſettling of our colonies, extends to the colonies, unleſs expreſly extended in the Britiſh act of parliament. 4. No private purchaſe from the Indians ſhall be valid (formerly much deceit and cheat has been diſcovered in theſe purchaſes, tending to alienate the Indians from the Britiſh intereſt) without the confirmation of the governor and council in ſome colonies, and without the approbation of the legiſlature in the other colonies. There are lands in ſome of our plantations, where it is not poſſible to ſhew any Indian conveyance, becauſe they were derelicts; ſuch are all our Weſt-India iſland ſettlements, no Indians being there at our firſt landing: the poſſeſſors, who were prior to patent or king's commiſſioned governors, have no other title to their lands but long poſſeſſion, a ſort of preſcription. Thus the old ſettlers of New-Hampſhire hold their lands, it being ſuppoſed that Mr. Maſon had neglected or relinquiſhed his grant.

In the beginning of our colony grants, there was only one houſe of [*q*] legiſlature; the governor or preſident, the council or aſſiſtants, and the repreſentatives, voted together. At preſent, in conformity to our legiſlature in Great-Britain, they conſiſt of three ſeparate negatives; thus, by the governor, repreſenting the king, the colonies are monarchical; by a council they are ariſtocra-

[*q*] In the Saxon times, the parliament did not conſiſt of two diſtinct houſes; the peers, being freeholders of great territories, were deemed the hereditary repreſentatives of their vaſſals and tenants. In the Scots parliament there ever was only one houſe, conſiſting of three ſtates, *viz.* the peers, the commiſſioners or repreſentatives of ſhires or counties, and the commiſſioners for boroughs; they all voted together indifferently, but in committees, and the like, the proportion of committee-men from each, was limited.

tical; by a houſe of repreſentatives, or delegates from the people, they are democratical: theſe three are diſtinct and independent of one another, and the colonies enjoy the conveniencies of each of theſe forms of government, without their inconveniencies, the ſeveral negatives being checks upon one another. The concurrence of theſe three forms of governments, ſeems to be the higheſt perfection that human civil government can attain to in times of [r] peace with the neighbouring ſtates: if it did not ſound too profane, by making too free with the myſtical expreſſions of our religion, I ſhould call it *a trinity in unity*.

The ſecond negative in our legiſlatures, differs from that of Great-Britain. In Great-Britain it is an [s] hereditary houſe of Lords; in our American ſettlements, the members of their councils ſo called are only temporary, appointed by the court of Great-Britain *durante bene placito*, or by annual elections in ſome of our colonies. In Carolina, at firſt, there was deſigned an hereditary ſe-

[r] In the times of war, perhaps a dictatorial power in one proper perſon would be requiſite, upon account of diſpatch and ſecrecy, but accountable to the three negatives. This was the practice amongſt many of the antient polite nations, particularly amongſt the Romans; the only inconveniency ſeems to be, leſt this dictator, in the height of his power and glory, ſhould render himſelf a perpetual dictator, as Julius Cæſar did, and introduce a monarchical tyranny.

Both in the times of peace and war, if a continued ſucceſſion of knowing and virtuous princes were poſſible in nature, abſolute monarchy would be the perfection of civil government, becauſe of the wiſdom, ſecrecy, and diſpatch that would attend it: but as no ſuch race of men are to be found upon earth, a limited monarchy is eligible. The political conſtitution, like the human, is tickliſh; and in the hands of a *ſolo fool*, would ſuffer much; there are but few who underſtand politic health and ſickneſs.

[s] Hereditary nobility, and other great officers, where any conſiderable truſt attends, are great incitements to good actions in progenitors, who are ambitious of entailing honours upon their own memory or poſterity, but in nature ſeem abſurd, as if wiſdom were hereditary. This does not hold good as to hereditary monarchs, becauſe all elections of a monarch would put the nation in moſt dangerous ferments.

cond

cond negative (in place of a council) of Palatines and Caſſiques, lords of large manors; this is dropped.

There are a few irregularities or exceptions from theſe three negatives in ſome of our colonies, which ſhall be taken particular notice of in the proper ſections, and doubtleſs in time will be rectified. 1. In Connecticut and Rhode-iſland their elective governor has no negative. 2. In Penſylvania the council has no negative. 3. In Maſſachuſetts-Bay the council is not independent; it is obnoxious to the caprice of a governor's negative, and to the humour of the houſe of repreſentatives who elect them. In ſome elections the council and repreſentatives vote together.

Notwithſtanding a colony aſſembly's being upon the point of diſſolving in courſe, according to their ſeveral and various municipal laws, the governors diſſolve them in form, as in Great-Britain, to keep up the prerogative of the crown.

In proprietary colonies, where the proprietors have retained the juriſdiction, the proprietors nominate the governor, with the approbation of the king in council. Excepting in proprietary and charter-colonies, all patents for lands are in the king's name, *teſte* his excellency in council.

The municipal laws, or laws peculiar to the ſeveral colonies, are too various and variable, as well as bulky, to be inſerted in a ſummary; they are remitted home from time to time, and are to be found in the plantation-offices in London, excepting thoſe of the proprietary and charter-governments; by their patents they are not obliged (this was an original defect in ſuch patents, and may be rectified by act of parliament) to tranſmit them to the crown for approbation or diſallowance. The laws of a colony may be various from, but not repugnant to, the laws of Great-Britain.

In our colonies the courts of judicature are various, but all of the ſame nature with the courts in England; *viz.* chancery (in the charter-governments *jus & æquum*

are in the ſame court) common law, probate of wills, and appurtenances; a court of vice-admiralty by queen Anne's commiſſion *tertio regni*, purſuant to an act of parliament 11 and 12 Gul. III. called, *An act for the more effectual ſuppreſſion of piracy*, conſiſting at leaſt of ſeven of the nominated from their offices; and for want of that number complete, any three of the nominated may appoint a complement.

Caſes in chancery and common law may be carried home by appeal or petition to the king in council; from thence it is referred to the lords of the committee [*t*] of council for plantation-affairs: from this committee of council it is referred or ſent down to the lords commiſſioners for trade and plantations. This laſt board frequently take the advice of the attorney and ſolicitor-general, and reports are returned back from one board to another, and iſſued by the king in council.

The officers of the cuſtoms received or preventive, are immediately under the direction of the commiſſioners of the cuſtoms in Great-Britain.

The commiſſion of vice-admiral to our plantation-governors gives no command a-float; their juriſdiction is only relating to wrecks, *&c.* caſt on ſhore, to low-water mark, being of the ſame nature with the ſeveral vice-admirals along the coaſt in Great-Britain.

Every king's commiſſion, with inſtructions to a governor in the plantations, is a ſort of charter to that colony or province *durante beneplacito*.

Our plantation-governors have no power, without orders from the court of Great-Britain, to grant letters of repriſals. The French and Dutch governors have this power.

All our plantation-governors are liable to be called to account (on complaints) at the King's-bench bar in Weſtminiſter; for inſtance, Douglaſs of the Leeward-iſlands, anno 1716, and Lowther of Barbadoes, 1720.

[*t*] There are four ſtanding committees of council. 1. For foreign affairs. 2. Admiralty and navy. 3. Trade and plantations. 4. Grievances. In France theſe ſeveral departments are called diſtinct councils.

Formerly,

Formerly, governors, if court favourites, had at times plurality of governments (as ſome clergymen, favourites of leading men, have plurality of benefices;) lord Willoughby was governor of Barbadoes and the Leeward-iſlands; Sir Edmond Andros, in the reign of James II, was governor of all New-England, New-York, and the Jerſies; lord Bellamont was governor of New-York, Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and New-Hampſhire; it is not ſo at preſent, except in the two diſtinct governments of Penſylvania, therefore under one governor.

In the colonies their revenue-acts are generally annual; in Jamaica, they are temporary, but of a long period; in a few of the colonies there are ſome perpetual taxes; thus in Barbadoes and Leeward-iſlands the four and a half *per cent.* upon produce exported; and in Virginia 2 *s.* per hogſhead tobacco. All their provincial treaſurers are appointed by their own aſſemblies; excepting the four and a half *per cent.* in Barbadoes and the Leeward-iſlands, the king's collectors are the receivers; and alſo receive the plantation duties laid on by act of parliament 1673, as not appropriated for the uſe of the treaſuries of the ſeveral plantations, but at the king's diſpoſal: the 1*d. per cent.* upon tobacco of Virginia and Maryland, is appropriated for the benefit of the college or ſeminary at Williamſburg.

In the ſeveral colonies their general revenue is by a tax of ſome pence in the pound, upon the principal of real eſtate, perſonal eſtate, and faculty; and a poll-tax, impoſts, and exciſes.

The produce for export in the ſeveral colonies ſhall be enumerated in the proper ſections. Upon our firſt diſcoveries of America, we found no horſes, aſſes, cows, ſheep, and ſwine. In the inland parts of the continent, eſpecially upon the Miſſiſſippi, there was plenty of buffaloes; and in the Weſt-India iſlands, ſeveral ſorts of wild hogs, native; every where much deer, and the American ſtag or buck-mooſe, which differs from the German elke, by its branched brow antlers: variety of geeſe,

geeſe, of ducks, and of wild fowl, called gibier by the French.

In the colonies of the ſeveral European nations, they have a national excluſive commerce amongſt themſelves, and with their mother-countries. St. Thomas, a Daniſh ſettlement, only admits of a free general trade. The French and Dutch governors (perhaps by a private inſtruction from their courts at home, and as a conſiderable perquiſite) do at times allow or connive at a foreign importation of neceſſaries (proviſions, lumber, horſes, black cattle, *&c.*) with which they cannot otherways be accommodated, and are much in want of.

By act of parliament, anno 1698, no veſſels, unleſs regiſtred in England, Ireland, or the plantation (by the union, Scotland is included) upon oath that they were built there (foreign prizes are alſo qualified) and that no foreigner is directly or indirectly concerned.

Plantation produce or goods as enumerated (commonly called enumerated goods) by ſeveral acts of parliament, are not to be carried, but to Great-Britain; and plantation-bonds are given, and a certificate to be returned to the officers of the ſhipping ports, of their being loaded accordingly. The enumerated goods are naval ſtores, *viz.* pitch, tar, turpentine, maſts, yards, and bowſprits; ſugars, molaſſes, cotton-wool, indigo, ginger, dying-woods, rice, beaver, and other furs, copper-ore. Rice and ſugars, by late acts of parliament, are indulged under certain conditions (too long to be enumerated in a ſummary) to be carried to certain foreign parts: logwood is not the growth or produce of our plantations, and, by the conſtruction of the commiſſioners of the cuſtoms, is exempted from being an enumerated commodity (as we have no logwood the growth of our plantations) being imported from the Spaniſh Weſt-Indies to our colonies, and re-exported to Europe.

By an act of the parliament of England, anno 1673, there are impoſed plantation duties (produce carried from

from one colony to another) upon certain enumerated goods for a general national uſe, not for the particular colony, *viz.*

	s. d.		*d.*
Muſcavado ſugars	1 6 *pr ct.* W.	Tobacco	1 *pr lb.*
White do.	5	Cotton	half 1
Ginger	1	Indigo	2
Dying woods	6	Cocoa nuts	1

That upon tobacco has been appropriated to the college in Virginia at Williamſburg.

Our North-America trade to Great-Britain, is, the enumerated commodities abovementioned, pig-iron, and fiſh-oil; ſometimes wheat and ſtaves to Ireland: to Spain, Portugal, and Italy, dryed cod-fiſh: to the Weſt India iſlands, lumber, refuſe dryed fiſh, ſalt beef and pork, butter and cheeſe, flour, horſes, and live ſtock: the returns from the Weſt-India iſlands, are, ſugar, molaſſes, rum, cotton, indigo, die-woods, Spaniſh money, and cocoa. Sugar, rum, tobacco, and chocolate, are much uſed in our colonies.

Anno 1729, the attorney and ſolicitor-general gave it as their public opinion, that a negro ſlave coming to Europe, or baptized any where, does not make him free.

In our colonies [*u*] computations of all kinds, weights, and meaſures, are the ſame as in England.

[*u*] It is not adviſeable in any caſe religious or civil, though for the better, to make alterations in any affair where the populace have acquired a general ſtanding prejudice (the reformation from the church of Rome about two centuries ſince, is an exception) imbibed from their infancy, or firſt habitual way of thinking. The ſolar years and lunar months, according to the old ſtyle, are not within a popular ken, and being very erroneous, are perhaps at preſent, under the conſideration of the Britiſh legiſlature, to be rectified. Meaſures and weights, muſt be aſcertained for all nations upon our earth, and prevent much puzzling by reductions: by taking the fixed length of a pendulum, that vibrates ſeconds in any noted place, *e. g.* in London or Paris, and allowing for the ſmall variations, eaſily inveſtigated for ſome very diſtant latitudes, *e. g.* a pendulum vibrating ſeconds at Porto-Bello near the

Our

Our ſettlements upon the eaſterly ſide of North-America, are much colder in winter, and much hotter in ſummer, than the ſame latitudes in the weſterly or European ſide of the other vaſt continent; the globe of our earth may be ſaid to conſiſt of two large continents, *viz.* the ancient continent of Europe, Aſia, and Africa, and the new continent called America. Every man, who has reſided ſome time in Europe and ſome time in North-America, is perſonally ſenſible of this: in Europe northern fiſheries, for inſtance, cod and ſalmon extend ſouthward to 51 D. N. lat. in North America they extend no farther than 41 D. N. lat.

Mariners obſerve, that in their paſſages between Europe and America, winds are [*w*] almoſt three quarters

Equator, is found to differ one line, or the 12th part of an inch, from that at Paris: let this pendulum's length be called a MEASURE, and this divided into decimals (being the moſt eaſy and general way of expreſſing fractions) be called TENTHS, and this ſubdivided into Tenths, called HUNDREDS: thus all meaſures might be reduced to three denominations; as in England money is reduced to pounds, ſhillings, and pence; contentive meaſures are eaſily reduced, upon this foundation, to a like certainty: ſuch a veſſel of ſuch certain dimenſions, containing a certain quantity of ſincere rain water (which is nearly the ſame all over the earth) may be called a POUND, and this multiplied or divided may be called by ſome fixed denominations of weights.

[*w*] The trade-winds may be reckoned to extend 30 D. each ſide of the equator (being farther than the common formal technical way of reckoning, to the tropics) which proceeds not only from the ſun's, in his repeated courſe, rarification of the air weſtward, and conſequently the elaſtic air naturally expanding itſelf towards thoſe weſtward rarified ſpaces by an eaſterly current; but is complicated with another cauſe not much attended to, *viz.* the circumambient air near the equator, being a leſs conſiderable ſpecific gravity, than its correſponding part of the earth; it is leſs ſuſceptible of the earth's daily rotatory motion, and, with reſpect to the ſolid earth, has an effectual motion weſtward, that is, in the appearance of an eaſterly current of wind. The weſterly winds, in latitudes higher than 30 D. N. latitude, are natural eddies of the eaſterly trade winds. A northerly wind, is the natural tendency of a condenſed very elaſtic air, from the polar cold regions, towards the rarified air near the equator. A complication of this current of air, from the northern polar regions to the ſouth, and of the eddy of the trade-winds from the

of

of the year weſterly; baron Lahontan, a Canada officer, writes, "That the winds from Canada to Europe are "eaſterly for about 100 days in the year, and weſterly "about 260 days:" this, with an attending weſterly ſwell or heaving of the ſea, is the reaſon, that the paſſages from North-America to Europe are much ſhorter than from Europe to North-America.

In North-America the dry freezing winds are from north to weſt; in Europe the dry freezing winds are from north to eaſt, proceeding from that great continent which receives and retains the northern effects of cold, *viz.* ſnow and ice, lying to the weſtward of America, and to the eaſtward of Europe; the current of air gliding along, becomes more and more impregnated with the cold: the terms of frigorific particles, or of a peculiar ſalt of nitre, I leave with the virtuoſo idle notional philoſophers. The ſituation of lands occaſions conſiderable differences in the temper of the air; the weather in Canada is generally in winter colder (in proportion to its latitude) than in New-England, and more ſettled, as being ſurrounded with land of ſome extent, and therefore the land influence from all corners of the winds, of the ſame nature; whereas in New-England to the eaſtward is water or ſea of a very different influence from the land or earth's ſpecific gravity or ſolidity in receiving or retaining cold or heat. By the ſoftneſs of the vapour from the water, the ſea-ſhore is warmer than the

weſtward, makes the frequent North-America winds from north to weſt; and the north-weſt is the moſt frequent, eſpecially in the winter months.

In the ſummer-time, when the ſun is much to the northward of the equator, our northern continent is much warmed, and theſe north to weſt winds gliding along a vaſt warmed continent, acquire more and more degrees of heat. Therefore conſidering the general current of the extratropical (retaining the claſſical-terms) winds: the vaſt continent of North-America being weſtward of our ſettlements; our leeward North-America ſettlements muſt be in ſummer much hotter than the European windward ſettlements in the ſame latitudes.

inland,

inland, the ſea warmer than the ſhore, and the ocean or deep water warmer than the ſea. Thus the iſland of Great-Britain and its appertaining iſlands are much warmer in winters than the adjacent continent, but with this inconveniency (a digreſſion) that this ſoft vapour or damp, diſpoſes the inhabitants to a catarrhous or colliquative conſumption; this diſtemper, time out of mind, is recorded as an Engliſh endemial diſtemper. The ſituation of the various countries as to iſlands and head-lands, as to variety of ſoil, ſandy lands which retain the heat, moraſs, ſwamps, and wood-lands which retain damps; theſe a ſummary cannot enumerate, with regard to the winds or current of the air and as to temper of the air in our various colonies.

Georgia excepted (Nova Scotia and Cape-Breton I do not call colonies) our American colonies have been no charge to Great-Britain; a ſmall matter of artillery to ſome of them muſt be acknowledged, but without ammunition. The Britiſh men of war or king's ſtation-ſhips, of late, have been of no uſe only by their countenance: the commanders are either indolent, or in colluſion with the purſers (not long ſince they had the perquiſite of purſers) take advantage of the proviſions of the non-effectives, connive at their ſhips being ill manned, and upon an exigency or when called home, diſtreſs the trade by preſſing ſailors: there are exceptions; I ſhall only inſtance Sir Peter Warren, an aſſiduous, faithful, good, and therefore fortunate man. Our provinces have frequently grumbled upon this account, and have lately made an experiment by fitting out a province-frigate at a great charge in Maſſachuſetts-Bay; but for theſe laſt two years ſeem to be under the ſame cenſure; where the fault lies, I ſhall not at preſent relate.

In all our colonies are many good, induſtrious, frugal, pious, and moral gentlemen; I hope the following, general character of many of the populace will give no offence. 1. Idleneſs, intemperance, luxury in diet, extravagancies in apparel, and an abandoned way of living.

Our planters, eſpecially their children, when they go home to Great-Britain, diſtinguiſh themſelves too much by their dreſs, and expenſive way of living for a ſhort time. 2. The people of all colonies (Britiſh, French, *&c.*) do not ſeem to have ſo much ſolidity in thinking as in Europe; but exceed the European *menu peuple*, as to ſome little tricks and arts in buſineſs acquired by education, and a continued practice. 3. By importing and expending too much of ſuperfluities from Europe, and in ſome colonies, by ſubſtituting a paper-currency, they impoveriſh themſelves, and are under a neceſſity of ſending their gold and ſilver, as returns, to Europe. 4. A preſent profit prevails over a diſtant intereſt.

To avoid prolixity, but with impatience, I muſt defer the iniquity of a multiplied plantation paper-currency to the appendix; it is of no benefit only to the fraudulent debtor; they are not aſhamed to acknowledge that in equity and natural juſtice, they ought to repay the ſame in real value which they received; but they ſay, their province laws excuſe and indemnify them, by paying any nominal value; and that the compaſſionate good creditor muſt blame himſelf for his forbearance and long credit, while money is depreciating: that a multiplied paper-currency naturally depreciates itſelf, I ſhall at preſent only evince by the inſtance of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, November 1747, where are about two millions, one hundred thouſand pounds current public bills of credit not cancelled or burnt, whereof a ſmall matter is in the hands of the receivers of the taxes; the operation is, bills of exchange with Great-Britain are riſen to the extravagant incredible height of one thouſand pound New-England, for one hundred pound ſterling.

Of timber-trees, eſpecially white-oaks for ſhip-building, the beſt grow in New-England; farther north they are dwarfiſh, and of an untoward grain; farther ſouth they are ſpungy and ſoft, and do not afford compaſs timber.

In

In countries far north the mould is light and ſpungy, being much diſtended by the hard long froſts.

ARTICLE III.

The eccleſiaſtical or religious conſtitution of the Britiſh *colonies in* North-America.

IN all the royal patents and charters of our colonies, the principal condition required of the patentees, ſeems to be the converſion of the Indians; and the crown on the other part conditions for the encouragement of ſettlers, a free profeſſion or liberty of conſcience: therefore a [x] TOLERATION for all Chriſtian

[x] Religion and civil government in a general ſenſe are, *jure divino*, but the various particular churches and ſtates, ſeem to be only *de factos* becauſe none of them have eſcaped revolutions: an indulgence, or rather a legal explicit toleration for all (communions they are called) communities of religion, which are not inconſiſtent with a virtuous life, and the good of ſociety, in good policy ought to be allowed; the Romans, a very polite people (their *jus civile* is practiſed every where in Europe to this day) made the gods (religions) of all nations free of their city or empire; the Dutch, by an univerſal toleration (but their public places of worſhip muſt be licenced) have become rich; the Diſſenters in England, by their riches, are a great prop to the Proteſtant eſtabliſhment; being excluded by law from ſeveral vain, idle, ambitious offices and poſts, they apply themſelves the more to trade and manufactures, and become generally richer than the churchmen. The various decent modes, conſiſtent with ſociety or humanity, of worſhiping a ſupreme Being, may be tolerated; as proceeding innocently from the bias of education, from the various conſtitutions and tempers of mankind, and faſhions of the age; but all with a good intention or conſcience.

The differences in religion generally amount only to this, *viz.* different people worſhiping the ſame GOD in different modes and factions: prieſtcraft (I do not mean the pious, meek, charitable clergy) ſets them by the ears to the diſcredit of all religion, and they make mountains of mole-hill differences.

Amongſt all ſectaries, there is a canker-worm called bigots, which put their ſect in a ridiculous light; they are in a tacit ſullen enmity with all mankind who are not of their frantic or fanatical perſuaſion; they believe implicitly in ſome parſon, an idol of their own making, but not properly in GOD Almighty.

profeſſions

profeſſions of religion, is the true eccleſiaſtical conſtitution of our American colonies; the [*y*] Roman catholic only is excepted; the nature of our conſtitution, the horrid principles of that religion, and at preſent the popiſh claims to our royal ſucceſſion, can by no means admit of it; the papiſts of Maryland, Penſylvania, and Montſerrat, ſeem to be too much indulged. By an act

[*y*] The Roman catholics, commonly called papiſts, in all well-regulated governments, from moſt evident civil political reaſons, ought to be excluded; the conſtitution of their religion renders them a nuſance in ſociety; they have an indulgence for lying, cheating, robbing, murdering; and not only may, but are, in Chriſtian duty bound to extirpate all mankind who are not of their way of thinking; they call them heretics: unleſs the Pope (the head and oracle of their religion) by ſome public accepted bull explain this article of their religion; popery by the laws of nature, and *jus gentium*, ought to be deemed, inconſiſtent with human ſociety.

A doctrine or law, though iniquitous, if not put in execution, becomes obſolete and of no effect, and its evil tendency ceaſes! but this moſt execrable doctrine has, in a moſt diſmal horrid manner, frequently been put in execution; I ſhall give a few inſtances. 1. The popiſh perſecution of proteſtants by the papiſts in England in the reign of queen Mary, from anno 1553 to 1557; biſhop Burnet ſays, that ſhe was a good-natured woman, but of a very ill-natured religion. 2. The bloody maſſacre of the Huguenots by the papiſts in Paris of France. De Serres, one of the beſt French hiſtorians, begins his account of this maſſacre thus, *O ma France! les cheveux me heriſſonnent, j'ay horreur de voir ſur le theatre de ton hiſtoire jouer une tres inhumaine tragedie.* Upon a Sunday, being St. Bartholomew's day, 1572, in the reign of Charles IX, they took the opportunity of the time when the marriage of Henry of Bourbon, king of Navarre a proteſtant, to Marguerite de Valois, ſiſter to the king of France, was to be celebrated; moſt of the princes of the blood and grandees of France, who were of the proteſtant or Huguenot religion, being expected in Paris upon this occaſion, they thought it a proper opportunity to extirpate them by the ſurprize of a maſſacre. At this blow they maſſacred ten thouſand perſons in Paris. 3. The popiſh gunpowder-plot diſcovered the beginning of November, 1605, deſigned to blow up and deſtroy the peers of England at that time in parliament aſſembled: thus they imagined to cancel one of the three negatives of the Engliſh legiſlature. 4. The butcherly maſſacre of the proteſtants in Ireland, anno 1641, by the Iriſh papiſts. Many ſuſpected, that it was by the inſtigation and direction of the court of England, at that time making precipitate great advances towards the Roman catholic religion.

of the Engliſh parliament, incorporated with the act of union of Scotland and England, anno 1707, the church of England is, and for ever hereafter ſhall be, the eſtabliſhed religion in the territories belonging to England, *viz.* in the plantations: therefore, the church of England is at preſent, and muſt continue in perpetuity the eſtabliſhed national religion of the plantations, being one of the fundamental articles of the union; earl of I—lay, a great lawyer, upon a certain occaſion, in a ſpeech in the houſe of lords, well obſerved, "That there were "only two articles of union unalterable, *viz.* thoſe re-"lating to religion, and the proportion of taxes." Antecedent to anno 1707, it ſeems that a general toleration limited as above was the religious eſtabliſhment of our colonies; 1. In their charters and grants, there is no preference given to the church of England. 2. The act of uniformity, in the beginning of queen Elizabeth's reign, was prior to the colonies in America. 3. In the act of uniformity, beginning of king Charles the ſecond's reign, are mentioned only "the realm of England, do-"minion of Wales, and town of Berwick upon Tweed." 4. By a late act of the Britiſh parliament for the naturalizing foreigners in the plantations; receiving the ſacrament in any proteſtant congregation is a qualification; therefore it did not extend to the plantations.

I know of no doctrinal [z] difference between the laity of the church of England; and the laity of the three

[z] Predeſtination and free-will ſeem to be only private opinions, but not a national church doctrine with us; they ſeem both to be orthodox, the firſt from the omniſcience and preſcience of a ſupreme being, the other from the conſtitution and inward feelings of mankind: how to reconcile them is a myſtery, and not to be canvaſſed; here we muſt ſay with the ſimply good Laplander (when queſtioned concerning ſome of our Chriſtian myſteries, by a Swediſh miſſionary) GOD KNOWS.

Free-will, *That all the phyſical and moral evils which we perceive amongſt mankind, proceed from the abuſe we make of this liberty:* this opinion ſeems the moſt conſiſtent with the good of ſociety.

Predeſtination, *That every thing comes to paſs by a fatal neceſſity*, in a ſtrict abſolute ſenſe, is pernicious to a good life and to ſociety, and en-

denomina-

denominations of proteſtant diſſenters; who are thus diſtinguiſhed from other diſſenters, becauſe they take out licences for their meetings or religious aſſemblies in England, I mean the Preſbyterians, Independents, and Anabaptiſts; theſe laſt at preſent ſeem to differ from the

courages an abandoned wicked life: it annihilates all religion: if good works do not forward, nor bad works hinder, ſalvation; the fear of GOD, and the keeping of his commandments, are of no effect. We muſt acknowledge that predeſtination in ſome political views has a good effect; this turns me into an annotational digreſſion.

There are many things, which in a curſory, not well pointed view (as painters expreſs it) ſeem ſhocking, but in a proper political view are beautiful and unavoidably conſiſtent with ſociety; I ſhall mention a few inſtances. 1. Predeſtination for military men; Mahomet, and Cromwell, found a vaſt advantage by this doctrine; the Mahometans have improved this doctrine very much amongſt their militia, *viz.* If they conquer, they have profit and glory in this world; if killed in battle, they have paradiſe in the next. 2. A diſſolute thoughtleſs way of life, but ſo regulated, as not to be enormous and prejudicial to peace and good neighbourhood; without this tacit allowance, we ſhould be at a loſs for a ſufficient number of ſoldiers and ſailors upon occaſion. 3. Pinching of the very mean labourers or working people, by lowering or keeping their wages much under; hereby our merchants can afford in foreign markets to under-ſell the merchants of other countries, and conſequently vent more of their produce or manufacture: beſides, let us ſuppoſe, their employers in generoſity and beneficence to allow more wages than are merely ſufficient to provide them the neceſſaries of life, perhaps, ſome few of them, may lay up this ſurplus, and, in a ſhort time, aſpire higher than this their mean labour, thus their labour is loſt; but the greateſt part would idle away ſo much time (a day or two in the week loſt to the public good) as this ſurplus could ſupply with neceſſaries, to the leſſening of our manufactures, *&c.* 4. Encouraging of a great conſumption of Britiſh goods by luxury and extravagant equipage in our colonies, is thought by ſome wrong-headed men to be a benefit to the mother-country: this is a grand miſtake, becauſe induſtry and frugality in all ſubſervients, is requiſite, otherways they cannot long afford to continue this conſumption reckoned a benefit to Great-Britain. 5. Running in debt produces depreciating money-making aſſemblies (having ſecured the real value of their own uſual ſalaries and wages) towards romantic, *&c.* expeditions or any paper money requiring affair; and procures volunteers for ſuch expeditions by ſcreening debtors from their creditors, thus, and by other (I muſt not ſay iniquitous) acts for the relief of debtors, hurting creditors and the credit of the country very much.

others only in the manner and age proper to receive baptiſm. My being prolix in this point, is deſigned not to dictate, but to contribute towards conciliating their affections to one another; their doctrinal religion is the ſame; their eſtabliſhment or legal toleration the ſame; they differ only nominally, or in denominations; if any of theſe denominations ſhould be angry with me, I give them this ſhort anticipating anſwer, I am independent, and of no party but that of truth.

The differences in the modes of Baptiſm are not eſſential; my voucher is the biſhop of London our dioceſan, noted by his printed pious ſuper-excellent paſtoral letters; in a letter to the reverend Mr. Miles, a rector of the church of England in Boſton, dated Fulham, Sept. 3, 1724. "I have been informed within theſe few days, "by a biſhop who had a letter from Boſton, that ſome "of the miniſters there, begin the diſpute about the va-"lidity and invalidity of baptiſm; adminiſtred by per-"ſons not epiſcopally ordained. This was advanced in "England ſome years ago, by the Nonjurors, enemies "of the Proteſtant religion, and preſent government. "The biſhops in convocation then aſſembled, ſet forth "a paper, proving and declaring, that baptiſm by water "in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghoſt, by "what hand ſoever adminiſtred, or however irregular, "is not to be repeated: this doctrine, the great patrons "of our church maintained againſt the Puritans in the "reigns of queen Elizabeth and king James I. Con-"ſidering the views with which this doctrine has been "lately advanced here by the Nonjurors, if any miſ-"ſionary ſhall renew this controverſy, and advance the "ſame, I ſhall eſteem him an enemy to the church of "England, and the proteſtant ſucceſſion, and ſhall deal "with him accordingly." Dodwel carried this affair of baptiſm to a ridiculous height, *viz.* that the ſouls of men were naturally mortal, but epiſcopal baptiſm makes them immortal.

The

The differences in offering up their prayers to the ſupreme Being are not eſſential, whether, 1. By liturgy, a printed form, called, in the church of England, common-prayer. 2. *Memoriter*, though generally compoſed by ſome directory, or cuſtom, or habit, as amongſt the three denominations of proteſtant diſſenters. 3. Random *extempore* prayers of the ſober-minded; I do not mean the profane enthuſiaſtic prayers of new-lights and others, which they impiouſly call, praying as the Spirit ſhall give them utterance; inſpirations are ceaſed. 4. Mental prayers; theſe are called Quietiſts; ſuch are the Engliſh Quakers, the Dutch Menniſts or Mennonites, the Spaniſh, French, and Italian Moliniſts; they are of opinion, that in our devotions we are to retire our minds from all exteriors, and ſink into a pious frame of ſilence; that uſing of words, or attending to words, interrupts devotion; and they reduce all the exerciſe of religion to this ſimplicity of mind. In ſhort, Quietiſts are of opinion, that the great GOD ought to be adored in ſilence and admiration; that words and ceremonies divert true devotion to material ſounds and objects. Our Quakers ſay, that their ſilent meetings are the moſt edifying. A ſtrict uniformity in religion does not people a country, but depopulates, and particularly ſends away the beſt of their people, the induſtrious, peaceable, conſcientious diſſenters. The revocation of the edict of Nantes hurt France very much, by ſending away many of their beſt manufactures and artificers, to the great benefit of Great-Britain and Holland, where an extenſive, compaſſionate, charitable toleration, is eſtabliſhed by laws and placarts.

3. In our colonies people of all religions are under the coercive power of the civil government; therefore, at preſent, any other government in the ſeveral denominations of churches, might have the bad effect of *imperium in imperio*, i. e. confuſion. In fact, in our plantations, at this time, there is no real provincial church-government, and conſequently they do not differ in this

reſpect; the biſhop's commiſſary is only a nominal office: the annual meeting of the independent or congregational clergy in Boſton the end of May, at the ſolemnity of the election of a provincial council; and the yearly pilgrimage of ſome Quakers, are only upon a laudable friendly account. Perhaps a ſuperintendant of the miſſionaries from the ſociety of 1701, might have a good effect; with a power and inſtructions to remove miſſionaries from one ſtation to another, as the intereſt of propagating the goſpel might require. As an hiſtorian, every thing is in my province. Some who do not underſtand propriety of characters, think I ought not to mention the clergy; but, as a writer of hiſtory, I cannot avoid it, without being reckoned deficient and partial in the affairs of the clergy.

4. The veſtments of the clergy are not to be faulted; they are not eſſential to religion; all communions ſeem to affect ſomething peculiar in this reſpect; the gown, caſſock, girdle, roſe, ſurplice, *&c.* of the church of England; the plain black gown of the officiating clergy in Geneva, Switzerland, and among the Huguenots of France; the blackgown with frogs in the country miniſters of Scotland; the black cloak of the independents; the antiquated habit of the Quakers, particularly of their exhorters.

Perhaps, at preſent, many religions are ſo loaded with verbal differences or controverſies, and with enthuſiaſtic devotional terms, that they are become an affair not of piety, ſincerity, and truth, but a jumble of inſignificant technical words, and cant-phraſes: as formerly, inſtead of true ſolid philoſophy and natural hiſtory, there was in the ſchools only a pedantic metaphyſical jargon, which by this time has received a notable reformation; ſo I doubt not, that religion in time may admit of the like purity and ſimplicity.

In Great-Britain there are three diſtinct ſocieties for propagating chriſtian proteſtant knowledge or religion in foreign parts, incorporated by royal charters.

1. Anno

1. Anno 1649, the parliament of England, granted a charter to a preſident and ſociety, for propagating the goſpel in New-England; at the reſtoration it was laid aſide, but by ſolicitation a new charter was granted 14 Car. II. Feb. 7. to a ſociety or company for propagating the goſpel in New-England, and parts adjacent in America; the number of members not to exceed forty-five, and the ſurvivors to ſupply vacancies; they appoint commiſſioners in New-England to manage affairs there: this charity has been helpful to ſome of the preachers in New-England who have ſmall proviſion.

2. Anno 1709, by charter there was eſtabliſhed in Scotland a ſociety for propagating chriſtian knowledge amongſt the Highlanders; 4 Geor. I. their charter was extended to all infidel countries beyond ſeas; they have a conſiderable fund; they have had a miſſionary upon the New-England weſtern frontiers, and another upon its eaſtern frontiers; the laborious Mr. Brainard, lately dead, was their miſſionary amongſt the Indians upon the northern frontiers of Penſylvania, and the Jerſeys.

3. A ſociety for propagating the goſpel in foreign parts, eſtabliſhed by charter June 16, anno 1701; their certain fund is very ſmall; they depend upon ſubſcriptions and caſual donations; their ſubſcribing and correſponding members at preſent, are upwards of 5000; in the American colonies, near ſixty miſſionaries; their annual expence exceeds 4000*l.* ſterling. We may find by their charter, by their annual ſociety-ſermons, and by the yearly narratives of the progreſs of this ſociety, that the principal deſign is to propagate chriſtian knowledge; that the Indians may come to the knowledge of CHRIST; to preach the goſpel to the heathen; the care of the Indians bordering upon our ſettlements, and ſuch like expreſſions: a ſecondary deſign is, to officiate when there is no proviſion, or only a ſmall proviſion for a goſpel miniſtry. Many good things were originally intended by this charter, and doubtleſs the ſame good intentions continue with the ſociety; but in all public

diſtant affairs the managers at home may be impoſed upon. Here I beg leave of the miſſionaries, as an hiſtorian to relate matters of fact; if any miſſionary thinks that I deviate from the truth, he may correct me, and I ſhall be more explicit and particular in the appendix. The remarks which I ſhall make at preſent are, 1. The miſſionaries do not concern themſelves with the converſions of the Indians or heathen; the miſſionaries of Albany, in the province of New-York, have at times viſited the Mohawks. 2. Inſtead of being ſent to reſide and ſerve their miſſions in our out-town new ſettlements (where, in the words of their charter) "the proviſion "for miniſters is very mean, or are wholly deſtitute and "unprovided of a maintenance for miniſters, and the "public worſhip of GOD," they are ſent to the capitals, richeſt, and beſt civilized towns of our provinces; as if the deſign and inſtitution were only to bring over the tolerated ſober, civilized diſſenters, to the formality of ſaying their prayers [*a*] liturgy-faſhion. In the colony of Rhode-Iſland, diſcreet able miſſionaries are requiſite.

The Britiſh miſſionaries of the three diſtinct ſocieties are much deficient, when compared with the miſſionaries of other nations amongſt the heathen. 1. For many years laſt paſt, we have frequent accounts of many nu-

[*a*] I do not intend to derogate from the liturgy or common-prayer of the church of England, from their veſtments, and other decorations and ceremonies (which ſome Puritans call eccleſiaſtical SERERY) from their faſts and feſtivals. Becauſe, 1. So much of the Roman breviaries and ceremonies, were to be retained, as were conſiſtent with the reformation; that the *tranſitus* or change with the vulgar might be more eaſily complied with. 2. Thoſe of the confeſſion of Augſburg, and Heidelberg in Germany, the Huguenots of France, the Dutch eſtabliſhed church, *&c.* have printed forms of prayer, and a fixed pſalmody. 3. The Greek and Armenian churches tolerated in the Turkiſh and Perſian dominions, muſt have vaniſhed many centuries ago, if it had not been for the outward ſhew of the veſtments of their clergy, decorations of their churches, their faſts and feſtivals. 4. To the Weſtminſter preſbyterian confeſſion of faith, is annexed a directory for the public worſhip of God, amongſt other things the ſeveral heads to be obſerved in their public prayers are directed.

merous

merous converſions of the heathen in the Eaſt-Indies by the Daniſh chriſtian proteſtant miſſionaries; which not only [*b*] propagates our chriſtian religion, but, in a political view, brings over the aborigines, and ſecures them in a national intereſt. 2. The French miſſionaries in Canada are indefatigable, and thereby ſerve the intereſt of France, equally with that of chriſtianity. 3. The popiſh miſſionaries in China, from ſeveral European nations, by their mathematical ingenuity, and their *omnia omnibus*, have been very uſeful to chriſtianity.

A digreſſion concerning the ſettling of colonies in general; with an Utopian amuſement, or looſe propoſals, towards regulating the Britiſh colonies in the north continent of America.

IT is a common but miſtaken notion, that ſending abroad colonies weakens the mother-country: Spain is generally brought for an inſtance; but Spain being ill

[*b*] Miſſionaries may be uſeful in a double capacity, 1. Civil, that is, by bringing thoſe wild nations or tribes, into the intereſt worldly or political of their conſtituents, and of keeping them ſteady in the ſame. 2. Religious, for this they are principally deſigned, to convert the heathen to the religion of their own country; by purity of doctrine and exemplary life to eſtabliſh religion and good manners amongſt them; they ought chiefly to inculcate, that true happineſs conſiſts in health and virtue; that the eſſentials of religion are to be good and wiſe. Mr. Hubbard, in his hiſtory of the troubles in New-England by the Indians, gives a wrong turn, in terming it, "The Indians carrying on "the deſigns of the kingdom of darkneſs;" whereas we do not know of any Indians, that ever attempted to pervert our people in affairs of religion, nor to make them abjure the chriſtian religion—The moſt noted and deſerving Engliſh miſſionary, that hitherto has appeared in our Britiſh North-America colonies, was the Rev. Mr. John Elliot of Roxbury, called the Indian Evangeliſt; he was educated at Cambridge in England, came over to New-England anno 1631, was ſixty years miniſter of Roxbury, adjoining to Boſton; his ſucceſſor Mr. Walter is now living, a very extraordinary inſtance of no more than two incumbents in the ſpace of 120 years in ſucceſſion. Mr. Elliot died 1690, Æt. 86. His Indian bible (it was in Natic Indian) was printed at Cambridge 1664; after his death it was republiſhed with the corrections of Mr. Cotton, miniſter of Plymouth.

peopled

peopled does not proceed from thence; it is from their native ſloth; from driving all the Moors out of that country; from a rigorous inquiſition in religious affairs; from vaſt numbers of friars and nuns, who do not labour, and who are not allowed to propagate their ſpecies: for this reaſon, and from the popes being landlords only for life, the pope's dominions in Italy are almoſt deſolate of people, but not from ſending out colonies; they have no colonies.

The grandeur of Phœnicia, Greece, and Rome, was much owing to their colonies; they made no complaints of their colonies depopulating their reſpective mother-countries. The many and large Dutch colonies in the Eaſt-Indies, do not depopulate Holland, but are the chief foundation of their wealth. How vaſtly rich muſt France have been in a very ſhort time, if the good cardinal Fleury's ſcheme of trade and colonies had been followed, in place of their idle romantic land-conqueſts in Europe.

The people ſent from Great-Britain and their progeny made vaſtly more profitable returns, than they could poſſibly have done by their labour at home: I do not mean idlers and ſoldiers ſent only for the defence of unneceſſary multiplied colonies; this ſeems to be bad policy, by exhauſting their mother-country both of men and money. If any neighbouring foreign ſettlement becomes noxious, let us demoliſh or diſmantle it, when in our power, and prevent, by treaty or force, any future ſettlement; this will be ſufficient and profitable.

The nations of Great-Britain are not a numerous people, and therefore cannot ſwarm ſo much (in alluſion to bees) as ſome other countries of Europe: we have found and do practice two conſiderable expedients, to ſupply this defect. 1. Importing and naturalizing of foreigners; witneſs the late incredible growth of the province of Penſylvania, from the importation of Palatines and Straſburghers from Germany. By an act of parliament, any foreigners who, after the firſt of July, 1740,

1740, ſhall reſide in any of his majeſty's colonies ſeven years or more, without being abſent above two months at a time from the colonies, and ſhall bring a certificate of his having received the ſacrament within three months in ſome proteſtant congregation, and of taking the oaths to the government before a juſtice, and regiſtering the ſame, ſhall be deemed as natural-born ſubjects. 2. Importing and employing of [c] ſlaves from Africa; in the Weſt-India or ſugar-iſlands, and in the ſouthern diſtrict of the Britiſh colonies in North-America; they are about 300,000 at the charge of about 30*s.* ſterling *per annum* per head. Theſe negro ſlaves are employed in the produce of all our ſugars, tobacco, rice, and many other valuable commodities.

The diſcouragements and hindrances of the growth of our plantations, which require to be remedied, are all impreſſes, becauſe hitherto our plantations have no ſpare hands. 1. Inliſting of landmen as ſoldiers to ſerve without their ſeveral provinces or colonies: all the colonies want more people, and whites; natives of America do not well bear tranſplantation; of the two companies ſent from Maſſachuſetts-Bay in New-England many years ago for the relief of Jamaica, not above ſix men returned; of the 500 men ſent to Cuba expeditions, not exceeding fifty men returned; of the 4000 men volunteers upon the expedition to Louiſbourg, one half died of ſickneſſes; and they who returned, came home with a habit of idleneſs, and generally conſumed more than they earned, and conſequently were worſe than dead: inliſtments to be allowed only occaſionally in caſes of invaſions or inſurrections in the neighbouring provinces. 2. Impreſſing of idlers, and impreſſing of ſailors from the inward-bound trade, leaving aboard proper perſons

[c] From obſervation and experience, it ſeems to be an eſtabliſhed opinion, that a negro man of forty Æt. is in value equal to a negro boy of ten Æt. and proportionally in their other ages upwards and downwards.

to

to take care of the intereſt, though in itſelf illegal, is by cuſtom connived at; but this connivance is abuſed by ſome commanders, impreſſing men who in a ſpecial manner are exempted by act of parliament, ſuch as foreign ſailors, tradeſmens apprentices, whole crews of merchant-ſhips outward-bound, and cleared out, without ſecuring the veſſels from diſaſters, and the goods from embezzelments.

1. By act of parliament, amongſt thoſe exempted from impreſſes, are, every foreigner, whether ſeamen or landmen, who ſhall ſerve in any merchant-ſhip or privateer, belonging to the ſubjects of Great-Britain. There are likewiſe exempted from being impreſſed into his majeſty's ſervice, every perſon being of the age of fifty-five years, or under eighteen; every perſon who ſhall uſe the ſea, ſhall be exempted from being impreſſed for the ſpace of two years, to be computed from his firſt going to ſea; and every perſon who having uſed the ſea, ſhall bind himſelf apprentice to ſerve at ſea, ſhall be exempted from being impreſſed for the ſpace of three years, to be computed from the time of binding.

2. The navy may be ſerved without violent impreſſes; we have many inſtances of brave, active, gallant commanders, who have carried on affairs committed to their truſt with good expedition and ſucceſs, without diſtreſſing of trade; but merely by voluntary inliſtments, having gained the affection of ſailors in general, by uſing thoſe men with humanity and benevolence; a noted inſtance we have of this in Sir Peter Warren, a gentleman of an univerſally acknowledged good character, naturally good and humane, always friendly to trade, benevolent, beloved by his officers and common ſailors, aſſiduous and conſtant, therefore ſucceſsful and fortunate.

3. If the foremaſt men aboard men of war were more humanely uſed by all their officers, perhaps there would be no occaſion for impreſſes: their encouragement in times of war is very conſiderable, *viz.* That all officers, ſeamen, and ſoldiers, on board every Britiſh man of war, ſhall

ſhall have the ſole property of all ſhips and merchandize they ſhall take after the 4th of January, 1739, in Europe, and after the 24th of June, 1740, in any other part of the world; to be divided in ſuch proportion as the crown ſhall order by proclamation, as alſo a bounty of 5*l.* for every man which was living on board any veſſel ſo taken or deſtroyed, at the beginning of the engagement; by proclamation the dividends were to the captain 3 8ths (if under the command of an admiral or warrant commodore, one of the three eighths is to the admiral or commodore) 1 8th to the lieutenants and maſter; 1 8th to the warrant officers; 1 8th to the petty officers; and 2 8ths to the private men. By act of the general aſſembly of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, the provincial armed veſſels in dividing their captures, 2 8ths is allotted to the captain, and 3 8ths to the private men, becauſe the private men of a provincial privateer are ſuppoſed to be good livers and inhabitants; thoſe belonging to men of war are generally abandoned vagrants, and any additional pence renders them more diſſolute and incapable or negligent of their duty.

There are many other encouragements to provide the navy with voluntier ſailors; and to prevent arbitrary and violent impreſſes, unnatural in a free Britiſh conſtitution; for inſtance.

4. For the better encouraging foreign ſeamen to ſerve on board Britiſh ſhips, it is enacted, that every ſuch foreign ſeaman, who ſhall, after the firſt day of January, 1739, have ſerved during the war, on board any Britiſh man of war, merchant-ſhip, or privateer, for two years, ſhall be deemed a natural-born ſubject of Great-Britain, and ſhall enjoy all the privileges, &c. as an actual native of Great-Britain.—Provided, that no perſon thus naturalized, ſhall be of the privy council, or ſhall have any place of truſt civil or military, or have any grant of lands from the crown. Impreſſing of ſeamen for the ſervice of the navy, prevents the increaſe of ſhipping and ſeamen in the colonies, and occaſionally makes

[*d*] riots and dangerous tumults; the impreſſing of ſeamen has in part been redreſſed by the late act of parliament. There had long ſubſiſted a diſpute between the admiralty and the trade, concerning the impreſſing of ſailors: the firſt inſiſted that, commanders of privateers, and maſters of merchant-men, did encourage deſertion from his Majeſty's ſhips of war by entertaining and hiring deſerters; the merchants complained of the great hardſhips upon trade and navigation, from the arbitrary unreaſonable impreſs of hands by indiſcreet captains and commanders: to accommodate this affair the parliament of Great-Britain in their wiſdom paſſed an act anno 1746, that privateers or merchant-men harbouring deſerters from the king's ſhips, ſhould forfeit 50 *l.* ſterling per man; and any officer of a man of war impreſſing any ſailor (deſerters excepted) on ſhore or on board ſhall pay 50 *l.* ſterling, for each man impreſſed. This act is only in relation to the ſugar-iſland colonies; it might eaſily, when in agitation, have been extended to the continent colonies of North-America by proper application of their ſeveral agents; in a particular manner New-England claimed this exemption (if their agents

[*d*] Our province in a peculiar manner (I am apt to call Maſſachuſetts-Bay our province, becauſe, at this writing, of my reſidence there) requires ſome more ſevere acts againſt riot, mobs, and tumults. The leaſt appearance of a mob (ſo called from *Mobile Vulgus*) ought to be ſuppreſſed, even where their intention in any particular affair is of itſelf very good; becauſe they become nurſeries for dangerous tumults; I ſhall give an inſtance or two in Boſton. 1. A few years ago, a houſe of notorious evil fame, known by the name of mother Gr—n's, was ranſacked by a ſmall mob in the preſence of, ſome ſay, by inſtigation of, ſome well meaning magiſtrates; the conſequence was, the mob a few days afterwards demoliſhed the public market-houſe, and carried off the materials for their own private uſe. 2. For ſome years paſt upon the 5th of November, being the anniverſary Gun-powder-treaſon day, ſeveral mobs, have carried about pageants of the Pope, the Devil, and Pretender; theſe Gun-powder-treaſon mobs yearly increaſe. A few days after the Gun-powder-treaſon pageantries or mobs, an impreſs in Boſton harbour, with the recent accident of two men in Boſton being murdered by a preſs-gang, occaſioned a very great tumult in Boſton.

had

had had that addreſs, intereſt, vigilancy, and aſſiduity which their duty required) by having lately ſuffered ſo much in their perſons and purſes by a voluntary expedition in favour of their mother-country againſt Louiſbourg: I am apt to think that being too forward beyond our natural abilities, may give the miniſtry at home ſome reaſon to imagine, that New-England is ſo increaſed in people, as to have many idlers to ſpare; as appears by their order for two regiments of ſoldiers (or 2000 men) from hence, in addition to the garriſon of Louiſbourg. At preſent, I hope the miniſtry are convinced that New-England cannot ſpare idlers ſufficient to make one regiment complete. I ſpeak for the intereſt of the country, and impartially in general; my intereſt being in that country, ſome may wrongly think that I am partial.

Before the plantation or colony trade took place, the trade of England conſiſted only in the exportation of tin [*e*], lead, leather [*f*], grain, and wool [*g*]: by colonies

[*e*] Britain ſurpaſſes all the world for woollen manufactures and for tin; the Phœnicians had colonies in the Caſſiterides or Britiſh iſlands, becauſe of their TIN: there is no known place of the earth, where ſuch quantities of tin are to be found; Mr. Davenant, a former inſpector-general of the imports and exports, in his reports anno 1711, writes, that the contract for tin, was 1600 ton ſtannery weight, or 1714 ton, 508 lb. avoirdupois weight; which is more than is taken off by foreign exportation and home conſumption, and may tend to make the commodity a drug.

[*f*] Great-Britain produces more GRAIN, than they can conſume, and there are certain bounties given upon its exportation, when prices do not exceed ſpecified rates; and upon the exportation of manufactures from grain, there are bounties and drawbacks, *e. g.* upon malt, beer, malt-ſpirits. In England from a conſumption of about 80,000 quarters of malt are manufactured about 1,600,000 gallons of malt-ſpirits, which pays upwards of 150,000 *l.* ſterling *per annum* to the public revenue.

[*g*] Wool and woollens are the greateſt and moſt profitable commodity of the produce and manufacture of Great-Britain, on which the value of lands and the trade of the nation do chiefly depend. The gain in manufacturing of wool is ſo conſiderable, that the greateſt penalties, even to death, prohibits the exportation of wool not manufactured; the admiralty appoint cruizers on the coaſts of Great-Britain and Ireland, to intercept the exportation of wool; theſe penalties

our

our trade and navigation is vaſtly improved; Cromwell and the rump parliament had good notions of trade in general, and particularly of the plantation trade; they had a ſcheme to bring the Dutch to reaſon, for ſome outrages they had done us in our ſpice trade and other affairs; but the ſubſequent reigns of the indolent Charles the ſecond, and of the popiſh prieſt-rid James the ſecond, were great damps. The addition which the factories and colonies have made to our trade and navigation is immenſe, *viz.* the Indian trade, fur and ſkin trade, cod-fiſhery and fiſh-oil, naval ſtores, tobacco, rice, ſugar, and other Weſt-India Iſland produce. Beſides the profits they afford to the planters, merchants, and navigation owners, they yield great branches of revenue to the public treaſury; the Eaſt-India trade about 300,000*l.* ſterling *per annum*, tobacco 200,000*l.* ſterling, ſugars 150,000*l.* ſterling, *&c.*

In multiplying of colonies, there are boundaries which to advantage cannot be exceeded. Thus our ſugar colonies produce as much ſugar as we can vent to profit; the ſame may be ſaid of rice, and perhaps of tobacco;

were extended to wool from Ireland, and afterwards to the plantations; by act of parliament, after Dec. 1, 1699, no wool nor woollens, the produce of any of the Engliſh plantations in America, to be ſhipped off on any pretence whatſoever; as alſo that no ſuch wool or woollens, the produce of any of the Engliſh plantations in America, ſhall be loaden upon any horſe, cart, or other carriage, to the intent and purpoſe to be exported, tranſported, carried, or conveyed out of the ſaid Engliſh plantations, to any other of the ſaid plantations, or to any other place whatſoever, upon the ſame pains, penalties, and forfeitures; which are forfeiture of goods and carriage, and 500*l.* ſterl. fine.

Our woollens are above one third of our univerſal export. At a medium our wool manufactured is double the value of the wool itſelf; and deducting all charges, one third of the neat profit goes to the landlord. We import about 5000 bags of Spaniſh or Segovia wool *per annum*; it is of a fine grain) without a mixture of it no ſuperfine cloths can be made) but of a ſhort ſtaple; it cannot be wrought without a mixture of Engliſh or other wool of a longer ſtaple.

if

if we increaſe in theſe, their prices at market from their plenty muſt fall, and not yield a ſufficient profit.

The regulations in the colony-trade, ought to be altered according as circumſtances of time, *&c.* may require; for inſtance, ſeeing by an arret of the council of ſtate 1726, the French colonies are allowed to carry their produce directly to other ports of Europe, but the veſſels to return directly to the ports of France from whence they ſet out: therefore Great-Britain ſeems to be under a neceſſity to take off all enumerations (that of ſugar and rice is lately in part taken off) but that the veſſels which carry plantation-goods to foreign ports, ſhall clear out from Great-Britain before they return to the plantations. This would prevent their carrying foreign goods to our plantations directly, and would maintain the proper dependency of the colonies upon their mother-country.

The Utopian amuſement.

I SHALL conclude the general hiſtory of the Britiſh North-America colonies, being the firſt part of our ſummary, by a ſcheme for the better regulating theſe colonies. It is not to be expected that ſuch conſiderable alterations are to be made, and therefore may be called an idle ſcheme; but, perhaps, it may give ſome hints towards rectifying ſeveral things, which much require emendations.

By the general patent of king James I, anno 1606, the ſea-line of the Engliſh North-America, at that time called North and South-Virginia, was to have been divided into colonies [g] of 100 miles ſquare, being for each colony 100 miles upon the ſea; but this patent was ſoon vacated, and the propoſed diviſions did not take place: afterwards royal grants were made at ſundry times, to various grantees of ſingle perſons or communities, of different humours and views; ſo that boundaries (the countries not being well explored, for inſtance,

[g] Pag. 204.

Merrimack river with relation to the boundaries of Maſſachuſetts Bay, and New-Hampſhire colonies) were uncertain, and their conſtitutions different. The colonies at this time are arrived to a ſtate of conſiderable maturity, and the conveniences and inconveniences of the politia or polity of the ſeveral colonies are now apparent; perhaps it would be for the intereſt of the nations of Great-Britain, and for the eaſe of the miniſtry or managers at the court of Great-Britain, to reduce them to ſome general uniformity; referring to their ſeveral general aſſemblies or legiſlatures, the raiſing of taxes, and appropriating the ſame, with the affairs relating to their different or ſundry produces and trade; theſe may be called their municipal laws.

Previouſly, at the court of Great-Britain, there may be conſtituted A BOARD OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS for direction; to be compoſed of gentlemen returned home, who have formerly been governors of colonies, judges of vice-admiralty, conſuls at foreign ports of trade, commodores who have ſerved ſome time in plantation-ſtations, ſurveyor-generals, and collectors of the cuſtoms in the colonies, planters, merchants, and factors who follow the plantation trade. Some few of theſe may have ſalaries, and be obliged to a cloſe attendance; the others may be honorary, and with equal power of management when preſent: the agents (they are properly their attorneys) of the colonies to attend when called upon.

This board being conſtituted, their firſt buſineſs may be to compoſe a draught of a body of general laws for all the plantations (it may be called the MAGNA CHARTA OF THE BRITISH COLONIES IN AMERICA) by peruſing the preſent law-books of the ſeveral colonies, and from their own perſonal experience and obſervation, with the aſſiſtance of the attorney and ſolicitor-general, or of ſome other eminent lawyers. This draught of general laws for the plantations to be laid before the Britiſh parliament for their approbation, and to be paſſed into a public act of parliament; in proceſs of time, and as things may

require, ſubſequent parliaments may make additions and amendments. All theſe general laws may be comprized in [*b*] one pocket-volume.

Some of theſe plantation general laws, may relate to the following articles.

I. PROPERTY ſhall permanently remain as at preſent, and transferable according to law, with a clauſe for quieting poſſeſſions.

Proprietary and charter-governments to be vacated for equivalents, either in money, or a further addition of land-property, and all governments of the colonies to be veſted in the crown [*i*].

The government of all the northern American continent-colonies being thus in the crown, that country may, at the pleaſure of the court of Great-Britain, be divided into ſundry governments more uniform, equal, and convenient for the attendance of perſons concerned

[*b*] The laws of nations of long ſtanding have been reduced with great utility into a ſmall compaſs. The Roman pandects are in fifty-one titles. Lewis XIV of France reduced all the laws of that great country into two ſmall pocket volumes, called *Code de Louis des affaires de mer*, and *Code de Louis des affaires de terre*. The laws of Scotland preceding the union, are in three duodecimo volumes. The laws of Denmark are in one quarto volume.

[*i*] To ſome original grantees, the government of the colony was equally their property, as that of the ſoil. It has been a practice, time out of mind, with the Britiſh legiſlatures, for a public good uſe, to take away private property, allowing proper adequate compenſation. In ſuch grants of colonies, government and land-property are not to be deemed for ever inſeparable; the earl of Granville (formerly lord Carteret) had one eighth of the government, as well as of the ſoil of the Carolinas; lately he reſigned his part of the government to the crown, retaining his eighth part of the ſoil, which is laid off diſtinct, but ſome think too amply, either as an equivalent for reſigning his ſhare in that government, or by way of indulgence as a court-favourite. The people of the New-Jerſeys were ſo mutinous for two or three years, that the proprietors (the proprietors are many) for their own eaſe, ſurrendered the government to the queen in council, by an inſtrument dated April 17, 1702.

in their provincial courts, than at preſent, without any damage or infraction of [*k*] property: moreover, the ſeveral colonies will be more adequate checks upon one another in caſes of mutiny or inſurrections. The ſeveral colonies as at preſent are at length, and with much difficulty, become well-bounded and diſtinguiſhed (the line between Maryland and Penſylvania excepted) and therefore without any trouble may be reduced into the following governments:

1. Nova Scotia.
2. Sagadahock, Province of Main, and New-Hampſhire.
3. Maſſachuſſetts-Bay.
4. Rhode-iſland, and Connecticut.
5. New-York, and the New-Jerſeys.
6. Penſylvania, and the three lower counties upon Delaware river.
7. Maryland.
8. Virginia.
9. North-Carolina.
10. South-Carolina.
11. Georgia.

[*k*] Where the property belongs to one family (as the earl of Granville, lord Fairfax, lord Baltimore, and Penn's) there is no difficulty, becauſe no damage is done to the property of the ſoil, by ſubjecting ſome part of it to the juriſdiction of one government, and the other part of it to the juriſdiction of an adjacent government: but where the property of the ſoil belongs to a community, as in three of the colonies of New-England; in ſplitting of colonies for uniformity and convenience, there ſeems to be ſome difficulty in dividing or adjuſting the property of colony lands remaining not granted to private perſons; this difficulty vaniſhes in courſe of years. The colony of Rhode-iſland has made grants of all their community-lands to ſundry private perſons many years ſince: the colony of Connecticut ſold the remainder of their colony-lands, anno 1737, being ſeven townſhips in its north-weſt corner, to private perſons by public vendue; the intereſt of the purchaſe-money is wiſely applied towards the ſupport of free-ſchools. In the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay (their government is in the crown, but the property of their lands or ſoil is in the community) of their old charter-colony lands, not exceeding the value of Hudſon's

Hudſon's-Bay is not a colony, and conſiſts only of very much ſeparated ſmall factories or lodges, at the mouths of ſome conſiderable rivers, where the Indians in their canoes come to trade with furs and ſkins. Newfoundland is not a colony, but only a number of good harbours for curing of cod-fiſh; the ſoil is good for nothing.

As the country and rivers are now well explored and known, if the colonies were to be new-modelled, they might be more diſtinctly bounded as follows.

Nova Scotia, which is bounded by the river and gulph of St. Laurence, by the Atlantick ocean, and Bay of Fundi, ſhall be further bounded by boundary, N° 1. being St. John's river, *&c.*

In the boundaries of the ſeveral colonies according to this ſcheme, I mean a due true courſe, but not according to compaſs or magnetic needle, becauſe of the continued irregular progreſſive variations.

1. St. John's river, from its mouth up to——N. lat. and thence in a courſe true north to St. Laurence river, called Canada river.

2. Sagadahock entrance, and up Quenebeck river to N. lat.—and then north to the river of St. Laurence.

3. Up Merrimack river to its fork in N. lat.—near Endicot's tree, and thence north to St. Laurence river.

4. Up Connecticut river to—N. lat. and thence north to the river of St. Laurence.

four or five townſhips or pariſhes of ſix miles ſquare each, remains not granted to private perſons: in their additional province of Maine, a line of two townſhips deep (the valuable part of that country) along the ſea and rivers is already become private property; ſo that the remainder, of leſs value, may be reſigned to the crown for ſome valuable conſideration, to be applied towards paying the province debt. Beſides, by treaty with the Indians anno 1725, all thoſe lands hitherto not conveyed to private perſons, were reſerved to the Indians.

N. B. In theſe community-colonies, when they made grants to private perſons, if they had ſubjected the granted lands to ſome ſmall certain quit-rents, theſe quit-rents would have been a permanent branch of the public revenue towards the charges of government; and would have prevented large tracts of granted lands from being ingroſſed, lying idle and waſte.

5. Up Hudſon's river to the carrying-place to Wood-creek, by Woodcreek and the drowned lands to lake Champlain, by lake Champlain and down the river Chamblais to St. Laurence river.

6. Up Delaware-Bay, and the river to N. lat.—and thence north to lake Ontario.

7. Up Cheſepeak-Bay, and Seſquahana river to N. lat. —and thence north to lake Ontario.

8. Up Chowan ſound, and Roanoke river to——long. weſt from London—and thence due weſt to the Apalachian mountains, or farther weſt to the river Miſſiſſippi.

9. Up Winea-Bay, and Peddie river to——W. long. —and thence weſt to the Apalachian mountains, or farther to the river of Miſſiſſippi.

10. Up the Savanna river to——W. long.—and thence weſt to the Apalachian mountains, or farther to the great river Miſſiſſippi.

11. Finally, is the new Utopian colony of Georgia, which may extend ſouth and weſt indefinitely.

Iſlands in the dividing bays and rivers may be annexed in the whole to one of the adjoining provinces, or partly to one, and partly to the other.

II. In each colony or province, there may be a legiſlature for raiſing of taxes, and for appropriating the ſame to the ſundry articles of the charges of government, and for enacting of municipal laws, adapted to the peculiar circumſtances of the colony, to be ſent home (if for any conſiderable period) for approbation: if preſented, and not diſallowed by the king in council after ——— time, ſuch plantation laws ſhall be deemed good, as if ratified.

The legiſlatures may conſiſt of three negatives:

1. The governour, with advice of the king's or governour's council [*l*], appointed by the crown, with re-

[*l*] In all our colonies, Penſylvania excepted, the council is one of the three negatives in the legiſlature; in the King's governments it ſeems unequal (I do not ſay abſurd) becauſe as the crown has the appointing commen-

commendation of the Board of trade and plantations; this may be called the king's negative.

2d negative may be ſome particular hereditary lords of large manors (*e. g.* Ranſlaer, Levingſton, Beekman in New-York government) appointed by royal patents: The qualifications may be a land eſtate in conſtituted townſhips or pariſhes, not leſs than three thouſand acres, and who ſhall pay at leaſt —— *l.* ſterling, value in every thouſand pound province rate; ſomething of this nature was deſigned in the beginning of Carolina ſettlement. Theſe Patricii, or hereditary Optimates, will be a credit to the country, and may be called the upper houſe of aſſembly. Thoſe lands to be in tail general, that is, to females in defect of males (while in females that vote lies dormant, until a male, the iſſue of this female, ſhall appear) indiviſible and unalienable: this ſeems to be conſonant to the ſecond negative in the parliament of Great-Britain.

3d negative is the repreſentatives of the common people from their ſeveral diſtricts; and may be called the lower houſe of aſſembly, or the common houſe of aſſembly. At preſent they are variouſly repreſented, as may appear in the following ſections, concerning the ſeveral colonies. Perhaps a general uniformity might be expedient, that is, two or more repreſentatives from each county, and two repreſentatives from each ſhire town: the qualification for the electors to be 40*s. per annum* ſterling value of freehold, or 50 *l.* ſterling value principal in any eſtate real or perſonal; the qualification of the elected, repreſentative, or deputy to be——*per annum*, land rent, or——principal eſtate of any kind clear of all incumbrances. As the repreſentatives of counties and towns are not elected as agents for theſe counties or townſhips at the general court, but as their quota of

of the governor, and of his council; the crown is veſted with two negatives in three: therefore it is propoſed, that the King's, or governor's council, ſhall have no other concern in the legiſlature, than by advice to the governor in his negative.

the commons repreſentation in the province; when they find a perſon well qualified in knowledge and honeſty, though not a town reſident (in the out-townſhips it cannot be ſuppoſed that the reſidents or ſettlers do underſtand much of ſtate-policy affairs) they may have the privilege of electing that perſon, though a [*m*] non-reſident, but with ſome natural intereſt of freehold in the county or townſhips.

As upon frivolous occaſions diſputes ſometimes happen between the ſeveral negatives; and thereby their general aſſemblies ſpend much idle time, attended with extraordinary charge, and delay of buſineſs: therefore in times of peace, they ſhall not ſit at one ſeſſion exceeding —— [*n*] days; which will oblige the repreſentatives of the people to a quicker diſpatch of buſineſs, and will prevent the governours from forcing them into their own intereſted meaſures, by an inconvenient long attendance.

As in ſome colonies, their aſſemblies have refuſed or neglected, for ſome years following, to ſupply the ordinary charges of their governments; therefore if ſuch a neglect happen in any colony for two years running, the board of trade and plantations ſhall be impowered to tax that colony, and make an aſſeſſment in proportion to ſome former aſſeſſment; and the uſual or laſt choſen collectors and conſtables be obliged to collect the ſame, and carry it into their reſpective treaſuries, to be applied as the ſaid board ſhall direct, but for the uſe of the charges of the particular colony, and for no other uſe.

III. RELIGION. "For the greater eaſe and encou-
"ragement of the ſettlers, there ſhall for ever hereafter be
"a liberty of conſcience (this is in the words of the char-

[*m*] In the Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, 5 William and Mary it was enacted, That no town in the province ſhall chuſe any repreſentative, unleſs he be a freeholder and reſident in ſuch town which they are choſen to repreſent.

[*n*] The diet of Poland for this reaſon, have ſuch a regulation, eſtabliſhed in perpetuity.

"ter

" ter of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay) allowed in " the worſhip of GOD, to all Chriſtians [*o*], Papiſts ex- " cepted;" and without any peculiar religious qualifications for offices. As the church of England by the articles of union is the national church of all the Britiſh plantations, their miniſters muſt be licenced by their dioceſan; but all other communities, with their places for religious worſhip, may be licenced by the quarter ſeſſions, and regiſtred. Upon any complaints in caſes of life or doctrine of the miniſters, the quarter ſeſſions may appoint ſome knowing, diſcreet miniſters of the goſpel in the neighbourhood (this is a jury of their peers) to enquire into the matter, and make a report of their opinion to the quarter ſeſſions. Preachers and exhorters [*p*] not licenced by the quarter ſeſſions, who ſhall intrude without the invitation or conſent of the town or pariſh-miniſter (as by their noiſe and nonſenſe they may alienate the minds of weak people from their own ſettled miniſters) ſhall be deemed as fortune-tellers, idle and diſorderly perſons, vagrants and vagabonds. That the parſons of the church of England, and the miniſters of the tolerated communities be enjoined to live in exemplary charity

[*o*] Pag. 225.

[*p*] Vagrant enthuſiaſts, ſuch as are, at this preſent writing, Mr. W—f—d, and his brethren; if they could be ſo *apprivoiſé* or tamed, as to ſubmit to regulations, the edge of their fiery zeal might be turned toward Indian converſions, which would be of good uſe in a political, as well as religious, view: this is practiſed with good effect by our French neighbours of Canada. At preſent their zeal is ill-pointed; in towns of buſineſs, poor deluded tradeſmen and labourers (whoſe time is their only eſtate) are called off to their exhortations; to the private detriment of their families, and great damage to the public: thus, perhaps, every exhortation of W—f—d was about 1000 *l.* damage to Boſton in New-England.

That the miſſionaries be cantoned along the Indian frontiers, eſpecially at the truck or trading houſes, under the direction of a ſuper-intendant or travelling miſſionary, one for each of the northern and ſouthern diſtricts of our continent colonies: theſe miſſionaries are alſo to officiate in the poor out townſhips or pariſhes not able to maintain a goſpel-miniſtry.

and

and [q] brotherhood. That their pulpit diſcourſes may principally relate to things which do not fall within the cognizance of the municipal laws; to preach up induſtry and frugality; to preach down idleneſs, a diſſolute life, and fraud; never to intermeddle in affairs of ſtate; no pulpit invectives againſt tolerated religious ſects; that as Dr. Swift humourouſly expreſſes it, "Their religious zeal, having no vent by their tongues, "may be turned into the proper channel of an exemplary "life."

IV. JUDICATORIES. That in the ſeveral colonies, the legiſlatures or general aſſemblies, may have a power to erect judicatories for crimes capital or not capital; for pleas real, perſonal, or mixt; and to elect judges and juſtices not annually or *durante beneplacito*, but for life, or *quamdiu ſe bene geſſerint*; and when by reaſon of age in the judges, their intellectual faculties become languid, and their memories fail; they may be allowed a certain yearly penſion: thus theſe gentlemen will make the law their delight, ſtudy, and only buſineſs; and be under no temptation of being mercenary to provide for a rainy day. It muſt always be ſuppoſed that the officers of the court of vice-admiralty, the officers from the board of cuſtoms, and the ſurveyors of the woods or maſting-trees, are to be appointed by the court of Great-Britain: the juſtices of the general ſeſſions of the peace, of the inferior court of common pleas, of the ſuperior court of judicature, aſſize, and general jail-delivery, and of probates to be elective in the ſeveral provinces. That appeals from the colonies ſhall be to a court of dele-

[q] Dr. Humphrey, ſecretary to the ſociety for propagating the goſpel in foreign parts, in anſwer to ſome complaints ſent to the ſociety againſt ſome of their miſſionaries by the Rev. Mr. William Williams of Hampſhire, by his letter dated London, Warwick-court, in Warwick-lane, May 29, 1735, writes, that "the miniſters of the "church of England, were as little as may be, to meddle with any "matters of controverſy, but only to preach the goſpel and adminiſter "the ſacraments according to the doctrine and diſcipline of the church "of England."

gates,

gates, being a committee of the board of trade and plantations; and from thence in caſes of great conſequence to the houſe of lords in Great-Britain, the *dernier reſort* of all juſtice for the dominions of Great-Britain, which is a court of law and equity in itſelf, as all other courts of judicature ought to be [*r*].

The four principal executive offices ought to be in four [*s*] diſtinct perſons or boards. 1. The governor with his council. 2. The chancery. 3. The judges of the ſuperior court of common pleas. And 4. The judge of probate of wills and granting of adminiſtration.

As an eſtate qualification, the judges of probates and judges of the ſuperior courts, ſhall have a clear eſtate of any ſort, above what will diſcharge all incumbrances; paying —— in every thouſand pound tax: inferior judges and juſtices of the quarter ſeſſions, a like eſtate paying——in every thouſand pound colony or province tax.

Some regulations to prevent delay of juſtice, that cauſes may ſpeedily be brought to iſſue and execution; ſome exception may be made in caſes, where are concerned, *infants*, *femme couverte*, *non-compos*, and perſons beyond ſeas. In all the ports, a court merchant, for the ſummary diſpatch or recovery of debts belonging to ſtrangers and tranſient traders.

That the real eſtate of inteſtates [*t*] be indiviſible, and go to the next in kin.

[*r*] In all nations of Europe, England excepted, law and equity are in the ſame court; in our colonies it would ſhorten law-ſuits, and prevent much unneceſſary charge, by uniting two courts into one: a number of good judges may reaſonably be ſuppoſed to have a greater collective knowledge, and to be more impartial, than a ſole judge in equity, chancellor, or maſter of the rolls; ſeveral chancellors have been convicted of iniquity.

[*s*] In Virginia, from bad policy, they are all veſted in one board, the governor and his council: in ſeveral other colonies two or more of them are in the ſame perſon or board.

[*t*] Inteſtate real eſtates divided among all the children or collaterals, and in the next generation ſubdivided amongſt their children or collaterals, will render a colony for ever poor; becauſe depending upon

V. To

V. TO ENCOURAGE THE GROWTH OF THE COLONIES. No perſon ſhall be carried out of the reſpective colonies, or required to march, without their own conſent, or by a particular reſolve of their legiſlature; no levies of lands-men for ſoldiers, excepting in caſes of foreign invaſions, great incurſions of the Indians, or general inſurrections in any of the colonies; theſe [*u*] levies to be in certain proportions or quotas for each colony, to be ſettled from time to time, according to their proportional growths by the boards of trade and plantations. No impreſs of ſailors, it hinders the growth of their trade and navigation; the profits center in the mother-country; impreſſes may occaſion tumults and mutinies in the colonies; a noted inſtance we have from that raſh unprecedented impreſs [*w*] at Boſton New-England by

a ſmall pittance of land, ſcarce ſufficient to produce to the neceſſaries of life, and being under no abſolute neceſſity of uſing further induſtry, they continue idle and miſerable for life; whereas the younger children, if, inſtead of being freeholders, they become tenants (as a public good) they muſt be more induſtrious, and raiſe, beſides a mere ſubſiſtence, a ſufficient rent for the landlord, and acquire a habit of induſtry: ſome of their male children will become a nurſery for the public land and ſea ſervice; as for the female children, their want of real eſtate will not diſqualify them from being good breeders, but incite and oblige them to accept of huſbands when they offer.

[*u*] There has been no repartition for many years; the laſt was in this proportion.

Maſſachuſetts-Bay	350	Eaſt-Jerſey	60
New Hampſhire	40	Weſt-jerſey	60
Rhode-iſland	48	Penſylvania	80
Connecticut	120	Maryland	160
New-York	200	Virginia	240

Carolina at that time was of no conſiderable account. Since that time Penſylvania, from the great importation of foreigners and Iriſh, is become near equal to Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and the Jerſeys equal to New-York.

[*w*] Small mobs happen in all ſea-port towns upon impreſſes; the occaſion being extraordinary this was a larger mob, and may be called a tumult; this occaſion in a vote of a legal town-meeting, is termed an unwarrantable impreſs, and in a reſolve of the houſe of repreſentatives Nov. 19, it is expreſſed, "A grievance which may have "been the cauſe of the aforeſaid tumultuous diſorderly aſſembling to-"gether." The mob began early in the morning, by night were in-

commodore

commodore Knowles, Nov. 17, 1747. 2. Importing and naturalizing of foreigners conformably to two acts of par-

toxicated with ſtrong drink, and uſed the governor, upon his admoniſhing them from the balcony of the court-houſe, with very indecent, rude expreſſions, but with no rebellious deſign; as drunk, they were void of ſenſe or deſign.

With ſome difficulty I perſuaded myſelf to publiſh this annotation; becauſe, 1. The inhabitants of the town of Boſton legally convened, alledging, that governor SHIRLEY, in his publiſhed letters with regard to this tumult, had ſet the town of Boſton in a diſadvantageous light, and that their character and reputation were much affected thereby, occaſioned miſunderſtandings; but have ſince, by mutual explanations, been amicably compoſed, and therefore ought to be buried in oblivion. *N. B.* An expreſſion, in a former ſheet of this hiſtory, is ſaid to have occaſioned theſe miſunderſtandings: as the author hopes that this hiſtory may live, he thinks himſelf obliged to explain that expreſſion. The governor's letters were wrote and delivered, though not printed, prior to the publication of that ſheet (or pamphlet as it is termed) which was done by a private perſon, not by the direction, or in the knowledge, of the town of Boſton, conſequently the town was not in the queſtion; the author himſelf was under no temptation to offend one party, or to pleaſure the other party; he holds no place under the governor; he is not a town-officer; he never had, nor ever ſhall deſire to have, any influence among the populace; government he adores; tumults he abhors. The expreſſion is, "He was welcomed to town again (the town-"addreſs or petition to the governor, ſays, "on your return to town") "by the regiment of militia under arms, as is uſual upon the recep-"tion of a new governor, or REASSUMPTION of the government," in alluſion to his reception when he arrived from Cape Breton to reaſſume the chair of government; there was no deſigned inſinuation of weak conduct; if any thing in the expreſſion is exceptionable, it ought to be conſtrued only as an impropriety in diction; a lapſe may be incident to any author. 2. I do not affect ſuch occaſional articles; they debaſe a hiſtory of permanent deſign, to the low character of a tranſitory news paper: but as this affair is too much magnified, and is repreſented at home in a falſe and bad light, to the diſadvantage of this town and province, I thought it incumbent upon me, as an hiſtorian in place and time, to give a ſhort impartial relation of this incident, more eſpecially to obviate the imputation of being rebellious, which, amongſt other bad effects, might retard the reimburſement of the great expence incurred by New-England in the reduction of Cape-Breton, and occaſion a jealous regard from the court of Great-Britain; from thirty years reſidence in New-England, I am convinced that no Britiſh ſubjects have a better regard for the Hanoverian race or ſucceſſion. Rebellion implies concerted meaſures, with proviſion of

liament, anno 1740; ſee p. 234; naturalized foreigners are not to ſettle in ſeparate peculiar diſtricts, but intermix-

money, and warlike ſtores (this is not alledged); no fire-arms; they did not attempt to take poſſeſſion of town-batteries and ſtores; they did not take poſſeſſion of the town-gates (Boſton is a peninſula, with only one gate open by day and by night) or court-houſe; its lower floor, or walks, is open and free to every body without being reckoned treſpaſſers. The governor's letters to the ſecretary, which ſurprized the town, do not ſeem to be wrote with any premeditated deſign of hurting the character of the town; but perhaps with ſome degree of warmth, and in "utmoſt haſte," and he calls it an "illegible ſcrawl."

Commodore K——s, naturally raſh and imprudent, without adviſing with the governor and council, and cautioning his officers aſhore in Boſton concerning a mob which might probably enſue upon ſuch an extraordinary impreſs, in the night-time, with armed boats, did kidnap or ſteal ſhip-builders apprentices, and did rob ſhips (cleared out) of their crews. Some of theſe veſſels belonged to Glaſgow in Scotland, therefore he imagined, or was ill-informed, that the Glaſgow maſters and factors were the managers of the mob; and in a tranſport of paſſion, as it was rumoured, ſaid, that all Scotchmen were rebels. If this be made apparent, in quality of a warrant commodore, he is of notice, and may be obnoxious to *ſcandalum magnatum* of all the Scots peers, and to the reſentment of every Scots loyal ſubject, in hiſtory, or otherwiſe, even to the *minutiæ* of his character.

In the morning Nov. 17, 1747, upon this arbitrary unprecedented too rigorous impreſs, ſome ſailors, ſtrangers, belonging to two or three veſſels bound to Guinea and privateering, fearing the like fate, did in their own defence, aſſemble or aſſociate, but without any fire-arms, only with the ruſty cutlaſſes belonging to their veſſels, ſome clubs, and cattſticks. This appearance, as is uſual, attracted ſome idle fellows of low circumſtances, and lower character, boys and children, which made the mob appear large: this mob ſuſpecting that ſome of the preſs-gangs were in town, went in ſearch for them; and ſome wicked abandoned fellows (a mob is like a brute flock of ſheep, they implicitly and without reaſoning follow a ringleader or ſpeaker; therefore a ringleader or ſpeaker, if convicted as ſuch, ought to ſuffer for all felonies and other damages committed by the mob) propoſed to make repriſals of the commodore's officers, as hoſtages for the releaſe of the town-inhabitants.

This mobbiſh aſſembly imagining that thoſe officers had ſheltered themſelves (the government was in duty obliged to protect them) in the governor's houſe, or in the provincial court-houſe; at noon they appeared before the governor's houſe, and in the evening before the provincial court-houſe: by this time being much intoxicated (which after a few hours ſleep ſubſides) they uſed the governor, who appeared in

edly

edly with the original Britiſh, ſee page 209. Papiſts or Nonjurors, ſhall regiſter their names and eſtates.

the balcony, with indecent language; and ſome naughty boys and children, who in frolics take pleaſure in the rattling of glaſs (ſometimes they uſe the window-glaſs of their parents houſes with the ſame freedom) with brick-bats broke ſome window-glaſs of the court-houſe, but were reproved by the real mob.

This mob was leſs impetuous than the generality of mobs; they uſed the ſea-officers well, and diſmiſſed them before the commodore had diſmiſſed the impreſſed town-inhabitants: they did not ſeize captain Auſcough or Erſkine, but left him at large upon his parole.

After the tumult had ſubſided, the commodore advanced with his fleet to inſult Boſton, which he imagined had inſulted him. The governor, in his letter from caſtle-iſland to the ſecretary, Nov. 19, writes, "I will endeavour to divert him from ſuch thoughts, and to influence "him to diſcharge the inhabitants, and as many as I can in the end, "but I cannot promiſe ſucceſs from the preſent temper he is in;" this inſinuates, that the commodore was not maſter of his temper, which is abſolutely requiſite in a ſtateſman, commander of an army, or commodore of a ſquadron of men of war ſhips.

Nov. 19, in the morning, after the tumult had ſubſided, the commodore makes an offer to the governor, to come in perſon to the caſtle for the defence of the governor's perſon and of the fort. This appears with an air of vanity and aſſuming; but the governor in anſwer, juſtly and with propriety of character, acquaints him, "That "he did not retire to the caſtle for ſafety of his perſon; and that "he had not the leaſt apprehenſion of the caſtle's being in danger "from any mob." Finally, the commodore found it adviſeable to retire with his ſquadron, and after a few days put to ſea for the Weſt-India iſlands.

The affair of the town-militia not appearing in arms when called upon, is not eaſily to be accounted for. Some ſay, that 1. The militia apprehended that the tumult was at an end, upon the rioters leaving the governor's houſe in the forenoon. 2. That as they were called upon, in quality of *poſſe comitatus*, that is, in aid of the civil officers; and as the civil officers did not appear to do their duty, they might think it prepoſterous to appear firſt; but in exigencies ſuch formalities muſt not be inſiſted upon. 3. There was no legal alarm, and no written ſigned orders to the militia; eſpecially in caſe of being aſſaulted by the tumult, in going to their rendezvous, or at their rendezvous, in their own defence to fire ſharp ſhot. 4. I conjecture, that they were ſo ſtunned by this rigorous unprecedented impreſs, and imagining the affair was in ſupport of the impreſs, as being illegal, they thought in conſequence they could not be required to ſupport it. I am convinced it was not from any rebellious motive, that is, diſaffection to the king and his ſucceſſion, or to the three branches of legiſlature then convened in Boſton.

VI. PUB-

VI. PUBLIC SCHOOLS AND HOSPITALS. For the education of youth, there ſhall be one public ſchool or more in each town-ſhip or diſtrict, for teaching to read Engliſh, for writing, and arithmetic: in each ſhire-town a grammar-ſchool for the learning the dead languages of Greek and Latin; for Hebrew roots recourſe may be had to the divinity colleges: the maſters of the town and country ſchools to be approved of by the quarter ſeſſions: in each province, a *ſchola illuſtris*, or college, for what are called arts and ſciences, to be regulated by the legiſlatures. And near the center of the North-America continent colonies (therefore not in Bermudas, Dr. Berkley's ſcheme) an univerſity or academy to be regulated by a board of plantations, to initiate young gentlemen in the learned profeſſions of divinity, law, and medicine; in the modern commercial and travelling languages of French, Spaniſh, and Dutch; in other curious ſciences of mathematics, belles lettres, *&c.* and gentlemen exerciſes of riding the great horſe, fencing and dancing: from ſchool to college, from college to travel, and from travel into buſineſs, are the gradations of a liberal education; but for want of effects the link of travel is frequently wanting.

In every ſhire-town there ſhall be a work-houſe, to oblige and habituate idlers to ſome work: it is a better charity to provide work for the idle poor, than to feed them: as alſo an alms-houſe for the aged, infirm, and incurable poor of the county: but [*x*] principally and eſpecially, an orphan-houſe for poor children: where parents are dead or unable to provide for their children, theſe children become children of the common-wealth;

[*x*] This ſort of charity I admire; it is charity in a political view, as well as in humanity; they may become uſeful members of the common-wealth: the aged, infirm, and incurable, are for ever uſeleſs, and a dead weight upon the community; in countries leſs humane, as in ſome provinces of China, where there is ſcarce neceſſary food for their multitude of people, as incumbrances they deprive them of life.

not

not to be brought up to [*y*] idle learning (reading and writing excepted) but to trades and labour: generally theſe poor children may be bound to proper maſters, as apprentices or ſervants, the boys to 21 Æt. the girls to 18 Æt. by the county-courts, or by three juſtices, *Quorum unus.*

VII. [*z*] TO ENCOURAGE TRADE AND NAVIGATION IN THE COLONIES. 1. All enumerations be taken off, excepting upon ſuch commodities, as are the peculiar produce of our plantations, and which no foreign nation can purchaſe of any other nation. 2. As [*a*] animoſities ſometimes happen between colonies, from the mutual impoſing of high duties upon the mutual importation or exportation of goods, which may tend to alienate their very uſeful national intercourſe amongſt the colonies: therefore no ſuch colony-duties ſhall be impoſed, but by ſpecial acts of parliament. 3. That all [*b*] combinations and agreements, between workmen concerning wages, *&c.* ſhall be unlawful: that the employer ſhall pay the full prices agreed on, in money, not in goods, or

[*y*] Some gentlemen of obſervation take notice, that the late humour of erecting in Great-Britain, a multiplicity of free-ſchools and charity-ſchools, is a detriment to the common-wealth; bringing up ſo many youth to learning, renders them feeble, idle, and above common hard labour; the life of a country.

The prevailing humour in the Engliſh univerſities, of making a buſineſs (called criticiſm) of uſing and peruſing the Greek and Roman claſſics, to diſcover typographical errors, and the inadvertencies of a tranſlator, are of no uſe to the community; the critic does not acquire more wiſdom, and is of no benefit to arts and ſciences; but may prove an innocent, idle amuſement to gentlemen of eſtates.

[*z*] The enumerated commodities (*i. e* which are not to be carried directly to any other ports, but to thoſe of Great-Britain) are tar, pitch, turpentine, hemp, yards, bowſprits, beaver-ſkins, and other furs, copper-ore, tobacco, rice, fuſtic, and other dying woods, indigo, cotton-wool, ginger, ſugar, and molaſſes.

[*a*] Moſt of our colonies have paſſed, at times, ſuch acts in deſpite to ſome colonies; for inſtance, anno 1721, Maſſachuſetts Bay, and New-Hampſhire, by acts of their general aſſemblies, impoſed unreaſonable duties upon their mutual imports and exports.

[*b*] This is conformable to an act of Britiſh parliament, anno 1726, with relation to workmen employed in the woollen manufactures.

by way of truck, with certain penalties. 4. That the legiſlatures in each colony, may make their own [c] municipal or local laws. 5. That the governors of the ſeveral colonies or provinces, ſhall have their ſalaries out of the civil liſt from home, but ſhall have no ſalaries, or gratuities from the reſpective aſſemblies; it has happened at times in all our colonies, that ſome deſigning evil men, having obtained a wicked majority in the aſſembly, have thus biaſſed and corrupted their governors. 6. When townſhips exceed 500 legal voters for a town-meeting; the legiſlature, or the governor with his council, may appoint a certain [d] number for life or number of years, of the moſt knowing, diſcreet, and ſubſtantial men of the town, to act in every thing, in place of a general town-meeting, excepting in elections of repreſentatives or deputies for the general aſſembly; in every townſhip all papiſts to regiſter their names and eſtates. 7. That all veſſels, thoſe from Great-Britain not excepted, be liable to tonnage or powder-money, it being towards the protection of their trade and navigation. 8. That no man (even with his own conſent) ſhall be enliſted in actual land or ſea-ſervice under 20 Æt. nor above 52 Æt. This is conformable to a late act of parliament for enliſting marine ſoldiers.

VIII. Taxes. The different nature of the ſeveral colonies will not admit of any general taxations; therefore the various taxes muſt be local, adapted to the conveniencies of each colony. Here I ſhall only obſerve, 1. That in theſe colonies (in North-Carolina there is no other tax) where there is a poll-tax upon all male whites from 16 Æt. and upwards; it ſeems not equitable that a

[c] Roman colonies were foreign lands peopled *(Coloniam ducere)* by native Roman families, though governed by Roman laws and officers; they had alſo municipal by-laws, made by the *Præfectus, Senatus, Populuſque* of the colony, that is, in our idiom, by the governor, council, and repreſentatives.

[d] In the towns of Holland the *vroedſchap* is generally from twenty to forty men.

chimney-

chimney-ſweeper, or the meaneſt of the people, ſhould pay as much (as at preſent in Maſſachuſetts-Bay) as a counſellor or prime merchant; the people ought to be claſſed, and pay in proportion, according to their rank and ſubſtance. 2. That as wines and ſpirits are not the neceſſaries of life (and therefore hardſhip upon the poor is not in the caſe) there may be a conſiderable impoſt or cuſtom upon this importation; and where ſpirits are manufactured (for inſtance rum in Boſton) an exciſe at the ſtill-head (thus private tippling-houſes, that pay no exciſe, will have no advantage over the licenced houſes) upon exportation to draw back the duties of impoſt or exciſe. 3. That there be a licence-tax upon all taverns, inns, and other public houſes of that nature. 4. A [*e*] ſumptuary exciſe or duty upon extravagancies uſed in diet or apparel, excepting upon materials that are the produce or manufacture of Great-Britain. 5. As vexatious ſuits in law are a great nuiſance in all countries, and the ſmaller the [*g*] charges of courts, the greater is the encouragement to ſuch ſuits; therefore there ſhould be a ſtamp duty upon all writings or inſtruments uſed in law-affairs: whereas appeals from one court to another, are generally vexatious, no appeal to be allowed, unleſs the appellant [*g*] depoſit — ſum of money: if the appellant is caſt, this money to be applied towards the charges of the province or county. 6. In the affair of [*h*] rates,

[*e*] *Sumptus*, amongſt the Romans, was uſed to ſignify luxury, and their *ſumptuaria lex*, was alſo called *cibaria lex*; but at preſent it is generally uſed to ſignify exceſs in apparel and equipage.

[*f*] In Maſſachuſetts-Bay, ſince the law-charges have been enhanced by acts of aſſembly, law-ſuits in number are much diminiſhed.

[*g*] As in private life all good men learn from the example and practice of one another; ſo it is, or ought to be, amongſt nations or countries. In Holland, upon an appeal from the Laage Raad to the Hooge Raad, ſeventy-five guilders is depoſited, and if he reviews from the Hooge Raad, he depoſites 200 guilders.

[*h*] In Great-Britain taxes are generally of theſe three denominations, land-tax (which comprehends the income of real eſtate, of perſonal eſtate, and of faculty) cuſtoms or impoſt, and exciſe or conſumption.

as in Great-Britain, the principal gentlemen of the county in the land-tax act are nominated as commiſſioners for the county, whereof but a very few are acting; in the plantations, the juſtices of the quarter ſeſſions in the counties ſeem to be the proper commiſſioners to appoint aſſeſſors in each pariſh of the moſt ſubſtantial men; and in caſes of grievance, appeals in the firſt inſtance may be made to the quarter ſeſſions.

IX. That [i] for the benefit of the Britiſh trade and navigation, more eſpecially with regard to the American

[i] Many veſſels have been loſt near the channel of England and elſewhere, by not giving proper allowance for the difference of variation ſince the date of Dr. Halley's chart anno 1700.

The utility of frequent well-vouched general maps of the variations is apparent alſo in inland-affairs; I ſhall only inſtance in the affairs of Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony (the place of my reſidence) in ſettling the lines or boundaries with the neighbouring colonies. Anno 1719, they agreed with Rhode-iſland to run their line weſt 7 D. N. anno 1613, they run their line with Connecticut W. 9 D. N. anno 1741, according to the determination of the king in council, upon an appeal from the judgment of the commiſſioners appointed to ſettle the lines; their line with New-Hampſhire was run W. 10 D. N. as if the variation were conſtant or upon the increaſe, whereas it was upon the decreaſe: 1. About anno 1700, Dr. Halley's period, the weſt variation in Maſſachuſetts-Bay was about 10 D. and, without giving any allowance for its decreaſe in the ſpace of half a century, did in the laſt caſe ſettle it according to Halley's chart; anno 1741, the variation was ſcarce 8 D. and the error or gore was in favour of Maſſachuſetts-Bay. 2. The other line, between Maſſachuſetts-Bay purchaſe, called the Province of Maine, and New-Hampſhire, was adjudged to N. 2 D. W. true courſe, and was laid out with the ſame error N. 8 D. E. variation, and the guſſet was in favour of New-Hampſhire. 3. Line, or the Rhode-iſland line with Maſſachuſetts-Bay, was ſettled anno 1719, when the variation was about 9 D. laid out by agreement, W. 7 D. N. and the error or guſſet was in favour of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; theſe guſſets contain no inconſiderable tract of land; for inſtance, this gore, though from the ſtation called Saffries, and Woodward, it runs only about twenty-four miles, it acquires a baſe of 360 rod, being one mile and forty rod, commonly called the mile of land: it is true, that after ſome time Maſſachuſetts-Bay gave to Rhode-iſland an eqvivalent in waſte lands, as to property, but not juriſdiction. 4. The line between Maſſachuſetts-Bay and Connecticut (a government of wiſe, circumſpect huſbandmen) was laid out juſt, being 9 D. variation. Mr. Brattle, an ingenious, accurate man, obſerved in Boſton, the variation W. 9 D. N. anno 1708.

colonies,

colonies, and factories in Africa, the Eaſt-Indies, and China; and for the better adjuſting the boundaries of colonies or grants in North-America, there ſhall be fitted out at certain periods of years by the board of admiralty or navy board, a few ſmall veſſels, ſuch as are the man of war ſnows called ſloops, with able obſervers or mathematicians, and a proper apparatus; in different routs along the ſeas of trade, to obſerve the variations for the time being; and to reduce them to a general chart of variations, in imitation of the chart (the firſt of that kind) for anno 1700, delineated by the ingenious, aſſiduous, learned, and of bleſſed memory Dr. Halley, from his own knowledge and obſervations, from the good accounts of others, and from the analogy of the whole: it was ſoon cavilled at by our competitors the French academicians and navigators; but afterwards conceded to and applauded by the French [*k*] academicians. In theſe voyages, when on ſhore by obſerving the eclipſes of Jupiter's moons, and of our moon when to be had, they may adjuſt the [*l*] longitudes, and other requiſites of

Doubtleſs ſundry navigators have good accounts of variations in their journals, and ſome curious landſmen have at times amuſed themſelves in this affair, but ſcarce any have been publiſhed to the world: the only continued ſet of variation obſervations, in my knowledge, is that of the Royal Academy of Sciences for Paris; theſe obſervations are annual, and generally made in the months of December, from anno 1700, down to this time, and are to be continued by learned men well diſciplined, in pay, and therefore obliged to regular duty: our members of the Royal Society for philoſophical tranſactions in London are volunteers, not in pay, not obliged to duty; ſome of them at firſt ſetting out, perform ſome *Coup d'Eclat*, but are ſoon tired.

[*k*] The French are our rivals in every thing; and more particularly in matters of learning, they keep up a laudable emulation. Thus Sir Iſaac Newton and his followers inveſtigating the earth to be an oblate ſpheroid, the French academicians aſſerted it to be an oblong ſpheroid (that is, with the degrees of the meridian ſhorter towards the poles) from actual menſurations (by triangles) of degrees of the meridian, from the north to the ſouth of France; but lately (after a conteſt of above fifty years) by their miſſions to Torneo under the polar circle, and to Peru under the equinoctial, they have given up the point.

[*l*] The longitudes determined by ſea-journals, by eclipſes and oc-

places. The other nations of commerce, particularly France and Holland may do the ſame at a public charge; thus by means of ſo many checks, we may attain from time to time ſome certainty as to the variations; this inſenſibly brings me to a digreſſion.

A digreſſion concerning the magnetic needle, commonly called the mariner's compaſs.

THAT the magnet or loadſtone attracted iron, was known to the higheſt antiquity in record; but the polarity of an iron rod or wire, touched by a magnet and afterwards poiſed, was not obſerved until the thirteenth century of the chriſtian æra. The mariner's compaſs is ſaid to have been firſt uſed in Italy (the principal place of traffic in thoſe days) anno 1301. Cabot, a Venetian, makes the firſt mention, anno 1544, of the variation or deflection of the magnetic meridian from a true meridian, various in various places. Gaſſendi, about a century and a half ſince, diſcovered that this declination of the needle in each particular place, in proceſs of time, had ſome variation. It is not long ſince that the dip of the needle, various in various places, and the variation of this dip-variation in the ſame place, has been diſcovered:

cultations, before the uſe of teleſcopes, micrometers, and pendulums, were not ſo exact as at preſent; formerly, the South-America ſhore was reckoned 6 D. of longitude too much diſtant from Europe; by an obſervation of the moon eclipſed, Dec. 21, anno 1740, from captain Legge, of the Severn man of war at the iſland St. Catharine, on the coaſt of Brazil, St. lat. 27 D. 30 M. 49 D. 20 M. W. from Greenwich. Senex's maps have placed that coaſt about 6 D. too much eaſtward. The China miſſionaries (they carry the credit of able mathematicians to enforce the truth of their religious doctrines) find that formerly the eaſtern coaſt of China was reckoned 25 D. long. too much diſtant from Paris. Dr. Halley, anno 1677, was ſent at a government charge to St. Helena, to obſerve and take a catalogue of the fixed ſtars in the high ſouthern latitudes, which he accordingly reduced to a catalogue and tables; at that time the variation was 40 M. E. of St. Helena.

a needle

a needle poiſed before it is touched, upon the magnetic touch, its north point with us dips from a horizontal poſition; for inſtance, anno 1723, Mr. George Graham in London obſerved it to dip 75 D. He obſerves, the ſtronger the touch, the greater the dip: this needle muſt be afterwards properly loaded to bring it again to an horizontal poiſe to ſerve in the compaſs. As the variations of the dip are at preſent of no uſe in navigation, therefore having no relation to our hiſtory of the Britiſh American colonies, we drop them.

Magnetiſm is ſome power in nature, hitherto inexplicable, as are gravity and electricity; whereby a loadſtone (an iron ore or mineral) draws to itſelf loadſtone or iron. No interpoſed body can hinder this influence or attraction; a large magnet broken to pieces, each fruſtum or fragment, retains the attraction and polarity; ſteel is more receptive and retentive of magnetiſm than common iron. The north poles of touched needles do not attract but repel one another, and attract ſouth poles: likewiſe ſouth poles do not attract but repel ſouth poles. If the different directions of the magnetic needle were permanent for the ſame place, it might be imagined to proceed from different accumulations of magnetic matter in theſe different parts of the earth. Halley's amuſing fancy, that the globe of the earth was one great magnet, with two contained nuclei (which humorouſly may be termed wheels within a wheel) whoſe four poles are different from thoſe of the earth, and from one another; and in caſe a third line of no-variation ſhould be diſcovered in the South-ſeas (which he ſeems to ſuſpect from the accounts, anno 1670, of Sir John Narborough, of the variation upon the weſt coaſt of South-America decreaſing very faſt) he was to introduce a third nucleus: theſe nuclei he ſuppoſes detached from the earth and from one another, and to have a circulatory or libratory motion, equal or unequal, according as the ſolution of the phænomena might require: but this pleaſant novel

does in no manner account for the irregularities in the variations, as hereafter related; and until by future obſervations they be reduced to ſome rules, it ſeems in vain to attempt any hypotheſis.

Dr. Halley, upon his return from his long voyages, delineated the variations as they were anno 1700, in all the oceans and ſeas, the Pacific ocean excepted, from 58 D. N. lat. to 58 D. S. lat. Deliſle delineates the variations 20 D. farther N. than Halley. This chart of Halley's being the firſt of its kind, will perpetuate his memory better than braſs or marble, and will be a permanent credit to our Britiſh nation. Since Dr. Halley's chart of variations for anno 1700, near half a century is elapſed, which has produced great alterations in the variations, ſeeing Halley's Atlantic and Ethiopic line of no-variation, in about the ſpace of a century, from 1600 to 1708, had moved (it paſſed, anno 1600, by cape Agulbas, the ſouthernmoſt cape of Africa, by the Morea, and the north cape of Europe, in N. lat. 71 D. 24 M. and 22 D. 10 M. E. long. from [*m*] London) by its north parts through Vienna anno 1638, through Paris anno 1666, weſtward in all about 1400 leagues, and by its ſouth parts only about 500 leagues.

The anomalies or bizarreries of the variations, are unaccountable, and no length of time, or ſeries of years is likely to bring them to a mean.

1. The variations for the ſame place, ſometimes have a direct progreſſive motion, but unequally; ſometimes are ſtationary, and ſometimes retrogade: I ſhall inſtance the variations at Paris for about a century and three quarters of a century; anno 1580, the variation was eleven and a half D. E; anno 1666, no variation; is at a medium about 8 M. *per annum*; anno 1715, variation was 12 D. 30 M. W. for that interval, is about 14 M. *per annum*. From that time to anno 1720, it was generally retrogade; from

[*m*] We always mean longitude from London, if not otherwiſe expreſſed.

1720,

1720, variation about 13 D. W. for five years it was ſtrictly ſtationary; from anno 1725, it was at a medium directly increaſing or progreſſive to anno 1732, variation 15 D. 45 M. W. From 1732 to 1743 (ſo far the memoirs of the Paris academy of ſciences are publiſhed) the variation was 15 D. 5 M. W. that is a little upon the decreaſe with a libratory motion: therefore (as I may conjecture) the general increaſe of the European weſt variations ſeems to be retarded, or ſtationary, or upon the decreaſe.

2. Mr. George Graham of London, an ingenious and accurate mechanicien, obſerves, anno 1722 from Feb. 6, to May 10 (the compaſs-box remaining unmoved all that time) above one thouſand times; the greateſt variation (weſtward) was 14 D. 45 M. the leaſt 13 D. 50 M. he obſerves that the variation is conſiderably different in different days, and in different hours of the ſame day; without any relation to heat or cold, dry or moiſt air, clear or cloudy, winds or calms, nor the height of the barometer. In the ſame day, he obſerved the greateſt variation from noon to four hours afternoon, and the leaſt about ſix or ſeven hours in the evening. Mr. Joſeph Harris, in his return from Jamaica to London, anno 1732, obſerved, that the weſterly variations were leſs in the morning than in the afternoon. The curves of no-variation, and of each particular variation, do alter their curvatures ſo irregularly and undulatory, that they are not reducible to any equation expreſſive of their nature.

3. The variations have no relation to meridians; according to Halley's chart anno 1700, at the entrance of Hudſon's ſtraits, variation was 29 and a half D. weſt; at the mouth of Rio de la Plata, nearly under the ſame meridian, the variation was 20 and a half D. eaſt. As to parallels of latitude it is obſerved, that the farther north or ſouth from the equinoctial, the variations are the greater, but in no regular progreſſion either as to diſtance from the equinoctial or difference of time. M. des Hayes

and

and Du Glos, anno 1682, at Martinique, found the variation 4 D. 10 M. eaſt; anno 1704, it was 6 D. 10 m. E. this is 2 D. in twenty-one years; in the ſame interval of time, it increaſed at Paris 5 D. 30 M. The farther from the lines of no-variation, the variations ſeem to increaſe or decreaſe the faſter.

4. Capt. Hoxton from Maryland, relates a ſtrange phænomenon of his magnetic needles or compaſſes; anno 1725, Sept. 2, a little after noon, fair weather, ſmall ſea, in N. Lat. 41 D. 10 M. 28 D. E. long. from cape Henry of Virginia, all his compaſſes (an azimuth, and four or five more) carried to ſeveral parts of the ſhip continued for about one hour, traverſing very ſwiftly, ſo as he could not ſteer by them, but all of a ſudden, every one of them ſtood as well as uſual. Capt. Middleton, in his Hudſon's-Bay voyage of 1725, ſays, that his greateſt variation was 40 D. W. in N. Lat. 63 D. 50 M. 78 D. W. from London, where the compaſs would ſcarce traverſe: he ſays, a great cold or froſt hinders the needle from traverſing; where near a great body of ice, there were great complaints of the compaſs not traverſing: he ſuſpected, that the age of the moon had ſome influence upon the variation.

5. The three lines of no-variation ſeem to be of different natures; that line in the Atlantic and Ethiopic ocean gives eaſterly variations weſt of its line, and weſterly variations eaſt of its line; that line in the Indian ocean reverſly. gives weſterly variations weſt of its line, and eaſterly variations eaſt of its line; that in the pacific ocean or ſouth-ſea, unexpectedly gives eaſterly variations both ſides: Dr. Halley and others, before this third line was diſcovered, ſeem to have laid it down as a law in nature, that where an eaſterly variation terminated, a weſterly variation muſt begin; and where a weſterly variation terminated an eaſterly variation was to begin, but further obſervations evince this to be no ſtated law.

There is a magnetic influence all over the ſurface of our globe or earth: the magnetic needle in ſome places has

has a true meridian direction; in others the magnetic meridian has a deflection more or leſs in different places, eaſt or weſt: the points or places of no-variation, and of the ſeveral quantities of variation, when connected, form curves, but ſo irregular as not reducible to any equation, and of no permanent figure, and not eaſily to be claſſed: we ſhall only obſerve that,

There are at preſent three lines of no-variation. 1. Between Europe with Africa, and America in the Atlantic and Ethiopic ocean; the variations eaſt and north of this line are weſterly, and the farther diſtant from this line the greater, and their increaſe or decreaſe the ſwifter; this is a general principle in variations: Halley ſays, that in the beginning of this century, all over Europe the variations were weſterly, and upon the increaſe; but at preſent, theſe weſt variations in the eaſtern parts of Europe ſeem to be ſtationary (at Nuremberg in Germany the W. variation was ſtationary at 11 D. from 1700 to 1708) upon the decreaſe; for inſtance at Torneo in N. Lat. 65 D. 50 M. 23 D. E. from London, M. Bilberg, anno 1695, found the variation 7 D. W; anno 1736, the French academicians found it 5 D. 5 M. W. therefore upon the decreaſe, and perhaps belonging to the ſyſtem or claſs of the Indian ocean line of no-variation (the line is not aſcertained where the increaſe ends, and the decreaſe begins) as in the northern parts of Aſia they belong to this claſs of Indian ocean variations; for inſtance, at Aſtracan near the Caſpian ſea, N. Lat. 46 D. 15 M. and 45 D. E. Long. wide the eaſt variations decreaſed at London, there the weſt variations increaſed even to 24 D; and as the weſt variation increaſed in London, it diminiſhed at Aſtracan. Our North America variations belong to this firſt line of no-variations, and are weſterly N. and E. of this line, and eaſterly S. and W. of it: theſe E. variations along the coaſt of South-America increaſe very ſlow; at La Vera Cruz, in N. Lat. 19. D. 12 M. anno 1727, it was only 2 D. 15. M. E; at Pariba in Brazil beginning of this century S. Lat. 6 D.

6 D. 38 M. it was 5 D. 35 M. E; at Buenos Ayres S. Lat. 34 D. 50 M. it was anno 1708, 15 D. 32 M. E; at Cape-Horn 20 D; ſouth of Cape-Horn in S. Lat. 56 D. 42 M. it was 17 D. E. being upon the decreaſe; and ſtretching along the Pacific ocean weſtward or northward theſe eaſt variations decreaſed.

This line of no-variation moves the quickeſt; anno 1600, it paſſed Cape Agulhas (about 2 D. E. of the Cape of Good-Hope) the Morea, and north Cape of Europe; at this Cape Agulhas the variations afterwards became weſt, *viz.* anno 1622, 2 D; anno 1675, 8 D; anno 1691, 11 D; anno 1732, 17 D; at St. Helena the variations were anno 1600, 8 D. E; anno 1623, 6 D. E; anno 1677, Halley found 40 M. E, anno 1690, 1 D. W; anno 1700, Halley found 2 D. W; anno 1732, 8 D. W; Halley, anno 1700, aſcertains this line of no-variation from four obſervations N. Lat. 31 D. W. Long. 64 D. N. 2 D, Long. 18 D. W; S. Lat. 17 D, Long. 10 D. W; S. Lat. 37 D. Long, 4 D. W. This line of no-variation ſeems to move quick to the weſtward, in S. lat. 35 D. from anno 1700 to 1709, it moved 50 leagues weſtward. A French ſhip, anno 1706 (being the firſt that made this traverſe) from Rio de Gallegias upon the eaſt coaſt of Americain S. lat. 51 D. 68. D. W. long. from Paris, variation 23 D. E. made 1350 leagues to the Cape of Good-Hope in 34 D. 15 M. S. lat 17 D. 45 M. E. long. from Paris, found the variation lines tending towards the S. pole, to become nearly parallel, and in ſome places alter only one degree for two degrees of longitude.

The ſecond line of no-variation, in the Indian ocean, anno 1600, paſſed through the Moluccas or Spice-iſlands, and a little eaſt of Canton in China; in a century following, that is, anno 1700, it had not advanced eaſtward above 100 leagues; the W. point of Java (and in the influence of this line) anno 1676, was 3 D. 10 M. weſt variation; anno 1732, it was only 3 D. 20 M. but the farther weſt theſe variations increaſed, the quicker to the common axis of the variation parabolic curves, and then

then began to decreaſe and terminate in the firſt line of no-variation. The common axis of the inſcribed parabolic curves, anno 1700, paſſed through Madagaſcar, and the ſtraits of Babelmandel, about 50 D. E. long. from London, where the increaſing W. variations terminate, and the ſame W. variations begin to decreaſe; Halley places the higheſt of theſe weſt variations 27 D. S. lat. about 530 leagues eaſt of the Cape of Good-Hope.

The third line of no-variation was found by Captain Rogers, in the Pacific ocean in N. lat. 14 D. W. long. from London 125 D. and in N. lat. 13 D. W. long. 193 D. was 12 D. E. (and afterwards decreaſing to the ſecond line) the largeſt of theſe eaſt variations which reign all over the Pacific ocean; French navigators, ſince anno 1710, have traverſed this ocean ſouthward of the equinoctical line, as Capt. Rogers did northward of it, and found the no-variation line nearly upon the above-ſaid meridian, and the other variation lines nearly parallel with the meridians. Sir John Narborough, Dr. Halley, and Capt. Rogers, were miſtaken in their conjecture, that ſouth of the equinoctical in the middle parts of this ocean there muſt be a tract of weſtern variations.

This third no-variation line ſeems to be a continuation of the firſt inflected weſtward into a circular arch whoſe vertex at preſent ſeems to be in about 34 D. N. lat. and 80 D. W. long. from London.

All variations within this curve made by the firſt and third line, being a ſpace of 140 D. upon the equinoctical, are eaſterly; all without it, on its eaſt ſide, being a ſpace of 115 D. to the ſecond line are weſterly; all without it, on its weſt ſide are eaſterly, being a ſpace of 105 D. to the ſaid ſecond line. It is obſervable, that all variation lines, the nearer they approach to the poles of our earth, the more they converge towards a parallelism with the meridians, as if to terminate in the poles. The ſeveral variation lines ſeem to receive their flexures from the influence of their eaſterly and weſterly no variation lines, ſo as to form parabolic curves, or circular arches.

The

The alterations in the variations are not from any uniform circulatory or libratory power; but as theſe magnetic powers ſeem to be accumulated and act connectedly, it muſt be by ſome kind of fluctuation. In oppoſition to this, it may be ſaid, that the fluctuation of any denſe or ſpecifically heavier conſiderable part of the earth would alter the equilibrium and diurnal rotation of the earth, and make ſtrange changes in the fluid ſurface of the earth by inundations and ebbs.

This digreſſion is too abſtruſe and philoſophical for moſt readers: the deſign of it is, to incite the curious, to attend the uſeful ſpeculation of variations, more than heretofore.

As the variations of the magnetic needle or compaſs have not been much attended to in the colonies, I cannot pretend to be particular in that affair, and ſhall only relate ſome looſe hints that are come to my knowledge. The line of no-variation (which for diſtinction I call the firſt) from the eaſtward, enters the continent of North-America, in Carolina about 33 D. N. lat. at this writing anno 1748; and by a flattiſh flexure croſſes the continent of North-America, and in the Pacific ocean converges ſouthward, and forms what is now called the third line of no-variation. Capt. Rogers, anno 1708, in 14 D. N. lat. 125 D. W. long. from London fell in with this line of no-variation.

To the northward and eaſtward of this N° 1. no-variation line upon the eaſtern coaſt of North-America, the variations are weſt; and the farther north the greater, but all upon the decreaſe; and the farther north, the quicker is the decreaſe.

The greateſt variation known was anno 1616; in N. lat. 78 D. at Sir Thomas Smith's ſound in Baffin's-Bay, the variation was 57 D. weſt.

Capt. Middleton publiſhes, that at the mouth of Churchill-river (N. lat. 59 D. weſt long. from London 24 D. 50 M. from an immerſion of Jupiter's firſt Satellite) anno 1725, the variation was 21 D. W.; anno

1738

1738, it was 18 D. W.; anno 1742, it was 17 D. W. decreaſing very faſt.

At Quebec in Canada, anno 1649, the variation was 16 D. W.; anno 1686, it was 15 D. 30 M. is half a degree in thirty-ſeven years; but after this, according to M. Deliſle, it varied 1 D. in eleven years.

In New-England Mr. Brattle obſerved at Boſton, anno 1708, the variation 9 D. weſt; anno 1741, upon a commiſſion for ſettling lines between Maſſachuſetts-Bay province, and the colony of Rhode-iſland, a little to the ſouthward, the commiſſioners found the variation 7 D. 30 M. weſt.

In New-York city (by eclipſes of Jupiter's firſt Satellite, governor Burnet found it 74 D. 57 M. W. of London, being in N. lat. 40 D. 40 M.) Mr. Wells, ſurveyor-geveral of the province-lands, anno 1686, found the variation 8 D. 45 M. weſt; governor Burnet, anno 1723, found it 7 D. 20 M. weſt.

In New-Jerſeys, anno 1743, the line, between the proprietors of Eaſt and Weſt-Jerſeys, was run 150 miles, twenty chains, 9 D. 19 M. weſt; but becauſe of the difference of variation, which muſt be ſuppoſed at the ſouth and north terminations of this line, it was alledged that it muſt not be a direct line; and upon examination it was found that this line was in all reſpects erroneous: at the ſouth point near Egg-Harbour the variation was only 5 D. 25 M. weſt, and at the north point on Delaware-river in 41 D. 40 M. it was 6 D. 35 M. weſt; this was to the prejudice of the Eaſt-Jerſey proprietors.

The ſtreets of Philadelphia, anno 1682, were laid out with great preciſeneſs N. 18 D. E.; anno 1742, they were found to be 15 D. eaſt; this is 3 D. in ſixty years.

In the parallel of 39 D. running the line between Penſylvania and Maryland, anno 1686, the variation was found to be 9 D. weſterly; anno 1739, in running this eaſt and weſt line, it was found 5 D. 30 M. W. difference is 3 D. 30 M. in fifty-three years.

In

In Virginia, Cape-Henry in 37 D. N. lat. 75 D. weſt from London, anno 1732, the variation was 4 D. 40 M.

In the Carolinas, navigators upon the coaſt give no allowance for variation, becauſe near the line of no-variation; inland, in running a diviſional line between the two governments or juriſdictions of South and North-Carolina, and in laying off Carteret's eighth part of the property of Carolina, no account was made of variation.

From the line of no-variation in N. lat. 33 D. ſouthward, the eaſt variation takes place, increaſing very ſlow; becauſe at La Vera Cruz, N. lat. 19 D. 12 M. W. long. 97 D. 30 M. anno 1727, the variation was only 2 D. 15 M. eaſt.

Here ends the firſt or general part of the Summary concerning the Britiſh colonies in America, with ſome interſperſed hints relating to the colonies of the other European nations. In the following part we ſhall give particular accounts of our ſeveral colonies, in order, as they are enumerated page 15 and 16.

The End of the FIRST PART.

PART II.

SECT. V.

Concerning the Hudſon's-Bay *company, their territories and trade.*

THE adventurers who endeavoured a N.W. paſſage to China, the Spice-iſlands, and the Eaſt-Indies, and in ſearch for copper-mines, gave occaſion to the diſcovery of Hudſon's-Bay, and its ſubſequent fur and ſkin trade.

The [*a*] Cabots, anno 1496, obtained from Henry VII of England, a grant of all lands they ſhould diſcover and ſettle weſtward of Europe. In queſt of a N. W. paſſage, they coaſted the eaſtern ſhore of North-America, and took a general poſſeſſion for the crown of England, but made no ſettlement; the firſt land they made was Weſt-Greenland, in N. lat. 66 D.

From [*b*] that time this navigation, and theſe diſcoveries, were entirely neglected, until 1576, 1577, and 1578. Sir Martin Frobiſher made three voyages to a ſtrait which retains his name, but he made no diſcoveries.

Sir Humphry Gilbert, by direction of ſecretary Walſingham, coaſted the north-eaſterly ſhore of America; particularly he took poſſeſſion of Newfoundland, and St. Laurence or Canada river, for the crown of England, and began ſome fiſhing-trade there, anno 1583.

[*a*] Short repetitions or recapitulations, are ſometimes uſed to render the matter more diſtinct and fluent.

[*b*] See pag. 110.

Capt. John Davis from Dartmouth, made three voyages this way, anno 1583, 1586, and 1587, but made no diſcoveries: that branch of the opening (the opening at Cape Farewell, in 60 D. N. lat. a little farther, at Cape Deſolation, branches into two openings) which reaches north-weſtward, retains the name of Davis's-ſtraits, and is the whaling-ground of Weſt-Greenland, where the [*c*] Engliſh, Dutch, Biſcayers, Hamburghers, Bremers, and Danes kill large whales of 500 to 600 barrels of oil, and eighteen feet of bone: this whaling continues for about ſeven or eight weeks.

Henry Hudſon, after two N. E. ſucceſsleſs trials, and one in vain north-weſtward navigation, eſſayed the other opening abovementioned, and ſailing weſtward and ſouthward, diſcovered the ſtraits and bay called by his name. Anno 1611, proceeding upon further diſcoveries, he was never more heard of. In his time he was as much an enthuſiaſt for a N. W. paſſage, as Mr. D—bs [*d*] is at preſent, as appears by the preſent paper-war between D—bs and Middleton.

[*c*] Anno 1732, the South-ſea company had fourteen ſhips in Eaſt-Greenland, and ſeven ſhips in Weſt-Greenland, or Davis's-ſtraits, and got twenty-four and a half whales: this fiſhery did not anſwer the charges of fitting out, and it is dropped, notwithſtanding the encouragement given by act of parliament anno 1724, that any of his majeſty's ſubjects may import whale fins, oil and blubber of whales, taken and caught in Greenland-ſeas in Britiſh ſhips, navigated according to law, without paying any cuſtom, ſubſidy, or other duties for the ſame.

[*d*] Mr. D—bs of Ireland was the projector of Middleton's N. W. diſcovery voyage: becauſe it did not ſucceed, he charges Middleton with neglect, miſconduct, and ſuſpicion of corruption; he ſays, Middleton was bribed by the company not to make any diſcovery, or to conceal, or to falſify a N. W. diſcovery; Middleton told Mr. D—bs, by letter Jan. 21, anno 1737, the company judged it their intereſt rather to prevent than to forward a N. W. diſcovery in that part of the world; and that they offered him 5000 *l.* to act and report in their favour. Some of Middleton's officers made affidavits concerning his bad conduct; upon the deſign of the admiralty's fitting out captain Middleton for the N. W. diſcovery, the governor and council of the Hudſon's-Bay company, wrote to the governor at Prince of Wales's Fort upon Churchill-river, to refuſe them refreſhment; but afterwards,

Sir

Sir Thomas Button, fitted out by prince Henry anno 1612, paſſed Hudſon's-ſtraits, and ſailing weſtward, diſ-

upon further conſideration, they revoked this order, and allowed the governor to ſupply captain Middleton if in diſtreſs. Notwithſtanding this diſappointment, Mr. D—bs procured an act of parliament for 20,000*l.* public reward for a diſcovery, and accordingly the Dobbs Galley and California ſailed from England in May, 1746.

Mr. D—bs runs much into the novel; he ſeems to be a wild projector, and notoriouſly credulous: he gives particular accounts of large countries and iſlands in the Pacific Ocean, eſpecially from S. lat. 9 D. to N. lat. 15 D. very rich and populous, abounding in nutmegs, mace, ginger, pepper, cinnamon, ſilk, and ebony; the natives with reddiſh complexions, grey eyes, high noſes, beards and hair curled. In the N. W. parts of America were veſſels or ſhips with prows (heads or lions we call them) of gold and ſilver: W. S. W. the Indians come to a ſea, where were great veſſels, and men with caps and beards gathering of gold. About a century ſince, anno 1640, Bartholomew de Foutes, vice-roy of Mexico and Peru, hearing that the Engliſh were endeavouring a N. W. paſſage, ſailed to the river of Los Reys in 53 D. N. lat. upon the weſt ſide of America, and detached capt. Bernardi, who ſailed to 77 D N. lat. (here he found it as warm as 10 D. leſs N. lat. upon the eaſt ſide of the American continent) upon this coaſt he met with capt. Shapley from New-England (this is an unaccountable ſtretch to prove a north-weſt paſſage;) there is no record nor tradition of this in New-England in my knowledge. Mr. D—bs is as particular in giving accounts of diſtant not frequented countries, as if he were deſcribing Great-Britain or France; and propoſes that Great-Britain ſhall ſettle an extent of countries, more than all Europe could effect.

Mr. D—bs, from the ſtories of the French fathers, and of the Coureurs des Bois, relates ſtrange things. From lieutenant Jerome (doubtleſs a native of Gaſcony) he relates, that in the diſtrict of Hudſon's-Bay, are to be ſeen 10,000 rein-deer in a herd, and large mines of virgin-copper.

The French were, at this rate, moſt egregious fools to give up ſo eaſily, by the treaty of Utrecht anno 1713, two ſuch valuable articles of deer-ſkins and copper. Northward is a ſtrait with floating ice, probably a paſſage to the weſtern-ocean or South-ſeas, the north wind raiſing the tide ten feet above the ordinary tides. At the peace of Utrecht, in Quebec were from 4000 to 5000 troops in garriſon. On the weſt main are the copper-mines, on the eaſt main are the lead-mines. He gives large liſts of names of imaginary tribes of Indians, their lakes and rivers; whereas the ſeveral iſlands, head-lands, bays, rivers, &c. do not retain their Indian names, as in ſome of our colonies, but are called by the names of the ſeveral adventurers or diſcoverers. Mr. D—bs names and deſcribes all theſe things minutely, and with the ſame eaſe as if they were the beſt known, moſt polite, and well regulated countries upon earth.

covered a large continent, and called it New-Wales; its ſea and bay retain the diſcoverer's name; he could not proceed farther than 65 D. N. lat. and called it N. Ultra; he wintered miſerably upon that weſt continent at Port Nelſon in 57 D. N. lat.

Capt. Thomas James, from Briſtol anno 1631, made further diſcoveries in Hudſon's-Bay; he wintered near the bottom of the bay at Charleton-iſland in N. lat. 52 D. and publiſhed a good journal of his voyage.

Anno 1616, Mr. Baffin, by the north-weſterly opening called Davis's-ſtraits, carried the north-weſt affairs ſo high as N. lat. 80 D. to no purpoſe, and gave his name to the ſea or bay in that high latitude.

Capt. Fox, anno 1632, ſailed into Hudſon's-Bay upon the diſcovery, where he ſaw many whales the end of July; he proceeded no farther than Port Nelſon in N. lat. 57 D.; he wintered there; tide fourteen feet.

The beginning of the laſt century, the Danes went upon the north-weſt diſcovery, and took poſſeſſion of the north-eaſterly ſhore of Davis's-ſtraits, and called it New-Denemark, and made a miſerable ſettlement in N. lat. 64 D. From that time they have aſſumed the ſovereignty of the ſeas in Davis's-ſtraits, and keep a royal frigate ſtationed there during the whaling-ſeaſon, which does not continue above ſeven or eight weeks.

The civil wars in England prevented any further attempts of ſuch diſcoveries for ſome time, until Prince Rupert and company, anno 1667, fitted out capt. Guilam; he landed at Rupert-river in N. lat. 51 D. upon the eaſt continent of Hudſon's-Bay, built Charles's Fort, traded with the Indians to good advantage, and laid a foundation for the companies fur and deer-ſkin trade.

A royal charter was granted May 2, anno 1669, to a governor and company of adventurers of England trading into Hudſon's-Bay, whereof here follows an abſtract: *To prince* Rupert *count* Palatine *of the* Rhine, *to* George *duke of* Albemarle, *to* William *earl of* Craven, *and to fifteen others, and to others whom they ſhall admit into the ſaid*

ſaid body corporate, power to make a common ſeal, and to alter it; to chuſe annually ſome time in November, a governor, a deputy-governor, and a committee of ſeven; any three of the committee, with the governor or deputy-governor, to be a court of directors: freemen to be admitted (their factors and ſervants may be admitted freemen) at a general court; a power to diſmiſs the governor, deputy-governor, or any of the committee, before the year expires; and upon their diſmiſſion, or death, to elect others in their room for the remainder of the year: to have the ſole property of lands, trade, royal-fiſhery, and mines within Hudſon's-ſtraits, *not actually poſſeſſed by any Chriſtian prince: to be reputed as one of our colonies in* America, *to be called* [e] Rupert's *land: to hold the ſame in free and common ſoccage: to pay the ſkins of two elks, and two black beavers, as often as the king or queen ſhall come into thoſe lands: power to aſſemble the company, and to make laws for their government and other affairs, not repugnant to the laws of* England: *an excluſive trade, without leave obtained of the company, penalty forfeiture of goods and ſhipping, one half to the king, one half to the company. In their general meetings for every* 100*l. original ſtock to have one vote; may appoint governors, factors, and other officers, in any of their ports; the governor and his council to judge in all matters civil and criminal, and execute juſtice accordingly: where there is no governor and council, may ſend them to any place where there is a governor and council, or to* England, *for juſtice: liberty to ſend ſhips of war, men, and ammunition for their protection, erect forts,* &c. *to make peace or war with any people who are not Chriſtian; may appeal to the king in council.*

Anno 1670, Mr. Baily, with twenty men, was ſent over by the company to Rupert-river. Port Nelſon was the next ſettlement, anno 1673; and Mr. Bridge was ſent over governor of the weſt main from Cape Henrietta-Maria. Anno 1683, the factory was removed from Rupert-river to Mooſe-river: Rupert-river is not uſed, becauſe expoſed to the depredations of the French; from Tadouſac thirty leagues below Quebec upon Canada-

[e] This name has never been uſed; it is called Hudſon's-Bay colony.

river, there is water-carriage to lake Miſtaſin, which communicates with Rupert-river. The trade at the mouth of all the rivers which fall into Hudſon's-Bay is ſecured to Great-Britain by the treaty of Utrecht; but the heads of the ſouthern rivers are within the French bounds, and the French have trading-houſes which very much intercept and leſſen our Indian trade: the company do not much uſe the eaſt and ſouth parts of the bay, becauſe of the bad neighbourhood of the French.

In the ſummer anno 1686, in time of peace, the French from Canada became maſters of all our Hudſon's-Bay factories, port Nelſon excepted. Anno 1693, the Engliſh recovered their factories, but the French got poſſeſſion of them again ſoon after. Anno 1696, two Engliſh men of war retook them. In Queen Anne's war, the French from Canada were again maſters of theſe factories; but by the peace of Utrecht, anno 1713, the French quitclaimed them to the Engliſh ſo far ſouth as 49 D. N. lat. Hitherto we have not heard of any attempt made upon them by the Canadians in this French war which commenced in the ſpring 1744.

Mr. Dobbs reckons that this country, called Hudſon's-Bay, may be eſteemed from 51 D. to 65 D. N. lat. and from 78 D. to 95 D. W. long. from London; the true definition of it is, from the treaty of Utrecht 1713; *viz.* from a certain promontory on the Atlantic ocean N. lat. 58 D. 30 M. runs S. W. to lake Miſtaſin (this includes the weſtern half of *Terra de Labradore*) thence S. W. to N. lat. 49 D. and from this termination due weſt indefinitely; the northern boundary may be reckoned Davis's-ſtraits, becauſe of the Daniſh claim, and otherways north indefinitely.

The entrance of Hudſon's-ſtraits at Reſolution-iſland is about fifteen leagues wide; tide flows four fathom; winds N. W. about nine months in the year; not free of ice above two months in the year; ſails and rigging freeze in July; it is 140 leagues in length to the bay: at the bottom of the bay only four feet tide. Capt. Middleton,

in

in twenty-three voyages, never could arrive at the factories, above five or six times, before the 10th of Auguſt; and it is a ſtanding order not to attempt coming back the ſame year, unleſs they can ſail from the factories by Sept. 10; it is generally pleaſant weather: Middleton, in all his voyages, never ſuffered ſhipwreck; Auguſt is the proper month for the navigation of Hudſon's-Bay and ſtraits; always good ſoundings.

This grant is divided into the weſt main or continent formerly in charts called New-North and South-Wales, and the eaſt main called *Terra de Labradore* or New-Britain: the French claimed the bottom of the bay as belonging to New-France or Canada, but they diſclaimed it by the treaty of Utrecht.

Becauſe of the unhoſpitableneſs of the country, no towns or plantations can ever be ſettled there; it muſt for ever remain a number of ſcattered diſmal lodges or factories. Hudſon's-Bay and Georgia are improperly called colonies; they have no houſe of repreſentatives: the Hudſon's-Bay company in London make their laws and regulations, as the truſtees for Georgia in London do for the ſettlers in Georgia.

Hudſon's-Bay colony, as it is called, conſiſts of ſeveral lodges at the mouths of ſeveral rivers for trade with the Indians, *viz.* on the weſt continent are Churchill-river, Nelſon's-river, Severn-river, Albany-river, and Mooſe-river; on the eaſt continent are Rupert-river and Slude-river.

Churchill-river (Prince of Wales' fort) is the moſt northerly, being in about 59 D. N. lat. and 94 D. 50 M. W. long. from London, the moſt weſterly part of Hudſon's-Bay; here Capt. Middleton, anno 1742, upon a N. W. diſcovery wintered miſerably. At the mouth of this river, the tide comes from N. b. E. two knots; they return about 20,000 beaver-ſkins *per an.* the company keeps here about twenty-eight men: it is navigable 150 leagues.

Nelſon's-river (Fort York) called by the French Bourbon river; its port lies in N. lat. 57 D; it is the fineſt

and largeſt river in the bay; it communicates with great lakes, and branches of rivers of Indian trade: tide fourteen feet; the company have here twenty-five men.

New-Severn-river, the French called it St. Huiles, in N. lat. 55 D; it is at preſent ſlighted or neglected, a barred river.

Albany-river in N. lat. 52 D. W. long. 85 D. 20 M. four feet tide: from the middle of May to the middle of September fine warm weather; anno 1731, 118 canoes came there to trade; the company keep here twenty-five men.

Mooſe-river in N. lat. 51 D. four feet tide; it is a much larger and finer river than Albany-river; the company have here twenty-five men.

Prince Rupert-river on the eaſt ſide of the bay, N. lat. 51 D. is at preſent neglected.

Slude-river on the eaſt ſide of the bay, in N. lat. 52 D. here are eight or nine men kept by the company.

The company's profits are very great, and engroſſed by a few; their ſtock has been ſold at 300 for 100 original; they may export annually about 3000 *l.* ſterling value, and their half-yearly ſales are about 25,000 *l.* ſterling; eight or nine merchants have engroſſed about nine tenths of the ſtock; the charge of the company is about 120 ſervants, two or three annual ſhips, having in time of war about 120 men aboard. They import deer-ſkins, caſtoreum or beaver-ſtone, feathers, whale-bone, and blubber; but beaver-ſkin is two thirds of the whole, and is the ſtandard of their truck or currency.

Mr. Dobbs thinks it would be a public national benefit, that the Hudſon's-Bay company's charter were vacated, and the trade laid open: thus we ſhall underſell the French, and carry on a greater trade with the Indians (the company keep the price of goods too high) and we ſhould have trading-houſes up the river; the company have no ſuch trading-houſes; the company, by their charter, are obliged to endeavour a N. W. paſſage, which, on the contrary, they diſcourage.

As

As this is a country of excluſive trade and navigation we are too much confined to the accounts of their own navigators. As a ſpecimen, we ſhall take a medium voyage of Capt. Middleton's anno 1735. He ſet out from London May 21, June 12, made Cape Farewell in N. lat. about 59 D. W. long. 45 D. 50 M. var. 29 D. W. July 1, in N. lat. 61 D. W. long. 70 D. 10 M. var. 41 D. W. he was faſt in thick ice with fogs and rain; Auguſt 3, he arrived in Mooſe river, N. lat. 51 D. W. long. 83 D. var. 22 D. W. he ſailed from thence Sept. 1, makes no mention of ice in his return; arrived in England Oct. 7. As for the climate, Middleton, in the journal of his N. W. diſcovery-voyage anno 1741 and 1742, ſays, he arrived in Churchill river Auguſt 10; firſt ſnow was Sept. 1, geeſe flying to the ſouthward; Sept. 27, thermometer as low as in London, time of the great froſt; Oct. 21, ink and water froze by the bed-ſide; beginning of November, a bottle of ſpirits full proof froze in the open air: after Nov. 11, no going abroad without being froze (*N. B.* forgetting himſelf, he frequently mentions the company's ſervants, and Indians being abroad after that time) April 2, begins to thaw in the ſun; about this time the ice at the ſhip was ten feet thick with thirteen feet ſnow over the ice. April 10, large fleaks of ſnow (in the preceding months the falling ſnow was as fine as duſt) a ſign of the winter's being ſpent; April 22, a ſhower of rain (no rain for ſeven months proceding) beginning of May, geeſe begin to appear; May 13, got the ſhip into the ſtream, and July 1, we ſailed upon the N. W. diſcovery; he proceeded no farther north than 66 D. 44 M. becauſe the beginning of Auguſt from a high mountain we perceived to the S. E. at about twenty leagues diſtance, a ſtrait covered with an impenetrable ſolid body of ice, and therefore no communication with the eaſtern ſea; and the tide of flood coming from thence, we had no hopes of paſſing that way into the weſtern or Pacific ocean; and Auguſt 8, we bore away to the ſouthward.

In the northern factories, the great thaws begin the end of April; the waters inland are froze up from the beginning of October to the beginning of May. In North-America we judge of the inclemencies of their ſeveral climates, by the times of the flights of their paſſage-birds: in theſe factories wild geeſe and ſwans fly ſouthward beginning of October, and return northward the end of April, and beginning of May. Seldom a night in winter without an *aurora borealis*. Some deer twelve to thirteen hands high; here are white bears, ſwans, ducks of ſeveral kinds, and other water-foul; in their meadows, inſtead of *cerealia* and *gramina*, that is, bread corn, and graſſes, they have only moſs, ſome ſcurvy-graſs, and ſorrel. Hares, rabits, foxes, partridges, beginning of October, from their native colour, become ſnow-white, and continue ſo for ſix months, till the ſeaſon produces a new coat: wind blows from the N. W. about nine months in the year; they have nine months ice and ſnow; the cold fogs and miſts damp the pleaſure of their ſhort ſummers.

I formerly hinted the vaſt advantage that the European weſtern north latitudes had of the American eaſtern north latitudes; by way of amuſement, I continue further to obſerve, that in 50 D. (for inſtance) N. lat. in the N. eaſterly parts of America, it is as cold as in 60 D. or upwards N. lat. in the N. weſterly parts of Europe; the ocean and its mellow vapour being to the windward of Europe; but a rude rigorous, chilly, frozen, and ſnowy continent is to the windward of the other. I vouch this by a few inſtances. 1. From Churchill-river fort there was no going abroad without being frozen in winter; from Torneo in Lapland, anno 1736, nearly under the polar circle, to inveſtigate the length of a degree of latitude there, the French academiciens in the ſeverity of the winter, were ſixty-three days in the deſert, procuring a complete ſet of triangles. 2. The bottom of Hudſon's-Bay is ſcarce habitable in winter, though ſcarce ſo far north as London; a moſt agreeable *cælum* or air. 3. In the Orkneys

Orkneys (where the Hudſon's-Bay ſhips call in to hire men and boys at 5 to 20 *l.* ſterling *per annum*, according to the years of their indented continuance; they are called N. W. men) there is good wintering; barley, peaſe, and oats, cabbages, other pot-herbs, and uſual roots, grow kindly; not much ſnow and ice; Orkneys is a little north of Churchill-river.

Capt. Middleton [*f*], in his too minute journals of his many voyages from England to Hudſon's-Bay, obſerved, that in Hudſon's-Bay, in the ſame longitudes from London, in ſailing north, the variations increaſe faſter than in any known part of the earth; for inſtance, in one of his voyages he obſerved, that in about 84 D. W. long. from London, the variations increaſe thus:

In N. lat. 50 D.	variation was 19 D. W.
55	25
61	30
62	40

Capt. Scrogs, anno 1722 (who had Mr. Norton late governor of Churchill fort aboard, with two northern Indians to diſcover the much enquired after copper-mines) traded with the Indians for whale-bone, at Whale-bone point in N. lat. 65 D. Here the tide flowed five fathom.

A digreſſion giving ſome further accounts of late endeavours towards a north-weſt paſſage to China.

A PASSAGE by the north-weſtward or Davis's-ſtraits ſeems to be given up or relinquiſhed by all European adventurers; but the paſſage by the ſoutherly branch, or Hudſon's-Bay, is ſtill in proſecution. The Britiſh parliament lately enacted a reward of 20,000*l.* ſterling, to the diſcoverer, if from Hudſon's-Bay. Upon this encouragement, the Dobbs-galley and California, as a private adventure, ſailed from England May 1746; in our know-

[*f*] Theſe are not deſigned as ſtrict ſtiffly connected hiſtorical accounts, but as looſe occaſional obſervations, in ſome manner reduced under general heads; therefore although we have already made a digreſſion concerning variations, this may be admitted.

ledge,

ledge, they are not as yet returned to England. Their original propoſal was to ſail eaſtward to the Eaſt-Indies and China (but there is no act of parliament to indemnify them, in a treſpaſs upon the excluſive navigation granted to the Eaſt-India company in theſe ſeas, by charter and act of parliament) and from the eaſtward to ſail to the northward of California, and from thence to endeavour an eaſterly paſſage to Davis's-ſtraits or Hudſon's-Bay.

The laſt tentative for a N. W. paſſage was by Capt. Middleton from Hudſon's-Bay, anno 1741 and 1742, according to order and inſtructions from the lords of the admiralty May 20, anno 1741: there was no occaſion for his wintering in Hudſon's-Bay, before he ſet out upon the diſcovery; he ſhould have ſailed from England, ſo as to arrive in Hudſon's-Bay in the middle of July; puſh the diſcovery, in the month of Auguſt, and return in September.

A ſhort abſtract of his diſcovery-journal is, we ſailed from Churchill-river July 1, in N. lat. 65 D. 10 M. E. long. from Churchill-river 9 D. we doubled a head-land, and called it Cape Dobbs; and the following opening, we called Wager-river; tide five or ſix knots from the eaſt, and full of ice; Eſkimaux Indians came aboard, but had no trade: proceeding farther north, we doubled another head-land, and called it Cape-Hope; and ſailing farther to N. lat. 67 D. E. from Churchill fort 12 D. 20 M. from the mountains we ſaw a narrow dangerous ſtrait frozen over, and no probability of its being clear this year, deep water, no anchorage; being afraid of freezing up, we returned to N. lat. 64 D. here were many whale-bone whales; we examined all along to N. lat. 62 D. tide from the eaſtward: Auguſt 15, we bore away for England; and Sept. 15, we arrived at Kerſton in the Orkneys.

I ſhall by way of amuſement mention the arguments uſed on both ſides of the queſtion, in favour of, and in prejudice againſt, a N. W. paſſage to China.

In favour of a N. W. paſſage. 1. The whales found in plenty on the weſt ſide of Hudſon's Bay; as there is

no

no mention of whales in Hudſon's-ſtraits, they do not come that way; they cannot come from Davis's-ſtraits by the frozen ſtraits of Middleton, becauſe of a wide and large field of ice; whales cannot paſs under a large tract of ice, they cannot live without blowing at times in the open air; therefore theſe whales muſt come from the weſtern or Pacific ocean, by ſome ſtraits or thorough-fare in Hudſon's-Bay: it is more probable that the great whales in Davis's-ſtraits, when the ſea there begins to be froze up, paſs into the ocean, or deeper water, becauſe warmer: thus the cod-fiſh upon the coaſt of New-England in very cold winters retire into deep water. Mr. Dobbs affirms, that Middleton ſaw no whales near Cape Hope, or the frozen ſtraits; he judges the frozen ſtraits to be only a chimæra; therefore the whales in Button's-Bay muſt come from the weſtward. 2. Wager-river, where was Middleton's principal enquiry, in N. lat. 65 D 24 m. W. long. 88 D. 37 M. from ſeven miles wide at its entrance, farther up increaſed to eight leagues wide, and from fourteeen to eighty fathom water, and whales were ſeen twenty miles up the river. Dobbs conjectures that theſe whales came from the weſtern ocean, by ſome ſtrait or paſſage ſouth of Wager-river, from N. lat. 65 D. to 62 D. Here it is where the Eſkimaux Indians follow whaling, and traded with capt. Scrogs, anno 1722. 3. Middleton, from ſome undue influence, did not well inſpect the coaſt, where the greateſt probability was of a a paſſage; deſignedly he kept too great an offing, and deſcryed pretended land and mountains in the clouds; concluding there were no thorough-fares, he did not ſend his boats aſhore to try for inlets. Fox, anno 1632, ſailing upon this coaſt, ſaw much broken land and iſlands, and plenty of whales at the end of July. 4. Middleton's officers ſaid, that the tide was three hours ſooner at the mouth of Wager-river than at cape Frigid; therefore the tide did not come from the frozen ſtraits and Baffin's-Bay eaſtward, but from ſome ſtraits weſtward; the ſame mal-content officers aſſured Mr. Dobbs, that the higher

up

up Wager-river, the water became the ſalter, and the flood was from W. S. W. Middleton ſays the tide came from north-eaſterly.

To evince the impracticableneſs of a N. W. paſſage. 1. The French, very inquiſitive and mindful of their intereſt, ſeem to give up any proſpect of this paſſage, becauſe, by the treaty of Utrecht, they readily renounced for ever to Great-Britain the ſole and excluſive benefit of a N. W. paſſage to China from Hudſon's-Bay or Davis's-ſtraits, when diſcovered. 2. The whales on the weſt ſide of Hudſon's-Bay, by the frozen ſtraits, came from Davis's-ſtraits, where they are plenty. 3. Middleton ſays (we connot anſwer for his vouchers) that Indian travellers have gone by land from Churchill-river, as high as the arctic circle, but met with no thorough-fares; his northern Indians, which he took on board in Churchill-river, were chiefly deſigned to ſhew him the copper-mines. 4. The farther up Wager-river, the tides riſe leſs; the water from ſalt becomes brackiſh, and the higher the more freſh. 5. Middleton writes, that from his own experience, there is no thorough-fare from Churchill-river in N. lat 59 D. to N. lat. 67 D.; and farther north, if there be any ſtraits or thorough-fare, it cannot be clear of ice (if ever clear) above a week or two in the year, and therefore impracticable: from the river Wager to N. lat. 62 D. he ſtood into every bay and ſearched the coaſt narrowly. 6. As the winds there are generally from the N. W. and exceſſively cold, there muſt be a long continued or connected tract of land weſtward, covered with perpetual ſnow and ice, and therefore impracticable. Moreover, if there is any ſuch ſtrait, it is narrow and long; the adventurers would run a certain riſk of being froze up and of periſhing.

SECT.

SECT. VI.

Concerning the iſland of Newfoundland, *and its* Cod-Fiſhery.

THIS is a fiſhery of longer ſtanding, than are any of our colony or plantation ſettlements; it is no colony, it is not confined to any patent or excluſive company, but is an open general Britiſh cod-fiſhery, conſiſting of many lodges, or commodious harbours for curing of cod-fiſh, for the Spaniſh, Portugueze, and Italian markets.

Our [g] claims of diſcovery, not occupancy, run ſo high as the times of the Cabots coaſting along the eaſtern ſhore

[g] The Cod-fiſhery profitable and ſufficient to ſupply many and large markets, is peculiar to Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, and New-England: a monopoly of this fiſhery in theſe ſeas, to be called a *Mare clauſum*, would be a vaſt advantage to the trade and navigation of Great-Britain, if it could be obtained at the enſuing congreſs for a general peace amongſt the ſtates in Europe: it is true, the French and Spaniards have a conſiderable claim to ſome intereſt in the New-found-land Cod-fiſhery, becauſe the Guipuſcoans of Spain, and the Bayonners of France were contemporary, if not more early in that fiſhery than England. By the treaty of Utrecht, the Guipuſcoans, and the other ſubjects of Spain, were allowed their claimed privilege of fiſhing at the iſland of Newfoundland: by the ſame treaty the French were allowed to fiſh, and cure their fiſh on that part of Newfoundland from Cape Bonaviſta, N. lat. 49 D. 30 M. to the northermoſt part of the iſland in N. lat. 51 D. 30 M. and from thence running down by the weſtern ſide to Point-Riche in N. lat. 50 D. 30 M. by the cod-fiſh being more plenty, and by falling in nearer the ſhore, the Cod-fiſhery of the north part of the iſland ſeems to be more profitable than upon the ſouthern harbours of the iſland; by this conceſſion before the war, anno 1744, the French had the better of us in the Cod-fiſhery trade—King Charles I, bubbled by the French, gave them a liberty of fiſhing and curing fiſh in Newfoundland, upon the ſilly pretext of ſupplying an Engliſh convent in France with fiſh.

This Cod-fiſhery is not only a conſiderable addition to the trade and wealth of Great-Britain; but by the many men employed in catching and curing of the cod-fiſh, is a good nurſery for our navy and other navigation (the plantation-trade, the fiſhery of Newfoundland, the coal trade of Newcaſtle, and the watermen upon the river of Thames, are the great nurſeries or ſeminaries of our navigation) if the French could by treaty be excluded from this fiſhery, it would contract their navigation-ſeminary very much. Canada does not increaſe their na-

of

of North-America upon a N. W. diſcovery, and their taking poſſeſſion for the crown of England, from place to place; they ſettled no fiſhery there, but gave it the name, anno 1507, of Terra de Baccaleos with good propriety, that is, cod-fiſh land; the French called it, *Terre Neuve*, we retain their name, and call it Newfoundland.

Secretary Walſingham, anno 1583 (about this time all the trading nations of Europe were intenſe upon a N. W. paſſage to China, and the Eaſt-Indies) being informed of a weſterly opening north of North-Virginia (the preſent Nova Scotia) ſent out Sir Humphrey Gilbert, a gentleman of eſtate upon the diſcovery; this gentleman ſailed up the gulph, and ſome part of the river St. Laurence; and in form took poſſeſſion of Newfoundland and Canada for the crown of England; he ſettled a fiſhery at Newfoundland, but being caſt away upon his return to England, the fiſhery was ſoon relinquiſhed; but proſecuted by the French, Spaniards, and Portugueze.

Anno 1608, this fiſhery was again undertaken by John Guay of Briſtol merchant; ſeveral Engliſhmen, women, and children wintered there, anno 1613.

Anno 1610, king James gave to the earl of Southampton lord-keeper, and others, a grant from Bonaviſta to Cape St. Mary W. of Cape Raze; ſome families were ſent over; it did not anſwer, they returned to England.

Anno 1620, or 1623, Sir George Calvert, principal ſecretary of ſtate, afterwards lord Baltimore, obtained a patent for ſome part of Newfoundland, from the bay of Bulls to Cape St. Mary's; he ſettled a fort and plantation at Fairyland; but in the time of the troubles in the civil war of England, it was diſcontinued, and was outed by Sir David Kirk. Anno 1654, having retained ſome claim until that time, lord Baltimore, a zealous Roman catholic, came abroad (as the firſt ſettlers of New-England did in their religion way) to enjoy the free exerciſe of

vigation much; their trade employs a very ſmall inconſiderable number of veſſels: their inland fur and ſkins buſineſs is managed by a few French *Coureurs des Bois*, and Indians called *Les Hommes des Bois*; therefore Canada cannot people faſt.

his

his religion in quiet: from Newfoundland he removed to Virginia; but the Virginians being as zealous for the church of England way, as he was for the church of Rome way, he became uneaſy, and went farther up the bay of Cheſepeak above the Virginian ſettlements; and afterwards obtained a moſt beneficial patent of thoſe lands now called Maryland, which the family enjoy to this day; at preſent this family is Chriſtian proteſtant.

The French made a ſettlement at Placentia in the ſouth part of the iſland where the cod-fiſh firſt ſet in yearly; this was relinquiſhed to Great-Britain by the treaty of Utrecht, anno 1713, and, by way of equivalent, the French had given to them the iſlands of Cape Breton, and all the other iſlands in the gulph of St. Laurence, and liberty to catch and cure fiſh in the northern harbours of Newfoundland: the French pretend, that they have had a conſtant fiſhery at Newfoundland ever ſince it was taken poſſeſſion of, for Francis I, king of France, by Verazano a Florentine. In Cromwell's time Sir David Kirk's family reſided ſome years in Newfoundland; he invaded Canada ſeveral times, and had a grant of lands north of St. Laurence-river, called Canada: but king Charles II, always more in the French intereſt (kings may be bought to betray their own countries intereſt) than in that of Great-Britain, quit-claimed Canada, as alſo Placentia, St. Peter's, &c. of Newfoundland in the gulph of St. Laurence, to the French.

The Engliſh have been for a long time in the uſe of this fiſhery. Anno 1545, there was an act of the Engliſh parliament, for encouragement to the Engliſh merchants trading to Newfoundland: the firſt family ſettlements with continuance ſeem to have been anno 1610. At preſent there are nine or ten ſettlements called harbours, not towns, where they cure and ſhip off their dry cod-fiſh: at this writing anno 1748, there are about 4000 people winter there; they fiſh and cure fiſh from May to October; the fiſhery is generally off the mouths of their harbours; they do not fiſh much upon the banks.

M. Bellin ſays, that from good obſervations Cape Raze, its ſouthermoſt, point lies in N. lat. 46 D. 50 M. Its northermoſt land in the ſtraits of Belle Iſle, lies in N. lat. 51 D. 30 M. its greateſt breadth (the iſland reſembles an iſoſceles triangle) or baſe is from Cape Raze to Cape Raye about eighty leagues. From the northern part of Cape Breton iſland, or St. Paul, are fifteen leagues to Cape Raze, or rather Cape Sud, the entrance of the gulph of St. Laurence: the north cape of Breton iſland lies in N. lat. 47 D. 5 M.

The great bank of Newfoundland lies from N. lat. 41 D. to 49 D. and ninety leagues from E. to W. diſtance from Cape Raze about thirty-five leagues.

As to the regulations, diſcipline, or œconomy of Newfoundland, differences amongſt the fiſhermen of the ſeveral harbours, are at firſt inſtance determined by the admirals ſo called, being the firſt ſhip maſters who arrive for the ſeaſon in the reſpective harbours. From this judgment, an appeal lies to the commodore of the king's ſtationed ſhips, who determines in equity. Felonies in Newfoundland are not triable there, but in any county of Great-Britain. Newfoundland having no legiſlative aſſembly or repreſentative of the debtors of the country, their currency is not perverted but continues at a ſterling value. At preſent the commodore of the king's ſhips ſtationed for the protection of the fiſhery of Newfoundland, is governor of Newfoundland, during his continuance there, by the title of governor and commodore in chief of Newfoundland, and of the forts and garriſons there. There are alſo lieutenant-governors of the forts of Placentia and St. John's, at 10*s.* ſterling per day. As we hinted, the maſter of the veſſel who firſt arrives in the ſeveral harbours, is called admiral of that harbour, and acts as a magiſtrate, and is called lord of the harbour.

The [*b*] annual quantity of cod-fiſh ſhipped off by Britiſh ſubjects from Newfoundland is various, from 100,000

[*b*] The eſtimates in a late pamphlet, called, *The Importance of Cape Breton conſidered*, are too much at random, and erroneous.

quintals

quintals to 300,000 quintals; generally they make double the quantity in proportion to what is made in New-England.

Capt. Smith, a man of credit, writes, anno 1623, that there fiſhed upon the coaſt of Newfoundland yearly about 250 ſail of Engliſh veſſels, at a medium of ſixty tons, and returned the value of 135,000 *l.* ſterling annually: their method of ſharing at that time, was one third to the owners, one third for victualling, and one third to the ſhip's company.

The commodore of the king's ſhips at Newfoundland, when the fiſhing ſeaſon is over, receives from each harbour a report in diſtinct columns. I ſhall inſtance the year 1701, being in time of peace, a medium year, and the accounts the moſt diſtinct.

The ſtate of Newfoundland, anno 1701.

Number of ſhips, fiſhers,	75
Sacks or purchaſers	46
Burthen of ſaid ſhips	7991 tons
Number of men belonging the ſaid ſhips	——
Number of fiſhing ſhips boats	338
Number of inhabitants boats	558
Number of by-boats	97
Quantity of fiſh made by ſhips	79,820 quint.
Quantity of fiſh made by inhabitants	136,500 quint.
Q. of train or liver oil made by ſhips	1264 hhds.
Train or liver oil made by inhabitants	2534 hhds.
Number of ſtages	544
Number of men	461
Number of women	166
Number of children	256
Number of ſervants	2698

Anno 1716, exported to Spain, Portugal, and Italy 106,952 quintals.

The fiſh ſhipped off from the ſeveral harbours: I ſhall inſtance a year of ſmall fiſhery.

Anno 1724, were ſhipped off

From the harbours	N° veſſels	Quantity of fiſh
St. Peter's and Placentia	2	3500 quint.
Trepaſſay	3	3700
Formooſe	2	3300
Renuſe	1	1200
St. John's	20	37,000
Conception-Bay	4	11,000
Trinity	5	11,200
Bona Viſta	1	4000
Fairyland	17	29,000
Bay of Bulls	4	7000
	59	111,100

Anno 1732, were ſhipped off from Newfoundland about 200,000 quintals; laſt year, being anno 1747, were exported ſomewhat more.

In Newfoundland they reckon, when well fiſhed, 200 quintals to the inhabitants boat or ſhallop, and 500 quintals to a banker.

The liberty allowed by the treaty of Utrecht to the French, for fiſhing and curing of fiſh in the northern parts of Newfoundland, abridges us of an excluſive navigation, ſuch as the French fully enjoy. By an edict anno 1727 (by virtue of the 5th and 6th articles of peace and neutrality in America, concluded Nov. 6, anno 1686) it is peremptorily declared, that all Engliſh veſſels ſailing within a league of the ſhores of any French iſland, ſhall be ſeized and confiſcated, without any other proof of trade. St. Malo and Granville are the principal French cod-fiſhery in North-America; there are ſome from St. Jean de Luz, Bayonne, and Nantes. Before Cape Breton lately fell into the poſſeſſion of Great-Britain, the French bankers, when long out, went to water and refreſh at Cape Breton.

Four to five thouſand Newfoundland freſh cod-fiſh are reckoned to make one hundred quintals of well cured dry cod, or three quintals wet fiſh make one dry. The livers

livers from 100 quintals dry cod, afford about one hogſhead, or ſixty gallons of liver oil. After the fiſh are headed, boned, ſplit, and ſalted, the ſhoremen deliver one half the weight; the overplus goes for their labour.

The cod-fiſh annually appear firſt at St. Peter's and Placentia in May, and thence proceed northward along ſhore to St. John's, Trinity, *&c.* and in autumn are fiſhed by the French in the north parts of Newfoundland. Cod follow the bait fiſh, as they appear near the ſhore ſucceſſively during the fiſhing ſeaſon; firſt are the caplin, next come the ſquid; the herrings take their courſe in Autumn; at other times a muſcle is their bait.

Their fiſh-ſhips are diſtinguiſhed into fiſhing-ſhips, which by their own boats and men catch and cure their fiſh-cargoes; and ſack-ſhips, which purchaſe their fiſh from the inhabitants.

The ſoil is rocks and mountains [*i*] inhoſpitable; their trees are pine, fir called ſpruce [*k*], and birch; ſtrawberries and raſpberries here are good and plenty. In Newfoundland there are no land-eſtates; but many of their ſalmon ſtreams or falls belong to patentees. In the winter, they make ſeal-oil, and ſave their ſkins. The great iſlands of ice, which appear upon or near the banks of Newfoundland, come from Davis's-ſtraits.

Goods imported to Newfoundland and conſumed there, are only ſalt, bread, flour, rum, and molaſſes, payable either in fiſh as the price ſhall break, which is generally at 10*s.* ſterling per quintal, or in bills of exchange upon Great-Britain; theſe bills of exchange are from the ſack ſhips, who purchaſe their fiſh or cargo from the inhabitants by bills: bills purchaſe theſe goods cheaper, than the fiſh truck, becauſe the fiſhermen impoſe any fiſh in pay.

The ſeveral bickerings that have happened in Newfoundland between the Britiſh and French, cannot be re-

[*i*] No ſlepping, no wheel-carriages; their fire-wood is carried ſome miles upon men's ſhoulders.

[*k*] Spruce-leaves and buds decocted in place of hops, make an agreeable beer or drink, and is eſteemed good in the ſcurvy.

hearſed minutely in a ſummary, we ſhall only mention a few. Anno 1704, Auguſt 18, about 140 French and Indians, in two ſloops from Placentia, land in Bonaviſte harbour, and burn four veſſels; anno 1705, in the winter, M. Subercaſſe governor of Placentia, afterwards governor of Nova Scotia, with 550 ſoldiers and inhabitants of Placentia, and from Canada with ſome Indians, ranſacks all the ſouthern ſettlements in a few days, carrying away 140 priſoners; laid Conſumption-Bay, Trinity, and Bonaviſte under contributions, having burnt their ſtages and craft; they beſieged the fort of St. John's (capt. Moody and forty ſoldiers in garriſon) five weeks in vain; St. John's is the principal Britiſh fiſhery ſettlement in Newfoundland; anno 1710, the garriſon of St. John's was reinforced by two companies of marines.

Placentia was quit-claimed by France to Great-Britain; and anno 1714, June 1, col. Moody being appointed lieutenant-governor of Placentia, received poſſeſſion from M. Caſtabella, who ſucceeded M. Subercaſſe as governor of Placentia anno 1706, when Subercaſſe was removed to the governor of L'Accadie or Nova Scotia; this Caſtabella, was made governor of Cape Breton iſlands, and continued in that government many years. Anno 1719, col. Gladhill was appointed lieutenant-governor of Placentia in place of col. Moody. At preſent anno 1748, the lieutenant-governor of Placentia is major Hamilton; and the lieutenant-governor of St. John's is capt. Bradſtreet.

The following accounts of fiſheries fall in naturally with this ſection, and carry along with it ſome account of the New-England fiſhery.

A Digreſſion concerning fiſheries.

THE principal and moſt extenſive branches of fiſhery in commerce, are 1. Whaling, which is in common to all maritime nations, but followed to beſt advantage by the Dutch; it is called the great fiſhery, as herrings and cod fiſhing are called the ſmall fiſheries. 2. Herrings; of theſe the Dutch alſo make the moſt gain, although the only herring

herring fiſhery known to us, of quantity and quality, ſufficient and proper for the markets, is confined to the Britiſh ſea, which is a *Mare clauſum*, and in all reſpects is the Britiſh peculiar property, excepting that it is a natural thoroughfare or high way to all nations in their outward bound and inward bound voyages; and Great-Britain, with greater propriety, may be called Herrings iſland, than Newfoundland called Terra de Baccalcos. The Dutch, in the reign of Charles I, agreed to pay annually to Great-Britain, 30,000 *l.* ſterling for licence or liberty of fiſhing for herrings upon the coaſt of Great-Britain; they paid only for one year, 1636, and no more; Cromwell, in his Declaration of war againſt the Dutch, made a demand of the arrears of this licence money (at the ſame time he inſiſted upon ſatisfaction for the Amboyna affair) but the principal differences which occaſioned the war being ſoon accommodated, theſe demands were dropped. 3. Cod-fiſh. The European north ſea cod, the cod from the banks of Holland and coaſt of Ireland are much ſuperior in quality to the American cod; but in no degree adequate to the Spaniſh, Portugueze, and Italian markets: the cod fiſhery to ſupply markets, is peculiar to Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, and New-England. If Great-Britain, pending this French war, continue with ſucceſs to reduce the French trade and colonies, we may give the law; and have Newfoundland, the iſlands in the gulph of St. Laurence, Nova Scotia, and New-England, confirmed to us in perpetuity; with an excluſive trade and navigation upon the coaſts thereof to the extent ſeaward of —— leagues; thus we ſhall have the monopoly of the cod fiſhery. At a low ſtate, we can afford at a medium 300,000 quintals *per annum*, whereof Bilboa, the dry cod fiſhery barcadier, takes off from 70,000 to 80,000 quintals *per annum*, to ſupply Madrid, and ſome other inland countries of Spain.

To render theſe accounts diſtinct, I ſhall reduce them to five heads. 1. The Whale-fiſhery. 2. Herring-

fiſhery. 3. Cod-fiſhery. 4. The ſmaller fiſheries exportable, but of no great account. And, 5. Some fiſh not exportable or merchantable, but of great benefit in preſent ſpending, eſpecially for the poor.

1. WHALES. See a digreſſion concerning whaling, p. 56. We ſhall further add the following remarks: Whales, that is the true or bone whales go ſouthward (they are paſſengers according to the ſeaſons) towards winter, and return northward in the ſpring. Formerly, in New-England Cape-cod embayed them; but being much diſturbed (they ſeem to have ſome degree of reaſon) they keep a good offing. The ſmaller whales, *viz.* ſperma-ceti, fin-backs, hump-backs, *&c.* which never go far to the northward, but ſtroll conſiderably ſouthward, are apt to ſtrand upon the ſhoals of North-Carolina and Bahama banks: they become drift whales, and ſome afford drift ſperma-ceti. In their paſſages north and ſouth, having kept an offing to the banks, though they were incommoded by the whale-fiſhers; at preſent in their paſſages they keep deep water; and upon a peace the whalers are to fiſh for them in deep water.

New-England whaling at preſent is by whaling ſloops or ſchooners with two whale-boats and thirteen men; each boat has an harpooner, a ſteerſman, and four rowers: the whale-boats do not uſe thaughts, but nooſes for their oars, upon account of expedition; becauſe only by letting go their oars, without looſing of them, they keep expeditiouſly long ſide of the whale. The beſt place of ſtriking a whale is in her belly, about one third from her gills; the faſt is a rope of about twenty-five fathom; then a drudge or ſtop-water, a plank of about two feet ſquare, with a ſtick through its center; to the further end of this ſtick, is faſtened a tow-rope, called the drudge rope, of about fifteen fathom; they lance, after having faſtened her by the harpoon, till dead.

The New-England whalers reckon ſo many ct. wt. bone, as bone is feet long: for inſtance, ſeven foot bone gives 700 wt. bone: New-England bone ſcarce ever exceeds

ceeds nine feet; and 100 barrels of oil is ſuppoſed to yield 1000 wt. of bone: whales killed in deep water, if they ſink, never riſe again.

Sperma-ceti, whales do not go far north; they are gregarious, or in ſhoals; they go ſouthward to the Bahama iſlands in October, and return in the ſpring: moſt of the Bermudas whales are fin-backs, twenty to thirty *per annum* caught.

A whale ſtranded back off Cape-Cod, yielded 134 barrels oil, and — wt. of bone; this whale was ſo fat, that, ſome poor people tried the muſcular fleſh, and made thirty barrels more of oil. In New-England whaling, they go upon ſhares, one quarter to the veſſel or owners, the reſt to the company, finding themſelves victualling and whaling geer. The whalers in deep water, or at a conſiderable diſtance from Nantucket, fit out in the beginning and middle of March. Third week of July, anno 1738, arrived our whalers from Davis's-ſtraits. The New-England true whale is the ſame with the European North-cape whales, are not eaſily killed, being agile and very wild; the Dutch do not fiſh them. Sperma-ceti whales do not go far north, they paſs by New-England in October, and return in the ſpring. Grampus's, bottle-noſes, and the other ſmall cetaceous kind are called black fiſh.

It is not eaſily to be accounted for, that whales do not in courſe of years become ſcarcer, conſidering the continued great ſlaughter of them by the whaling nations; they bring only one calf at a time after many months geſtation, whereas other fiſh ſpawn multitudes.

Fiſh-oil is, 1. That from the true or whale-bone whale, and the other large whales. 2. Vitious oil from the ſperma-ceti whales. 3. Black fiſh oil from grampus's bottle-noſes, porpus's, *&c.* of the ſmall cetaceous kind. 4. Liver-oil from the livers of ſundry fiſhes, eſpecially of cod-fiſh. 5. That from the blubber or *penicula adipoſa* of ſeals and ſea-cows. There are two ſorts of ſeals, one ſort has its ſkin dappled or in ſmall ſpots;

ſpots; the other ſort called the Ice-ſeal, hath a large black patch, runs ſlow, and is killed by a ſmall blow on the head; 500 have been killed in a harbour at Newfoundland in a morning: the ſkins and blubber is their mercantile produce. The ſea-cow or morſe is plenty upon the coaſts of Nova Scotia and the gulph of St. Laurence, particularly at the iſland of St. John's; it is of the bigneſs of a middling cow (it is not the ſame with the manatee of the gulph of Mexico) a very thick ſkin with hair like that of a ſeal.

In cold winters the whales, as do other fiſh, keep in deep water. The New-England people whale with a drudge or ſtop-water, not with long ropes or warps as the Hollanders. Upon the coaſt of New-England, whales go northward from the middle of March to the middle of May. About thirty years ago, *communibus annis*, were exported from New-England about 5000 barrels of fiſh-oil; at this writing, anno 1748, about 10,000 barrels, notwithſtanding the whales keeping a greater offing.

2. HERRINGS. In this tribe of fiſhes there are many ſpecies or diſtinct kinds, *viz.* The ſhadd, the true herring, the alewife, the Sardinia, the anchovie, *&c.* In this article, I write only of the true or merchantable herring; in good quality and large quantities, they ſeem peculiar to the coaſts of the Britiſh iſlands, and I ſhall in the firſt place mention theſe as a ſtandard.

Upon the coaſts of Great-Britain, herrings make their firſt appearance northward (at the Weſtern Iſlands of Scotland they appear in the ſpring) as it is commonly ſaid, at the [*l*] Shetland iſlands in N. lat. 61 D. beginning

[*l*] Shetland iſlands are the *ultima Thule* of the ancients: in the winter the ſeas are open, but harraſſed with continued ſtorms, ſo as to have no communication with the other parts of the earth. The Dutch Eaſt-India ſhips, by a ſtanding order, always return between the Orkney and Shetland iſlands. In Shetland their mother or indigenous tongue or language is Norſe or Norwegian; it was originally a Daniſh property, and, upon king James VI of Scotland marrying a daughter of

of June; by cuſtom the Hollanders do not begin to fiſh until [*m*] June 24, and return to Holland in Auguſt and September: 2000 buſſes (a pink-ſterned catch of about forty to fifty ton) have at one time fiſhed in Braſſa ſound: about Midſummer herrings are in the greateſt perfection. It is ſaid, they come from the northern deep waters (we hear of no herrings about Iceland under the Northern Polar Circle; a cod-fiſhery has been attempted there, but turns to no good account) in a large body or ſhoal, and meeting with the iſlands of Great-Britain, this ſhoal is ſplit; one part or wing takes along the eaſtern ſhore, and make in ſucceſſively into all the Friths of Scotland, more eſpecially in Auguſt to the Frith of Forth at Dunbar and Fife Side: their next great appearance is at Yarmouth roads upon the coaſt of England, where the Dutch preſume again to fiſh for them; thence to the mouth of the river Thames, and thence to the ſouthern and weſtern parts of England. At Ilfracombe, N. lat. 51 D. 10 m. within the mouth of the Severn river, about two leagues to ſea, they fiſh herrings from Michaelmas to Chriſtmas, and make from 10,000 to 12,000 barrels *per annum*. In the autumn the herrings ſpawn, become lank or lean, and are only fit for being cured by ſmoaking, called red herrings; it is imagined that ſoon after ſpawning, they diſappear in deep water ſouth of the Britiſh iſlands: the weſtern ſhoal or wing of this great body, paſs amongſt the Lewis's or [*n*] Scots weſtern iſlands; thence this part of body of herrings ſubdivides when they meet with Ireland; one column proceeds to the weſtern

of Denmark, it was quit-claimed to Scotland. The people of any conſiderable buſineſs there ſpeak Engliſh, Norſe, and Dutch.

[*m*] By a reſolve of the ſenate of Hamburg, no herrings are deemed to be in maturity, fit to be imported to a market until Midſummer. Hamburg is a principal mart for herrings, it ſupplies the north-eaſt parts of Germany by the river Elbe and its branches, as Dantzick ſupplies Poland by the Weſel or Viſtula and its branches.

[*n*] Called by the ancient geographers Æbudæ or Hebrides. Here are plenty of cod and long fiſh: may conſiſt of about 40,000 ſouls or inhabitants.

coaſt

coaſt of Ireland; the other column paſs along St. George's, or the Iriſh channel, to the mouth of the Severn.

It ſeems more reaſonable to think, that theſe herrings are conſtant retainers to the iſlands of Great-Britain, ſome times diſappearing in deep water, and at other times appearing in ſhoal-water, according to their various feeding and ſpawning grounds, ſo as annually to make the circuit of theſe iſlands; and as is the manner of all Paſſenger fiſh, go northward towards ſummer, and ſouthward towards winter or cold weather, and in very cold weather take to deep or warmer water. And in fact or obſervation we find the herrings appear amongſt the weſtern iſlands of Scotland in ſpring; they are at Shetland and the north parts of Scotland in ſummer; they are along the eaſt and ſouth coaſts of Great-Britain in autumn; and St. George's channel in winter.

The Britiſh herrings ſpawn in Auguſt and September: when they ſpawn, the fiſhermen call it fouling of the water; it is ſaid they go by pairs to the bottom, and rub their bellies in the mud and ſand until their [*o*] milts and rows are diſcharged; ſoon after this the herring-fiſhery is ſuppoſed to be over, and that the herrings take to ſea or deep water.

Dantzick is the principal market for the Scots and Dutch white or pickled herrings; next are Hamburg and Stockholm: the Dutch re-pickle their herrings in Holland.

The herrings of Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, and New-England, are either of a different ſpecies, or of a bad quality; and if in curing their quality could be remedied, they are not of a ſufficient quantity to ſupply the herring markets; they are caught in ſeines or maſhes; they have been pickled and barrelled for the Negroes in the Weſt-India iſlands, but turned out not merchantable, and that branch of fiſhery was dropped. In Newfoundland, they come in by autumn, being their laſt bait fiſh. In New-England, notwithſtanding their being a peri-

[*o*] Lactes.

odical

odical fiſh, their periods are uncertain; at preſent they are not ſo plenty as formerly, and generally ſet in to ſpawn towards the end of winter.

Periodical ſhoals or paſſengers of north ſea fiſh upon the eaſtern ſhore of North-America, are not found ſouth of 41 D. N. lat. ſome ſtraggling cod and ſalmon are ſometimes caught to the ſouth of Nantucket or this latitude, but do not anſwer the curing.

3. COD-FISHERY. The Scots or north ſea dry cod, and the New-England winter dry cod, are of the prime quality; they will bear watering: ſummer fiſh of New-England, when watered, breaks. Large winter cod dry fiſh, is the beſt for Bilboa market; it retains its mellowneſs, and will bear land carriage to Madrid; ſmaller fiſh will anſwer in other markets. In Great-Britain and Ireland, they are not reckoned merchantable if under eighteen inches in length, from the firſt fin to the ſetting on of the tail, and are allowed no ſalt debenture or bounty. Auguſt and September are the beſt times for ſelling a fiſh cargo in the Roman catholic countries; their Lent ſtock by that time is expended.

The New-England fiſhery have their ſalt from Salt-Tortugas, Cape de Verde iſlands, Turks iſlands or Bahamas, Liſbon, and Bay of Biſcay. The fiſhermen victual with ſalt pork only, biſcuit, and rum. All cod-fiſh caught, from the beginning of June to the beginning of October, are called ſummer fiſh; the others are called ſpring and fall fiſh, or winter fiſh, and are of the better quality. The ſalt fleet from Tortugas generally arrives in New-England about the middle of April.

New-England dry cod-fiſh is more ſalt burnt than thoſe of Newfoundland, becauſe in New-England they generally uſe ſalt from Tortugas and the Iſle of May, which is too fiery; at Newfoundland they make uſe of ſalt from Liſbon and the Bay of Biſcay, of a milder quality: in Newfoundland they work their fiſh belly down; in New-England they work them belly up, to receive

ceive more ſalt, and add to their weight. No ſun-burnt, ſalt-burnt, or that have been a conſiderable time pickled before dried, are to be deemed merchantable fiſh.

Marblehead in New-England ſhips off more dried cod, than all the reſt of New-England beſides; anno 1732, a good fiſh year, and in profound peace, Marblehead had about 120 ſchooners of about fifty tons burthen; ſeven men aboard, and one man aſhore to make the fiſh, is about 1000 men employed from that town, beſides the ſeamen who carry the fiſh to market; if they had all been well fiſhed, that is, 200 quintals to a fare, would have made 120,000 quintals. At preſent, anno 1747, they have not exceeding ſeventy ſchooners, and make five fares yearly; firſt is to the Iſle of Sable; the cod-fiſh ſet in there early in the ſpring, and this fare is full of ſpawn: formerly, they fitted out in February, but by ſtormy weather having loſt ſome veſſels, and many anchors, cables, and other geer, they do not fit out until March. Their ſecond fare is in May to Brown's Bank, and the other banks near the Cape Sable coaſt; theſe are alſo called ſpring-fiſh. Their third and fourth fares are to St. George's Bank, called ſummer fiſh. Their fifth and laſt fare is in autumn to the Iſle of Sables; theſe are called winter fiſh. New-England cod is generally cured or dried upon hurdles or bruſh. Anno 1721, were cured at Canſo off Nova Scotia 20,000 quintals of cod-fiſh; but, as it is ſaid, the officers of that garriſon uſed the fiſhermen ill, and no fiſhery has been kept there for many years. At preſent, anno 1747, there is cured in all places of Britiſh North-America about 300,000 quintals dry merchantable cod.

There are ſeveral other particulars relating to the cod-fiſhery interſperſed in the former ſheets, which we ſhall not repeat, leſt we ſhould deviate from the character of a ſummary. We ſhall obſerve, that the French have been too much connived at in carrying on a conſiderable cod-fiſhery near the mouth of the river St. Laurence at Gaſpee, contrary to treaty, becauſe it lies in Nova Scotia.

Continued

Continued weſterly or dry winds are not requiſite in curing dry cod, becauſe they muſt be ſweated in piles by ſome damp eaſterly whether. Winter fiſh ought not to be ſhipped off till May; for although the preceeding froſts make them look fair and firm, if ſhipped off too ſoon, the ſubſequent heat of the hold, makes them ſweat and putrify. The ſtock fiſh of Norway and Iceland, are cod cured without ſalt, by hanging in the froſts of winter upon ſticks, called ſtocks in Dutch.

4. SMALLER FISHERIES uſed in commerce; we ſhall mention a few.

Scale Fiſh ſo called, *viz.* Haddock, Haake, and Poluc, which in New-England are cured in the ſame manner as dry cod; theſe, together with the dry cod that is not fit for European markets, are ſhipped off to the Weſt-India iſlands, towards feeding of the Negro ſlaves, and make a conſiderable article in our trade to the ſugar-iſlands.

Mackarel, ſplit, ſalted, and barrelled for the Negroes in the ſugar-iſlands, are caught either by hook, ſeines, or marſhes; thoſe by hook are the beſt; thoſe by ſeines are worſt, becauſe in bulk they are bruiſed: mackarel will not take the hook, unleſs it have a motion of two or three knots; if quicker they will take the hook; but their jaw being tender gives way, and the mackarel is loſt. There are two ſeaſons of makarel, ſpring and autumn; the autumn mackarel are the beſt: thoſe of the ſpring appear about the middle of May, very lean, and vaniſh in two or three weeks.

Sturgeon very plenty; ſome are twelve feet long, and weigh 400 wt. Formerly a merchant of Boſton contracted with ſome fiſhmongers in London. Anno 1721, he ſent 1500 cags of 40 to 50 wt. (the contract was for 5000 cags *per annum*) the fiſh were good, but too ſalt or ill-cured; this fiſhery did not anſwer, and it was dropped. London is ſupplied with ſturgeon from Dantzick, Hamburg, and Pilau.

Salmon

Salmon are plenty in all the Britiſh North-America rivers from Newfoundland to about N. lat. 41 D. They ſet in to Maſſachuſetts-Bay about the middle of April; they do not chuſe warm weather, therefore do not continue there long after having ſpawned; farther north they continue many months. This ſalmon is not of a good quality, and is not ſo good for a market, as the ſalmon of Great-Britain and Ireland.

Alewives, by ſome of the country people, called herrings; they are of the [*p*] herring tribe, but ſomewhat larger than the true herring; they are a very mean, dry, and inſipid fiſh; ſome of them are cured in the manner of white herrings, and ſent to the ſugar-iſlands for the ſlaves, but becauſe of their bad quality they are not in requeſt: in ſome places they are uſed to manure land; they are very plenty, and come up the rivers and brooks into ponds in the ſpring; having ſpawned they reurn to ſea: they never take the hook.

5. FOR SPENDING FRESH. Beſides the abovementioned fiſh, which are alſo eat when freſh, there are many ſorts which are not cured and ſhipped off. In New-England they are generally well known, and are much the ſame as in Britain: we ſhall refer them to the ſections of New-England.

Many fiſh go up the rivers, and into ponds, earlier or later in the ſpring to ſpawn, *viz.* ſalmon, ſhad, alewives, tom-cod, ſmelts, *&c.* and many good laws have been made in New-England, to prevent their paſſages from being ſtopped by weirs, *&c.* as they are of great benefit to the inhabitants near theſe rivers and ponds.

[*p*] The pilchard or halecula is not found in theſe parts; it is no where heard of, but upon the coaſts of Devonſhire and Cornwall in England; Dartmouth lies in the centre of the pilchard fiſhery; they are caught from the beginning of Auguſt to the beginning of November; it is ſmaller than a herring.

SECT.

SECT. VII.

Concerning Nova Scotia, *or* L'Acadie.

THIS country was called Nova Scotia by Sir William Alexander, ſecretary of ſtate for Scotland; by means of Sir Ferdinando Gorge, preſident of the New-England or Plymouth company, he obtained a royal grant, Sept. 10, anno 1621; he was afterwards created lord Alexander, viſcount of Canada, and earl of Stirling, anno 1633. The French call it L'Acadie, an abbreviation or corruption of Arcadia in the Morea of Greece, a northern hilly country of the Peloponneſus. Hitherto, it cannot be called a colony; it is only an impotent Britiſh garriſon in an ill-regulated French ſettlement: the French ſettlers and the Britiſh garriſon officers (with much impropriety) call the inhabitants Neutrals, though under the protection of, and in allegiance to, the crown of Great-Britain; there are no Britiſh ſettlers to compoſe an aſſembly or legiſlature for making laws and raiſing of taxes.

The French had early ſettlements in L'Acadie or Nova Scotia; captain Argol from Virginia, anno 1613, viſited Port-Royal and St. Croix, and brought away two French veſſels. M. Biencourt was at that time governor of Port-Royal: Argol broke up ſome French ſettlements in Sagadahock and L'Acadie, called part of New-France, or Terra Canadenſis. At preſent the country north of St. Laurence river, only, retains this name: this expedition of Argol's made way for Sir William Alexander's patent. Sir William admitted ſome aſſociates, anno 1623; they ſent over a ſhip with ſome ſettlers, but they all returned to England the ſame year, and the French proceeded in their ſettlements. K. Charles I, anno 1625, upon his marriage with Henrietta Maria, a daughter of France, quit-claimed Nova Scotia to the French.

There have been many revolutions in the property and dominion of Nova Scotia.

1. Anno 1627 and anno 1628, Sir David Kirk and aſſociates, upon a private adventure, but by commiſſion from the king or crown of England, conquered the French ſettlements in Canada and Nova Scotia; and patents were obtained from the court of England, by which the lands called Canada, north of the river St. Laurence, were granted to Sir David Kirk, and the lands called Nova Scotia, ſouth of the ſaid river, were confirmed to Sir William Alexander.

2. Sir William ſold the property to M. Claude de la Tour d'Aunay, a French proteſtant, and anno 1632, Mar. 29, by treaty king Charles quit-claimed it to France.

3. Cromwell ſent col. Sedgwick; he reduced it anno 1654, and it was confirmed to England by treaty in the year following; M. St. Eſtienne, ſon and heir of the above Claude de la Tour, came to England, made out his claim, and had the property ſurrendered to him; this La Tour ſold the property to Sir Thomas Temple, who was governor and in poſſeſſion of the property until anno 1662; it was then delivered up to the French by king Charles II (that race ought to be called ſons of France, not ſons of Great-Britain) who agreed with the Temples for a ſum of 10,000 *l.* ſterling to be paid them (but it never was ſatisfied) upon account of their right.

Menival was appointed governor, and built a ſmall ſtockaded fort, called Port-Royal, upon a baſon, nine miles from the bay of Fundy; Nova Scotia was confirmed to the French by the Breda treaty, anno 1667, in the manner of a quit-claim. La Tour, a French proteſtant, upon his returning to the Roman catholic way of worſhip, had it confirmed (as to property) to him by the court of France. La Tour, in the various viciſſitudes, was proteſtant when the country was under the dominion of England, and Roman catholic when it was ſubject to the king of France. La Tour built a fort at St. John's river: M. Donnée, the French governor of L'Acadie, deemed it irregular, and inconſiſtent with the royal prerogative: while La Tour was in France, he reduced it, and inhumanly

manly deſtroyed La Tour's wife and family. La Tour became poor, borrowed a large ſum of money of M. Belle Iſle, a rich merchant and trader to North-America, and aſſigned over to him one half of the province or ſeigneurie.

4. The French of L'Acadie being troubleſome neighbours, New-England fitted out an expedition of 700 men under col. Phipps, at their own charge, anno 1690, (Menival governor, the fort ill fortified, and ill provided) they demoliſhed the fort; the French took the oaths of allegiance and fidelity to the crown of England, but ſoon revolted in conformity to Roman catholic and French faith, and continued their ſettlements; and by the treaty of Ryſwic, anno 1697, Great-Britain quit-claimed it to France. *N. B.* The New-England expedition ſailed from Boſton (Nantaſket is in Boſton harbour) 28th of April, came before Port-Royal 11th of May, in two or three days Menival ſurrendered, and the French garriſon was ſhipped off.

Anno 1704, major Church, with 550 voluntiers, viſited Penobſcut, Paſſamaquady, and Les Mines; they brought off about 100 priſoners: in July they attempted Port-Royal, but in vain.

Capt. Rowſe of Charleſtown, anno 1706, as a flag of truce was ſent to Annapolis to exchange or redeem priſoners; he, with ſome of his owners and aſſociates in Boſton, were under ſuſpicion of ſecret contracts [*q*], to ſupply the French enemy; indictments were laid againſt them for high miſdemeanours; they were fined, but their fine remitted: one trip they brought home ſeventeen priſoners; next trip only ſeven priſoners.

Anno 1707-8, March 13, from New-England there proceeded an expedition againſt Port-Royal, under col.

[*q*] At preſent, anno 1747 and 48, the ſame game is played, *impune*, from Rhode-iſland, New-York, and Philadelphia; if this illicit trade ſupplied the enemy only with ſuperfluities and extravagancies at a good price, perhaps in policy it might be connived at; but to relieve their neceſſities inſtead of diſtreſſing them (which the proclamation of war in expreſs words requires) ſeems to be a degree of treaſon, or at leaſt of high miſdemeanor.

March, with two regiments of militia, Wainwright and Hilton, covered by the Deptford man of war from England, and the province galley; this expedition had no effect, and the officers of the Deptford were blamed as negligent or refractory.

Anno 1709, col. Nicholſon and capt. Vetch apply at the court of Great-Britain, for ſea and land-forces to reduce Canada; there being at that time a ſort of court war, it was not attended to, but upon their ſolliciting an expedition of leſs conſequence, *viz.* to reduce Port-Royal and the country of Nova Scotia; this was obtained.

5. Nova Scotia continued with the French from anno 1662 (Sir William Phipps's reduction and poſſeſſion of it, anno 1690; may be ſaid to be only momentary) until anno 1710, it was then reduced by a force from Great-Britain, and from New-England, under col. Nicholſon, and confirmed to Great-Britain by the treaty of Utrecht, and thus it remains to this day.

This expedition under general Nicholſon (with inſtructions to all the governors of New-England to be aſſiſting) and adjutant general Vetch, was as follows, anno 1710, July 15, Nicholſon, with ſome Britiſh officers, and col. Reading's marines, arrive at Boſton from England, for the intended expedition: the armament ſet out from Boſton, Sept. 18, conſiſting of the Dragon, Falmouth, Leoſtaff, and Feverſham men of war, the Star bomb, and the Maſſachuſetts province-galley, with tranſports, in all thirty-ſix ſail; the land-forces on board were, one regiment of marines from England, two regiments of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, one regiment of Connecticut, and one regiment of New-Hampſhire and Rhode Iſland, commiſſioned by the queen, and armed by her gift; they arrived at Port-Royal in ſix days (the grenadiers of Walton's regiment were commanded by Maſcarene, the preſent governor of Annapolis fort, and commander in chief of Nova Scotia) after a ſmall affair of cannonading and bombarding, the French governor Subercaſſe capitulated, and October 5, the fort was delivered up; and col. Vetch, according

according to inſtructions, becomes governor. The terms of capitulation were, that all the French, being 481 perſons within the Banlieu, or three miles of the fort, ſhall be under the protection of Great-Britain, upon their taking the proper oaths of allegiance; the other French ſettlers were left to diſcretion, that, in caſe the French make incurſions upon the frontiers of New-England, the Britiſh ſhall make repriſals upon the French in Nova Scotia, by making ſome of their chief inhabitants ſlaves to our Indians; yet notwithſtanding, the French of L'Acadie commit hoſtilities, but the Port-Royal and Cape Sable Indians deſire terms of amity and alliance; the garriſon allowed to march out with ſix cannon and two mortars, afterwards bought by Nicholſon for 7499 livres ten ſols: the garriſon conſiſting of 258 ſoldiers with their officers, and other inhabitants, in all 481 perſons, male and female, were ſhipped to Rochelle in France; general Nicholſon ſent major Livingſton, and M. Subercaſſe ſent baron St. Caſteen to the marq. de Vaudrueil general of Canada, to acquaint him with this event; they arrived at Quebec, Dec. 16. The men of war and tranſports ſail for Boſton, Oct. 14, leaving a garriſon in Port-Royal, now called Annapolis Royal, of 200 marines and 250 New-England voluntiers; they were relieved next year by 400 of the troops deſtined for Canada. The New-England charge in this expedition, was upwards of 23,000 *l.* ſterling reimburſed by parliament.

The French governor's commiſſion was in theſe words; Daniel Anger de Subercaſſe, knight of St. Louis, governor of L'Acadie, of Cape Breton iſlands and lands adjacent from Cape Roſier, of the great river St. Laurence as far as the eaſt parts of Quenebec river.

Here it is not improper to annex the following digreſſion.

A digreſſion concerning ſome late Britiſh expeditions againſt Canada.

ANNO 1690, the New-Englanders having reduced Port-Royal, and all the reſt of Nova Scotia or L'Acadie,

were encouraged to attempt Quebec in Canada the ſame year; they ſet out too late in the year, want of experience in their principal officers, ſickneſs amongſt their men, and the army of 1000 Engliſh with 1500 Indians, who at the ſame time were to march from Albany, by the way of Lake Champlain to attack Montreal by way of diverſion, to divide the French forces, not proceeding, occaſioned a miſcarriage, with the loſs of 1000 men, and a loſs of many of their tranſports in their return, with a great charge incurred; which charge occaſioned the firſt emiſſion of a pernicious [r] Paper Currency by way of

[r] The odium which I bear to this fallacious and deſigned cheat of a plantation government public Paper Currency, leads me to anticipate a little upon the article of Paper Currencies deſigned for the Appendix. This pindaric or looſe way of writing ought not to be confined to lyric poetry; it ſeems to be more agreeable by its variety and turns, than a rigid dry connected account of things: ſome perhaps of no taſte blame me for want of method; and on the other lay a ſtrict obſervance of the propriety of words, they call pedantry.

I have obſerved, that all our Paper-money-making aſſemblies have been legiſlatures of debtors, the repreſentatives of people who from incogitancy, idleneſs, and profuſeneſs, have been under a neceſſity of mortgaging their lands: lands are real permanent eſtate, but the debt in Paper Currency by its multiplication depreciates more and more. Thus their land eſtate in nominal value increaſes, and their debt in nominal value decreaſes; and the large quantities of Paper Credit is proportionably in favour of the debtors, and to the diſadvantage of the creditors, or induſtrious frugal part of the colony: this is the wicked myſtery of this iniquitous Paper Currency.

A public credit Paper Currency, is a great promoter of expeditions. 1. Theſe bills to defray the charge are ſoon expedited, but with a conſequent diſtant but certain ruinous effect. 2. This affluence of paper credit invites or encourages people to borrow and run in debt, beyond what they ever can extricate. 3. Debtors, when called upon by their creditors from enliſting by acts of their legiſlatures, are indulged or reſpited for ſome conſiderable time; thus towards the Cape-Breton expedition, anno 1745, in leſs than two months, in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, out of 20,000 fencible men capable to march, 3000 enliſted, and were a dead loſs to the province: 2000 more, that is, two regiments were propoſed by —— to be added to the garriſon of Louiſburg, but cannot be completed; and two or three thouſand more towards demoliſhing a French out-fort, called Crown-Point, which we cannot pretend to maintain, but abandon to be rebuilt by the French for one tenth of the charge which it may coſt us in reducing it (Quebec re-

public

public bills of credit to pay this charge: there ſailed from Boſton frigates and tranſports thirty-two, having 2000 landmen aboard; the admiral called the Six Friends carried forty-four guns; they ſailed from Boſton Auguſt 9, did not arrive before Quebec till October 5, landed 1400 men under general Walley about one league and a half from the town, were repulſed two or three times with great loſs. Baron La Hontan, who was then at Quebec, ſays, "The New-England men did not want courage, but "wanted military diſcipline; that Sir William Phipps's "conduct was ſo bad, that he could not have done leſs "than he did, if he had been hired by the French, to "ſtand ſtill with his hands in his pockets; if they had "come directly againſt the town, it would have ſurren-"dered, but they were dilatory in their conſultations at a "diſtance, which gave time to reinforce the place with "regular troops, militia, and ſavages; Sir William bom-"barded the town from four veſſels, and did damage to "the value of five or ſix piſtoles; in the town were only "twelve great guns, and very little ammunition."

Anno 1711, the ſcheme and expedition for reducing of Quebec and Placentia, and conſequently all Canada and Newfoundland, to ingroſs the Cod-fiſhery [s], was

duced by a force from Great-Britain will ſave us both men and money, and effectually bring all Canada into our hands.) Some evil genius ſeems to preſide or prevail at preſent, by the apparent deſtruction of the perſons and effects of this jaded province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

When I happen upon this ſubject, I cannot avoid being more ſanguine (but in truth) than ſome Paper-money patriots may judge ſeaſonable: that I may not preclude what is to be ſaid in the Appendix, concerning Plantation Paper Currencies, I ſhall only inſtance the vaſt incredible damages that perſonal eſtates have ſuffered in New England, by depreciation of denominations from the multiplying of a nominal Paper Currency. Anno 1711, by act of aſſembly the exchange of the government bills upon account of the ſham Canada expedition, was fixed at 140 New-England for 100 ſterling. At preſent in the ſpring, anno 1748, it is with merchants 1000 New-England for 100 ſterling, perhaps from mal-adminiſtration only.

[s] Or rather to draw off ſome of our troops from annoying the French in Flanders, and finally by miſcarrying to contribute towards making the people of Great-Britain tired of the war with France.

concerted by the new miniſtry, ſollicited by Nicholſon; [t] the regiments of Kirk, Hill, Windreſs, Clayton, and Kaine, from Flanders, together with Seymour's Diſnay's, and a battalion of marines from England, under the command of brigadier Hill, brother to the new favourite Mrs. Maſham, in forty tranſports, with a ſquadron of twelve line of battle ſhips, ſeveral frigates, two bomb-veſſels, a fine train of artillery under col. King, with forty fine horſes, and ſix ſtore ſhips; they ſailed from England April 28, arrived at Boſton, June 25: by order from home there was a congreſs at New-London of all our plantation governors north of Penſylvania with Nicholſon, to concert meaſures; to the Britiſh troops were joined two regiments from Maſſachuſſets-Bay, Rhode Iſland, and New-Hampſhire, to attack Quebec, while the militia from Connecticut, New-York, and Jerſeys, with the Indians of the Five Nations, ſo called, under general Nicholſon, marched by land from Albany, Aug. 20, to attack Montreal for diverſion. It [u] was alledged, that they were retarded at Boſton for want of proviſions; they did not ſail till July 30; there were ſixty-eight veſſels, carrying 6463 troops; Auguſt 18, they anchored in the bay or harbour of Gaſpee, on the ſouth ſide of the entrance of St. Laurence river, to wood and water. Aug. 23, in the night-time, contrary to the advice of the pilots, in a fog they fell in with the north ſhore, and, upon

[t] Four of the principal men of the five Indian Tribes or Nations, who lie between our ſettlements and Canada, called the Four Kings, were ſent over to England to perſuade this expedition.

[u] Sir Hovenden Walker wrote to governor Dudley in Boſton, "I "concur with the opinion of all the ſea and land officers here, that the "government of this colony have prejudiced the preſent expedition "inſtead of aſſiſting it."

Admiral Walker having demanded a ſupply of ſailors, the governor and council repreſent, That the ordinary guards for the ſea-coaſt and inland forces, with thoſe detached for the preſent expedition, are upwards of two thouſand men; which, upon a ſtrict examination into the muſter-rolls, is more than one fifth of all the perſons within this government capable of bearing arms; therefore it was inconſiſtent with the ſafety of this her majeſty's province to ſpare any more men: there were 1160 effective land-forces, and 160 ſailors in our tranſports,

the iſlands of eggs, loſt [*w*] eight tranſports, and 884 men. In a council of war, it was reſolved, that, by reaſon of the ignorance of the pilots, it was impracticable to proceed; and that advice ſhould be ſent to recall general Nicholſon from proceeding to Montreal. The fleet anchored in Spaniſh river off Cape-Breton, Sept. 4, and, in a general council of war, it was reſolved not to attempt any thing againſt [*x*] Placentia, but to return to Great-Britain. They ſailed from Spaniſh river Sept. 16, and in twenty one days were in ſoundings near the channel of England. Oct. 16, at St. Helen's, the Edgar, with the admiral's journals and other papers, was blown up, and the voyage (as ſome ſay) in that inhuman wicked manner ſettled. The charge incurred by the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay was ſomething more than 24,000*l.* ſterling allowed by parliament, and converted into debentures transferrable, and bearing intereſt; it is probable the Maſſachuſſetts demand of 178,000 *l.* ſterling charges incurred in reducing Louiſbourg, may be ſatisfied in the ſame manner; theſe debentures to be transferrable only towards cancelling the provincial bills of public credit, that ACCURSED PAPER CURRENCY, in which the honeſt, induſtrious, frugal people have loſt almoſt the whole of their perſonal eſtates by depreciations; but not to be intruſted in any ſhape with fallacious money-making and indebted g—rs and a—lies.

[*w*] Whereof one was a New-England victualler, whoſe men were ſaved.

[*x*] By an intercepted letter from Caſta Bella governor of Placentia, to M. Pontchartrain French ſecretary of ſtate, it appears, that the French had not exceeding 700 men in that garriſon and country, conſequently muſt have proved an eaſy conqueſt.

When they muſtered at Spaniſh river, the number of men aboard the men of war and tranſports were 7643. Although they had not exceeding ten weeks proviſion, at ſhort allowance, in two or three days Placentia might have been reduced, garriſoned, and the fleet diſpatched to Great-Britain without ſuffering for want of proviſions: I cannot ſay ſuch was the fatality, but ſuch was the deſtination of the affair by a wicked miniſtry.

to

Our [y] next Canada expedition proved abortive in a ſhorter time from the conception; but may be ſuppoſed to have been occaſioned by ſome natural good [z] policy cauſes, and not from premeditated deſigned means of miſcarriage, as in the former. By orders dated —April, 1746, from the duke of Newcaſtle, ſecretary of ſtate at the court of Great-Britain; all the Britiſh governors in North-America are required to raiſe each of them, ſo many independent companies of 100 men, as they can ſpare and effect: thoſe of New-York, New-Jerſeys, Penſylvania, Maryland, and Virginia, to be formed into one corps, to

[y] Romantic expeditions have been the bane of our northern colonies, by incurring a paper public credit, made a currency and legal tender. The ill concerted, and worſe executed, expedition, anno 1690, againſt Canada, introduced this vicious currency: the very, very, very raſh, but very, very, very fortunate expedition againſt Cape-Breton or Louiſbourg, I hope may terminate public paper currency; the damage to all induſtrious frugal people is flagrant, that is, ſilver, by this expedition, from 30*s.* per oz. was depreciated to 60*s.* per oz. Thus all good honeſt men (real eſtates, ſpecialties, the ſalaries and wages of our legiſlatures excepted) loſt one half of their eſtates; and by taxes to cancel this debt, loſe, in courſe of years, perhaps one quarter more of their principal eſtates, that is, the induſtrious and frugal, from the beginning of the project of the Cape Breton expedition, in the ſpace of two years have loſt three quarters of their eſtates: if reimburſed from the parliament of Great-Britain, the taxes being only one quarter will be eaſed: ſome ſay this is the natural conſequence from the indebted members of the legiſlature.

[z] Vulgar minds cannot dive into myſteries of ſtate, no more than into myſteries of religion; that is, whether this not followed Canada expedition was only a feint, to make the French ſecure and guardleſs upon the coaſt of Britany; that the ſhips, merchandize, and ſtores at Port Louis, Port L'Orient, *&c.* might fall an eaſy prey: or, whether the allowing duke d'Anville's ſquadron, with land-forces, to ſail early in the ſummer without moleſtation in Europe and America; was, that Cape-Breton might fall into the French hands again, or that they might reduce Annapolis with Nova Scotia to be delivered up again to Britain at a peace, as an equivalent for Louiſbourg with Cape-Breton iſlands, if not retaken by the French: this may be imagined from the delay of Leſtock's and lieutenant-general St. Clair's ſailing, 'till too late in the year, and afterwards, by a feint, converting the expedition into a deſcent upon the coaſt of Britany, to abate the popular clamour for their not proceeding againſt Canada; all this to prevent puzzling in a ſubſequent congreſs for a peace.

be

be commanded by brigadier Gooch, lieutenant-governor of Virginia; the king to be at the charge of arming, paying, and cloathing of theſe troops, but the ſeveral colonies to furniſh levy-money and victualling; Virginia ſent two companies, Maryland three, Penſylvania four, the Jerſeys five, New-York fifteen, being twenty-nine companies; theſe were deſigned againſt Crown-Point, and from thence againſt Montreal; the two Virginia companies remained in the fort of New-York, the regular troops were ſent upon the expedition; the yellow fever at this time prevailed at Albany, therefore the troops for the expedition rendezvous at Saratago, about thirty miles higher up Hudſon's river: Maſſachuſetts-Bay raiſed twenty companies, Connecticut ten, Rhode-iſland three, New-Hampſhire two, being thirty-five companies. Theſe were to join the Britiſh land-forces under lieutenant-general St. Clair, with a ſquadron of men of war from England to reduce Quebec, and all Canada, while Gooch was making a diverſion at Montreal, ſixty leagues farther up the river of St. Laurence; theſe colony militia were to receive part of the booty, and to be ſent home when the ſervice was over.

Admiral Leſtock's being appointed commander of the ſquadron deſtined for this expedition, in place of admiral Warren, a man of integrity, and the delays until too late in the year, plainly evinced that the reduction of Canada at that time was not intended. As the governors of the ſeveral colonies had no inſtructions to diſmiſs their levies; theſe levies were continued on foot; the Maſſachuſetts men were diſpoſed into two regiments of Waldo's and Dwight's; at the requeſt of governor Maſcarene, five or ſix of Waldo's companies, the three companies of Rhode-iſland, and the two companies of New-Hampſhire, were [*a*] ſent for the protection of Nova Scotia; the other

[*a*] The three companies from Rhode-iſland were ſhipwrecked near Martha's vineyard; the two companies of New-Hampſhire went to ſea, but for ſome trifling reaſon put back, and never proceeded: the want of theſe five companies was the occaſion of our forces being over-

1500

1500 men were deſigned to join the ſouthern levies, in order to reduce [*b*] Crown-Point fort, built by the French as a rendezvous and place of arms for diſturbing our ſettlements of New-England and New-York; ſee p. 11. Some miſunderſtanding between the ſeveral governments, and the contagious ſickneſſes which prevailed about Albany, prevented the proſecution of this deſign: the order for diſmiſſing or diſbanding of the Canada levies, did not arrive until October, anno 1747; they were accordingly diſmiſſed, and have produced another crop of idlers, the bane of all countries.

Here we ſhall continue the hiſtory of the ſeveral bickerings or ſkirmiſhes which we have had in Nova Scotia with the Canadians, the other French, and their Indians.

After the reduction of Port-Royal or Annapolis-Royal by general Nicholſon, anno 1710, notwithſtanding that by the capitulation, the inhabitants without the Banlieu were to be [*c*] Neutrals, they continued their hoſtilities; hoſtilities continuing, the French miſſionary prieſt, and

powered by the Canadians at Minas with a conſiderable ſlaughter. I uſe this expreſſion, becauſe many of them were not fairly killed in a military manner.

Here I cannot avoid mentioning the impropriety of the expreſſion AUXILIARIES, which properly ſignifies foreign troops in aid; whereas the troops ſent from New-England for the protection of Nova Scotia, belonged to the ſame crown or dominion, and perhaps may more properly be called ſuccours, or reinforcements.

[*b*] Formerly New-England was generally in the time of the French wars annoyed from the north-eaſtward: but this war our annoyance is north-weſtward, that is, from Crown Point. In former wars there was a neutrality between the New-York or Mohawk Indians and the French Indians; ſo that a conſiderable trade was eaſily carried on between Albany and Montreal, to the advantage of the people of New-York, and diſadvantage of Canada. The French erected this fort, 1. To prevent this diſadvantageous intercourſe of trade. 2. To extend their claims of dominion and ſoil. 3. The better to diſturb our ſettlements in the times of war. New-York government, in former French wars, did not ſuffer; in this war they have ſuffered much.

[*c*] At preſent it ſeems an impropriety in the officers of the troops and garriſon of Annapolis, and in the neighbouring governments of New-England, to call the French inhabitants of Nova Scotia, NEU-

TRALS

five of the principal inhabitants upon the river of Annapolis, were ſeized and kept as hoſtages, for the inhabitants future good behaviour; even notwithſtanding this precaution, capt. Pigeon, with ſixty men being ſent up the river for timber to repair the fort, they were waylaid by the French and their Indians; this party were all killed or made captives.—Many other hoſtilities were committed.

After the peace of Utrecht, a tranquillity continued till the war between New-England and their eaſtern indians. The French miſſionaries perſuaded the Indians, that the Engliſh had encroached upon their lands. Anno 1721, in June, capt. Blin, a Nova Scotia trader, Mr. Newton collector of Nova Scotia, and others, were made captives by the Indians at Paſamaquady, but were ſoon releaſed, becauſe governor Doucet of Annapolis had made a repriſal of twenty-two Indians. Along Cape-Sable ſhore the Indians began to inſult our fiſhing veſſels: in July, theſe Indians take ſeveral fiſhing veſſels on the Cape-Sable coaſt, kill and captive many of their men; governor Philips at Canſo fits out two armed ſloops; they kill and take captive many Indians, and put an end to the Indian ſea-roving, anno 1724. Anno 1723, July 15, the Indians, at Canſo upon Durrel's iſland kill capt. Watkins, two more men, one woman and one child. Anno 1724, in July, a party of Indians attack Annapolis of Nova Scotia, they burn two houſes, and kill one ſerjeant, and one private man of a party that ſallied: in the fort they [*d*] ſhot and ſcalped one of the Indian priſoners as a repriſal for the Indians ſhooting and ſcalping of ſergeant M^c^ Neal; and

TRALS, becauſe, 1. Theſe French inhabitants, with their Indians, continued our enemies and, in fact, killed and captivated many Britiſh people, in breach of this neutrality. 2. By the treaty of Utrecht, the whole province of Nova Scotia, or L'Acadie, was abſolutely ceded to Great-Britain. 3. The principal men of the French inhabitants have taken the oaths of allegiance to the crown of Great-Britain.

[*d*] In ſome Chriſtian countries ſuch repriſals in cold blood upon people not perſonally guilty, would have been deemed barbarous and inhuman.

burn

burn two French houſes as a repriſal for the two Engliſh houſes burnt; ſeveral Engliſh living without the fort were made captive, but ſoon ranſomed by the French.

From this time until the French war in the ſpring, anno 1744, this neglected non-effective garriſon of Annapolis continued in a profound peace, and ſupine indolence. In the beginning of the preſent French war, the fort of Annapolis was in a miſerable condition; the garriſon ſoldiers did not exceed eighty men, capable of fatiguing duty; hogs and ſheep from without paſſed the foſſees or ditches, and mounted the ramparts at pleaſure.

War was declared by Great-Britain againſt France (the French had declared war ſome weeks before) anno 1744, March 29; the proclamation of war did not arrive in Boſton until June 2; the French of Cape-Breton were more early in their intelligence, and the garriſon of the not tenable poſt of Canſo could not (in caſe the general inſtructions were ſuch) have timely advice to abandon it; accordingly about 900 men, regular troops and militia, were, by M. Duqueſnel governor, ſent under M. Du Vivier from Louiſbourg; they ſeize Canſo May 13; there were four incomplete companies of Philip's regiment in garriſon, not exceeding eighty men, with a man of war tender; the French burn the ſmall ſettlement, conditions were, to be carried to Louiſbourg, and to continue there one year, and thence to be ſent to Boſton or Annapolis; but were ſent to Boſton ſooner.

In June, a few ſmall veſſels (Delabrotz, afterwards taken by the Maſſachuſetts-Bay province ſnow privateer, commander) from Louiſbourg annoy St. Peter's, and ſome other ſmall harbours of Newfoundland weſt of Placentia, and threatened Placentia fort.

[e] Beginning of June, about 300 Cape-Sable and St. John's Indians, under the direction of a French miſſionary

[e] Here we may obſerve the forwardneſs and activity of the French nation, upon the breaking out of a war, who thereby have a conſiderable advantage over the unpreparedneſs and dilatorineſs of their enemies: from that national nuſance Cape-Breton, an effectual French

prieſt,

prieſt, M. Luttre, attempted the fort of Annapolis; they burnt the out-houſes, deſtroyed ſome cattle, killed two men, ſummoned the garriſon to ſurrender, promiſing good quarters, otherwiſe threatened to ſtorm them, upon the arrival of ſome French forces which they expected from Louiſbourg; but upon the arrival of the province ſnow privateer beginning of July from Boſton with the firſt company of militia (the government of Maſſachuſetts-Bay raiſed four companies to reinforce the garriſon of Annapolis) they broke up, and returned to Minas (or les Mines) and the women and children of Annapolis removed to Boſton for ſafety.

In September, Du Vivier with ſixty regular troops from Louiſbourg, and about 700 militia and Indians (the above mentioned Indians joined him) upon the arrival of all the Maſſachuſetts ſuccours, particularly of capt. Gorham's Indian rangers (Du Vivier had lain ſome weeks near Annapolis fort) he retired to Minas: ſeveral meſſages which have been cenſured, paſſed between him and the garriſon officers of Annapolis, the moſt favourable account, is, That Du Vivier acquainted them that he expected (in the mean time they might have good terms of capitulation) from Louiſbourg ſome men of war, one of 70 guns, one of 56 guns, and one of 30 guns, with cannon, mortars, and ſtores, and a reinforcement of 250 more troops; the anſwer of the garriſon, was, That when this force arrived, it was time enough to make propoſals: After he had tarried there three weeks, diſappointed and

place of arms to diſtreſs the Britiſh North-America colonies, at once and before we had notice from home of a French war, there iſſued three expeditions, *viz.* againſt Placentia, Canſo, and Annapolis-Royal; Duquefnel (otherwiſe a good officer) governor of Cape-Breton, erred in being too forward; he had inſtructions along with the declaration of war, not to attempt any expedition (this I learnt from M. le Marquis de la Maiſon fort, commander of a French men of war, the Vigilant of 64 guns, taken by commodore Warren and captain Douglaſs) until further orders from the French court; perhaps, as Louiſbourg was ill garriſoned, it was ſuſpected that ſuch expeditions might alarm the neighbouring populous Britiſh colonies, and prompt them to the reduction of Louiſbourg, as it really happened with good ſucceſs.

diſcon-

diſcontented, he retired to Minas; next day after his decamping ſome trifling veſſels with cannon, mortars, and warlike ſtores, arrived in the baſon of Annapolis, and hearing of Du Vivier's being withdrawn, they were afraid of our frigates annoying of them; they ſoon removed, and as it happened, they narrowly eſcaped our veſſels: Du Vivier from Minas went to [*f*] Bay Vert, and thence to Canada, and from thene home to France.

As the Cape-Sable and St. John's Indians, perſiſted in their hoſtilities againſt the ſubjects of Great-Britain; in November 1744, the government of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay declares war againſt them, declaring them enemies and rebels; becauſe they had joined the French enemy in blocking up Annapolis; had killed ſome Britiſh ſubjects, and had committed other depredations: the Paſamaquady, Penobſcot, Noridwoag, Pigwocket, and other Indians weſtward of St. John's, are forbid to have any correſpondence with thoſe Indian rebels: for all Indians eaſtward of a line, beginning at three miles eaſt of Paſamaquady, and running north to St. Laurence river, the government ſettles for a ſhort time premiums, *viz.* 100 *l.* new [*g*] tenor, for a male of 12 Æt. and upwards ſcalped, and 105 *l.* new tenor if captivated; for women and children 50 *l.* ſcalps, 55 *l.* captives. Sometime afterwards it was found that the Penobſcot and Noridgwog Indians alſo joined with the French; the aſſembly of Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, Aug. 23, 1745, extend the premiums for ſcalps and captivated Indians to all places weſt of Nova Scotia, 250 *l.* new tenor to voluntiers, and 100 *l.* new tenor to troops in pay [*h*].

[*f*] Bay Vert is the embarkadier from Canada to annoy Annapolis, and other places in Nova Scotia. Here are only four miles land-carriage to Chicanecto bay, which falls into the great bay of Fundi of Nova Scotia. Upon this paſs a fort would be of good ſervice to prevent Canada incurſions, and to obviate the perverting of the French inhabitants of L'Acadie from their allegiance to the crown of Great Britain.

[*g*] Whereof at preſent, anno 1748, 50 *s.* is equal to 20 *s.* ſterling; old tenor is only one quarter of new tenor.

[*h*] If Du Vivier, with his 900 men, which reduced Canſo, had di-

Anno

Anno 1745, in May, M. Martin, a lieutenant from Canada, captain of a company of Savages or Indian rangers, a true partizan, with about 900 raggamuffins, Canadians, other French and Indians, comes before Annapolis; they continued but a ſhort time, and returned to Minas; and, I ſuppoſe, by orders from Louiſbourg, went to relieve Louiſbourg at that time beſiged: captain Donahew, in the ſervice of the Maſſachuſetts colony, met with them in Aſmacouſe harbour June 15, being two ſloops, two ſcooners, and about ſixty large canoes; upon the further appearance of Beckett and Fones, this body of French and Indians retired and returned to Minas. From that time, until de Ramſay's attempt in September, 1746, the garriſon of Annapolis ſuffered no inſults.

From the beginning of this French war, there have been quartered at Minas and Chicanecto and the neighbouring French villages, a diſperſed number of officers and ſoldiers from Canada; but from Martin's leaving Annapolis in the beginning of July, 1745, to the arrival of de Ramſay in September, 1746, the garriſon of Annapolis enjoyed their wonted Reſt.

In the ſummer 1746, a force of about 1600 men, regular marine troops, Canadian militia, and Coureurs des Bois, with French Indians, under the command of M. de Ramſay, arrive in Minas, to join the forces expected from France under [i] the duke d'Anville. They were

rectly proceeded to Annapolis, and been joined by the Cape Sable and St. John's Indians, he muſt infallibly, and with eaſe, have reduced Annapolis.

[i] In the ſpring 1746, the French fitted a ſtrong armament at Breſt to be commanded by the duke d'Anville, lieutenant-general des Armées navales, to recover Louiſbourg, and diſtreſs the Britiſh North-America; they did not ſail from Rochelle until June 22; they eſcaped or were overlooked by the Britiſh admiral Martin's ſquadron of obſervation: the court of Great-Britain had certain information of their being ſailed, and of their deſtination; but perhaps for certain reaſons of ſtate, did not ſend after them, though we had at that time an equal or better armament ready to ſail. This French fleet, after a tedious paſſage, and having ſuffered in a ſtorm near the iſland of Sable, did not arrive off Chebucto in Nova Scotia until Sept. 10. The armament conſiſted of

much careſſed by our French ſubjects there; and our Minas ſubjects, gave to the garriſon of Annapolis DE-

eleven line of battle ſhips, ſome frigates, two fire-ſhips, tranſports, *&c.* having 3150 land-forces aboard. Duke d'Anville's inſtructions were, to proceed againſt Louiſbourg, and, when taken, to diſmantle it; thence to proceed againſt Annapolis in Nova Scotia, and when taken, to garriſon it; thence he was to ſail for Boſton, and burn it: afterwards in ranging along he was to annoy and diſtreſs the coaſt of North-America; and finally to viſit our Weſt-India ſugar iſlands.

D'Anville detached three capital ſhips and a frigate, under the command of M. Conflans, to convoy the trade to Cape François in Hiſpaniola, and to return and join the grand ſquadron; theſe were the four French men of war which near Jamaica fell in with a Britiſh ſquadron commanded by commodore Mitchel; but Mitchel, in effect, refuſed taking of them. M. Conflans' orders were, that for advice, he was to cruize upon the Cape Sable ſhore, between Cape Negroe and Cape Sambro, for a limited time, and then to ſail directly for France; they received no advice, and never joined d'Anville's ſquadron; theſe were the ſhips that ſpoke with ſome of our fiſhing ſcooners, and gave a feint chace to the Hinchinbrook man of war ſnow Sept. 15; they avoided giving any alarm to our Louiſbourg ſquadron.

This French armanent, from their being long aboard before they ſailed, and from a tedious paſſage, were become very ſickly (duke d'Anville died, and was buried at Chebucto) they put in to Chebucto harbour, landed and encamped to recruit their health; in this place, near one half of their people died of ſcorbutic putrid fevers and dyſenteries; the Nova Scotia Indians frequented them much; and this camp illneſs becoming contagious, the Nova Scotia Indians were reduced to above one third: they were ſupplied with freſh proviſions from our French diſtricts of Minas, Cobequid, Piſaquid, and Chicanecto; the French commiſſaries or purſers of the ſquadron paid according to inſtructions, not only for this freſh ſtock, but for all the proviſions furniſhed to the Canadians and their Indians, from the commencement of this war. Our ſquadron at Cape-Breton, under admiral Townſhend, did not viſit the French fleet when diſtreſſed.

The ſeaſon of the year being too far advanced, their ſtrength much impaired, the detached four men of war not having joined them, and from diſappointments, and the officers in a fret with one another, it was reſolved in a council of war to proceed againſt Annapolis-Royal of Nova Scotia: they ſailed from Chebucto, October 13; after four days they met with a ſtorm off Cape Sable, and in a council of war it was reſolved to return directly for France. Two of the ſquadron were in the bay of Fundi, ſhips of 60 and 36 guns; that of 36 guns came into the baſon. Our ſhips, the Cheſter, Shirley, and Ordnance frigate, well-manned with land-forces, went in chace of them; the Cheſter ran aground: the French ſhips, after having put aſhore an ex-

CEITFUL, and no other intelligence. Here they continued ſome months; but the winter ſeaſon approaching, and no tidings of the French armament, the French troops deemed it adviſable to return to Canada. In their return, duke d'Anville's armament arrives in Chebucto of Nova Scotia, and an expreſs was ſent to recall them; about 400 of them were overtaken, and returned with de Ramſay, Culon, and la Corne, three captains of marines, and chevaliers or knights of the order of St. Louis. Towards the end of September, de Ramſay comes before Annapolis, made no aſſault, but encamped at ſome diſtance; the Cheſter man of war of 50 guns, the Shirley frigate of 20 guns, and the Ordnance ſchooner, at that time were in the baſon of Annapolis; three companies of reinforcements for the garriſon from Boſton were arrived, and de Ramſay having had advice of the French fleet being returned to France, made the French decamp October 22, and return to Minas.

preſs, with advice to De Ramſay, that the French fleet were returned to France, eſcaped and continued their voyage home.

This French armament upon the coaſt, for very good reaſons, alarmed Boſton; in a few days, with great expedition, it was reinforced by 6400 country inland militia; the militia of the ſea coaſt countries remained at home for their own defence, to prevent depredations. Upon occaſion Connecticut was to have ſent us 6000 men, being about one half of their militia.

The French in Chebucto were eight ſhips of the line, whereof the Perfait was burnt, as incapable to proceed; upon the coaſt of France, the Nottingham took the Mars; the Exeter drove the Ardent aſhore, and burnt her: this was the fate of the great French armada or armament againſt the Britiſh North-American colonies.

The Britiſh ſquadron, commanded at firſt by admiral Warren, and afterwards by admiral Leſtock, with land-forces under the command of lieutenant-general St. Clair, which ſeemed deſtined againſt Canada, and to obſerve the French ſquadron in North-America, after many delays, on account of contrary winds and other pretences, was converted to an invaſion upon the coaſt of Britanny: the troops landed at Quimperley bay, Sept. 20, and bombarded Port l'Orient; Sept. 26, the troops retreated, and left four pieces of cannon, and a ten inch mortar, ammunition, and ſtores; ſome marines and ſailors were left behind; Oct. 1, they embarked at Quimperley; afterwards ſome land at Quiberon, and did a ſmall matter of damage.

His deſign was to quarter at Minas and Chicanecto, during the winter, and to join the French fleet and land-forces, which were expected to reduce Annapolis, in the ſummer; governor Maſcarene of Annapolis, judged that in addition to the three companies of voluntiers which arrived from Boſton in autumn, 1000 men of reinforcements from New-England, might be ſufficient to diſlodge the French enemy, and to conſume (by purchaſe) all the French inhabitants proviſions produced there, in time coming to prevent the ſubſiſtence of the enemy, who might lodge there and corrupt the inhabitants; and Britiſh forces being quartered among them, might influence them to continue in their allegiance to the crown of Great-Britain. Maſſachuſetts-Bay aſſembly vote 500 men to be ſent, Rhode-iſland 300 men, and New-Hampſhire 200 men; the Rhode-iſland men were ſhipwrecked near Martha's Vineyard; thoſe from New-Hampſhire ſet out, but put back upon ſome trifling excuſe, and never proceeded; the 500 men from Boſton only arrived; the diſappointment of the Rhode-iſland and New-Hampſhire men was the reaſon of our ſubſequent diſaſter at Minas.

Our firſt parcel, under captain Morris, arrived at Minas Dec. 12; when all were arrived, they did not exceed 470 men, beſides officers; water-carriage in the winter-ſeaſon being impracticable, they marched by land thirty leagues, with much hardſhip, in eight days; every man ſet out with fourteen days proviſion upon his back; the main body was quartered at Grand Pre, in a very looſe, ill-contrived, ſcattered ſituation, but upon alarm to repair to the main guard; col. Noble ſuperſeded col. Gorham in the chief command; Gorham and major Phillips, with a ſmall eſcorte, ſet out for Annapolis Jan. 29; they were but nine miles on their way, when the French began their attack.

The French, well informed of our ſcattered ſituation, as to cantonment, and not regularly provided with ammunition and proviſion, ſet out from Chicanecto Jan. 8,

for

for Minas, which, by heading of creeks and rivers, is about thirty leagues diſtance, and by excurſions to bring along as many of the ſettlers and Indians as poſſible, did not arrive at Minas until Jan. 31, and began about three hours in the morning by many diſtant attacks or onſets at the ſame time, in parties of ſeventy to fifty men. They were about 600 of the enemy, Canadians, inhabitants, and French Indians; they killed many of our men in a moſt inhuman baſe manner; col. Noble, lieuts. Lechemore (nephew to the late lord Lechemore) Jones, Pickering, enſign Noble, with about ſeventy ſerjeants, corporals, and private men, made priſoners capt. Doane, lieut. Gerriſh, and enſign Newton, in all about ſixty-nine men, the wounded included; many of the priſoners were ſet at liberty.

The French were well provided with ſnow-ſhoes; this neceſſary winter-marching article we neglected: however, a conſiderable number of our men got together, but as they had not exceeding eight ſhot per man, and proviſions being ſcanty, they capitulated, 1. We are to march off with arms ſhouldered, drums beating, colours flying, through a lane of the enemy with reſted firelocks. 2. To be allowed ſix days proviſion, one pound of powder, with ball. 3. Not to carry arms in the bays of Minas and Chicanecto for ſix months.

De Ramſay, being lame, was not in this onſet, M. Culon had the command; and after Culon was wounded, M. La Corne commanded: this affair being over, they returned to Chicanecto, and expecting La Jonquiere's ſquadron with land-forces from France in the ſummer, they continued at Minas and Chicanecto, until they received advice by ſome ſtoreſhips for Canada, which had eſcaped [*k*] of La Jonquiere's fleet being deſtroyed, May 3, 1747: then they returned to Canada, and have given

[*k*] Anno 1747, in the ſpring, the French Breſt and Rochfort fleets joined at Rochelle, and ſailed from thence; they conſiſted of thirty-eight ſail, *viz.* ſeven men of war from 74 to 44 guns; of theſe the Invincible of 74 guns, and a frigate of 44 guns (the only man of war

no further diſturbance to Nova Scotia: notwithſtanding, for the better ſecurity of the fort and garriſon of Annapolis, Maſſachuſetts-Bay, this ſpring, 1748, ſends a reinforcement of ſeven companies of militia.

Having briefly related the French bickerings with us in Nova Scotia, we proceed to ſome further accounts of that country.

ANNAPOLIS, in 44 D. 40 M. N. Lat. tide thirty-three feet, lies upon a fine baſon; but the rapid tides in the bay of Fundi make a difficult navigation. Into this baſon comes a river of good water-carriage, without falls for twenty-five miles; and near it are ſeveral ſmall villages or parcels of French ſettlements, which, in time of peace, plentifully and cheaply, ſupply the garriſon with freſh proviſions and other neceſſaries. From Cape Anne near Boſton harbour, to Cape Sable, are eighty ſeven

that eſcaped being taken) were to convoy the ſix Eaſt-India ſhips; the other five men of war, with tranſports and merchantmen, having ſoldiers, ſtores, and goods aboard, were deſigned for Nova Scotia and Canada. Admiral Anſon and Warren, with thirteen line of battle ſhips, two frigates, and a fireſhip, fell in with them, May 3, in N. lat. 43 D. 46 M. and fruſtrated two French expeditions to North-America and to the Eaſt-Indies; ſix of the men of war were taken, all the ſix Eaſt-India company ſhips, and many of the tranſports; we had from 4000 to 5000 French priſoners, with their commodore or admiral M. de la Jonquiere chef d'Eſcadre, an old man of 70 Æt. all this was effected with a very inconſiderable loſs of men; ſeven companies of Frampton's regiment were aboard (the other three companies were in the grand battery of Louiſbourg in Cape-Breton) and behaved well. M. de St. George, a knight of Malta, commanded that part of the fleet which was bound to the Eaſt-Indies.

I ſhall but juſt mention (becauſe not nearly related to our ſubject) the action of admiral Hawke, Oct. 14, 1747, near Cape Finiſterre, with a ſquadron of fourteen capital ſhips; he fell in with a French fleet commanded by M. de l'Entendiere chef d'Eſcadre, of eight large line of battle ſhips, and 180 merchantmen; four of the men of war were deſtined to bring home a fleet from Martinique; only two of the French men of war eſcaped; the merchantmen, in the time of the action, made the beſt of their way, but ſome were picked up by our privateers ſoon after, and in the Weſt-Indies.

leagues;

leagues; from Cape Sable to Annapolis are thirty leagues; capt. Campbell in the Squirrel man of war, ſailed from Marblehead near Boſton harbour (ſhorteſt courſe) in twenty-three hours. The Engliſh have no other footing in this province, beſides the fort of Annapolis; and before this French war, a ſmall fiſhery at Canſo.

Aglate la Tour, grand daughter to the before mentioned La Tour, by management and for ſmall conſiderations, obtained procurations and quit-claims, from all the heirs of La Tour, and Belle-iſle; ſhe married a ſubaltern officer in Phillips's regiment; ſhe went to England, and ſold the ſeigneurie or property of all the province to the crown of Great-Britain, anno 1731, for 2000 guineas; the ſole property of all the province is now in the crown, and at preſent yields not exceeding 17 *l.* ſterling *per annum* quit-rent. By the peace of Utrecht, the French in Nova Scotia, upon their taking the Britiſh government oaths, were to continue in their poſſeſſions; the not appropriated lands by the king of Great-Britain's inſtructions were reſerved for proteſtant ſubjects [*l*]; notwithſtanding this inſtruction, the French Roman catholic ſubjects, as they ſwarm (as they multiply in families) make free with theſe crown lands.

Anno 1717, col. Phillips was appointed governor of Nova Scotia in Place of Vetch, and of Newfoundland in place of Moody; the four independent companies of Annapolis, and the four independent companies of Placentia, with two more additional companies, were re-

[*l*] Perhaps governor Phillips and lieutenant-governor Armſtrong, for ſecret valuable conſiderations, made to the French Inhabitants ſome conceſſions, indulgencies, or connivences. When we recollect ſuch mercenary connivences of governors; and while our French inhabitants retain a language and religion the ſame with France, our natural enemy, and entirely different from that of Great-Britain; they muſt naturally and unavoidably, upon any miſunderſtanding between the Britiſh and French, favour the French intereſt: therefore they muſt be removed by ſome ſubſequent treaty, or be elbowed out, or their language and religion muſt gradually be changed.

gimented in his favour, making a reduced or reformed regiment of 445 men, officers included. After the French reduction of Canſo, our ſoldiers priſoners arrived at Annapolis, being about ſixty men, the poor remains or repreſentatives of four companies; three of theſe companies were incorporated with the five companies of Annapolis, and with the fourth company of Canſo. Thus at Annapolis were ſix companies, at Placentia one company, and the three new companies to be ſent from England to St. John's in Newfoundland, made up the regiment of ten companies, to be completed to 815 men, officers included, the complement of a Britiſh marching regiment: the reinforcements and recruits for this regiment from England, by miſmanagement and neglect were very unfortunate; and the regiment remains in an abject low eſtate, though in time of war, and continual jeopardy, from our neighbouring French, and armaments from France.

In order to colonize this country, governor Phillips had a royal inſtruction to form a council for the management of the civil affairs of the province; and accordingly in April 1720, appointed twelve counſellors, *viz.* John Doucet, lieutenant-governor, Laurence Armſtrong, Paul Maſcarene, Cyprian Southack, John Harriſon, Arthur Savage, John Adams, Herbert Newton, William Skeen, William Sherriff, Peter Boudrie, and Gillam Phillips, eſqrs. By the fifth inſtruction, if any of the council be abſent from the province exceeding twelve months, without leave from the commander in chief, or abſent two years without the king's leave, his place ſhall be deemed void or vacant. In the abſence of the governors and lieutenant-governor, the eldeſt counſellor is to act as preſident of the council, and to take upon him the government: thus anno 1739, upon the death of lieutenant-governor Armſtrong, major Maſcarene, a ſoldier from his youth, a gentleman of probity and exemplary good life, became and continues preſident of the council, and commander in chief for the time being, of the province

vince of Nova Scotia. As Maſcarene was only major of the regiment, and Coſby lieutenant-colonel of the regiment, and lieutenant-governor of the fort of Annapolis, and conſequently his ſuperior officer, Coſby ſeemed to diſpute the command of the province; but by an order from home, it was determined, "That whatever rank "any perſon may have out of the council, he muſt ſubmit "to the laws of ſeniority, which in civil government "ought never to be diſpenſed with, but by his majeſty's "ſpecial order under his ſign manual." The governor Phillips diſputes the moiety of the ſalary which the commander in chief of the province claims in the abſence of the governor; but by an inſtruction or order from home, the forty-ſecond inſtruction to the governor of Virginia, is alſo directed to take place in Nova-Scotia, *viz.* "Upon "the governor's abſence, one full moiety of the ſalary, "all perquiſites, and emoluments whatſoever, ſhall be "paid and ſatisfied unto ſuch lieutenant-governor, "commander in chief, or preſident of our council, who "ſhall be reſident upon the place for the time being, "for the better ſupport of the dignity of the govern-"ment."

Col. Phillips, governor of Nova Scotia and Newfoundland, and col. of a regiment in garriſons there, arrived in Boſton 1720, Oct. 4; upon his arrival in Nova Scotia 880 effective men of the French inhabitants, took the oaths to the crown of Great-Britain. At this time, anno 1748, we reckon French inhabitants in Nova Scotia from 3000 to 4000 fencible men; Indians in Nova Scotia not exceeding 250 marching men; the contagious diſtempers of d'Anville's fleet reduced them very much.

Col. Phillips, with advice and conſent of his council, is impowered to grant lands under certain limitations, but in general at 1*d.* ſterling *per annum*, per acre quit-rent; Roman catholics are excepted. Col Ph—ps had ſundry ſums allowed by the board of ordnance for repairing fortifications, and the like, at Annapolis and Canſo; and were converted, as is ſaid, to his own proper

per uſe. In time of peace, the garriſons in Nova Scotia and Newfoundland, with a reduced regiment of foot and detachments from the train, coſt Great-Britain about 15,000 *l. per annum.*

When Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony obtained a new charter (their former charter was taken away at the ſame time with many corporation charters in England in the end of the reign of Charles II, and beginning of the like or more arbitrary reign of James II) 7th of October, 1691, Nova Scotia at that time in poſſeſſion of the French, was annexed (as was alſo Sagadahock, or duke of York's property) to the Maſſachuſetts juriſdiction, to keep up the claim of Great-Britain; Nova Scotia has ſince been conſtituted a ſeparate government; and has continued about forty years to this time, a nominal Britiſh province without any Britiſh ſettlement, only an [*m*] inſignificant preventive, but precarious fort and garriſon.

[*m*] The regiments in garriſon at Louiſbourg may be conveyed to Nova Scotia, and cantoned amongſt the French ſettlements; after ſome ſhort time to be diſbanded, with ſome encouragement of lands and other things as ſettlers. Thus we may by degrees ELBOW the French out of their language and religion, and perhaps out of their lands. As many of them, diſſatisfied with our neighbourhood, will chuſe to remove home to France, or retire to Canada; the remainder will in courſe continue in their allegiance to the crown of Great-Britain. Nova Scotia has continuedly been in the juriſdiction of Great-Britain for about forty years, and from the bad management of thoſe concerned, in all that time, not any family natives of Great-Britain, or of Britiſh extract, have been induced to ſettle there; there are a few families in and belonging to the garriſon of Annapolis.

Notwithſtanding the expediency in giving up and demoliſhing of Louiſbourg, it may prove a puzzling affair, 1. Becauſe contrary to the prevailing popular opinion. 2. As the French have made no land conqueſts in any of the Britiſh dominions, the French have no equivalent reſtitution to make for Cape-Breton, unleſs by connivance of our miniſtry, in neglecting the defence of Annapolis and Nova Scotia, we give it to the French, to be made uſe of as an equivalent; if this could be ſuppoſed, the preſent miniſters will not heartily thank the bold New-Englanders for their great expence of men and money in the reduction of Louiſbourg, and preſervation of Annapolis, but reckon them officiouſly daring: notwithſtanding the reprieve which theſe expeditions

As

As this country is rude, a geographical deſcription of it cannot be expected: it is a large extent of territory, bounded weſtward by the Bay of Fundi, and a line running northward from St. John's river to St. Laurence or Canada great river; northward it is bounded by the ſaid St. Laurence and gut of Canſo, which divides it from the iſland of Cape-Breton; and ſouth-eaſterly it is bounded by Cape Sable ſhore.

The moſt valuable article in this province is the Cape-Sable coaſt, where is a continued range of cod-fiſhing banks, and many good harbours: it is true, that along the Cape-Sable ſhore and Cape-Breton, for ſome weeks in ſummer, there are continued fogs (as upon the banks of Newfoundland) from the range of banks to the eaſtward, that the ſun is not to be ſeen, but without ſtorms or bad weather; the reſt of the year is clear weather, very ſuitable for dry cod-fiſh. Along this coaſt to keep clear of lands-ends or promontories, of rocks, and of ſhoals, the courſes are, from Cape Anne near Boſton

to Cape-Sable	E. by N.	87 leagues
to Cape-Sambro	E. by N. half N.	50
to Canſo	E. N. E.	45
to Louiſbourg	E. northerly	18
		200 leagues.

Some of theſe harbours are called Port Latore, Port Roſway, Port Metonne, Port Metway, La Have, Malagaſh, Chebucto. In Chebucto, in the autumn 1746, lay the French armada under duke d'Anville, deſtined to deſtroy or diſtreſs all the Britiſh North-America ſettlements: this bay and river of Chebucto bids fair in time to become the principal port of Nova Scotia and its metropolis; from this there is good wheel land-carriage communication with the bay of Minas, that is, with La

give to debtors, and by ſtretching out paper-credit, depreciate nominal currency in favour of our landed debts; perhaps a majority of the leg—ture may favourably conſtrue it as done, in duty to their country, and to the intereſt of all the dominions of Great-Britain.

Riviere

Riviere des Habitants or La Prarie, with the river of Cobaquid, the river of Piſaquid, and the beſt parts of the province. It is true, Annapolis lies upon a fine baſon, and is more inland for a large vent or conſumption (thus London, Briſtol, Liverpool, Glaſgow have become rich) but the country round it is bad, and the tides of the bay of Fundi renders the navigation difficult.

Upon the oppoſite or weſterly ſhore of the bay of Fundi, are the rivers of Paſamaquady and St. Croix, being about ſeventeen leagues N. W. from the gut or entrance of the baſon of Annapolis; the river St. Croix is the boundary between Nova Scotia government, and the territory of Sagadahock, or the duke of York's property; for the preſent in juriſdiction, annexed to the neighbouring New-England province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay. Upon this ſhore farther northward is the river of St. John's, ten leagues diſtant from the gut of Annapolis; this is a profitable river, of long courſe; a conſiderable tribe of the Abnaquie Indians are ſettled here, but always (from the indolence of the government of Nova Scotia) in the French or Canada intereſt. The prodigious falls, or rather tides, in this river near its mouth of thirty fathom, are not a cataract from rocks, but from the tide being pent up in this river between two ſteep mountains. By this river and carrying-places there is a communication with Quebec, the metropolis of Canada. When we reduced Port-Royal 1710, major Livingſton and St. Caſteen went by this river to acquaint the general of Canada concerning that event. Higher or more northward is Cape Dore, about thirty leagues from Annapolis; here is plenty of mineral coal for firing: ſome years ſince, this affair was undertaken by a company, but ſoon dropped with loſs; here are ſome ſlender veins of copper ore, ſome thin laminæ of virgin copper, and a gold ſulphur marcaſite.

Upon the eaſterly ſhore, or gulph of St. Laurence, is Canſo gut, a ſafe and ſhort paſſage from the Britiſh ſettlements to Canada river, ſix leagues long, one league wide;

wide; a good navigation, from the journals of Capt. Gayton, anno 1746, upon a cruize to Bay Verte. About twenty-five leagues farther is Tatamaganahou, a conſiderable Nova Scotia French diſtrict or ſettlement, and good road for veſſels; fourteen leagues farther is Bay Verte, ſhallow water, but the embarquadier from Canada, to diſturb us in Nova Scotia; from this are only four miles land carriage to the river of Chicanecto. Here we may obſerve, that upon the Chicanecto bay ſide are eleven fathom tide; upon the gulph of St. Laurence or Bay Verte ſide, are only from four to five feet tide. Farther (Iſle Bonaventure and Iſle Percée intervening, where the French, by treaty of Utrecht, rightfully cure dry cod fiſh) at the ſouth entrance of the river of St. Laurence, is Gaſpee, a deep bay and good harbour; here unrighteouſly the French dry cod fiſh. I obſerve in the late French charts publiſhed by authority, there is a territory pricked off, called Gaſpee, as if not belonging to Nova Scotia or L'Acadie, ceded to Great-Britain by the treaty of Utrecht. Such a paper encroachment, if not attended to, may be conſtrued after many years a juſt claim by preſcription; ſuch is at preſent the diſpute between the Baltimore family of Maryland, and the Pen's family of Penſylvania concerning the old Dutch charts, and our new charts in relation to Cape Cornelius, the ſouth cape of Delaware Bay, and Cape Henlopen, twenty miles ſouth weſterly from the mouth of Delaware Bay, in running the line between the three lower counties of Penſylvania and Maryland.

Nova Scotia is divided into ten or twelve diſtricts; each diſtrict annually chuſes one deputy to be approved by the commander and council at Annapolis; he is a ſort of agent for the diſtrict, and reports the ſtate of the diſtrict from time to time. They are in no legiſlative or executive capacity; the French miſſionaries, who are not only appointed by the biſhop of Quebec in Canada, but under his direction (a ſcandal to the indolent government and garriſons of Nova Scotia) in their ſeveral diſtricts

ſtricts and villages, act as magiſtrates and juſtices of the peace; but all complaints may be brought before the commander in chief and council at Annapolis.

The New-England bills of public credit, ever ſince the ceſſion by the treaty of Utrecht, have been their common currency; until the late intolerable depreciation by immenſely multiplying this credit beyond its bearings, by expeditions, and, in fact, the credit of thoſe bills is almoſt ſunk [*n*], or rather loſt; the French inhabitants abſolutely refuſed them in currency.

Iſland of Sable.

THIS iſland muſt be deemed in the juriſdiction of the province of Nova Scotia, as it lies upon the latitudes of that coaſt, though at a conſiderable diſtance; and the Britiſh excluſive line of fiſhery, by the treaty of Utrecht 1713, beginning at this iſland, implies the ſame to belong to Great-Britain: the name is French, and we retain it with much impropriety; we ought to have tranſlated it to Sandy iſland, in the ſame manner as we have turned Point de Sable (a former French diſtrict in St. Chriſtopher's) to the preſent Britiſh name Sandy point. The property is loudly (that is, in the public newspapers) claimed by ſome private perſons; I ſhall not inquire into the merit of the affair

I am informed by people who were ſhipwrecked there, and lived ſome months upon the iſland, that, from Canſo to the middle of the iſland are thirty-five leagues ſouth; it is a low land, with ſmall riſing knowles of ſand called downs, in form of an elbow, the bite to the northward,

[*n*] In a meſſage, Nov. 5, 1747, from the houſe of repreſentatives of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, relating to the pay of Canada forces, to their governor, it is repreſented, "Should ſuch a further "ſum be emitted, as is neceſſary for the purpoſe mentioned in your "Excellency's meſſage, we apprehend it muſt be followed by a great "impair, if not utter loſs of the public credit, which has already been "greatly wounded." Thus the odium of this iniquitous or baſe money currency is thrown upon M. S—ley, by the proper *money* branch of the legiſlature.

about

about twenty miles in length, and narrow; by reaſon of ſhoals of ſand, ſmall tides five or ſix feet, and a great ſurf, it is inacceſſible, excepting in the bite, where boats may land. Formerly ſome perſons of humanity put cattle aſhore to breed, for the relief of the ſhipwrecked, and by multiplying, they anſwered that benevolent charitable end; until ſome wicked, mean, raſcally people from our continent, deſtroyed them to make gain (theſe robbers of ſeafaring people, called theſe depredations the making of a voyage) of their hides and tallow. The ſouth ſide is in 43 D. 50 M. N. lat. no trees; their principal growth is juniper buſhes [*o*], huckle-berry buſhes [*p*], cranberries, [*q*] bent-graſs; ſome ponds; abundance of foxes and ſeals; great ſnows in winter, but do not lie long.

At this iſland, which is deemed thirty leagues eaſtward from the Cape Sable ſhore of Nova Scotia or L'Acadie, by the treaty of Utrecht 1713, begins the Britiſh excluſive line of fiſhery, running S. W. indefinitely, and including the fiſhing banks belonging to the iſland.

Cape-Breton *iſlands.*

CAPE-BRETON cannot properly be called a Britiſh colony, until confirmed by ſome ſubſequent treaty of peace, and annexed to the dominions of Great-Britain; but notwithſtanding its retarding the proſecution of this hiſtory, I cannot avoid taking notice of the reduction of Louiſbourg, being in our neighbourhood, an event recent and very memorable. I ſhall endeavour to relate it with exactneſs and impartiality. By aſcribing every ſtep of it

[*o*] *Vitis Idæa anguloſa*, I. B. *Vaccinia nigra.* Park. black worts, or bill-berries.

[*p*] *Oxycoccus ſive vaccinia paluſtris*, I. B. Moſs-berries, or marſh whortle-berries; the French of Canada call it Canneberge; it is plenty all over the northern parts of North-America; and is a moſt exquiſitely agreeable acid ſauce for all roaſt meats, and for paſtry tarts.

[*q*] *Gramen ſpicatum, ſecalinum, maritimum, maximum, ſpica longiore T. Spartium, ſpicatum, pungens, oceanicum*, I. B. Engliſh or Dutch ſea matweed.

to

to Providence, I hope it will not be conſtrued as detracting from the merits of the country of New-England, the place of my abode or home. The motto may be *Audaces fortuna juvat*, and with good propriety may be termed *Dignus vindice nodus*, and without imputation of cant, be aſcribed to ſome extraordinary interpoſition of Providence in our favour: Governor Shirley, in a ſpeech obſerves, that "ſcarce ſuch an inſtance is to be found in "hiſtory:" A colonel in this expedition gave it this turn, "That if the French had not given up Louiſbourg, we "might have endeavoured to ſtorm it with the ſame pro-"ſpect of ſucceſs, as the devils might have ſtormed Hea-"ven." The annual convention of the New-England miniſters, in their addreſs to the KING, call it, "The "wonderful ſucceſs GOD has given your American "forces." A clergyman from London writes, "This "proſperous event can hardly be aſcribed to any thing "ſhort of an interpoſition from Above, truly uncom-"mon and extraordinary." Theſe expreſſions of the Governor's, *&c.* ought not to be conſtrued as derogating from the moſt bold adventure of the New-Englanders.

The reduction of Louiſbourg was much above our capacity; in ſhort, if any one circumſtance had taken a wrong turn on our ſide, and if any one circumſtance had not taken a wrong turn on the French ſide, the expedition muſt have miſcarried, and our forces would have returned with ſhame, and an inextricable loſs to the province. As this was a private or corporation adventure without any orders from the court of Great-Britain, the charges would not have been reimburſed by the parliament; and the people of New-England from generation to generation would have curſed the adviſers and promoters of this unaccountably raſh adventure.

In the congreſs of Utrecht, when the French demanded Cape Breton iſland, it was propoſed, that it ſhould lie in common for the uſe of the Britiſh and French fiſhery, without any ſettlements or forts, but open; the French would

would have acquieſced; but in this, as in ſome other articles, our abandoned wicked miniſtry of that time gave the French nation more than they really expected, *viz.* the excluſive property and dominion of the iſland, with the liberty of fortifying. It is generally thought, that by next peace Louiſbourg will be demoliſhed, and the iſland laid open and in common to both nations: It is certain, that the duke d'Anville had an inſtruction, if he ſucceeded in recovering Louiſbourg, to demoliſh it.

As this was a private adventure, upon ſurrender, we might have demoliſhed it ſoon, and converted the artillery, other warlike ſtores, and many other valuable things, to the uſe and benefit of the New-England colonies concerned, and ſo have put an end to a great accruing charge; the charge of maintaining a garriſon there with men, proviſions, warlike ſtores, and repairs in time of peace, will be a great and unprofitable article of national expence, and as both nations are much in debt, neither of them will incline to be at the charge, but agree to demoliſh it. As Great-Britain are a ſmall people, but at preſent maſters at ſea, their game is to procure all the advantages of an extenſive commerce; we are not capable of peopling and maintaining land-acquirements. Perhaps the promoters of this very popular adventure do not receive the ſincere thanks of the miniſtry or managers at the court of Great-Britain (this may be the reaſon of the remoras in our ſolliciting a [*r*] reimburſement) becauſe thereby they have incurred, to pleaſe the populace, an annual charge of 60,000 *l.* ſterling *per*

[*r*] Perhaps our agent or agents at home (who are in the nature of attornies for the province or corporation) to ingratiate themſelves with our legiſlature, have repreſented the affair wrong, which has induced them, in quality of a colony legiſlature, to count their chicken before they are hatched, and, in ſome ſenſe, to preſcribe to the ſovereign legiſlature of Great-Britain, concerning the diſpoſition of this money. There is a late incident not in our favour, the duke of Newcaſtle, concerned in all our colony expeditions, is removed from being eldeſt ſecretary, that is, of the ſouthern provinces, to which Ireland and the plantations are annexed.

annum, or 600,000 *l.* New-England currency, a conſiderable article where ways and means were difficult.

If the act of parliament againſt impreſſing of ſeamen in the ſugar-iſlands, had been extended to the northern American colonies, we ſhould have been eaſy under a Britiſh ſquadron ſtationed at Boſton, and their bills for home ſupplies, would have made good returns for our merchants; our traders could not have ſuffered above two or three *per cent.* difference of inſurance, which is a trifle compared with the great charge incurred by reducing of Louiſbourg, and of maintaining it during the war.

Here I ſhall give ſome ſhort account of evenements in the northern parts of North-America, from the commencement of the preſent French war to the preſent time May 1748; I ſhall not notice ſmall affairs, which do not require mention in a general hiſtory.

The French declared war againſt Great-Britain March 15, 1744, N. S. Great-Britain declared war againſt France March 29, 1744, O. S. The French in theſe parts had more early intelligence of the war; at Boſton we did not proclaim this war until June 2. May 13, M. Du Vivier, with a few armed ſmall veſſels, and about 900 regular troops and militia from Louiſbourg, takes Canſo without any reſiſtance, and carries the nominal four companies, being from ſeventy to eighty ſoldiers, and the few inhabitants, priſoners to Louiſbourg.

Here is a notorious inſtance of the French too forward raſh conduct; contrary to expreſs inſtructions ſent by the court of France to the garriſon of Louiſbourg, along with the declaration of war (my information was from M. le Marquis de la Maiſon Forte, captain of the Vigilant) that conſidering the weak and mutinous ſtate of their garriſon, it was not adviſeable for them, until further orders, to attempt any expedition which might alarm the populous neighbouring Britiſh colonies. 2. If inſtead of taking the inſignificant poſt (it did not deſerve the name of fort) of Canſo in their neighbourhood, the ſooner to humour the vanity of an eclat; had they with the ſame

force gone directly to Annapolis, by ſurprize, it would have eaſily ſubmitted.

About the ſame time a ſmall inconſiderable armament from Louiſbourg, commanded by M. de la Brotz, made ſome depredations about St. Peter's of Newfoundland, and threatened Placentia fort. This de la Brotz, in a French privateer ſloop of eighteen guns and ninety-four men, was ſoon after this taken by the Maſſachuſetts province ſnow, Capt. Tyng, upon the coaſt of New-England, and carried into Boſton. A ſmall privateer from Louiſbourg takes a ſloop with whale-oil aboard from Nantucket iſland bound to Boſton.

See the ſection of Nova-Scotia, p. 319, for the attempts againſt Annapolis in June, by ſome Indians under the direction of M. Lutre, a French miſſionary prieſt; and in September, by ſome French and Indians, commanded by M. du Vivier, who burnt Canſo in May.

The end of July, Capt. Rouſe, in a Boſton privateer, arrived at St. John's harbour in Newfoundland from the great banks; he brought in eight French ſhips with 90,000 mud-fiſh. In Auguſt, Capt. Rouſe, in conſort-ſhip with Capt. Cleves, in a ſhip and ſome ſmall craft, and fifty marines, fitted out by the Britiſh man of war ſtationed at Newfoundland, ſail in queſt of the French ſhips that cure cod-fiſh in the northern harbours of Newfoundland; Auguſt 18, at Fiſhot, they took five good French ſhips, ſome dried fiſh, but not well cured, and ſeventy tons of liver-oil; thence they proceeded to the harbours of St. Julian and Carroes. Capt. Rouſe hereby merited, and accordingly was made a poſt or rank captain in the Britiſh navy.

In September, dies Du Queſnel, the French governor of Cape-Breton, a good old officer; and was ſucceeded in command by M. du Chambon, an old poltroon.

In October, Capt. Spry, in the comet bomb, upon the coaſt of New-England, takes a French privateer in her firſt voyage or cruize, Capt. Le Grotz, ſixteen guns, 100 men, whereof ſome were Iriſh Roman catholic ſoldiers

formerly of [*s*] Phillips's regiments from Canſo: this privateer was called Labradore, from a gut in Cape-Breton where ſhe was built; ſhe had taken two or three of our coaſters from Philadelphia. About this time Capt. Waterhouſe, in a Boſton privateer, refuſed a French Eaſt-India ſhip richly laden; and Capt. Loring, in a ſmall Boſton privateer, was taken by a new French man of war from Canada bound to Louiſbourg.

Nov. 19, ſails from Louiſbourg the French grand fleet of fifh ſhips, of ſir ſhips from Canada, *&c.* This fleet conſiſted of three French men of war, ſix Eaſt-India ſhips, thirty-one other ſhips, nine brigantines, five ſnows, and two ſchooners; ſeven veſſels remained to winter at Louiſbourg.

This is a ſhort hiſtory of the ſea campaign (as the French expreſs it) in the northern parts of North-America, for anno 1744.

The French people tranſported from Louiſbourg to France (including the Vigilant's men) preceding July 17, 1745, 4130, whereof 1822 *via* Boſton, and ſeventy-ſix *via* New-Hampſhire. The French, while in Boſton, were allowed in old tenor per week, *viz.* an inhabitant from Cape-Breton 20*s.* a ſailor 15*s.* captain of the Vigilant 5*l.* ſecond captain 3*l.* each officer 40*s.*

Anno 1745, in March [*t*], La Renommée, a French frigate of thirty-two guns, 350 ſeamen, and fifty marines, charged with public diſpatches, and deſigned for obſervation, in cruizing along the Cape Sable coaſt, met with ſeveral of our ſmall armed veſſels, and, with the Connecticut tranſports, which upon any other occaſion ſhe might have deſtroyed with eaſe: If ſhe had put into Louiſbourg, by the addition of good officers, of men, and of ſtores, the garriſon would have been encouraged, and perhaps have rendered our expedition vain. But having

[*s*] In this regiment they have been much guilty of enliſting Roman catholics, becauſe cheap and eaſily to be got.

[*t*] This was the beſt advice boat the French had, ſhe was taken in a voyage to Hiſpaniola.

diſcovered

diſcovered an expedition againſt Louiſbourg in great forwardneſs, ſhe made the beſt of her way to carry immediate advice thereof to France; and a ſquadron, under the command of M. Perrier, was ſoon fitted out from Breſt for the relief of Louiſbourg. La Renommée ſailed in this ſquadron, ſhe was an exquiſite ſailor, and at length taken by the Dover, 1747.

In May, the [*u*] Vigilant, a French man of war of ſixty-four guns, and 560 men, with a good land-fall, inſtead of going directly into the harbour of Louiſbourg, attacked a Britiſh man of war of forty guns, the Mermaid, capt. Douglaſs. This prudent officer by a running fight decoyed the French ſhip into the clutches of commodore Warren in the Superbe of ſixty guns; in company were alſo the Eltham of forty guns, the Maſſa-

[*u*] Commanded by M. le Marquis de la Maiſon Forte, ſon-in-law to M. Chiconeau, firſt phyſician to the French king. This gentleman was too raſh in firing; as he met with Britiſh men of war, he ſhould have made the beſt of his way to port, and only have put his men in a poſture to prevent boarding, without firing, which ſtops the ſhip's way, and have received the fire of our ſhips ſilently. Notwithſtanding this miſconduct, the marquis was a man of good ſenſe and obſervation; he made this good remark, that the French officers of Louiſbourg, in bad policy, hindered the Engliſh from viewing at all times the ſtrength of their forts; becauſe if the Engliſh had been well informed of its ſtrength, the moſt ſanguine, raſh, wrongheaded perſon, if not a natural fool, could not have imagined ſuch a reduction without regular troops, and without artillery; our proper cannon (the 10 guns of 18 lb. ſhot lent us from New-York excepted) were bad, old, and honey-combed; four of them ſplit in firing. He further well obſerved, that our allowing the French officers priſoners freely to view Boſton and the country of New-England, would effectually diſcourage and forbid any French attempt to invade a country ſo well peopled.

Here we may obſerve, that the warlike names of the French men of war, ſound more elegant, proper, and bold, than the flat appellations of the Britiſh men of war, by the names of counties, towns, and perſons: for inſtance, in the French navy there are, le Terrible, l'Ardent, le Fougueux, le Mars, le Neptune, le Jaſon; le Vigilant, le Gloire, la Renommée, &c. In the Engliſh navy our names are flat, the Kent, the Devonſhire, the Cumberland, the London, the Edinburg, the Cheſter; the Prince Frederick, the Princeſs Mary, the Wager, &c.

chuſſetts frigate of twenty guns, and the Shirley galley, of twenty guns; the Vigilant ſtruck to the Mermaid, May 18, and was manned chiefly from New-England: if the Vigilant had arrived in Louiſbourg, conſidering the many good officers aboard, a large number of ſailors and marines, with great quantities of ſtores, we ſhould have been diſappointed in the reduction of Louiſbourg.

If the propoſal made three days before the Vigilant was ſeized, had taken place, *viz.* of laying up the men of war in Chapeau rouge bay, and landing the ſailors and marines to join our ſieging army, the Vigilant would have got in and fruſtrated the reduction of Louiſbourg.

M. Marin, after a vain attempt againſt Annapolis in Nova Scotia, with 900 French and Indians, in ſmall ſloops and canoes, was bound to the relief of Louiſbourg by moleſting the ſiege; in Aſmacouſe harbour they were diſperſed by ſome of our ſmall armed veſſels June 15; ſee Nova Scotia ſection, p. 321.

The French ſquadron of ſeven men of war, commanded by M. Perrier, deſigned for the relief of Louiſbourg, ſet out from France too late. July 19, in N. lat. 43 D. 45 M. W. long. from London 40 D. 30 M. E. off the banks of Newfoundland, took our prince of Orange maſt ſhip lieutenant-governor Clark of New-York aboard; here the French learnt that Louiſbourg had ſurrendered; without this intelligence, they would have become a prey to our Louiſbourg ſquadron: the French altered their meaſures, and in a ſtorm were diſperſed; la Galette of 32 guns did not rendezvous; the Mars 66 guns, St. Michael 62 guns; and the Renommée of 32 guns, put back to France; the Parfait 46 guns, Argonaute 46 guns, and le Tournoir 32 guns, put into the harbour of Carrous in the northern parts of Newfoundland 51 D. 5 M. N. lat. lay there three weeks, and ſail a convoy for the French fiſh ſhips.

Some homeward-bound rich French ſhips, ignorant of this event, came before Louiſbourg to refreſh, and were taken by our ſhips; as all the Britiſh men of war had entered

entered into a contract of joint ſharing, I ſhall not particularize the ſhips that made the ſeizures. July 24, they took an Eaſt-India ſhip from Bengal, value 75,000 *l.* ſterling; ſoon after they took another Eaſt-India ſhip. Auguſt 22, was taken a South Sea ſhip (decoyed by the Boſton packet captain Fletcher) value about 500,000 *l.* ſterling.

In July, we ſent ſome ſmall craft to St. John's iſland to bring away the French inhabitants, to be tranſported to France: ſome of our men imprudently and too ſecurely went aſhore; they were ambuſcaded by ſome French and Indians; we loſt twenty-eight men killed and captivated.

Oct. 5. ſailed five men of war, *via* Newfoundland with the two Eaſt-India ſhips for England, to be condemned there, conformably to an act of parliament; the South Sea ſhip, for certain reaſons, was condemned as unfit to proceed: the Vigilant, Cheſter, and Louiſbourg fire-ſhip were left to winter there.

Our provincial privateer ſnow captain Smithurſt, was loſt in a ſtorm, and all the men drowned.

Our ſea campaign, anno 1746, was as follows: In the autumn 1745, were ſhipped off from Gibraltar the two regiments, foot, of Fuller and Warburton, with three companies of Frampton's regiment; they arrived in the winter upon this bad coaſt (I mean the winter coaſt of New-England, Nova Scotia, and Cape-Breton) and therefore put into Virginia to wait the ſpring ſeaſon; they arrived at Louiſbourg May 24, 1746, and relieved our New-England militia of about 1500 men; they had kept garriſon there at the charge of Great-Britain from the ſurrender of the place June 17, 1745; commodore Warren received a commiſſion as governor, and colonel Warburton as lieutenant-governor of the garriſon of Louiſbourg, and territories thereunto belonging. Admiral Warren's occaſions called him home, and Mr. Knowles was appointed governor and commodore of a ſmall ſquadron

there; it is ſaid, he behaved in a moſt imperious diſguſtful manner.

Admiral Townſhend, with a ſquadron, was ordered from our Weſt-India ſugar iſlands, for the protection of Louiſbourg; he continued there in harbour all the time that Duke d'Anville's French ſquadron was upon our coaſt, without giving them any moleſtation in their great diſtreſs, doubtleſs from ſome ſecret inſtructions, which he did not think proper to communicate to Mr. Knowles. Townſhend with eight ſhips ſailed in November from Louiſbourg for England.

The ſtory of d'Anville's expedition that autumn in theſe ſeas, we have already related in the ſection of Nova Scotia, p. 322.

In the ſummer, by an order from home, the ſeveral northern colonies raiſed forces towards the reducing of Canada; ſee p. 324. This was perhaps only a ſtate-amuſement, without a real deſign to proſecute the affair: the Maſſachuſetts-Bay voted 3000 men, whereof 2000 were enliſted; and by an order from home, they were diſmiſſed in October 1747, after having further involved the province in a conſiderable debt for enliſting, victualling, and providing of tranſports.

Anno 1747. in the ſpring, a French ſquadron with Tranſports and land forces, fitted out in France, for the annoyance of Cape-Breton, and reduction of Annapolis of Nova Scotia, were intercepted, beginning of May, by admirals Anſon and Warren's ſquadron; ſee p. 326. M. de Ramſay, with his party of Canadian French and Indians, had wintered at Chicanecto, to join the land forces from France; but upon the news of La Jonquiere's diſaſter, they returned to Canada, and from that time to this preſent writing May 1748, Annapolis has been in perfect ſecurity and tranquillity; there is at this time a rumour of ſome expedition on foot in Canada.

Beginning of winter commodore Knowles from Louiſbourg with a ſmall ſquadron, was joined at Boſton by the

ſtation

ſtation ſhips of North-America, leaving their trade expoſed to the depredations of French and Spaniſh privateers; he ſailed to our windward ſugar iſlands, and from thence to Jamaica; having made up a conſiderable ſquadron with land forces aboard, he was to diſtreſs the French harbours and ſettlements on Hiſpaniola (the French call the iſland St. Domingue) as much as poſſible; he has already reduced and demoliſhed a ſtrong fort in Port Louis. Here, 1741, lay a large French ſquadron under the marquis d'Antin, deſigned to prevent the junction of Vernon and Ogle, or to awe our expedition againſt Carthagena, or to carry home the Spaniſh plate fleet; neither of theſe were effected, but returned to France in a very diſtreſſed condition.

Anno 1748. the adjacent Britiſh provinces, or colonies, are negotiating an expedition againſt a French fort at Crown-Point, upon the Dutch ſide of Lake Champlain, and conſequently within the juriſdiction of New-York; when the affair is narrowly canvaſſed, perhaps it will be deemed [*w*] a ſilly, but chargeable affair: as hitherto nothing is concluded upon, we muſt drop it.

[*w*] As to the reduction of Crown-Point a French fort, and lately a place of arms for the annoyance of the Britiſh ſettlements of New-York and the N. W. frontiers of New-England, 1. Unleſs all Canada were in courſe to be reduced, which we cannot pretend to effect without an armament from Great-Britain; this, when reduced, muſt either be demoliſhed, but ſoon rebuilt again by the French, at one tenth of our charge in reducing it; or garriſoned ſtrongly, at a great charge, becauſe of its great diſtance from us, and vicinity or eaſy water communication with Canada. 2. It is not in the New-England diſtrict, juriſdiction, or government, and conſequently not under our direction ſo as to make any advantage of it in the ſkin and fur trade. 3. If we were to act with the ſame ſordid private intereſt views, as have formerly been practiſed by the Dutch ſettlement, but at preſent Engliſh government of New-York; for inſtance, in the late queen Anne's war with the French, theſe our Dutch ſubjects contrived a neutrality between the New-York or Five Indian nations and the French Indians, and thereby ingroſſed the French and Indian trade of thoſe parts, and the French of Canada with their Indians were all let looſe to diſtreſs Nova Scotia and the eaſtern ſettlements of New-England; at preſent it might be

Cape-

Cape-Breton was formerly in the Nova Scotia diſtrict; the French call it L'Iſle Royal; by commiſſion, M. Subercaſſe, the laſt French governor of L'Acadie, is called governor of L'Acadie and Cape-Breton iſlands, from Cape Roſiers at the entrance of St. Laurence river, to Quenebec river. By the treaty of Utrecht 1713, all L'Acadie or Nova Scotia was quit-claimed by France to Great-Britain; excepting the Cape-Breton iſlands, that is, all the iſlands in the gulph of St. Laurence: theſe Great-Britain quit-claimed to France.

The great iſland of Cape-Breton lies from 45 D. to 47 D. N. lat. its moſt northerly point diſtant fifteen leagues from Newfoundland, the gulph of St. Laurence intervening; here a few cruizers might preclude the French Canada trade; it is ſeparated from Nova Scotia by a thorough-fare, which we call the Gut of Canſo; the French call it the Paſſage of Fronſac. The Mermaid a Britiſh man of war of 40 guns, 1747, upon a cruize, ſailed through this gut, found it ſix leagues long, is narrow, but good anchorage, flood from the north; from the Gut of Canſo forty leagues to Bay Verte, where are about ten or twelve French huts, upon the Nova Scotia, ſhore, ſhallow water; here is the communication of the Canadians with our perfidious French of Nova Scotia, by a ſhort land-carriage or neck of about four miles to Chicanecto. Tatamaganahoe is a large French village, fourteen leagues weſt ſoutherly from Bay Verte, a harbour for large ſhips.

Louiſbourg, formerly called Engliſh harbour, is in N. lat. 45 D. 55 M. the paſſage by ſea from thence to Quebec is about 200 leagues, and has been performed in three days. In Cape-Breton iſland, there is a gut lake or in-

adviſeable, tacitly to conſent to the continuance of Crown-Point as a rendezvous and place of arms for the French and their Indians; thus the eaſtern frontiers of New-England would be ſafe, formerly much harraſſed by the enemy Indians. This war they have not ſuffered much; our weſtern frontier expoſed to the excurſions from Crown-Point, are covered by New-York and the late addition to the government of New-Hampſhire when ſettled.

land

land ſea, called Labradore about twenty leagues long, and three or four leagues wide; here they build ſmall veſſels; the French privateer called Labradore, captain Le Grotz, taken by the Comet bomb, 1745, was built there. In the north part of the iſland is a good harbour; St. Anne's, is a good ſoil; here was laid out fort Dauphin, to be found in the French charts, as if finiſhed.

The other iſlands in the gulf of St. Laurence are private French property; St. John's and the Magdalene iſlands were granted to the Conte de St. Pierre; St. John's is about twenty leagues long, good land, many French and Indians; governor Knowles of Louiſbourg neglected the poſſeſſion of it. The iſland of Anticoſti is the property of Sieur Joliet, a Canadian; it lies in the mouth of the river St. Laurence, is large but inhoſpitable; no good timber, no good harbour; plenty of large cod-fiſh: below Gaſpée, on the coaſt of Nova Scotia, at L'Iſle Percée and L'Iſle Bonaventure already mentioned, the French make cod-fiſh.

After a ſhort deſcription of the late French colony of Cape-Breton iſlands, I ſhall briefly, without interruption and at one view, relate that memorable event of reducing Louiſbourg, the French American Dunkirk, by a few New-England militia, with the countenance of ſome accidental Britiſh men of war.

When Louiſbourg was given to us by the French, we found 600 regular troops in garriſon, with about 1300 militia, whereof about one half were called in from the adjacent ſettlements; the main foſſée or ditch eighty feet wide; the ramparts thirty feet high (the ſcalado, or ſcaling ladders, which we ſent by the direction of Mr. Bradſtreet, at preſent lieutenant-governor of a fort in St. John's harbour, Newfoundland, were too ſhort by ten feet, and never were uſed) upon the town ramparts were mounted upwards of ſixty-five cannon of various ſizes; the entrance of the harbour defended by a grand battery of about 30 guns of 42 pound ball, and by the iſland battery of 30 guns of 28 pound ball; proviſions for ſix months,

months; ammunition ſufficient, if well huſbanded from the beginning; ten mortars of thirteen inches, and ſix of nine inches.

Mr. Vaughan of Damaraſcote, in the territory of Sagadahock, in the dominions of New-England, a whimſical wild projector in his own private concerns, entirely ignorant of military affairs, and of the nature of the defence or ſtrength of a place regularly and well fortified at an immenſe expence, dreamt or imagined that this place might be reduced by a force conſiſting of 1500 raw militia, ſome [x] ſcaling ladders, and a few armed ſmall craft of New-England.

It is ſaid, that [y] governor Shirley was taken with this hint or conceit, but imagined that 3000 militia, with two forty guns king's ſhips, might do better. This expedition was reſolved upon and proſecuted, without any certainty of Britiſh men of war to cover the ſiege, and prevent ſupplies; a packet was ſent to commodore Warren, ſtationed at our Weſt-India ſugar iſlands, by a loaded lumber ſloop, deſiring the aſſiſtance of two ſhips of 50 or 40 guns, and if he could not ſpare two, to ſend one, which perhaps might be ſufficient: Mr. Warren's anſwer was, That for want of further inſtructions from the admiralty, he could in courſe ſend only two ſhips to the New-York and Boſton ſtations; but ſoon after this he received inſtructions to proceed to North-America with the Superbe 60 guns, Launceſton 40 gus, and Mermaid 40 guns, in order to ſuccour Annapolis, or any of his majeſty's ſettlements againſt attempts of the enemy, and to make attempts againſt the enemy. In proceeding to Boſton for proviſions and other ſupplies, ſome fiſhing ſchooners, by letters from governor Shirley informed him, that the expedition had proceeded, and

[x] The ladders ſent with this expedition were ten foot too ſhort, from bad intelligence; but if ſufficiently long, they were not practicable.

[y] In our plantations ſome captain-generals and colonels, even of regular troops, are not to be ſuppoſed military men.

deſired

deſired that he would immediately cover them by his protection, without touching in at Boſton; the good, aſſiduous, and public-ſpirited commodore Warren directly proceeded and joined this adventure; he is now an admiral in the navy, and knight of the Bath, in reward for his good ſervices.

The aſſembly of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, Jan. 25, 1744-5, by a majority of one vote, reſolved upon this expedition; Feb. 2, the enliſtments began for voluntiers, and ſailed the end of March for Canſo, 3000 men complete; we had in good conduct and precaution, three weeks before this, ſent out ſome privateers to block up the harbour of Louiſbourg. At Canſo they remained three weeks; at this time the ſhore of Cape-Breton was impracticable from fields of ice which came down by thaws from the river of St. Laurence or Canada, and by eaſterly winds drove upon that coaſt: at Canſo was built a block-houſe of eight ſmall cannon, garriſoned with eighty men. The expedition ſailed from Canſo, April 29, and next day arrived in Chapeau-rouge bay, a little ſouth of Louiſbourg. Here, in landing our men, we were oppoſed by a body of upwards of 100 regular troops (whereof twenty-four were of the Swiſs company) commanded by Maurepang, formerly a noted ſea-rover; we ſuffered no loſs, the French retired with the loſs of eight men killed, and ten made priſoners: from Canſo we had ſent a ſmall party to St. Peter's, a ſmall French ſettlement upon Cape-Breton, and burnt it.

May 2, we detached 400 men to march round, under cover of the hills, to the N. E. harbour of Louiſbourg. Upon the ſurprize of our men's burning the ſtore-houſes and fiſh-ſtages there, about one mile from the grand battery, the troops in the grand battery (to reinforce the town, the harbour being ſufficiently guarded by the iſland battery) retired to the town precipitately, without deſtroying the trunnions and carriages of their cannon, only ſpiking or nailing them, which were ſoon drilled,

and

and ſerved againſt the town [z]; we took poſſeſſion of it May 3, and found 350 ſhells of thirteen, and thirty of ten inches, and a large quantity of ſhot.

The New-England militia before the town were in all about 3600 [a] voluntiers, whereof not exceeding 150

[z] Here we may obſerve, that by the Herculean labour of our militia (many of them were uſed to maſting and logging) whoſe great atchievements were moſt remarkable in quality of pioneers or labourers, they dragged theſe heavy cannon upon ſledges over moraſſes not practicable by horſes or oxen. By good providence, they had no occaſion to ſhew their conduct and courage in repulſing of ſallies (May 8, there was a ſmall inſignificant ſally from the town; it was ſaid, that the mutinous diſcontented garriſon could not be truſted without the works, for fear of deſertion) or ſtorming of the works. Some capricious writers have called in queſtion the New-England conduct, but not their courage.

[a] The New-England armament for the reduction of Louiſbourg, and in conſequence towards the acquiſition of the province of Cape Breton iſlands, or iſlands in the gulf of St. Laurence, was as follows:

Province of Maſſachuſſetts Bay.

Land-forces.

Regiments of Lieut. gen. Pepperell
Brig. gen. Waldo
Colonels Moulton
Hale
Willard
Richmond
Col. Gorham, called of the whale-boats
Col. Dwight and lieut. col. Gridley, of the train of artillery
Capt. Bernard's independent company of carpenters or artificers.

Sea-forces.

Ship	Maſſachuſſetts frigate, capt.	Tyng	20 guns
	Cæſar	Snelling	20
	Shirley-Galley	Rouſe	20
Snow	Prince of Orange	Smithurſt	16
Brig.	Boſton packet	Fletcher	16
Sloops		Donahew	12
		Saunders	8
		Boſch	8
Ship hired from Rhode-iſland		Griffin	20

Colony of Connecticut.

Land forces.

One reg. of 500 men, Major general Wolcot.

By ſea.

Thompſon	16 guns
Colony ſloop	16

men

men were loſt (the prince of Orange ſnow excepted, loſt in a ſtorm) by fortune of war, *viz.* killed by burſting of cannon, by ſhot from the town, killed and drowned in the raſh attempt againſt the iſland battery. Upon our firſt encamping, from the damp of the ground, there happened a general flux, or rather ſimple diarrhœa or

Province of New-Hampſhire.
Land-forces.
One reg. of 350 men, Col. More.
By ſea
Their province ſloop.

Colony of Rhode-iſland.
Land-forces none.
By ſea their colony ſloop.

The colonies ſouth of New-England furniſhed no quotas of land or ſea-force, they made ſome ſmall preſents of proviſions. The Governor of New-York lent ten good cannon of 18 lb. ſhot; without theſe, and the French unexpectedly abandoning their grand battery, our expedition muſt have been ineffectual. Governor Shirley ſays, "That without "theſe cannon, we could not have had the ſame proſpect of ſucceſs, "and all other preparations muſt have been fruſtrated."

At the deſire of general Pepperell and commodore Warren, in June, the Maſſachuſſetts-Bay ſent a reinforcement of 400 men, and Connecticut ſent 200 men; they did not arrive until after the ſiege was over. When the town or fort was in our poſſeſſion, the New-England militia garriſon proving very ſickly, they were recruited from time to time by the colonies of New-England.

The Britiſh men of war that arrived from time to time before Louiſbourg, intimidated the garriſon; they were

Commodore Warren's ſquadron from the Weſt-India ſugar iſlands, the Superbe of 60 guns, Launceſton and Mermaid 40 guns each; they joined in the adventure.

The Vigilant, a French ſhip of 64 guns, deſigned to reinforce Louiſbourg with men and ſtores, was taken by Warren's ſquadron, May 19, and added to the ſquadron; ſhe was afterwards manned moſtly from New-England.

May 22, The Princeſs Mary of 60 guns, from England, *via* Boſton.
The Hector of 40 as ditto
June 10, The Cheſter of 50 from England.
12, The Canterbury of 60 }
Sunderland of 60 } called in from Newfoundland.
Lark of 40 }
Eltham of 40 called in from convoying the New-England maſt-ſhips for England.

mere

mere looſeneſs, not mortal, and ſoon over. After we got into the town, a ſordid indolence or ſloth, for want of [*b*] diſcipline, introduced putrid fevers and dyſenteries, which, at length, in Auguſt became contagious, and the people died like rotten ſheep; this deſtroyed, or rendered incapable of duty, one half of our militia.

During the ſiege, the French made only one inſignificant ſally, May 8; the garriſon was mutinous, and could not be truſted at large; this rendered us ſecure, and the ſiege was carried on in a tumultuary random manner, and reſembled a Cambridge commencement.

In the beginning of the ſiege, ſome of our men inconſiderately ſtrolled, and ſuffered from a body of French Indians.

May 16, a party of about 100 men in boats landed in the night near the light-houſe point, to ſurprize our men who were erecting a battery there to play upon the iſland battery of the French. This party was timely diſcovered and obliged to fly into the woods, and being joined by ſome Indians, had ſeveral ſkirmiſhes with our ſcouts.

May 26, in whale-boats (ſo thin and light that a few muſket balls are ſufficient to ſink them) about 400 men

Theſe effectually covered the ſiege by cruiſing; two ſmall French veſſels only got in by a fog; and when it was reſolved by the ſea and land-officers to ſtorm the town, June 18, the depended-upon attack was by ſea, while our land-forces by way of diverſion made a feint (but without any practicable breach) to ſtorm it aſhore. At that time we had Britiſh men of war

One of 64 guns
Four of 60
One of 50
Five of 40

and upon capitulation, commodore Warren's boats took the firſt poſſeſſion of the town, and his marines mounted guard for ſome days.

[*b*] In military diſcipline there are ſundry articles beſides the manual exerciſe of the muſket and the evolutions: I ſhall mention upon this occaſion only two, 1. A due ſubordination to ſuperior officers or command, which the levelling ſpirit of our Plantations does not well admit of. 2. A proper care of their men, as to clean dreſs, wear, eating, drinking, lodging, and a proper regard to their ſick.

raſhly

raſhly attempted the iſland battery, where is bad landing, 30 guns of 28 pound ball, and 180 men in garriſon;) we loſt in this mad frolic ſixty men killed and drowned, and 116 priſoners to the French.

[c] As to the affair of the ſiege of the town, it was in this manner. In the beginning upon Greenhill, 1550 yards diſtant from the king's baſtion, called the Citadel, we erected a battery of a very few ſmall cannon, one thirteen inch, one eleven inch, and one nine inch mortars; they could do no execution; May 7, a battery was made at 900 yards diſtance, and we ſummoned the town; May 17, a battery was advanced to 250 yards diſtance

[c] I ſhall further mention only a few inſtances of miſconduct in the managers of this expedition; we cannot lay the blame upon the province in general, *viz.* 1. Hiring into the government's ſervice, captain Snelling's ſhip that had lately imported the ſmall-pox. 2. While the country levies were in Boſton, in one day, March 5, the ſmall pox appeared in three different parts of the town; no care was taken to remove theſe levies to ſome of the many convenient iſlands in Boſton bay; miraculouſly, by the care of ſome guardian angel or genius, they eſcaped the ſmall-pox, which would have rendered the expedition abortive in embryo. 3. Some companies were fitted out with unſerviceable Briſtol guinea-arms (ſome of thoſe arms notoriouſly bad, were called in) inſtead of allowing a ſmall bounty to thoſe men that would have carried their own good arms. 4. Slops or cloathing were not ſent to our troops ſooner than October; during the ſiege, that is, our being in the field, was conſtant dry favourable weather; next day, June 18, after we had poſſeſſion of the town, the raining ſeaſon ſet in, which, for want of our men being cloathed and well lodged, would have broke up the ſiege.

By way of amuſement, I may take notice of ſome New-England poems, upon this occaſion (not in diſparagement to the country; here at preſent ſome true poetical genius's begin to appear.) I ſhall mention only two inſtances; the firſt is by Mr. Niles, in the loweſt doggrel rhime, in imitation of Homer's liſts and characters of the commanding officers the ſiege of Troy; the inſtance is,

Waldo commiſſion'd is a Colonel,
And o'er land force Brigadier general.

The other is by an anonymous author in the higheſt bombaſt,

And that New-England ſchemes Old ſurpaſs,
As much as ſolid gold does tinkling braſs;
And that a Pepperell's and a Warren's name
May vie with Marlborough and a Blake for fame.

from the weſt gate; May 20, on the other ſide of a creek was erected a battery of five 42 pounders, called Tidcomb's battery, to batter the circular battery and magazine.

We made no regular approaches by trenches, that is, by parallels and zigzags, but bombarded the town at random, and did much damage to the roofs of the houſes; the weſt gate was defaced; the adjoining curtain and flank of the king's baſtion were much hurt, but no practicable breach.

The Canterbury and Sunderland being arrived, it was reſolved to ſtorm the town by ſea, June 18, by three 60, one 50, and four 40 gun ſhips, while the land-forces made a feint or diverſion aſhore; the French were afraid to ſtand it, and capitulated June 17, to march out with the honours of war, not to ſerve for twelve months; to be allowed all their perſonal effects, and to be tranſported to France, at the charge of Great-Britain.

The place was put under the joint adminiſtration of Pepperell and Warren; and all future charges were to be defrayed by their bills upon the pay-maſter general and Ordnance. According to the enliſting proclamation, our militia were to be diſcharged ſo ſoon as the expedition was over; governor Shirley arrived in Louiſbourg, Aug. 17, and perſuaded them to continue; but notwithſtanding, if the Vigilant, the Cheſter, and Louiſbourg fireſhip had not continued there over winter, the militia might have been diſcouraged, and the place in danger of being ſurprized by the French, and their Indians from Canada, Nova Scotia, and St. John's iſland.

When the Launceſton's guns were landed and mounted upon the ramparts, we had 266 good cannon mounted in the town and batteries. Capt. Montague of the Mermaid carried home the advice of Louiſbourg being ſurrendered.

As

As it is probable that Louiſbourg will be demoliſhed upon a peace, I ſhall not give any deſcription of the town and its fortifications; I only mention that from the grand battery, erected to range and defend the entrance of the harbour, to the light-houſe at the mouth of the harbour, are about 2000 yards; after we were in poſſeſſion of this battery, and drilled ſome of the great cannon, which the French had nailed and relinquiſhed, the town and battery cannonaded one another with a great and uſeleſs expence of ammunition. This folly was leſs excuſable in the French, as they could not poſſibly have any recruit of ſtores; the diſtance from the grand battery to the circular battery of the town, is 1857 yards, which is too great for much good execution. From Maurepas gate to the iſland battery, E. N. E. 1273 yards: from the iſland battery to the light-houſe, N. E. 1133 yards.

As the French royal navy at preſent are much [*d*] reduced, and not capable of ſending any conſiderable ſquadron ſo far aboard; perhaps in good œconomy and with ſufficient ſecurity, the preſent nominal chargeable corps (beſides the large detachment from the train of ordnance) in garriſon at Louiſbourg of about 4000 men, may be reduced to 2000 effective men, and the reformed men may with proper encouragement be ſent to ſettle, and be intermixed with the French in Nova Scotia; continuing them in corps and in pay for ſome time.

The preſent garriſon troops of Louiſbourg, if complete, conſiſt of

[*d*] A little bfore the commencement of the preſent Spaniſh war, the French royal navy conſiſted of

1	ſhip of 90 guns	7	ſhips of 62 guns
9	of 74	6	of 60
4	of 72	8	of 50
4	of 64	8	of 40 to 46

All theſe may be called line of battle ſhips; but in the progreſs of this preſent French war to this writing, they are reduced to near half the number

	men		
Fuller's reg.	815		
Warburton's	815	officers included	Marching regiments
Frampton's 3 comp.	245		
Sir Wm. Pepperell's	1000	for officers not included add 80 or more to each	may be called marines.
Col. Shirley's	1000		
	3875		

The project of raiſing two regiments in New-England was faulty in two reſpects. 1. A young ſettlement, already much reduced in their young men, by late expeditions; to exhauſt them more by ſtanding levies, is a grievous hardſhip; it not only retards or ſtunts the growth of a colony, but in fact, minorates them, and puts them backwards; this is the general complaint of the country; extravagant price of labour, and want of labourers. 2. The public diſappointment of the intereſt of Great-Britain, where 2000 men are depended upon; of theſe 1000 perhaps are and ever will be non-effectives, it being impracticable for the country to ſpare ſo many men, for ſtanding or continued regular troops.

Perhaps the ſpeculative original deſign, at home, might appear ſpecious; that is, 1. A garriſon of men indigenous natives of, or habituated to, the climate. 2. That by reſerving ſome officers commiſſions to the diſpoſal of the colonies, the gentlemen of our militia who had diſtinguiſhed themſelves in the expeditions, might have ſome reward for their merit; this laſt deſign was attended with the [e] inconveniency of being perverted, by beſtowing theſe commiſſions to purchaſers, to relations and to friends.

Some of our good farmers, artificers, and other labourers, leaving their ſeveral occupations for a ſhort

[e] When I write with freedom, impartial diſintereſted readers will excuſe me in quality of a diſintereſted hiſtorian; I have no perſonal diſregard or [illegible], and write of the preſent times, as if theſe things had been tranſacted 100 years ſince.

time,

time, to ſerve their country upon an exigency, in a military way, is very laudable. This was in practice amongſt the Romans; ſome of their great generals have upon this account left the plough, and when the expedition was over, have returned to it again; ſuch ought to be rewarded with places of profit or honour, without purchaſe, ſubſcriptions for preſents, aſſignments of their pay for a time, and other [*f*] avaricious contrivances.

In the ſummer 1746, the aſſembly of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, ſent to the court of Great-Britain [*g*], accounts of their provincial charge in reducing of Louiſbourg, to the amount of about 178,000 *l.* ſterling. This affair is ſtill depending, and is imputed, rather to the inactivity and improper application of our agents, than to dilatorineſs in the miniſtry and parliament: the righteouſneſs and generoſity of our parliaments are notorious, and a reimburſement is unqueſtionable; and if properly puſhed to effect, we might have had for ſome time paſt, an annual accruing intereſt upon debentures of 7000 *l.* ſterling, *per annum*, which at preſent is 70,000 *l.* New-England

[*f*] Hungry or indigent animals are voracious; and amongſt mankind this may proceed further, to a *Creſcit amor nummi quantum ipſa pecunia creſcit*, which is in itſelf indefinite.

[*g*] Theſe accounts were in ſundry articles.

1. Account of the firſt muſter-rolls in the expedition to Cape-Breton, as made up and paid by order of the General Aſſembly of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay province.

2. Account of the ſeveral ſums paid by the committee to the officers and ſoldiers who continued in your Majeſty's garriſon at Louiſbourg, until they were diſcharged by your Majeſty's order.

3. Account of the charge of tranſport veſſels employed in your Majeſty's ſervice, in the expedition to Cape-Breton, and for the ſervice of the garriſon at Louiſbourg; excluſive of ſuch as were laden with ſtores by expreſs order from the general and admiral.

4. Account of the charge of the veſſels of war in the pay of the Maſſachuſetts province, in the expedition to Cape-Breton, and after reduction of the place.

5. Account of the coſt and charge of tranſporting warlike and other ſtores, for the ſervice of your Majeſty's forts and garriſon at Louiſbourg, by order of admiral Warren and general Pepperell.

With ſome contingent charges.

currency; this would much leſſen our yearly provincial tax.

At Louiſbourg their currency ſounds as if it were ſterling value; Britiſh coin cannot be exported, therefore Spaniſh coin, which is the moſt general in all the commercial countries of our globe, reduced to a ſterling value, is called ſterling by us. Immediately upon our poſſeſſing of Louiſbourg, the Gibraltar and colonies currencies cheat began to take place; that is, the commiſſaries or pay-maſters, what was charged to the proper officers or boards at home at 5 *s.* ſterling, they paid off (to their own private advantage of 11 *per cent.* a cheat) by a milled piece of eight, value 4 *s.* 6*d.* ſterling. If Louiſbourg ſhould continue a garriſon, a conſiderable article in the Britiſh annual ſupply, thoſe commiſſaries, from the example of our American colonies and Gibraltar, would ſoon improve their profits, to pay away a light piece of eight, value 3 *s.* 6 *d.* ſterling for a Britiſh crown or 5 *s.* ſterling. The impoſition at Gibraltar of 1*s.* ſterling for 16 *d.* currency and pay, it is ſaid, has lately been under conſideration of the Britiſh parliament; may it introduce the conſideration of the abuſes in our plantation paper currencies, where the abuſe is vaſtly more; in Gibraltar 1 *s.* ſterling, is paid away for a nominal 16 *d.* in Maſſachuſetts-Bay; from a [*b*] very b—d adminiſtration,

[*b*] Loſers are indulged to complain, and naturally do complain and are clamorous. Is it poſſible for a man in the ſpace of a year or two to be gradually robbed of one half of his perſonal eſtate without complaining? The complaint is ſeaſonable, being at the opening of the new aſſembly of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, the moſt conſiderable of our colonies.

Some men do not care who ſinks, if they ſwim; if our eſtates are ſtill more to be reduced by this cheating game, ſome perſons will complain more loud; and perhaps ſome anecdotes or private hiſtory of theſe affairs, gathered from the unguarded information of ſome blabbing confidents, may require to be communicated to the public: to a man aggrieved, there is ſome pleaſure or ſatisfaction in venting himſelf by complaining, even where there is no redreſs.

From time to time, anticipating the affair of currencies, referred to the Appendix, may be excuſed: this pernicious deſolating torrent becoming more and more violent, requires a more ſpeedy reſiſtance.

we

we have exceeded all our colonies, even North Carolina, where their paper money was at a diſcount with a

The colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay was the leader of paper currencies in the Britiſh plantations, and have now at length carried this fraud to the utmoſt (even beyond North-Carolina management;) if carried further the ſtaple muſt break, and the fraud of the wicked projectors (in all affairs there are limits, which in the nature of things cannot be exceeded) ceaſe.

I ſhall enumerate ſome of the many miſchiefs attending the bad fraudulent management of paper currencies. I. From an equality with ſterling, afterwards with proclamation value, they have reduced the value of our currency to 10 for 1 ſterling. II. The governor and legiſlature keep up their ſalaries and wages to the ſterling value; but ſeemingly allow all other tranſactions to run into confuſion and ruinous depreciations. III. The depreciations might have in a great meaſure been obviated, even when there were great exigencies for preſent money. Thus after the firſt emiſſions being 40,000 *l.* anno 1690. and 1691, to pay off the public debts incurred by Phipps's Canada expedition, when there was an appearance of an enſuing depreciation, if more were emitted; the government did wiſely borrow the bills already emitted, from the poſſeſſors, with good effect, and theſe bills did not depreciate. If, in the Cape-Breton, and amuſing late Canada expeditions, we had done the ſame, it would have had the like good effect with reſpect to the public, but would not have anſwered the wicked intentions and occaſions of the promoters of theſe bills, *viz.* 1. Of thoſe who had acquired the craft of negotiating (in troubled waters good fiſhing) theſe depreciating bills to their own advantage. 2. Of thoſe who were to redeem their mortgaged eſtates by defrauding their creditors with a depreciated nominal value, inſtead of the true contracted value; well knowing, that a multiplied paper credit, depreciates itſelf more and more. IV. By act of aſſembly, a public bill of credit explicitly in its face promiſing only 2 oz. 13 *d.* 8 gr. ſilver, ſhall be equal to a bill promiſing 3 oz. ſilver; that is, in common arithmetic, 8 ſhall be equal to 9. V. In the ſame kind of impoſitions, uſed by Lewis XIV. of France, who by recoinages from time to time minorated his money; at length finding his people reduced to inſenſible dupes, he ſaved the charge of recoining, and uttered the ſame coin with only ſome little mark or ſtamp, at a further depreciated value. In June 1744, to ſave the charge of new plates, we minorated the value of emiſſions of November, 1741, by a few daſhes upon the ſame plate.

Finally, ſome ſay, that as it is a maxim in the civil law, *Qui civem ſervare poteſt, et non ſervat, occidit*; the proper check negative in the legiſlature, ought to bear all the blame of theſe iniquitous depreciations and abſurdities which expoſe the province.

fallacious cheating truck; it is 10 for 1 ſterling; ours is ſomewhat worſe in good bills ſterling.

From the ſurrender of Louiſbourg and territories thereto belonging, June 17, 1745, to June 1748, there have been ſeveral tranſient commandants, but no continued eſtabliſhed governor; if the court of Great-Britain were in earneſt to retain this place, many candidates would have appeared, and ſome perſon of great intereſt eſtabliſhed; whereas from a colonel (Warburton) being lieutenant-governor, it is now reduced to a lieutenant-colonel being governor. The commandants in ſucceſſion have been as follows from the ſurrender:

1. The general Pepperrell, and commodore Warren, naturally joint adminiſtrators.

2. Admiral Warren [*i*], governor; colonel Warburton, lieutenant-governor.

3. Commodore Knowles [*k*] governor; colonel Warburton lieutenant-governor.

4. Hobſon, lieutenant-colonel to Fuller, governor; Elliſon, lieutenant-colonel to Pepperrell, lieutenant-governor.

[*i*] Admiral Warren went home, and has ſince done great ſervice, acquired much glory, and a very great fortune.

[*k*] Commodore Knowles went to command a ſquadron from Jamaica, to reduce St. Jago de Cuba, a neſt of Spaniſh privateers, or rather pirates: his conduct and ſucceſs was as formerly; no benefit to the public, no profit to himſelf; in ſailing out, the norths (as he writes) would not allow him; and in returning to Jamaica he viſited St. Jago, but could not be reconciled to their preparations for defence. As a by-blow, he ſurprized, in March 1747-8, the French Port Louis of Hiſpaniola, with the loſs of two good captains, Renton and Cuſt, and ſeveral other men; and the fine man of war ſcooner Achilles, built by the ingenious ſhip-builder Mr. Hallowel of Boſton, in carrying advice from Mr. Knowles to Jamaica, was taken by two Spaniſh privateers. Admiral Knowles deſtroyed and carried off ſome iron guns; it is ſaid, that by capitulation it was to be deemed a free and neutral port, and conſequently proper to ſupply the French with proviſion and ammunition from all nations; this cannot be credited in the worſt of conduct.

SECT.

SECT. VIII.

Concerning the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

THE next four following ſections concern the dominions of New-England, at preſent divided into four ſeveral colonies or governments. To render the accounts of them more clear and diſtinct, we ſhall begin this ſection with an introductory article, in general, concerning the ſundry grants and ſettlements made, before they were colonized by royal charters and patents. As Maſſachuſetts-Bay province, is compoſed of many different grants, united at preſent in one charter; ſome general account of theſe ſeveral territories may be uſeful; afterwards we proceed to more particular accounts of theſe territories in ſo many diſtinct articles, beginning from the northward.

ARTICLE I.

Some general account of the dominions of New-England, *and a general account of the territories incorporated by royal charter into one province or colony by the name of* Maſſachuſetts-Bay *in* New-England.

THIS is a laborious affair, being obliged to conſult MSS records; the many printed accounts are, 1. Too credulous and ſuperſtitious. 2. Too trifling; muſt the inſipid hiſtory of every brute (ſome men as to intellects do not exceed ſome brutes) or man-animal be tranſmitted to poſterity? 3. The accounts of every white man and Indian mutually killed, or otherways dead, would ſwell and lower hiſtory ſo much, as to render the peruſal of ſuch hiſtories (excepting with old women and children) impracticable. 4. The ſucceſſion of pious paſtors, elders, and deacons, in the ſeveral townſhips, pariſhes, or congregations, I leave to eccleſiaſtic chronologers; canonization or ſainting ſeems not conſiſtent with

our

our proteſtant principles. 5. The printed accounts, in all reſpects, are beyond all excuſe [*l*] intolerably erroneous.

[*l*] Mankind are not only to be further informed, but ought alſo upon occaſion to be undeceived; for this reaſon, and not as a ſnarling critic, I have ſubjoined the following annotation, concerning ſome of the moſt noted writers of New-England affairs. At preſent I ſhall mention only two or three of thoſe that are generally read; and in the ſequel of this hiſtory, may animadvert occaſionally upon ſome others. I find in general, that without uſing judgment, they borrow from old credulous writers, and relate things obſolete for many years paſt, as if in the preſent ſtate of the country.

Dr. Cotton Mather's map of New-England, New-York, the Jerſeys, and Penſylvania, is compoſed from ſome old rough draughts of the firſt diſcoverers, with obſolete names not known at this time, and has ſcarce any reſemblance of the country; it may be called a very erroneous antiquated map.

Capt. Cyprian Southack's land map of the eaſtern North-America, is worſe; it is as rude as if done by an Indian, or as if done in thoſe ages when men firſt began to delineate countries; it gives no information, but has no other bad effect, than turning ſo much paper to waſte: but his large chart of the coaſt of Nova Scotia and New-England, being one continued error, and a random performance, may be of PERNICIOUS conſequence in trade and navigation; therefore it ought to be publicly advertiſed as ſuch, and deſtroyed, wherever it is found amongſt ſea charts.

Oldmixon's (he died anno 1742) Britiſh empire in America, 2 vol. 8vo. Lond. 1708. He generally writes, as if copying from ſome ill-founded temporary news-paper. Dr. C. Mather ſays, that Oldmixon, in 56 pages, has 87 falſhoods. He prefixes Mather's ſilly map, and confeſſes that he borrowed many things from Cotton Mather's Magnalia; leaving out, the puns, anagrams, miracles, prodigies, witches, ſpeeches, and epiſtles. Mather's hiſtory he calls a miſerable jargon, loaded with many random learned quotations, ſchool-boy exerciſes, Roman like legends, and barbarous rhimes. Neal writes, the colony of Connecticut ſurrendered their charter 1688, and have holden no courts ſince. *N. B.* Upon Sir Edmund Andrew's arrival, 1686, as governor of the dominions of New-England, *&c* they dropped the adminiſtration according to their charter; but their charter not being vacated by any legal trial, upon the Revolution they were allowed to proſecute the adminiſtration, and to hold courts as formerly—400 ſtudents in Cambridge, New-England—His account of the Indian religions, or rather worſhip, is falſe and ridiculous—The Indians live commonly to 150 Æt.—Plymouth-Bay is larger than Cape Cod, and has two fine iſlands, Rhode-iſland and Elizabeth-iſland—New-England is bounded weſt by Penſylvania—Dorcheſter is the next town to Boſton

The

The firſt Engliſh diſcovery of the eaſtern coaſts of North-America was by the Cabots in the end of the fifteenth century. The firſt effectual royal grant of ſoil or property was, anno 1584, to Sir Walter Raleigh and aſſociates; he gave the name Virginia to all the continent

for bigneſs—At Boſton there is a mint. *N. B.* Perhaps he meant the mint 1652, aſſumed in the time of the troubles and confuſions in England—An indefinite number of more errors, the repetition of them would be confutation ſufficient.

Neal's Hiſtory of New-England, 2 vol. 8vo. Lond. 1720. He is much upon the hiſtory of the low eccleſiaſtics, borrowed from the noted Mather's Magnalia Chriſti Americana. He gives a tedious ſilly ridiculous conjectural account of the ſettling of North-America from Scythia and Tartary, and the ſouthern parts from China—Natick is an Indian town, conſiſting of two long ſtreets, each ſide of the river; as if he were deſcribing one of the large Dutch voting towns with a river or canal running through it. *N B.* This Indian town at preſent conſiſts only of a few ſtraggling wigwams—Orange Fort of Albany is eighty miles up Hudſon's river—the Indian government is ſtrictly monarchical. *N. B.* The Indians of a tribe or clan, live together like friendly, but independent neighbours; their ſenators or old men, have no coercive or commanding power over their young men; all they can uſe is only perſuaſion.—Quebec has five churches and a cathedral. *N. B.* Only one parochial church, which alſo ſerves as a cathedral; and a conventual chapel in the lower town.—The great freſh water lakes behind New-England, are conſtantly frozen over in winter from November; which occaſions the long and hard winters of New-England. *N. B.* Theſe lakes are upon a ſmall ſtorm of wind, tempeſtuous, and never frozen over; and becauſe of their ſoft vapour, not much ſnow lies within twelve or twenty miles diſtance from theſe lakes. —The whale fiſhing is almoſt neglected in New-England; Newfoundland has almoſt engroſſed it. *N. B.* In Newfoundland they make only a ſmall quantity of liver oil—The clergy of New-England are not renowned for humanity and politeneſs.—The French in New-England are very numerous—The conveniency of fiſhing renders Cape-Cod populous as moſt places in New-England. *N. B.* At preſent Cape-Cod, called Province Town, may conſiſt of two or three ſeuled families; two or three cows; and ſix to ten ſheep—To enumerate the other errors and blunders of this performance, would be copying of it; but it will not bear ſuch a new impreſſion.

This annotation is already too prolix for an amuſement; we muſt defer to ſome other occaſion the amuſements from Cotton Mather's MAGNALIA, or Hiſtory of New-England, from Salmon's modern hiſtory, from Atlas maritimus et commercialis, from Jeſſelin, and from Hubbard.

in

in general, ſo called from the Engliſh queen of that time Elizabeth, a virgin queen becauſe never married.

New-England was firſt diſcovered to any purpoſe, by captain Goſnold 1602; and the fiſh, train oil, ſkin, and fur trade thereof, with the Indians for ſome years, was principally carried on by ſome Briſtol men. A raſcally fellow, Captain Hunt, carried off ſome Indians; and, in the Mediterranean ſea of Europe, ſold them to the Spaniards, as ſlaves, Moors of the coaſt of Barbary. During ſome following years the Indians had an averſion to, and jealouſy of, the Engliſh traders; but at length anno 1619, they were brought to a thorough reconciliation, which made the beginning of the New Plymouth ſettlement more eaſily carried on.

This captain Goſnold of Darmouth, was an aſſociate of Raleigh's. Anno 1602, from England inſtead of the former wide indirect courſe to Virginia by the Canary and Caribbee iſlands; he ſailed a more direct or northern courſe, and fell in with this coaſt; was embayed in N. Lat. 42 D. 10 M. where he caught many cod fiſh, and called it Cape Cod; thence ſailing ſouthward he gave queen Elizabeth's name to one iſland; and to the next iſland, where he found quantities of wild grape vines, he gave the name of Martha's Vineyard; theſe names are retained to this day.

Captain Goſnold at his return to England gave a good character of this new country, which induced ſeveral gentlemen jointly to obtain a royal grant anno 1606 (Sir Walter Raleigh from his attainder having forfeited his grants in North-America) April 10, they were two companies in one charter to plant and diſpoſe of lands there; ſee p. 204. They were much the ſame diſtricts as are our preſent ſouthern and northern diſtricts of cuſtom houſes; the ſouthern diſtrict was called the London company, which does not belong to this part of our hiſtory. The other was called the northern diſtrict, North Virginia, or the company of Plymouth or Weſt country adventurers; Lord chief juſtice Popham and Sir Ferdinando

Ferdinando Gorge were of this company; Lord chief juſtice Popham was their patron and principal promoter: he dying ſoon after, the ſettlement dropped; but ſome trade for fiſh, ſkins, and furs was carried on for ſome years. Their firſt adventure was taken by the Spaniards anno 1606. Captain George Popham appointed preſident or director of a ſettlement to be made there, came over with captain Gilbert in two ſhips with families and ſtores anno 1607; ſome families wintered at ſagadahoc near the mouth of Quenebec river (here many good rivers meet and diſcharge themſelves into the bay called Merrymeeting-Bay) anno 1608, but ſoon left it with the character of a cold, barren, inhoſpitable deſert.

Captain Smith, called the traveller, ſometime preſident of Virginia, an ingenious man, anno 1614, with two veſſels came upon this coaſt for trade and diſcovery of mines of minerals, metals, and precious ſtones; *auri ſacra fames* promoted moſt of our American diſcoveries; he ſurveyed the coaſt well, and gave names (ſtill upon record) to many of the head-lands, bays, and rivers, which are now obſolete, and other names have taken place: he preſented a plan of the country to the court of England, and it was called NEW-ENGLAND, which name it retains to this day.

About this time there were ſeveral voluntary companies of adventurers to America, but without grants or patents: the London, Briſtol, Exeter, Plymouth, *&c.* companies, who ſoon diſſolved of themſelves.

The northern company of anno 1606, inſenſibly diſſolved it itſelf; and a new company of adventurers was formed, called the Council of Plymouth, or Council of New-England; their patent reaching from N. lat. 44 D. to 48 D. is dated Nov. 18, anno 1620, to the duke of Lenox, marquis of Buckingham, marquis of Hamilton, *&c.* the corporation to conſiſt of forty; upon deaths the vacancies to be ſupplied by a vote of the ſurvivors. Being in proceſs of time divided among themſelves, they ſurrendered their patent 1635, and ſome of them, *e. g.* duke of Hamilton,

Hamilton, Sir Ferdinando Gorge, *&c.* obtained from king Charles I, peculiar grants or patents: their patent was deſignedly extended much north and ſouth, to include and keep up the Engliſh claim to New-Netherlands in poſſeſſion of the Dutch to the ſouthward, and to L'Acadie, ſince called Nova Scotia, then in poſſeſſion of the French, to the northward [*m*]; ſee a large account of theſe affairs, p. 109 and 205. To be a body corporate, to have a common ſeal, make laws, and diſpoſe of any parts thereof, but could not [*n*] delegate the juriſdiction without an additional royal charter.

This council of Plymouth, or New-England, made many indiſtinct and interfering grants; at this time many of their grants are become obſolete, ſuch as duke Hamilton's of the Naraganſet country, Mr. Maſon's of New-Hampſhire, ſome grants upon Kenebec river, *&c.* The members of this council of Plymouth differing amongſt themſelves, occaſioned the ſurrender of their charter to the court, by an inſtrument under their common ſeal dated June 7, 1635; there has been no general Britiſh company in America ſince that time.

Here we may obſerve in general, that Laud [*o*], archbiſhop of Canterbury, noted for his immoderate zeal to

[*m*] Thus Nova Scotia and Sagadahock, or the former duke of York's property, at that time in poſſeſſion of the French, were, by the Maſſachuſetts charter, annexed in juriſdiction to Maſſachuſetts-Bay; the court of Great-Britain, notwithſtanding, ſeem to reſerve their property and juriſdiction there, and accordingly have withdrawn Nova Scotia from the juriſdiction of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and conſtituted it a king's government to no purpoſe; perhaps, if it had continued annexed to a popular government, ſome progreſs might have been made towards a ſettlement.

[*n*] Lately the commiſſioners appointed from home to determine the boundaries between the colony of Rhode-iſland, and that part of the Maſſachuſetts province, formerly called the colony of New-Plymouth; the defect of a ſubſequent royal charter to New-Plymouth, was the reaſon why the commiſſioners determined, and afterwards confirmed by the king in council, ſtrictly according to the royal charter of Rhode-iſland, though thirty-eight years poſterior to the New-Plymouth grant.

[*o*] Archbiſhop Laud may be called the Father of New-England; he was a conſiderable ſtateſman, prime miniſter or principal adviſer to

promote

promote uniformity in the church, occaſioned an emigration of Non-conformiſts in great numbers to New-England, preceding anno 1641: but from that time, until the reſtoration of the family of Stuart, being about twenty years, very few came abroad; the Independent or congregational manner of religious performances having the aſcendant in England, as moſt [*p*] ſuitable to the civil adminiſtration of thoſe times. In the reigns of Charles II,

Charles I. His adminiſtration was rigid againſt the good and religious Non-conformiſts. He was accuſed and convicted of a deſign to introduce popery, and ſubvert the conſtitution; for which he ſuffered death by the axe, Jan. 10, 1644.

[*p*] Cromwell's reducing the church of England to ſeparately covenanted independent congregations, was a maſter-piece in politics; in true policy all civil governments ought to encourage the congregational ſcheme. A national eſtabliſhed church, epiſcopal or preſbyterian, in a civil national government, is *imperium in imperio*, a wheel within a wheel, as it is commonly expreſſed; which renders the movements more perplexed; and by a national church aſſuming the direction or pointing of our natural enthuſiaſm, it clogs and endangers the civil conſtitution. Our New-England congregationaliſts ſeem to deviate from their primitive diſcipline: in imitation, perhaps, of a new convocation of the clergy of the church of England, at the opening of a new parliament; our congregational miniſters of New-England have a formal ſynod or meeting at the time of the general election or opening of a new legiſlative civil aſſembly: they aſſume the conſtitution of a ſynod, *e. g.* at times they addreſs the king in this ſtyle: The paſtors of the churches in his majeſty's province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay in New-England, aſſembled at their annual convention in May: their papers are ſigned in form by the Moderator, in imitation of the legal national (by act of union eſtabliſhed in perpetuity) general aſſembly of the preſbyterian church of Scotland, my Alma mater. The Quakers have fallen into the ſame error, by their quarterly and annual itinerant meetings, which, in time by cunning men, that is, ſtateſmen, may be improved to the diſadvantage of the civil government.

A national church adminiſtration, diſtinct from the national civil adminiſtration, is very inconvenient. The moſt abſurd notional opinions in religion, if not eſtabliſhed by the penal laws of a national church, are of no conſequence, and from their abſurdity drop, if allowed to take their courſes; but if forcibly ſtopped, or dammed up, they gather, and in time may break out into a rapid torrent, carrying all before them: the civil wars in England, Car. I, are a notorious inſtance of this. To qualify this *imperium in imperio*, the Roman Emperor was Pontifex Maximus, and the King of England is called Head of the Church.

and

and of James II, many diſſenters came over. Lately the long leaſes of the farmers in the north of Ireland being expired, the landlords raiſed their rents extravagantly. This occaſioned an emigration of many north of Ireland Scotch preſbyterians with an intermixture of wild Iriſh Roman catholics. At firſt they choſe [q] New-England; but being brought up to huſbandry or raiſing of grain, called bread corn, New-England did not anſwer ſo well as the colonies ſouthward: therefore at preſent they generally reſort to Penſylvania, a good grain colony.

This council of Plymouth parcelled out their grant into ſeveral colonies or ſettlements.

Robert Brown, a [r] hot headed young enthuſiaſtical clergyman began anno 1580, to preach againſt the ceremonies and diſcipline of the church of England; he

[q] They erected a preſbyterian meeting-houſe in Boſton, Mr. John Morehead their preſbyter, as appears by an inſcription, in two columns, and not elegant:

The firſt column,

This chh. of preſbyterian ſtrangers, was congregated anno dom. 1729.
Anno dom. 1744. *by a ſmall but generous*
Illa manebit. Labilis e contra ſi ſit erana
Suprema. Deſiderio J. M. hujus eccleſiæ.

The ſecond column,

This building was begun anno domi. 1742, *and finiſh*
Number. Hujus fundamen ſaxum eſt. Domus
Peribit. Gloria Chriſti lex noſtra
Chriſtique paſtor, and firſt preached in May 6th.

Latin and Engliſh interlarded is new, excepting in burleſque; likewiſe the diſpoſition of theſe lines is ſingular, and to be rightly underſtood muſt be read by joining the ſeveral lines of each column. This church is a neat convenient building, and doubtleſs in time may be endowed with more learned and elegant paſtors of the preſbyterian mode.

[r] Mr. Wh—ld, a young clergyman of the church of England, has lately appeared in the ſame manner, preaching againſt the bad conduct of the clergy of England; his diſciples are called Methodiſts, Separatiſts, or New Lights. *N. B.* This New Light is an unnatural compoſition of free-thinking and devotional cant.

was

was perſecuted or baited and teazed by the biſhops courts; he with ſome diſciples left England, and formed a church at Middleburgh of Zealand, in the Dutch Low-countries; after ſome time this effervescence or ebullition of youth ſubſided; he returned to England, recanted, and had a church of England cure beſtowed upon him, and died in that communion, anno 1630.

A congregation of theſe Browniſts was formed in Yarmouth 1602; being haraſſed by the eſtabliſhed church of England, with their paſtor they tranſported themſelves to Leyden in Holland; here they became more moderate under the direction of their paſtor [s] Mr. Robinſon; and from Browniſts changed their denomination to that of Independents. Being of unſteady temper, they reſolved to remove from amongſt ſtrangers, after ten years reſidence, to ſome remote country in ſome wilderneſs, where without moleſtation they might worſhip GOD in their own devotional way. Thus the firſt ſettlements in New-England were upon a religious account, not properly for produce, manufactures, and trade, but as recluſes: amongſt the Roman catholics are many communities or convents of unmarried or ſingle perſons recluſe; but theſe were recluſe families.

After having obtained an inſtrument from king James I, for the free exerciſe of their religion in any part of America; they ſold their eſtates and made a common bank, and entered into articles of agreement with the adventurers called the council of Plymouth, to ſettle on the banks of Hudſon's river, now in the government of New-York; after the misfortune of being twice put back they ſailed 120 perſons in one ſhip from Plymouth (they gave the ſame name to their new ſettlement) Sept. 6, 1620, and fell in with Cape Cod Nov. 9; being too late in the ſeaſon for proceeding to Hudſon's river; although without the limits of their agreement, they were obliged to ſit down in the barren ſoil, and formed them-

[s] Mr. Robinſon's ſon Iſaac died at Barnſtaple, New-England, 1706, Æt. 106.

ſelves into a voluntary aſſociation or colony, ſubſcribed by forty-one men, but had no communication with the Indians of the country until the middle of March following; about this time theſe Indians, by ſome epidemic malignant illneſs and inteſtine wars, had been much reduced. They chuſe Mr. Carver governor for one year; but he died in April following, and was ſucceeded by Mr. Bradford. From the length of the voyage, other fatigues, and extreme cold weather, about fifty of their number died the firſt year of putrid fevers, and other ſcorbutic ails; all was in common for the firſt two or three years, having divided themſelves into nineteen families, menages, or meſſes: yearly they received a few recruits of people; anno 1624, when they received their grant, the whole ſettlement conſiſted of only 180 perſons in thirty-two meſſes. From ſo ſmall a beginning in the ſpace of about 125 years, New-England is arrived to its preſent glory. They purchaſed their lands of Maſſaſoit, the Indian Sachem; he was glad of their alliance and aſſiſtance, being then at war with the Naraganſet Indian numerous tribe.

They had no grant of their lands from the council of Plymouth until anno 1624; this grant was not to the company of adventurers and freemen, but to William Bradford, his heirs, aſſociates, and aſſigns; he was afterwards perſuaded to aſſign this grant to the freemen in general. This aſſignment (as I underſtand it) was afterwards confirmed by a new grant from the council of Plymouth to the company of freemen, Jan. 1629-30: they never had any royal charter or patent, conſequently no juriſdiction; the council of Plymouth could convey property, but could not delegate juriſdiction. Here we muſt break off, and reaſſume the hiſtory of Plymouth old colony, when we come to the article of Plymouth as a conſtituted colony.

It is certain, that the firſt ſettlers of New-England did not (as in ſome of our colonies) come over indigent or criminals,

criminals, but as devout religious [*t*] Puritans; they were not ſervants to the adventurers as in ſome colonies.

Before we enter upon the four well ſettled and conſtituted colonies of New-England, we ſhall but juſt mention ſome grants which have, in proceſs of time, been incorporated with theſe four colonies, and their memory loſt or ſwallowed up in them, and of others become obſolete. Some of them ſhall be related more at large in their proper places.

Muſcongus, or Lincoln grant, of thirty miles ſquare.

Pemaquid grant.

Shepſcut purchaſe, or Nagwaſac purchaſe of Robinhood an Indian Sagamore, Nov. 1, 1639, between Sagadahock bay and Shepſcut river: theſe three are in the territory of Sagadahoc.

Nehumkin purchaſe of the Indians, October 13, 1649, both ſides of Quenebec river; in this lies Richmond fort.

Plymouth grant, Jan. 1629, to William Bradford and aſſociates, lies both ſides of Quenebec river; in this are Cuſhnock falls about forty miles from Noridgwog; theſe three are upon Quenebec river, one half in Sagadahock, one half in the province of Main.

[*t*] The Puritans were pious, honeſt, well-meaning people; but too contracted, rigid, and ſingular in their diſcipline and practice of devotion: they would not allow of the Engliſh St. George's red croſs in the military enſigns, colours, and ſtandards. In common affairs of life, they affected to uſe ſcripture terms, and theſe not always proper; our tranſlation is not good. Ancient terms in common life, uſed by the polite Greeks and Romans, they called profane, and did not uſe them; for inſtance, inſtead of December 25, they wrote the 25th day of the tenth month; inſtead of Monday, they ſaid the ſecond day of the week; ſome of them made conſcience of a pun or rebus: thus ſome good old women would not brew on Saturdays, becauſe the ale or beer would in courſe work upon the Lord's day following.

The generality of the firſt ſettlers ſoon became more moderate and ſocial, while others became more obſtinately and intractably enthuſiaſtic; theſe laſt removed, and gave birth to the voluntier ſettlements of Providence, Rhode-iſland, Connecticut, and New Haven, in the dominions of New-England.

Pegapſcot purchaſe, each ſide of Pegapſcot river; extending to the weſt ſide of Quenebec river: Mr. Wharton purchaſed it of the Indian Sagamores 1683, being about 500,000 acres. At preſent it belongs to nine proprietors, Thomas Hutchinſon, etc. it interferes with Nahumkin purchaſe and Plymouth grant.

Province of Main granted 15 Car. I, to Sir Ferdinando Gorge, extending from Piſcataqua and Newichewenock rivers to Quenebec river, and 120 miles inland; includes the Pegapſcot purchaſe; was purchaſed by the colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and is annexed by the new charter.

Province of New-Hampſhire; from Piſcataqua river, to within three miles of Merimack river, granted to Mr. Maſon 1624, ſold by Mr. Maſon's heirs to Mr. Allen of London. At preſent that grant and conveyance ſeem to be obſolete: the property of the ſettled land is in the ſettlers; the property of the waſte land is in the crown; and the juriſdiction of the whole in the crown: it extends ſixty miles inland, and lately there is annexed an indefinite quantity of territory belonging to the crown, formerly claimed by Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

Colony of Plymouth, the mother colony of New-England; extending from Old Maſſachuſetts to the ſeas, *viz.* to Maſſachuſetts-Bay, the ocean, and within three miles of Naraganſet-Bay; it is now annexed to Maſſachuſetts; they began a voluntier ſettlement, 1620.

Mr. Weſton, one of the Plymouth adventurers, obtained a ſeparate grant of ſome land; and in May, 1622, ſent over about ſixty men to make a ſettlement at Weymouth about fifteen miles ſouth from Boſton; they managed ill, became idle and diſſolute, and ſoon broke up, and their memory is loſt.

Mr. Gorge, ſon to Sir Ferdinando Gorge, anno 1623, brought over ſome ſettlers: he had ſome commiſſion from the Council of Plymouth, as governor-general; ſoon diſcouraged, he returned home.

About the ſame time Mr. David Thompſon attempted a ſettlement at Piſcataqua; the memory of it is loſt.

Some

Some adventurers propoſed to make a ſettlement north ſide of Maſſachuſetts-Bay. Anno 1624, they began a ſmall ſettlement at Cape Anne, the northern promontory of this bay, and are now become the moſt conſiderable Britiſh America ſettlement, which, by way of eminence, is commonly called New-England; they have had a firſt and ſecond charter, as ſhall be more fully related.

Anno 1626, captain Wolaſton and ſome others, with ſervants, proviſions, and other ſtores, began a ſettlement at Braintree; but not anſwering expectation, after two years they intirely broke up: ſome went to Virginia, ſome to New Plymouth.

Anno 1630, earl of Warwick had a grant of a tract of land along ſhore from Naraganſet river, forty leagues weſt ſoutherly, and back inland to the South Seas. Earl of Warwick aſſigned his grant to Viſcount Say and Seal, and to Lord Brook, and nine more aſſociates; finding many difficulties in ſettling, they aſſigned their right to the Connecticut and New-Haven ſettlers; theſe ſettlers were emigrants from Maſſachuſetts-Bay; originally they had no title, but ſate down at pleaſure, and do at preſent enjoy a royal charter by the name of the Colony of Connecticut. Part of this grant, *viz.* from Naraganſet bay to Connecticut river, when the council of Plymouth ſurrendered their patent, was given anno 1636 by the king to duke Hamilton; he never was in poſſeſſion, and the claim is become obſolete.

Anno 1642, Mr. Mayhew obtained a grant of the iſlands of Nantucket, Martha's Vineyard, *&c.* and began to make ſettlements there.

There were ſeveral other grants and purchaſes for ſmall conſiderations, and now become obſolete; for inſtance, the million purchaſe from Dunſtable ſix miles each de of Merimack river to Winapiſinkit pond or lake, ranted by governor Andros, and council in the reign f James II; a claim of this grant was, by ſome of the rantees revived about twenty-five years ago; but as legal and odious it was dropped.

Originally according to captain Smith's map, approved of by the court of England, New-England extended from twenty miles eaſt of Hudſon's-River, northward to the river St. Croix, or perhaps to the gulph of St. Laurence, including Nova Scotia, a ſubſequent peculiar grant: when James II, ſent over Sir Edmund Andros governor, his commiſſion or patent was for the late colonies of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, Plymouth, Connecticut, and Rhode-iſland, called the dominions of New-England, diſtinct from New-York and Sagadahock, of which he was alſo appointed governor. *N. B.* New-Hampſhire and Province of Main, at that time were of no conſideration, being under the protection, and, as it were, tacitly annexed to the good flouriſhing colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

The dominions, or rather denominations in New-England, at preſent conſiſt of four colonies, or ſeverally independent legiſlatures, *viz.* Maſſachuſetts-Bay province, province of New-Hampſhire, colony of Rhode-iſland, and colony of Connecticut: for ſake of perſpicuity, to each of theſe is aſſigned a diſtinct ſection.

The new charter of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, anno 1691, is a [*x*] union or conſolidation of ſeveral ſeparate grants into one legiſlature and juriſdiction; for the more effectual protection of the whole, againſt the incurſions of our neighbouring French and Indians. Their new charter comprehends the following territories; Sagadahock, or duke of York's property; province of Main; old co-

[*x*] Anno 1643, there was a union of four colonies or ſettlements in New-England for their mutual protection againſt the enemy, French and Indian, to be managed by a deputation of two from each, in church fellowſhip; they were quota'd, Maſſachuſetts-Bay 100, Plymouth forty-five, Connecticut forty-five, New-Haven forty-five. Rhode-iſland at this time and Maſon's grant of New-Hampſhire, and Sir Ferdinando Gorge's grant of the province of Main were of no conſideration. This was a ſort of Amphictyonic council, *ſi parva magnis*. The ancient Amphictyonic council met at Thermopylæ; they were a general aſſembly or congreſs of deputies from ſeveral of the moſt noted communities, republics, or ſovereignties of Greece, who met, ſpring and autumn, upon general affairs, eſpecially for mutual protection.

lony

lony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, old colony of Plymouth; and the iſlands of Nantucket, Elizabeth, Martha's Vineyard, &c. Before we reduce theſe into ſeparate articles, to make the whole more apparent, we ſhall inſert an abſtract of this incorporating ſecond or new charter (although a late event or tranſaction) as it affords a general idea of the conſtitution of all our Britiſh colonies.

This new charter of anno 1691, bears date 3 W. and M. Oct. 7, counterſigned Pigot. After recital of the former grant or charter, it proceeds thus: *Whereas the ſaid governor and company of Maſſachuſetts-Bay in New-England, by virtue of the ſaid letters patent, are become very populous and well ſettled; and whereas the ſaid charter was vacated by a judgment in Chancery in Trinity Term, anno* 1684; *the agents of that colony have petitioned us, to be re-incorporated by a new charter; and alſo to the end that our colony of New-Plymouth in New-England, may be brought under ſuch a form of government, as may put them in a better condition of defence: We do by theſe preſents, incorporate into one real province, by the name of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay in New-England*; viz. *the former colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, the colony of New-Plymouth,* [*w*] *the province of Main, the territory of Acadia or Nova Scotia, and the* [*x*] *tract lying between Nova Scotia and province of Main, the north half of the iſles of ſhoals, the iſles of*

[*w*] In the delineation of the province of Main, in the impreſſions of a new charter, are left out (for what reaſon I know not) the following words: *And up Sagadahock river, to Quenebec river, and through the ſame unto the head thereof, and into the land northweſtward, until* 120 *miles be ended, being accounted from the mouth of Sagadahock.*

[*x*] Nova Scotia, and this tract called Sagadahock, were annexed to this neighbouring charter to keep the Engliſh claim, they being at that time in poſſeſſion of the French: ſince that time, by the treaty of Utrecht 1713, they have been quit-claimed by the French to the crown of Great-Britain; and Nova Scotia has been conſtituted a ſeparate property, and juriſdiction, or government. Sagadahock hitherto continues annexed to Maſſachuſetts-Bay province; but as it is not the abſolute property of the province, perhaps from a large extent of a frontier defenceleſs in itſelf, it is more of an incumbrance, than of any advantage.

[*y*] *Capawock, and Nantucket near Cape Cod, and all iſlands within ten leagues directly oppoſite to the main land within the ſaid bounds. To our ſubjects inhabitants of the ſaid lands and their ſucceſſors, quit-rent, a fifth part of all gold, and ſilver, and precious ſtones that may be found there. Confirms all lands, hereditaments, &c. formerly granted by any general court to perſons, bodies corporate, towns, villages, colleges, or ſchools;* [*z*] *ſaving the claims of Samuel Allen under John Maſon, and any other claim. Former grants and conveyances not to be* [*a*] *prejudiced for want of form. The governor, lieutenant governor, and ſecretary to be in the king's nomination; twenty-eight counſellors, whereof ſeven at leaſt make a board. A general court or aſſembly, to be convened laſt Wedneſday in May yearly; conſiſting of the governor, council, and repreſentatives of the towns or places, not exceeding* [*b*] *two for one place; qualification for an elector* 40 *s. freehold, or* 50 *l. ſterling perſonal eſtate. The* [*c*] *general aſſembly to elect twenty-eight* [*d*] *counſellors,*

[*y*] Martha's Vineyard, and Elizabeth Iſlands.

[*z*] This relates to the New-Hampſhire claim from Merimack river, to Necamkeag or Salem; but the late determination of the boundaries between Maſſachuſetts Bay and New-Hampſhire, by the king in council, has removed that claim.

[*a*] Governor Andros, in the arbitrary reign of James II, made a handle of want of form to diſturb poſſeſſions, by compelling the poſſeſſors to take new patents for their own lands with extravagant fees; and to pay quit-rents to the crown.

[*b*] By uninterrupted cuſtom (preſcription) the town of Boſton ſends four repreſentatives; the qualification of 40 *s.* freehold for an elector, is become nominal value, inſtead of the deſigned ſterling value, that is 4 *s.* inſtead of 40 *s.* the qualification 50 *l.* ſterling, perſonal eſtate is ſet at 40 *l.* ſterling.

[*c*] Perhaps the natural meaning of this was, the repreſentatives of the people; but at preſent the council of the former year jointly with the repreſentatives chuſe a new council.

[*d*] Perhaps, the council of the preſent conſtitution of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay, labours under two diſadvantages or imperfections. 1. To be arbitrarily led, or rather drove by the governor, to prevent future negatives. 2. As their election is annual, they may be biaſſed by the humour of the majority of the repreſentatives (this I have particularly obſerved in the caſes of multiplied emiſſions of paper currency) leſt they ſhould be dropped next annual election. A notorious inſtance of this happened anno 1741, when the repreſentatives dropped about

whereof

whereof eighteen from the old colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, four from Plymouth late colony, three from the province of Main, one for the territory of Sagadahock, and two at large. The governor, with conſent of the council, to appoint the officers in the courts of juſtice. All born in the province, or in the paſſage to and from it, to be deemed natural born ſubjects of England. Liberty of conſcience to all Chriſtians except Papiſts. The general aſſembly to conſtitute judicatories for all cauſes criminal or civil, capital or not capital. Probate of wills and granting of adminiſtrations, to be in the governor and council. In perſonal actions exceeding the value of 300 *l. ſterling, may appeal to the king in council, if the appeal be made in fourteen days after judgment, but execution not to be ſtaid. The general aſſembly to make laws, if not repugnant to the laws of England to* [e] *appoint all civil officers, excepting the officers of the courts of juſtice, to impoſe taxes to be* [f] *diſpoſed by the governor and council.*

one half of the former year's council, becauſe averſe to a certain pernicious CHEAT, or paper-money ſcheme called the LAND-BANK; the words of the act of parliament, "miſchievous undertakings and unlawful;" this ſcheme was diſannulled by an expreſs act of the Britiſh parliament 1741; and governor Belcher could not avoid negativing thirteen of the new elected counſellors.

Mr. Belcher, at preſent governor of the New-Jerſeys, is generous, void of covetouſneſs, ſtudious of the real good of the countries under his direction, and a ſtrict obſerver of royal inſtructions: if he had continued two or three years longer in the adminiſtration of the province of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay, their paper-currency would happily have been obliterated or cancelled, and muſt naturally and gradually have fallen into a ſilver currency, the general currency of the commercial world; Mr. Belcher was not a paper money governor, he was well acquainted in the commercial world.

[e] In the election of all ſuch civil officers the council and repreſentatives vote together, but not as two ſeparate negatives; theſe officers are, the treaſurer, the impoſt officers, the exciſe officers; the general commiſſary of proviſions, ſtores, and traffic for garriſons and Indian truck-houſes; attorney-general, and notaries for the ſeveral ſea-ports.

[f] Anno 1732, the council and repreſentatives of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay applied to the king in council, concerning the right which the houſe of repreſentatives had, to paſs upon accounts, brought againſt the public before they were paid: it was determined by the king in council, that the houſe of repreſentatives had no ſuch right.

The

The converſion of the Indians to be endeavoured. The governor to have a negative in all acts and elections. All acts of aſſembly to be ſent home by the firſt opportunity to the king in council for approbation; if not diſallowed in three years after their being preſented, ſhall continue in force until repealed by the aſſembly [g]. *The general aſſembly may grant any lands in late Maſſachuſetts-Bay and Plymouth colonies, and in the province of Main; but no grant of lands from Sagadahock river to St. Laurence river ſhall be valid, without the royal approbation. The governor to command the militia, to uſe the law martial in time of actual war, to erect forts and demoliſh the ſame at pleaſure. No perſon to be tranſported out of the province, without their own conſent, or conſent of the general aſſembly. The law martial not to be executed without conſent of the council. When there is no governor, the lieutenant-governor is to act; when both are wanting, the majority of the council to have the power. The admiralty juriſdiction is reſerved to the king or lords of the admiralty. No ſubject of England to be debarred from fiſhing on the ſea-coaſt, creeks, or ſalt water rivers, and may erect lodges and ſtages in any lands not in poſſeſſion of particular proprietors. All* [h] *trees fit for maſts of twenty-four*

[g] By the former charter the provincial lands were granted to twenty-ſix proprietors, and ſuch as ſhall be admitted freemen; but by this new charter, theſe lands are granted to the inhabitants in general, to be diſpoſed of by their repreſentatives or general aſſembly.

[h] By an act of the Britiſh parliament anno 1722, this cauſe is extended, *viz.* That after Sept. 21, 1722, in New-England, New-York, and New-Jerſey in America, no perſon ſhall cut or deſtroy any white pine-trees, not growing in any townſhip or its bounds, without his majeſty's licence; on pain to forfeit for every white pine-tree, of the growth of twelve inches diameter and under, at three foot from the earth, 5 *l* ſterling; for every ſuch tree from twelve to eighteen inches, 10 *l*. from eighteen to twenty-four inches, 20 *l*. from twenty-four and upwards, 50 *l*. to be ſued before the judge of admiralty: and all white pine-trees, maſts or logs made of ſuch trees, which ſhall be found cut or felled, without the king's licence, ſhall be forfeited and ſeized for the uſe of the crown. By an act of parliament 1729, the penalty in this clauſe of the charter is confirmed; and the act of 1722, is extended to all the Britiſh provinces in America; and confines the exception to the property of private perſons only, notwithſtanding they grow within the limits of any townſhip.

inches

inches diameter and upwards, twelve inches from the ground, growing upon land not heretofore granted to any private perſons, are reſerved to the crown; penalty for cutting any ſuch reſerved trees 100 l. *ſterling per tree.*

About twenty years ſince, the aſſembly of Maſſachuſetts-Bay received and accepted an additional or explanatory charter from the court of Great-Britain; the hiſtory of the affair is as follows: In the adminiſtration of governor Shute, a good natured gentleman, and though no great politician, tenacious of the prerogative, a few hot-headed turbulent men, who had got the aſcendant over their fellow-repreſentatives, and in ſome meaſure over the council, endeavoured the ſame over the governor, by aſſuming ſome articles of the prerogative: in the end of anno 1722, Mr. Shute in perſon, carried home ſeven articles of complaint againſt the houſe of repreſentatives encroaching upon the prerogative.

1. Their taking poſſeſſion of royal maſts cut into logs.

2. Refuſing the governor's negative of the ſpeaker.

3. Aſſuming authority jointly with the governor and council to appoint faſts and thankſgivings.

4. Adjourning themſelves for more than two days at a time.

5. Diſmantling of forts, and ordering the guns and ſtores into the treaſurer's cuſtody.

6. Suſpending of military officers, and muleting them of their pay.

7. Sending a committee of their own to muſter the king's forces.

Upon a hearing before the king and council, Mr. Cook, agent for the houſe of repreſentatives, and his council or lawyers in the name of the houſe of repreſentatives, gave up or renounced the 1, 3, 5, 6, and 7 articles; acknowledged their fault, induced by precedents of former aſſemblies, but wrong and erroneous; and that it was a former aſſembly, not the preſent, that had been guilty: the other two articles were regulated by

by an explanatory charter, and they directed to accept the ſame.

This explanatory charter is dated 12 regni Geo. I, Auguſt 20, and counterſigned Cocks. *Whereas in their charter, nothing is directed concerning a Speaker of the houſe of repreſentatives, and of their adjourning themſelves; it is hereby ordered, That the governor or commander in chief, ſhall have a negative in the election of the Speaker, and the houſe of repreſentatives may adjourn themſelves not exceeding two days at a time.* By the prudent conduct of governor Dummer, the aſſembly were induced to accept of this explanatory charter, by a public act of the general court, anno 1726.

We may obſerve in general, that the œconomy or mode of juriſdiction is much the ſame in all the four colonies of New-England, by juſtices of the peace and their quarterly ſeſſions, by inferior county courts of common law; and by provincial ambulatory ſuperior courts for appeals, where caſes are iſſued: it is alſo a court of juſticiary, or *oyer* and *terminer*.

They are divided into conſtituted diſtricts called townſhips; they are a kind of bodies corporate, may ſue and be ſued, elect all proper officers, ſend deputies to the legiſlature houſe of repreſentatives, and make by-laws. The management of townſhip affairs is in a few (called Select-men) annually elected by the qualified voters of the townſhips or diſtricts. In moſt of the other Britiſh colonies, their conſtituted pariſhes, by cuſtom, act as bodies corporate; the management is in [i] Veſtry-men, ſo called, who generally are for life, and the ſurvivors ſupply vacancies.

In the four colonies of New-England juries are returned to the ſeveral courts by election in certain *quotas* from

[i] Perhaps ſo named, becauſe they commonly meet in the veſtry-room of the church, where the prieſt is ſuppoſed to keep his ſacerdotal veſtments, and may be called the dreſſing-room.

the

the ſeveral townſhips, but not by the appointment of the ſheriffs.

In the rigid, and furiouſly zealous church and ſtate adminiſtration of Laud, Archbiſhop of Canterbury (he carried both church and ſtate beyond their bearings, and conſequently in the nature of things they overſet) many puritans and other nonconformiſts flocked over to New-England; this occaſioned a ſtate proclamation April 30, 1637, forbidding any ſubjects to tranſport themſelves to America, without licence from his majeſty's commiſſioners. Anno 1640, the people in New-England did not exceed 4000, and, in the twenty following years, many went [*k*] home from New-England: their way of worſhip was then in great vogue in Old-England.

N. B. Many of the firſt Engliſh ſettlements in America, were by campanies of Adventurers, with a joint ſtock; annually in London, each company choſe a preſident and treaſurer for managers.

We proceed to the ſeveral articles concerning the colonies or territories, united into one province by the new charter of Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

Each article goes no further than the time of this charter union. From that time the hiſtory of their joint affairs is carried along in the article of Old Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony.

[*k*] It is ſaid that amongſt others, Oliver Cromwell was ſtopped from coming over. This ſeems to be an idle ſurmiſe; Cromwell was an active politic man; it cannot be imagined that a man of that genius, and in the prime of life, would chuſe a wilderneſs or deſert for his ſcene of action: beſides, a perſon of his caſt, and who probably might prove turbulent at home, in good court policy ought to be allowed to withdraw.

ARTICLE II.

Concerning Sagadahock, *formerly called the duke of* York's *property.*

KING Charles II, March 12, 1663-4, granted to his brother the duke of York, a certain territory or tract of land, thus deſcribed, *All that part of the main land of New-England, beginning at a certain place, called or known by the name of St. Croix, adjoining to New-Scotland in America; and from thence extending along the ſea-coaſt, unto a certain place called Pemaquin or Pemaquid, and ſo up the river thereof, to the fartheſt head of the ſame, as it tendeth northwards, and extending from thence to the river of Quenebec, and ſo up by the ſhorteſt courſe to the river of Canada northwards.*" This was called the duke of York's property, and annexed to the government of New-York. The duke of York, upon the death of his brother king Charles II, became king James II, and upon king James's Abdication theſe lands reverted to the crown.

At preſent the territory of Sagadahock, is ſuppoſed to extend from the river St. Croix eaſtward, to the river of Quenebec weſtward, and from each of theſe two rivers due north to the river of St. Laurence; thus St. Laurence or Canada river is its northern boundary, and the Atlantic ocean is its ſouthern boundary. When Nova Scotia was in poſſeſſion of the French, Sagadahock territory was included in the commiſſion of the French governor of L'Acadie or Nova Scotia; thus it was in the time of granting a new royal charter to Maſſachuſetts-Bay; therefore to keep up the Engliſh claim to this territory, as well as to Nova Scotia, the juriſdiction of both were included in that charter.

Upon the peace of Utrecht 1713, Nova Scotia and Sagadahock were quit-claimed by France to Great-Britain; and the court of Great-Britain reaſſumed the juriſ-

diction

diction of Nova Scotia, and after a few years more, the crown purchaſed the property of the ſoil or ſeigneurie of all the French claimers: it is now a ſeparate king's government, with the property in the crown; but this territory of Sagadahock remains in the juriſdiction of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and ſends one member to the council, but hitherto not any to the houſe of repreſentatives of Maſſachuſetts-Bay: the general aſſembly cannot diſpoſe of lands there, without the conſent of the King in council. The property of peculiar grants there, remain good to the ſeveral claimers, until the crown ſhall purchaſe the ſame, as was the caſe in Nova Scotia.

Colonel Dunbar projected Sagadahock territory to be ſet off as a ſeparate government for himſelf; this was introduced, by obtaining a royal inſtrument or inſtruction, to ſet off 300,000 acres of good maſt and ſhip timber land, for the uſe of the crown or navy; it was forwarded by a royal inſtruction to colonel Phillips, governor of Nova Scotia, April 27, 1730, to take poſſeſſion of the lands between St. Croix river and Quenebec river. Accordingly a detachment of thirty men with an officer, made from the four companies of his regiment in garriſon at Canſo in Nova Scotia, was ſent to take poſſeſſion of that country, to keep garriſon at Frederick's fort on Pemaquid river; where the detachment kept for ſome time. Upon application home of the Muſcongus company, proprietors in part of Sagadahock, by their indefatigable agent Mr. Waldo, this inſtruction was revoked, Auguſt 10, 1732, and colonel Phillip's detachment was called off. At preſent, the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, to obviate cavils or complaints, of their relinquiſhing the occupancy of this territory, keep a truck-houſe and garriſon at George's, and a garriſon at fort Frederick, and is likely to continue under the juriſdiction of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and is at preſent annexed to the county of York, or province of Main.

In the beginning of this French war anno 1744, the fencible men in this large territory of Sagadahock were only

only at	George's and Broad-bay	270
	Pemaquid	50
	Shepſcut	50
		370

but at this writing 1748, very few of theſe remain, being much expoſed to the Canada French Coureurs de Bois, and their Indians.

In the beginning of the laſt century England and France indifferently traded to Sagadahock. Under the direction and countenance of Chief juſtice Popham, the Engliſh made the[l] firſt New England ſettlement, 1608, at Sagadahock, but of ſhort continuance.

Anno 1613, captain Argol from Virginia broke up ſome French ſettlements at Sagadahock.

The claims to lands in the territory of Sagadahock, are of various and perplexed natures, *viz.* Some by old Indian grants in drunken frolicks for none or not valuable conſiderations; ſome by grants from the council of Plymouth; ſome by patents from the governors of New-York, when under that juriſdiction, particularly from governor Dongan a Roman catholic in the reign of James II.

Some part of this territory was granted by the council of Plymouth, 1629, to Mr. Beauchamp of London merchant, and to Mr. Leverett of Boſton in Lincolnſhire, and their aſſociates, called the Lincoln company or ſociety, *viz.* from Muſcongus, now called Broad-Bay, a little eaſtward of Pemaquid to Penobſcot bay ten leagues along ſhore, and from this termination and that of Muſcongus ten leagues inland, ſo as to make a parcel of land of thirty miles ſquare. This Plymouth grant ſeems to have been confirmed by a royal grant of Charles II, ſigned Howard, privy ſeal; that was about the time when the Connecticut and Rhode-iſland charters were granted.

[l] Where a repetition is ſhort, it ought to be allowed, becauſe it ſaves the reader the trouble of turning back by a reference.

Leverett's

Leverett's title lying dormant, Sir William Phipps purchaſed of Madakawando, chief Sachem (as it is ſaid) of the Penobſcot Indians, the lands each ſide of George's river, ſo high as the ſecond falls; Spencer Phipps, adopted heir of Sir William Phipps, made over his right to the heirs and aſſociates, of Leverett; anno 1719, it was conveyed to ſeveral aſſociates, ſo as to make thirty equal ſhares in the whole; the new aſſociates, obliged themſelves to ſettle two townſhips upon George's river, of forty families each; but an Indian war breaking out, the conditions were never performed: the Indians hitherto have not formally quit-claimed it. Mr. Waldo, a gentleman well qualified for an agent, a partner, who effectually negotiated the affair at home, againſt the contrivances of colonal Dunbar, to annex it to the crown, has acquired a very conſiderable part of this grant.

George's truck-houſe and fort lies near the center of this grant, is about twelve miles up this river; at the mouth of the river is a bar of a very ſmall draught of water; five miles higher are the firſt falls of George's river; Broad-bay of Muſcongus is only a large creek or bay with a ſmall rivulet running into it.

In the territory of Sagadahock not much good ſhip-timber; ſome white pine for maſts; may be of good ſervice to Boſton in ſupplying it with firewood. The ſoil is not bad.

The grants of the Shepſcut lands, and of the Pemaquid lands, ſeem not included in the duke of York's property.

Moſt of the grants and conveyances in this territory, are not to be found upon record, which occaſions great confuſion in claims.

ARTICLE III.

Concerning the province of Main.

THIS being the firſt of the territories at preſent called New-England that falls in our courſe, for the reader's more ready conception of the New-England affairs, we ſhall, *ab initio*, recapitulate ſome matters already delivered.

King James I. by letters patent bearing date Nov. 3, 1620, *granted all that land and territory in America, lying between N. lat. of 40 D. to 48 D. unto the duke of Lenox, marquis of Buckingham, marquis of Hamilton, and others their aſſociates noblemen and gentlemen, in all forty perſons, and to their ſucceſſors; and incorporated them by the name of the council eſtabliſhed at Plymouth in the county of Devon, for ſettling, planting, ruling, and governing all that country by the name of New-England; to have and to hold, poſſeſs and enjoy, all the continent lands and iſlands between the ſaid latitudes to them and their ſucceſſors for ever; with power to alienate, aſſign, convey, and ſet over, under their common ſeal, any part or portion thereof to any of his majeſty's denizens, or other adventurers.*

In the end of James the firſt's reign, Sir Ferdinando Gorge, preſident of the council of Plymouth, and captain Maſon had ſundry grants from Neumkeag river, which divides the preſent towns of Salem and Beverly, to Sagadahock or Quenebec river, which were afterwards altered into the grants of the Province of Main, and of New-Hampſhire as at preſent.

The council of Plymouth, Nov. 7, 1629, granted to Gorge and Maſon, all that tract of land from the heads of Merrimack river and Sagadahock or Quenebec river, to the lake Iroquois, now called Cataraqui or Ontario, and the river which empties itſelf from the ſaid lake into Canada river to be called LACONIA; but as they never occupied it, this grant is become obſolete, and may be ſaid to have reverted to the crown; and at preſent, ſince the late

late ſettlement made of the line between Maſſachuſetts-Bay and New-Hampſhire, may be ſaid to be in the juriſdiction of New-Hampſhire.

Sir Ferdinando Gorge, preſident of the Council of Plymouth, or Council of New-England, obtained a grant from this council, April 22, 1635, of a tract of land called the Province of Main, extending from Piſcataqua river to Sagadahock and Quenebec river. This grant was confirmed by the crown, April 3, 1639. The agent or agents of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, purchaſed, 15 Car. I, July 20, 1677, this grant of the heirs or aſſignees of Gorge.

The grant of the province of Main *begins at the entrance of Piſcataqua harbour, up the ſame to Newichewanock river, and through the ſame to the fartheſt head thereof, and thence north-weſtward, till* 120 *miles be finiſhed; and from Piſcataqua harbour's mouth aforeſaid, north-eaſtward along the ſea-coaſt to Sagadahock, and up the river thereof to Quenebec river, and through the ſame to the head thereof, and thence into the land north-weſtward, till* 120 *miles be finiſhed; and from the period of* 120 *miles aforeſaid, to croſs over land, to the* 120 *miles before reckoned, up into the land from Piſcataqua harbour through Newichewanock river: as alſo the north half of the iſles of Shoals.*

The lines of the territories belonging to the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and of the province of New-Hampſhire, being in diſpute for many years, New-Hampſhire petitioned to the king in council, that their bounds with Maſſachuſetts-Bay might be determined; accordingly with conſent of the agents for Maſſachuſetts-Bay, April 9, 1737, [*m*] a commiſſion under the great ſeal of Great-Britain was iſſued, appointing five of the eldeſt counſellors from each of the neighbouring provinces of New-York, New-Jerſeys, Nova Scotia, and Rhode-iſlands (five to be a quorum) as commiſſioners, reſerving property and an appeal to the king in council: the appeal was heard

[*m*] The charge of paſſing the commiſſion was 135 *l.* 4 *s.* 6 *d.* ſterling.

before a committee of privy council, March 5, 1739; the commiſſioners, and afterwards the king in council, ſettled this line N. 2 D. W. true courſe. Accordingly New-Hampſhire *ex parte* (Maſſachuſetts Bay refuſing to join in the ſurvey) by Mr. Bryant a ſurveyor of lands, ſettled the line with the province of Main, *viz.* From the mouth of Piſcataqua river to the head of Newichewanock, a little north of Lovel's pond, upon a great pond from whence proceeds Mouſſum river, about north-weſterly forty miles, thence N. 8 D. E. by needle (the commiſſioners, and as afterwards confirmed by the king in council, ſettled this line N. 2 D. W. true courſe) which is by allowing 10 D. variation, thirty miles. This ſurvey was in March, the ſnow and ice melting, rendered the further ſurvey progreſs impracticable; thus forty miles of this line remain to be run.

Both governments of Maſſachuſetts-Bay and of New-Hampſhire were in one and the ſame perſon at that time; and it was ſuſpected that the governor favoured Maſſachuſetts-Bay; therefore the general aſſembly of New-Hampſhire brought on a complaint againſt the governor, previous to the appeal's coming on. The commiſſioners began to ſit Auguſt 1; the general aſſembly of New-Hampſhire was adjourned by the governor to the 4th of Auguſt, which retarded them three or four days in appointing managers and giving in their pleas: the commiſſioners pronounced judgment Sept. 2; the governor prorogued the aſſembly from Sept. 2, to Oct. 13, that they might not have an appeal ready to give into the commiſſioners in ſix weeks from judgment given, the time limited by the commiſſion. The complaint was heard before a committee of the council; they found the complaint juſt, and their report was approved of by the king in council. To prevent the like inconveniencies, a ſeparate governor was appointed for New-Hampſhire; and the governments of Maſſachuſetts-Bay and New-Hampſhire have been in two diſtinct perſons ever ſince.

The

The method uſed before the new charter by the colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay purchaſe of the heirs or aſſigns of Gorge, to convey or diſpoſe of lands there, was in this manner; for inſtance, July 26, 1684, the preſident of the province of Main, by order of the general aſſembly of the colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, makes a grant of the townſhip of North-Yarmouth to ſundry perſons. In a ſtrict ſenſe, the colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay could not exerciſe any juriſdiction there, becauſe the heirs, *&c.* of Gorge could not delegate juriſdiction; notwithſtanding, we find orders of juriſdiction ſigned in Boſton; for inſtance, in the war againſt the Indians, an order to ſheriffs, conſtables, *&c.* to impreſs boats and land-carriages, is ſigned Boſton, Sept. 16, 1689, Thomas Darnforth, preſident of the province of Main.

The north and ſouth lines running inland are 120 miles; the front or ſea line, and the rear line, may be about eighty miles, that is, the contents of the province of Main may be about 9600 ſquare miles; whereof at preſent granted in townſhips or diſtricts, are only the firſt or ſea line, conſiſting of the townſhips of Kittery, York, Wells, Arundel, Biddiford, Scarborough, Falmouth, North-Yarmouth, George-Town, or Arrowſick, Brunſwick, and the ſettlement of Topſam; and a ſecond or inland line, conſiſting of Berwick, Philips-Town, Naraganſet, No. 1. Naraganſet, No. 7. Marblehead townſhip, Powers, and other townſhips, and Cape-Anne townſhip.

In this territory of Main, there are ſome private purchaſes from the Indians, which the proprietor-general, the aſſembly of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, ſeem not to diſpute; for inſtance, anno 1683, Mr. Wharton, a merchant in Boſton, purchaſed of ſix Sagamores, about 500,000 acres called the Pegepſcot purchaſe; bounded five miles weſt from Pegepſcot river, by a line running at five miles diſtance parallel with the river, to a certain fall in the ſaid river, and thence N. E. about forty-four miles in a ſtrait line to Quenebec river; it includes the eaſtern diviſions of Nahumkee purchaſe, and of Plymouth

purchaſe; Plymouth purchaſe extends fifteen miles each ſide of Quenebec river. Wharton dying inſolvent, the adminiſtrator ſold this purchaſe for not much exceeding 100*l.* New-England currency, 1714, to eight or nine proprietors, *viz.* Winthrop, T. Hutchinſon, Ruck, Noyes, Watts, Minot, Mountford, *&c.* It is bounded S. weſterly by North-Yarmouth, which takes in a ſmall part of this grant at ſmall point; George-Town, Brunſwick, and Topſam are in this grant.

At the breaking out of the French war, in the province of Main were militia, or fencible men, 2485.

	Men		Men
Townſhip of Kittery	450	Scarborough	160
York	350	Falmouth	500
Wells	500	N. Yarmouth	150
Arundel	95	Brunſwick	50
Biddiford	120	Naraganſet N. 1.	20
Berwick	150	New-Marblehead	40
Philip T.	150		920
Sir W. Pepperell's reg.	1565	Sagadahock	370
		Col. Waldo's reg.	1290

But at preſent many of theſe have left their towns and habitations, being expoſed to the French and their Indians.

For ſome time during the old charter of Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, they extended their claim to three miles north of the northernmoſt part of Merrimack river, called Endicots Tree, near the crotch or fork where Pemagawaſet river, and the wares or diſcharge of Winipiſiakit pond or lake meet, and from thence extended their due eaſt and weſt line to the E. and W. oceans, that is, from the Æthiopic ocean to the South Sea or Pacific ocean. Thus they aſſumed (as being prior) almoſt the whole of Maſon's grant or New-Hampſhire, and the S. E. corner of Gorge's grant, or the province of Main, ſo far as Black-Point, near Saco river, both in property and juriſdiction; and did accordingly make grants of lands and conſtitute townſhips

townſhips which ſent repreſentatives or deputies to the general aſſembly of Maſſachuſetts; but upon complaint of the heirs of Gorge and Maſon to the king in council and the courts in Weſtminſter-hall, Maſſachuſetts-Bay diſclaimed theſe lands, as hereafter ſhall be more fully related.

The whole of the province of Main at preſent conſtitutes only one county, called the county of York; and to this county is [*n*] annexed the territory of Sagadahock.

In the province of Main and New-Hampſhire, from the firſt ſettling of the Engliſh, for about fifty years, that is, until king Philip's war, the Engliſh and Indians kept a good friendly correſpondence; but ever ſince, during the European French wars, the French of Canada have made uſe of the ſeveral tribes of our neighbouring Abnaquie Indians to diſtreſs our ſettlements; vide Sect. III. Article 4.

Prior to the Maſſachuſetts-Bay purchaſe, the ſettlers in the province of Main never had any other protection; but that of the colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay. When the court of England, much corrupted, began in an arbitrary deſpotic manner to re-aſſume grants, charters, *&c.* it was ordered by the king in council, July 24, 1679, that the Maſſachuſetts-Bay government, upon the reimburſement of 1200 *l.* ſterling paid Gorge's heirs for the province of Main, ſhall ſurrender it to the crown, being a purchaſe made without his Majeſty's permiſſion. The new charter of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, 1691, put an end to that and all other pretended claims.

[*n*] The lands eaſt of Quenebec river were never a ſettled French property with poſſeſſion and juriſdiction; and the French tranſitory conqueſt of it, was only a ſuſpenſion of the former Britiſh owners property; and upon re conqueſt or a peace, returned to the former owners, *jure poſtliminii*, or a right to one's former inheritance; therefore in colonel Dunbar's caſe the board of trade and committee of council reported to the king in council, that the Maſcongus aſſociates ſhould not be diſturbed in their poſſeſſion, and to be under the defence or protection of Maſſachuſetts-Bay as formerly.

Geography and chronology, are two the moſt conſiderable elements of Hiſtory. The moſt eſſential and invariable things in the geography of a country, are its general poſition upon the ſurface of the earth as to latitude and longitude; the remarkable mountains and great hills; the ſea-coaſt; and the runs of rivers and rivulets from the inland into the ſea.

In the province of Main, the remarkable mountains and hills are, 1. The White-Hills, or rather mountains, inland about ſeventy miles north from the mouth of Piſcataqua harbour, about ſeven miles W. by N. from the head of the Pigwoket branch of Saco river; they are called White, not from their being continually covered with ſnow, but becauſe they are bald a-top, producing no trees or bruſh, and covered with a whitiſh ſtone or ſhingle. Theſe hills may be obſerved at a great diſtance, and are a conſiderable guide or direction to the Indians in travelling that country. 2. The Pigwoket hills, at a ſmall diſtance from the White Hills, are much inferior to them, and ſcarce require to be mentioned. 3. Aquimanticus Hills, well known amongſt our ſailors, are in the townſhip of York, about eight miles inland; it is a noted and uſeful land-making, for veſſels that fall in northward of Boſton or Maſſachuſetts Bay.

Upon the ſea-coaſt, Caſco-Bay is a large, good, and ſafe harbour or road for veſſels of any burden; being ſheltered or covered by many iſlands: here ſome of the contract maſt ſhips take in their lading. Along this coaſt are many harbours, commodious for ſmall craft in lading of lumber and fire-wood for Boſton.

The capes, promontories, or head-lands, belong properly to ſea charts; I ſhall only mention Small-Point at the ſouth entrance of Sagadahock, Cape-Elizabeth in the S. E. corner of Caſco-Bay, Black-Point, four miles N. E. of Saco river, Cape-Porpus in Arundel, and Cape-Neddick in Wells.

The conſiderable rivers are, 1. Quenebec and its mouth called Sagadahock, which divides the province of Main, from

from the Old Briſtol purchaſe of Pemaquid, including the Shepſcut purchaſe, and from the territory formerly called the duke of York's property, all which at preſent are called the territory of Sagadahock. From the entrance of Sagadahock to Merry-meeting Bay are eighteen miles; thence to Richmond fort and truck-houſe near the mouth of Quenebec river, are twelve miles; thence to the firſt falls, though only a ripling called Caſhnock falls, are eighteen miles; thence to Taconick falls are eighteen miles: here in M. Dummer's Indian war our people left their whale-boats, and marched forty miles by land to the Indian village or town called Naridgwoag; they deſtroyed the ſettlement, brought away the ſcalp of the French miſſionary father Rale, a Jeſuit, with about twenty-ſix Indian ſcalps: ſome Indians were drowned in croſſing the river precipitately. Thus from the mouth of Sagadahock to Naridgwoag are about 106 Engliſh miles, and the province of Main cannot extend above twenty miles higher; theſe Indians in travelling to Quebec, with their canoes go much higher up the river: the Naridgwoag Indians with their French miſſionaries, have in the French wars been very troubleſome to the Engliſh ſettlements; but by Dummer's well managed Indian war, and a late mortality from a putrid fever and dyſentery, received when in curioſity they viſited duke d'Anville's ſickly troops and ſquadron at Chebucto, upon the Cape-Sable coaſt of Nova Scotia, they are now reduced to very inconſiderable impotent numbers. 2. Ameraſcogin river: up this river, not many years ſince was a tribe of Indians, but are now extinct; near the mouth of this river is Brunſwick fort; this river is particularly noted for plenty of good ſturgeon: not many years ſince a merchant of Boſton contracted with ſome fiſhmongers of London to ſupply them with a certain quantity of well-cured ſturgeon every year, but whether from the bad quality of the fiſh, or rather from the negligence of the people employed in curing of it, there was no ſale for it in London, and the fore-

ſaid Indian war breaking out, that fiſhery is given up. 3. Saco river, its conſiderable branches are Pigwacket river; it riſes about ſeventy miles north of Piſcataqua harbour, and Oſſipee river, from Oſſipee pond about fifty-five miles N. weſterly from Piſcataqua harbour: about fifty miles from the mouth of Saco formerly were Pigwackets, a conſiderable tribe of Indians with a French miſſionary, but they are now almoſt extinct; this river is navigable only a ſmall way to the falls for ſmall veſſels; here is a fort and truck-houſes; at the mouth of Saco river is Winter Harbour, ſo called from Mr. Winter, who had a farm there. 4. Mauſon river comes from ſome ponds near the famous Lovel's pond, about forty miles above Piſcataqua harbour: at theſe ponds Bryant the ſurveyor began to ſet off the N. 8 D. E. line between the province of Main and New-Hampſhire; this river falls into the ocean in the town-ſhip of Wells. 5. Piſcataqua river, which for the ſpace of forty miles divides New-Hampſhire from the province of Main; from the mouth of this river or harbour to the inlet of Exeter bay are about ten miles; thence to the mouth of Catechecho river, which comes from the W. N. W. are five miles; from this upwards, Piſcataqua river is called Newichawanock river, and higher it is called Salmon falls river.

The ſmall rivers or runs of water and of ſhort courſe are many: Recompence river; Royals river running through Cape-Anne grant or townſhip, and through North Yarmouth to the ſea; Preſumpſcot river, comes from Jabago pond, by Naraganſet N°. 7. through Falmouth, where it falls into the ſea; Falmouth river or Stroud Water of Caſco-Bay; Quenebec river dividing Arundel from Wells; York river in the townſhip of York.

ARTICLE IV.

Concerning the late colony of Plymouth.

WHAT relates to this colony, prior to their more fixed and determined grant, anno 1629, from the council of Plymouth, ſee p. 370.

Some

Some Engliſh Puritans belonging to Mr. Robinſon's church in [o] Leyden in Holland, with ſome of their friends in England, obtained of the council of Plymouth, an indiſtinct imperfect grant of lands in North-America; their deſign was for Hudſon's river, but falling in with Cape Cod lare in the year Nov. 11, they were obliged to winter there, and in a ſhallow bay and poor ſoil within the great bay of Maſſachuſetts; they ſit down and call it New-Plymouth, in remembrance of Plymouth in England, from whence they took their departure.

They had no particular grant from the council of Plymouth of the country where they ſettled, until 1624; and this was ſo indiſtinct, that they obtained a new grant 1629, but ſtill ſo obſcure as not to be underſtood at preſent, as appeared at a hearing 1741, before commiſſioners appointed by the court of Great-Britain, to ſettle their line with the colony of Rhode iſland.

We ſhall only briefly obſerve, that captain Smith the traveller, with two ſhips, 1614, made a good voyage upon theſe coaſts, and, by his means, the country was named New-England by the court of England.

Anno 1616, four or five ſail of fiſhing veſſels from London, and as many from Plymouth, make good fares of fiſh.

Anno 1618, only two ſail from Plymouth in England fiſh upon the coaſt of New-England.

Anno 1619, only one ſhip of 200 tons; made a good voyage.

Anno 1621, ten or twelve ſhips from the weſt of England, fiſh upon the coaſt of New-England, and made good voyages with their fiſh to Spain.

Anno 1622, there were upon the coaſt of New-England thirty-five veſſels from the weſt of England.

Anno 1623, captain Smith writes, that there were for that year forty ſail from England, fiſhing upon the coaſt

[o] In Leyden to this day, an Engliſh preſbyterian congregation is maintained in their works by the ſtates.

of

of New-England. That Canada and New-England in ſix years laſt paſt, had ſhipped off 20,000 beaver-ſkins.

After ſome time, a number of people, from New-Plymouth, purchaſed of the Indians, a parcel of land called Noſſet near Cape-Cod, and gave it the name of Eaſtham; their purchaſe upon this narrow promontory reached about thirty miles from north to ſouth. The firſt two years they lived without any ſupply from England, cleared and planted ſixty acres with Indian corn. At firſt they ſeemed to have a ſort of Lex Agraria for each meſs or menage; or rather their poſſeſſions ſeem to have been in common.

Mr. Edward Winſlow [*p*] their agent, anno 1624, imported the firſt cattle, being a bull and three heifers: about this time Plymouth ſettlement conſiſted only of 180 perſons; the adventurers, as it is ſaid, had expended 7000 *l.* ſterling being entirely carried on by adventures; but being diſcouraged, they ſold their intereſt to the ſettlers for a trifle. The grant at firſt was ſole to Mr. Bradford, his heirs, aſſociates, and aſſigns; but at the requeſt of the general aſſembly, he aſſigned his right to the freemen: upon governor Carver's death April 1621, he was annually choſen governor while he lived (excepting one year Mr. Winſlow, and two years Mr. Prince) he died May 9, 1657, Æt. 69.

GOVERNORS.

Mr. Carver, from November 1620 to April 1621.

Mr. Bradford the grantee ſucceeded, and was annually choſen governor until his death, May 1657, excepting for three years; he was a man of no family, and of no learning.

Mr. Prince, who had twice been choſen governor in Mr. Bradford's life-time, ſucceeded, and was annually choſen governor till death, Aug. 29, 1673, Æt. 71. He was a man of good natural parts, but of no learning.

[*p*] Mr. Winſlow died in Cromwell's Hiſpaniola expedition 1655 Æt. 61.

Mr.

Mr. Prince was ſucceeded in annual elections by Joſiah Winſlow, who died Dec. 18, 1680.

Next Richard Trent was unanimouſly elected, until their charter was dropped or ſuperſeded.

I find that upon the Revolution, the commander in chief of Plymouth colony is called preſident, not governor: thus major Church's commiſſion from Plymouth to go againſt the eaſtern Indians is ſigned Sept. 6, 1689, Thomas Hinkley, preſident.

N. B. At firſt this colony was only a voluntary aſſociation; in the beginning the governor had only one aſſiſtant, afterwards three, and ſometime after five; at length, anno 1637, they choſe ſeven aſſiſtants.

As the boundaries by their grant were ill-determined, there were continual diſputes between this colony and that of Rhode-iſland. By a commiſſion from Charles II, 1664, to colonel Richard Nichols, Sir Robert Carr, George Cartwright, and Samuel Maverick, to determine controverſies concerning ſeveral boundaries in the continent of North America, they paſſed judgment concerning the boundaries between Rhode-iſland and Plymouth colony; as it was only by way of amuſement to quiet the minds of the people in theſe colonies, and never confirmed by the king in council, it had no effect.

Ever ſince the colony of Plymouth has been annexed to the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, thoſe diſputes have continued or been revived from time to time. The chief diſpute was concerning Attleborough Gore, which if Maſſachuſetts-Bay had quit-claimed to them, Rhode-iſland would have given a general quit-claim in all other concerns; and prevented the loſs of Briſtol, and ſome part of Barrington, Swanzey, Tiverton, and Little Compton; but the influence of a few ill-natured, obſtinate, inconſiderate men, [*q*] prevailed in the legiſlature to the damage of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

[*q*] Here we may obſerve the pernicious conſequence of blindly following the dictates of inconſiderate, imprudent, clamorous, or violent leading men.

Rhode-

Rhode-iſland by memorials ſent home, the agents of Maſſachuſetts Bay giving conſent, obtained a commiſſion for the eldeſt counſellors of the neighbouring governments to meet and adjuſt their boundaries; accordingly they meet at providence in ſummer 1741, and found that the laſt determined grant for Plymouth colony, 1629, ſpecifies it in this manner, *viz.* between Conohaſſet [*r*] rivulet towards the north, and [*s*] Naraganſet river, towards the ſouth; and between the [*t*] ocean towards the eaſt, and a ſtrait line extending directly into the main land from the mouth of the ſaid Naraganſet river, to the utmoſt bounds of the Packanoket country, alias Sawamſet country, the famous king Philip of Mount Hope his country, to the [*u*] Nipmug country, which determination is now forgot, and from Cohaſſet back into the main land weſtward, to the utmoſt bounds of the Packanoket country.

The better to underſtand the boundaries of the late colony of New-Plymouth (now annexed to the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay) with the colony of Rhode-iſland; I muſt in anticipation, give the boundaries of [*w*] Rhode-iſland colony, as delineated in their charter, *viz.* bounded weſterly by the middle channel of Pakatuk river, and up the ſaid river northerly to the head thereof, and thence in a ſtrait line due north to Maſſachuſetts ſouth bounds; extending eaſterly three Engliſh miles to the E. N. E. of the moſt eaſtern and northern parts of Naraganſet bay, as it lieth or extendeth itſelf from the ocean; bounded ſoutherly on the ocean, unto the mouth of the river which cometh from providence; and from the town of Providence, along the eaſterly bank of the ſaid river called Seaconck river, up to Patucket falls; and thence due

[*r*] Now called Bound Brook.

[*s*] The mouth of Taunton gut or river, or Seaconnet point.

[*t*] Or bay of Maſſachuſetts.

[*u*] Plymouth grant was up Blackſtone, Patucket or Nipmug river to the Nipmug country; this Nipmug country could not be aſcertained by the late commiſſioners for ſettling the line with Rhode-iſland.

[*w*] In matters not as yet upon record in public hiſtories, it is proper to be particular.

N.

N. to Maſſachuſetts ſouth line, where is the moſt weſterly line of Plymouth colony.—The Rhode-iſland claim was three miles E. N. E. of Aſſent creek of Taunton river, and thence due S. to the ocean eaſt of Seaconnet point; and from the ſaid E. N. E. point, a weſterly courſe to Fox point, being the mouth of the river that comes from Providence town, thence along the eaſt ſide of Seaconck river to Patucket falls; and thence due north to Maſſachuſetts ſouth line.

Upon a hearing at Providence, in ſummer 1741, of the committees or agents of both colonies before the commiſſioners appointed by royal patent to ſettle this line or boundary; the council of Plymouth patent, nor any copy of it was produced; therefore the recital of the ſaid letters patent, in their deed to Bradford and aſſociates, was not ſufficient evidence againſt the king's charter to Rhode-iſland. This commiſſion was not to meddle with property, but only with juriſdiction, which is aſcertained to Rhode-iſland by royal charter, nothwithſtanding their charter being poſterior to the New-Plymouth colony grant; becauſe the council of Plymouth could only delegate property, but not juriſdiction. By no evidence, it was made appear that the water (a ſalt water ſinus, commonly called a continuation of Taunton river; it is called Taunton great river in their private deeds) between the main land on the eaſt, and the iſland of Rhode-iſland on the weſt, was never at any time called Naraganſet river.

The determination of the commiſſioners, anno 1741, was, by the king in council 1746, confirmed as final. And is to this effect, *viz.* from the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, ſouth line, a meridian line (allowing S. 7. D. W. variation) to Patucket falls; and thence down the eaſterly ſide of Seaconck river, to the S. W. corner of Bullocks neck; and thence N. E. three miles (ſuppoſing a N. E. line of three miles from the north-eaſternmoſt parts of the bay on the W. ſide of Romſtick neck) in a ſtrait line, until it meets with the termination of this

this imaginary line; and from this to the bay near Towaſſet neck; ſo that this line touch the N. E. extremity of an imaginary line running N. E. from the N. E. corner of Briſtol cove or harbour. On the eaſt ſide of Naraganſet bay, it begins at a point 440 rods ſouthward of the mouth of Fall river in Tiverton; thence runs eaſt three miles; and from thence runs ſoutherly parallel with the eaſternmoſt parts of Naraganſet bay or Taunton great river to the ſea.

By this determination the late colony of Plymouth, or rather the preſent province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, loſt, in favour of Rhode-iſland, a triangular piece of land commonly called the Attleborough Gore [*x*]; bounded S. 7. D. W. from an interſection with Maſſachuſetts S. line, to Patucket falls nine and a half miles; from Patucket falls up Patucket or Blackſtone river, to the interſection of this river with Maſſachuſetts ſouth line, in a direct or ſtrait courſe twelves miles, W. 55 D. N. from this interſection E. 7 D. S. about ten miles: this Gore is conſtituted a townſhip of Rhode-iſland, by the name of Cumberland, ſo called from prince William duke of Cumberland. Briſtol is entirely adjudged to Rhode-iſland colony juriſdiction, and retains its former name. Part of Swanzey, being forty-ſeven families, and a great part of Barrington, are conſtituted a townſhip by the name of Warren, in honour of Sir Peter Warren, knight of the Bath, and an admiral in the navy; an honeſt benevolent gentleman, always propitious to trade. The three mile ſtrips of Tiverton and Little Compton, on the eaſt ſide of the bay or Taunton great river, continue by the name of diſtricts of Rhode-iſland.

[*x*] This Gore has been for many years in diſpute between Maſſachuſetts-Bay and Rhode-iſland, and if ſome of our managers, hot-headed obſtinate men, had conceded it to Rhode-iſland, it being plainly their due, they would have given to Maſſachuſetts-Bay a general quit-claim, and their other claims would not have been revived. Something of the ſame nature ſhall in courſe be taken notice of, with regard to New-Hampſhire.

The

The line between Old Maſſachuſetts and Plymouth is no more as a colony line; but continues to divide the county of Suffolk in the Maſſachuſetts, from Plymouth and Briſtol counties of the late Plymouth colony. This former dividing line of the two colonies, begins at the interſection of Attleborough Gore, and runs three and a half miles E. 7 D. S. to the ſtation tree of [*y*] Woodward and Saffries: from this ſtation to a notch in Bridgewater E. 18 D. N. are twenty-three miles; thence one mile and a quarter north on Bridgewater; thence E. nine miles to Accord Pond; thence ſtill eaſt to Conohaſſet, at the mouth of Bound Brook on the bay of Maſſachuſetts, ſix miles: in all about forty-one miles.

From Conohaſſet in Maſſachuſetts-Bay, to the race point of Cape Cod, is to this late colony of Plymouth, an eaſt, ſouth, and weſt boundary; by the flexure or hook of the Cape, the back (as it is called) of Cape Cod to Cape Malabar or Sandy Point, is an eaſt boundary; from Sandy Point, farther along the back of the Cape to Elizabeth iſlands, and thence along Buzzard's bay, to the boundary line near Seaconnet point, is a ſouth boundary; weſterly it is bounded by the line ſettled by commiſſioners anno 1741, as before delineated; northerly it is bounded by the line dividing the old colonies of Maſſachuſetts-Bay and Plymouth, already deſcribed.

In this colony are no remarkable mountains or great hills.

The conſiderable harbours are, 1. Plymouth Bay, water ſhallow, a conſiderable trade to the Weſt-India iſlands for ſugar, rum, molaſſes, and cotton; it is a branch of Boſton cuſtom-houſe or collection, diſtance forty miles: three ſmall rivulets, called Jones, Herrings, and Eel rivers, fall into this bay. 2. Cape Cod harbour, ſafe, and deep water; but from the hook or flexure, and

[*y*] This ſtation tree is 120 rods diſtant from the angle where the ſeveral colony lines were ſet off; it is called Woodward and Saffries ſtation, from the names of two obſcure ſailors, who were aſſiſting in the ſurvey.

conſequently different courſes, veſſels with difficulty get out to ſea; it is no ſea-port or place of trade. This cape, by its particular [z] form and by ſtretching into the ſea, becomes a ſnare for itinerant or paſſenger fiſh, *viz.* whales, herrings, mackarel, *&c.* but the whales by experience have learnt to keep farther to ſea in travelling; the other fiſheries are neglected, from the fiſhermen, who were generally Indians, being carried away upon romantic expeditions. The tide flows within the cape about twenty feet; upon the back of the cape it flows only five or ſix feet; Billingſgate, a precinct of Eaſtham, is noted for oyſters.

The ſmaller inlets or harbours from the diſcharge of rivulets are as follows: 1. Upon the inſide of the great bay of Maſſachuſetts (that part of it is called Barnſtaple bay) Scituate, a bad harbour, no conſiderable run of water. All the harbours in Barnſtaple bay to Cape Cod are ſhallow, becauſe of a ſandy ſlow ſlope of the ſhore, and the inland runs are ſhort and ſmall, not capable of making channels. In Sandwich is Mill river. In Barnſtaple is a ſmall inlet. In Yarmouth a ſmall inlet. In Harwich a harbour called Point of rocks, not ſafe. In Eaſtham is Stage harbour, and Billingſgate, the beſt of theſe ſmall harbours. 2. Upon the outſide or ocean ſide of Cape Cod promontory; Head of Pamet, no proper harbour; it is in Truro, and high tides, as anno 1723, paſs over the meadows from ſea to ſea. Sandy Point, or Monymoy in Chatham, is a good harbour for ſmall veſſels, but the bar ſhifts. Bals river in Yarmouth. Hyanaes, the beſt of theſe harbours, in Barnſtaple, is much uſed. Oſter bay in Barnſtaple, Falmouth bay. Woods hole or cove, called Soconoſſet; here is a ferry of about one

[z] Captain Southack, in a moſt falſe, therefore pernicious ſea chart of the coaſt of Nova Scotia and New-England, delineates a thoroughfare from the great bay of Maſſachuſetts to the ocean in Eaſtham, near Sandy Point; no perſon, himſelf excepted, ever imagined or dreamt of this thorough-fare: his dream or words are, "The place where I "came through with a whale-boat, April 26, 1717, to look after "Bellame the pirate."

mile

mile to Elizabeth great iſland; and of about three leagues to Martha's Vineyard. We may obſerve, that along this ſhore is a bar at about half a mile's diſtance, with ſmall inlets; within the bar is water of ſome fathoms. 3. In Buzard's bay are many good creeks, ſalt water rivers, or harbours; excepting in Rocheſter, the runs of water that fall into theſe creeks are of ſhort courſe: Agawam, Wagwagantit or Mill river, Sipacan harbour, Matapoiſſet, Accuſhnot, Polyganſet, and Coaxit [*a*].

The conſiderable rivers in Old Plymouth colony, are 1. North river, divides Scituate from Marſhfield; deep water; but veſſels in a ſtorm cannot put in there, the entrance being rocky. The tide flows nine or ten miles up this river; here ſhips and other veſſels are built to advantage, timber being plenty; from this river, Boſton has a conſiderable ſupply of firewood. 2. Taunton river; from about ſeventeen miles up Taunton great river, on the eaſt ſide of Naraganſet Bay, according to the late royal determination of boundaries with Rhode iſland, begins Plymouth colony upon Taunton river; the tide flows up this river from 440 rods below Falls river; the boundary between Freetown and Tiverton about twenty-five miles to near the mouth of Sawamſet or Midleborough river, which comes from Aſawampſit pond in the ſouth parts of Midleborough, and falls into Titiquit or Taunton river: in this river and the adjacent townſhips of Dighton and Swanzey are built good ſhips and other veſſels. 3. Patucket or Blackſtone, formerly Nipmug river, navigable from Rhode-iſland boundary at Bullock's neck, ten miles to Patucket falls; in Rehoboth or Seaconick are built ſome good veſſels.

[*a*] The ſea line of the late colony of Plymouth is about 120 miles, but has only one ſea port for foreign trade, viz. Plymouth: the other harbours are very ſmall, and uſed only by fiſhermen and coaſters. The other New-England territories do much exceed it in trade, although their ſea lines are much ſmaller; the ſea line of the province of Main does not exceed eighty miles, of New-Hampſhire twenty miles, of Old-Maſſachuſetts eighty miles, of Rhode-iſland ſixty miles, of Connecticut 140 miles.

The capes, head-lands, or promontories are, 1. The Gurnet head, being the north point of Plymouth bay; it lies weſt ſoutherly from Cape Cod ſeven leagues, and that part of Maſſachuſetts-Bay within this line or courſe is called Barnſtaple bay. 2. Cape Cod, a noted promontory on the weſt ſide of the Atlantic ocean, in N. lat. 42 D. 10 M. lies from Boſton E. b. S. ſoutherly, about eighteen leagues. This is a narrow long promontory ſtretching into the ocean, and from the pitch of the cape to Buzard's bay may extend upwards of ſixty miles, which, with a medium breadth of ſix miles, makes about 230,000 acres; conſiſts of the townſhips of Falmouth, Sandwich, Barnſtaple, Yarmouth, Harwich, Chatham, Eaſtham, Truro, and Province town; theſe make the county of Barnſtaple. 3. Sandy Point; in the charter it is called Cape Malabar, about ten leagues north from iſland of Nantucket.

[*b*] Beſides the promontory of Cape Cod, the late Plymouth colony may be in value of forty miles ſquare, is 1600 ſquare miles, or 1,024,000 acres; is in the whole about 1,254,000 acres. In this old colony, there are no vacant or colony lands; all the lands are the property of townſhips or private perſons, as granted by the general aſſembly from time to time.

Plymouth was called one of the aſſociated colonies of New-England before the ſtricter conſociation (the twelfth

[*b*] I am afraid, that by being ſo particular in the deſcription of our territories or colonies, I may be found guilty of an impropriety, in giving the geography inſtead of the hiſtory; but we muſt conſider, that theſe countries, young and dependent, cannot afford many ſtate revolutions, therefore our hiſtory muſt chiefly conſiſt of delineations, and of ſome accounts of their various produce and commerce.

I ſhall not be very minute in the inland geography: in my amuſement hours, I have compoſed the actual ſurveys (as upon record) of each townſhip and diſtrict in the four colonies of New-England, into a plan of about three and a half feet ſquare, by a ſcale of five miles to one inch. This plan, of many years collecting, and perfected at a conſiderable charge, is a free gift, for a public benefit to the Provinces of New-England; each townſhip or diſtrict is to have a copy gratis, to be lodged in the town clerk's office.

day

day of the third month, 1643) of the four colonies of New-England. It was an alliance like that of the Swiſs cantons. This colony aſſiſted in the Pequod Indian war 1637; this war was only of a few months continuance, and ended with the entire reduction or extinction of that tribe; ſee p. 193.

Concerning the iſlands near Cape-Cod.

THE noted iſlands are Nantucket, Capawock, or Martha's Vineyard, and the Elizabeth iſlands.

The north ſide of Nantucket, or the town of Sherburn, lies in N. lat. 41 D. 10 M. about ten leagues from the main land; contains about 23,000 acres, the value of ſix miles ſquare; beach included it is in twenty-ſeven proprietorſhips, but all in common, excepting forty acres home lots to each proprietorſhip; each proprietorſhip may keep 560 ſheep. It is a county of itſelf, a very induſtrious people; they make ſome dry cod-fiſh; their principal buſineſs is whaling. Anno 1744, in the beginning of the French war, they had about forty ſloops and ſchooners in the whale fiſhery; thirteen men to a veſſel, do make from 7000 to 10,000 barrels of whale oil *per annum*; their bone ſeldom exceed ſeven feet. A whale of 100 barrels, yields 1000 wt. of bone. In this iſland are about 900 Indian ſouls, of great uſe in their fiſhery.

Martha's Vineyard, about eight leagues weſt from Nantucket, and three leagues ſouth from Woods Hole in Falmouth upon the main, is about twenty miles in length; the eaſt end is about eight miles wide, and tapers away to Guy Head, at the W. end three miles wide; much of the iſland is very barren, being heaths and pine land; three poor townſhips, Edgar-Town, Tiſbury, and Chilmark; about 200 fencible white men; about 450 Indian ſouls. With the Elizabeth iſlands it makes [*t*] Duke's county.

[*t*] Before the Maſſachuſetts-Bay new charter, all theſe iſlands belonged to the government of New-York; and the receiver of the quit-

Elizabeth iſlands lie in a range, S. W. half way betwen Martha's Vineyard, and the ſhore of Buzard bay; they make Buzard's bay; the largeſt iſland one mile from Woods Hole, or the main is about eight miles long, but very narrow; belongs to Thomas Lechmere, Eſq; and Mr Bowdoin's eſtate; it is called Naſhawn iſland; here is a good harbour, Tarpaulings cove; on Martha's Vineyard is another good harbour, Holms's hole, of good uſe to veſſels that navigate this channel; next is Tinker's iſland, Slocum's iſland, and Cattehunk iſlands; theſe belong to Slocum, Ward, and Sanford's heirs.

Slocum's iſland lies one league ſouth weſterly from the weſt end of Martha's Vineyard; is in value one mile ſquare; it belongs to Mr. Norton.

ARTICLE V.

Concerning the old colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

THE old writers of the hiſtory of New-England are ſo trifling and erroneous, that the late [*d*] ſcriblers and hackney writers who copy the affairs of New-England from them, appear, by their obſolete and erroneous account of affairs, in a very ridiculous light, and afford me no aſſiſtance.

rents of New-York made demands of the old arrears of their quit-rents.

[*d*] At preſent I ſhall only inſtance Salmon's modern hiſtory, and the *Atlas maritimus et commercialis*.

Salmon ſeems to be a Tory, or rather a Jacobite; he vindicates the treaty of Utrecht, and diſcovers a very ſilly prejudice againſt New-England's firſt ſettlers, *viz.* That they came over to ſecure a retreat for their brethren, in caſe they miſcarried in ſubverting church and ſtate at home; this is a very idle ſurmiſe, becauſe the firſt ſet of emigrants did not exceed 100 perſons, and of theſe not above ſixty ſurvived the firſt winter.

From Salmon I ſhall only give a few inſtances, which at firſt ſight are very ridiculous, without any comment—"In Virginia abundance of cod-fiſh—Virginia is ſeparated from Florida by the Apalachian mountains—In the fort near Newport are 300 cannon—North-Carolina is a well-peopled flouriſhing colony." *N. B.* It is the ſink or

Anno

Anno 1625, Mr. Conant and company in trade, made ſome ſettlement at Cape Anne, the north eaſterly promontory of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; they were moſtly from Dorcheſter, and the weſt of England. This gave riſe to a project, firſt concerted in Lincolnſhire, of procuring from the council of Plymouth, a grant for ſettling a colony in Maſſachuſetts-Bay, with a reſolution that the principal town thereof be called BOSTON, from a ſea-port and parliament town of that name in Lincolnſhire; being joined by ſome adventurers of London and Dorſetſhire, they obtained from the council of Plymouth, March 19, 1627-8, a grant in the name of ſix aſſociates and their

nauſeous drain of all our colonies; in all the colony only two or three Goſpel miniſters, very ſickly, and very bad navigation.—"In New-England both men and women are put to death for adultery.—Cambridge univerſity conſiſts of three colleges." *N. B.* They are only three buildings (the ſcholars are all of one college) making three ſides of a deſigned quadrangle.—"The New-York forces againſt Montreal were to go by the lake Ontario." *N. B.* It was by lake Champlain.—"Our Indians go naked in ſummer, and wear deer-ſkins in winter." *N. B.* They wear blankets ſummer and winter.—"Penobſcot river divides New-England from Nova Scotia." *N. B.* The river of St. Croix, more eaſtward, is the boundary.—"Hudſon's river divides the ſouthern parts of New-England from New-York." *N. B.* The dividing line is twenty miles eaſt of Hudſon's river."—His enlarging much upon trifling and fabulous things, to multiply ſheets, and his many obvious inconſiſtencies, ſhew him to be a ſcribbler, and no accurate hiſtorian.—His abſtract of the laws of New-England, are from an obſolete old charter law-book.

A few inſtances of abſurdities from the *Atlas maritimus et commercialis*, printed at London 1728, ſold to ſubſcribers at 3 *l.* 15 *s.* ſterling.—"New-England is four governments in one charter.—New-London colony.—Connecticut and New-Haven colonies, have Rhode-iſland and Providence under the ſame juriſdiction.—Tarmerick from New-England.—Moſt of the towns in New-Hampſhire are fortified.—New York apply chiefly to whale-fiſhing, and whale the moſt." *N. B.* They do not whale in any reſpect.—"Merimack river riſes in Nova Scotia.—In the two colleges of Cambridge about 200 ſtudents." *N. B.* They exceed 100 ſcholars.—"In New-England ſixty-two market towns, and twenty ſeven fortified places.—Jerſeys has two ſea-ports, Perth and Amboy."

Joſſelin, Hubbard, and Mather's Magnalia, we ſhall for the preſent defer.

aſſigns, of all the lands in New-England from three miles ſouth of Charles river, to three miles north of Merrimack river, eaſt and weſt from ſea to ſea: theſe ſix aſſociated twenty more perſons, and March 4, 1628-9, obtained a royal grant with a charter, counterſigned Woolſely; it is commonly called the old charter, whereof an abſtract is as follows:

King James I, *anno regni* 18, *Nov.* 3, *granted by patent to a council at Plymouth in Devon, and their aſſociates and aſſigns for ever, the property and juriſdiction of the lands in America (called New-England) from* 40 *D. N. lat. to* 48 *D. N. lat. and eaſt and weſt from ſea to ſea; if not poſſeſſed by any Chriſtian ſtate, nor within the limits of a ſouthern colony lately granted; the quit-rent to be the fifth part of all their gold and ſilver ore. This company by deed granted and ſold, 19th of March, 3 regni Charles* I, *a part of their patent lands to ſix gentlemen, Sir Henry Roſwell,* &c. *their heirs, aſſigns, and aſſociates for ever,* viz. *All lands from three miles northward of any and every part of Merrimack river, to three miles ſouthward of any and every part of Charles river, and of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, E. and W. from ſea to ſea, with all iſlands on the eaſtern or weſtern coaſts. This grant was confirmed to thoſe ſix gentlemen and their twenty aſſociates by royal charter, March* 4, 1628-9. *The ſaid twenty-ſix grantees, with all ſuch others as ſhall hereafter be admitted and made free of the company, ſhall for ever be one body corporate and politic, by the name of the* GOVERNOR AND COMPANY OF THE MASSACHUSETTS-BAY IN NEW-ENGLAND. *The corporation to conſiſt of one governor, one deputy-governor, and eighteen aſſiſtants, to be annually elected out of the freemen of the company; the king nominated for the firſt year, Matthew Craddock, governor, Thomas Goff, lieutenant governor, with eighteen aſſiſtants. The governor may call an aſſembly at pleaſure; the governor and aſſiſtants, not under ſeven, may once a month meet to do buſineſs. Four great and general courts or aſſemblies of the freemen annually, on the laſt Wedneſdays of Hilary, Eaſter, Trinity, and Michaelmas terms, whereof the governor and*

ſix

ſix of the aſſiſtants, at leaſt to be ſeven, [*d*] *with the repreſentatives of the townſhips, to admit freemen, conſtitute officers, make laws, but not repugnant to the ſtatutes of England: annually upon the laſt Wedneſday in Eaſter term ſhall be an election of general aſſembly then convened, of a governor, deputy-governor, eighteen aſſiſtants, and all other officers. Liberty to tranſport from England any people, effects, and merchandize free of cuſtoms both outward and inward, for the firſt ſeven years, and quit from all taxes and cuſtoms in New-England: alſo for the firſt ſeven years, and for fourteen years more, excepting the five* per cent. *duty in England, upon all merchandize imported. All born in this country, or in paſſages to and from the colony, be deemed natural-born ſubjects of England; the general court may make orders and laws, conſtitute officers, may impoſe fines, impriſonment, or other lawful correction, according to the courſe of other corporations in England* [*e*]; *eſtabliſhing of the Chriſtian faith amongſt the natives, is in this charter declared to be the principal end thereof; may encounter and reſiſt by force of arms, by ſea or land, any who ſhall in a hoſtile manner invade the ſaid plantation; if any of the ſaid colony ſhall injure any ſubject of princes in amity with us, they ſhall, proclamation made in England, be required to give ſatisfaction, and make reſtitution; which if not complied with, the ſaid perſons ſhall be put out of our allegiance and protection, and the ſaid princes ſhall be allowed to proſecute the ſaid offenders with hoſtility – None of our ſubjects to be debarred fiſhing upon the coaſt of New-England, nor from ſetting up ſtages and workhouſes on ſhore, and cutting requiſite timber and wood.*

The colony ſeal was an Indian erect, naked, an arrow in his right-hand, and a bow in his left-hand; theſe words in a ſcrowl from his mouth, *Come over and help us*; and in a round, *Sigillum Gub. et Societatis de Maſſachuſetts-Bay in Nova Anglia.*

[*d*] This ſeems to imply, that they were to meet and vote together.
[*e*] Here capital crimes ſeem not to be included.

To

To render this hiſtory clear and diſtinct, we ſhall here continue the accounts of the incidents which happened, relating to this charter, down to its being vacated in Chancery in 1684.

Anno 1635, ſeveral complaints againſt the colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay being lodged in the court of King's-bench; a *quo warranto* was iſſued againſt the governor and company of Maſſachuſetts-Bay: ſome of the company appeared and diſclaimed their charter; others did not appear, and were outlawed.

In this controverſy with Mr. Maſon, anno 1637, in Trinity term, was obtained a judgment from the King's-bench, againſt the colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, in favour of the king, *viz.* That the king ſhould ſeize the ſaid province, and take their governor Cradock's body into cuſtody; but, by reaſon of the enſuing civil war confuſions, the charter was never taken up, and from that time to the Reſtoration, New-England enjoyed a deſirable tranquillity; and at the deſire of their important neighbours, the eaſtern ſettlers were taken into their protection and juriſdiction.

Upon the Reſtoration 1661, Gorge and Maſon's repreſentatives renewed their complaints againſt Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, upon account of encroachments; it was chiefly in compaſſion that theſe eaſtern people were (as abandoned) taken under their protection and juriſdiction, but moreover Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony conceived, that it might keep up their claim, to the moſt northerly part of Merimack river, with three miles advantage, and E. and W. from ſea to ſea, including all the ſettled part of Maſon's grant or New-Hampſhire, and of the province of Main to Black Point.

Anno 1675-6, March 10, ordered by the king in council, that Maſſachuſetts-Bay government, ſhould anſwer the complaints of Maſon's and Gorge's heirs, concerning their being by ſaid government unjuſtly kept out of their right.

William

William Stoughton and Peter Bulkley were ſent over as agents; they diſclaimed any title to thoſe lands in the petition.

The lords of the committee for trade and plantations, with the lords chief juſtices Rainsford and North, reported to the king in council, that the Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, by their repreſentatives, diſclaimed any title to the ſaid lands in controverſy; this report was confirmed by the king in council,

After the order of the king in council, July 20, 1677, the aſſembly of Maſſachuſetts-Bay paſſed an act 1679, vacating all ſuch grants as they had made of lands beyond the three miles north of Merrimack river. We muſt obſerve, that about this time, ſome of the Maſſachuſetts people, upon account of the Indian trade and fiſhery, removed to New-Hampſhire and province of Main, and lived for ſome time in a ſeparate ſtate; but from diviſions amongſt themſelves, and from fear of being inſulted by the Indians, they put themſelves under the protection and juriſdiction of the government of Maſſachuſetts-Bay. 1652, The inhabitants, of New-Hampſhire, or Piſcataqua, or Maſon's grant, put themſelves under the protection and government of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, until the time of Cranfield's being appointed governor of New-Hampſhire. Preſident Cutts and council, Sept. 18, 1680, were commiſſioned by the king; before this there had been no power of government granted for that territory of New-Hampſhire. We may obſerve, that the old townſhips of Portſmouth, Hampton, and Dover, were grants of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay aſſembly: colonel Waldron, repreſentative for Dover, was Speaker of Maſſachuſetts houſe of repreſentatives.

Anno 1682, May 9, The king in council further inhibits the Maſſachuſetts-Bay government, from any juriſdiction in Maſon's property.

The further account of the diſputes between the corporation of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and the heirs of Mr. Maſon

ſon proprietors of New-Hampſhire, we refer to the ſection of New-Hampſhire.

Anno 1682, when a deſpotic monarchy was hatching, ſeveral towns in England began to ſurrender their charters, by the perſuaſion of lord chief juſtice Jeffries, a perſon capable of any wickedneſs to gratify the court; particularly in Cornwall, where are many poor boroughs, for ſmall conſiderations always at the devotion of the court; twenty-five boroughs brought in their charters.

Anno 1683, king Charles II, by a meſſage to the general aſſembly of Maſſachuſetts-Bay deſired, that in conſideration of ſeveral [*e*] complaints entered againſt them, they would ſurrender their charter to the king's pleaſure, which by a vote of general aſſembly was refuſed. Thereupon in conſequence of a *quo warranto*, and *ſcire facias*, 1684, in Chancery, in Trinity term, judgment was entered againſt their charter, and it was vacated; the colonies agents or attornies not appearing.

Robert Humphrey, Eſq; agent for Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, in his letter to the governor and council, dated Inner Temple, May 2, 1685, and read in the general aſſembly July 8 following [*f*], writes, "The breaches aſſigned againſt you, are as obvious as unanſwerable; ſo that all the ſervice your council and friends could have done you here, would have only ſerved to deplore, not prevent, that inevitable loſs. I ſent you the lord keeper's order of June 15, 1684, requiring your appearing firſt day of Michaelmas term, elſe judgment entered againſt your charter was to ſtand. When this firſt day came, your letters of attorney neither were, nor indeed could be, returned; accordingly, I applied to the Chancery for further time: where judgment paſſes by default, there may be a rehearing. Inſtead of ſending letters of attor-

[*e*] A diſregard to the acts of trade, perſecution of their fellow-chriſtians, *&c.*

[*f*] Mr. Humphrey at that time ſeems not to have been a real friend to New-England.

ney,

ney, the colony ſent only an addreſs to the king, without colony ſeal, or any ſubſcription per order; therefore it was not preſented. I herewith ſend you a copy of the judgment againſt your charter. Colonel Kirk was fixed upon, by Charles II, to be your governor; and James II, is ſaid to have renewed his patent for your government."

Henry Cranfield, governor of the adjoining province of New-Hampſhire, is ſaid to have been appointed by Charles II, governor of New-England. It is certain his commiſſion was never publiſhed; if there was any ſuch patent, it dropped by the death of Charles II: by Charles the ſecond's ſudden death, whether natural, or wickedly procured, we ſhall not determine; this affair was neglected, and the New-England colonies continued for about two years more, in the enjoyment of their charter privileges [*g*].

Joſeph Dudley, Eſq; was ſent over to the court of England as their agent in the charter affairs; but as being a native of New-England, and a cunning man, it was thought by the court that he was the proper perſon to facilitate and to introduce a new adminiſtration, or form of government. Accordingly, in April 1686, he was appointed preſident, with a council to govern New-England; he arrived at Boſton in June following: there were no conſiderable acts in government in his time. In December of the ſame year, arrives Sir Edmond Andros, governor of New-England, with Nicholſon, lieutenant-governor, and two independent companies of ſoldiers; and preſident Dudley was appointed chief-juſtice.

The New-England charters being laid aſide, the governor and council (ſix or ſeven perſons, generally ſtran-

[*g*] Plymouth colony had the ſame fate with Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony in the affair of charters; Connecticut and Rhode-iſland colonies ſubmitted, by reſolve of their aſſemblies, to the king's pleaſure, and for two years and a half were under the government of Sir Edmund Andros, without being required to ſurrender their charter; upon the Revolution, as their charter had never been vacated by law, nor ſurrendered, they were allowed by the court of England to reaſſume their charters, and continue in the full enjoyment thereof to this day.

gers) had the legiſlative and executive power of government. They acted many unjuſt and oppreſſive things; for inſtance, in property, they alledged, that the people's conveyances were not according to the laws of England, and that upon their charter ceaſing, their former titles ceaſed; and obliged them to take out new grants or titles at high rates and extravagant fees: particularly the king aſſumed the abſolute government, and the property of the unappropriated lands, the granting of lands, raiſing of taxes, making of laws, with the executive part likewiſe.

Upon the arrival in April 1689, in Boſton, of the news of a thorough revolution in England, there was a kind of popular inſurrection in Boſton againſt the governor Sir Edmund Andros and his officers, who ſurrendered, and were ſent home; a convention of the principal gentlemen of the colony was held in Boſton, who appointed a council, Simon Bradſtreet, preſident, or committee for the ſafety of the people, and conſervation of the peace; and ſummoned a convention of the repreſentatives of the people. Accordingly, at the firſt meeting, ſixty-ſix repreſentatives of forty-four towns and diſtricts were preſent; and May 24, there were repreſentatives from fifty-four places; they reſolved that the governor, deputy-governor, aſſiſtants, and other officers, as choſen May 12, 1686, ſhould act in their reſpective ſtations; *viz.* Simon Bradſtreet, governor; Thomas Serjeant, major-general; Iſaac Adington, ſecretary; John Phillips, treaſurer; Thomas Danforth, preſident of the province of Main, *&c.* Thomas Oakes was ſpeaker of the houſe of repreſentatives: they reſolved upon ſix rates of taxes, whereof one rate was to be in proviſions: all this was tranſacted with ſubmiſſion to the king and queen's pleaſure when notified.

It was propoſed by a writ of error, to have a rehearing concerning the New-England charters, in Weſtminſter-hall; but this was dropped. There was a bill brought into the convention parliament, for reſtoring the New-England charters; it paſſed the lower houſe, but the

the convention being diſſolved ſoon after, it dropped. Upon granting the new charter, the king allowed the agents for Maſſachuſetts-Bay to nominate their firſt governor; they nominated Sir William Phipps.

The further provincial proceedings we defer to the next article.

The boundary line of Old Maſſachuſetts-Bay *colony.*

THE ſouthern line is, 1. With the late Plymouth colony forty-one miles; being fifteen miles due W. twenty-three miles W. 18 D. S. ſee p. 401, and W. 7 D. N. three miles and a half. Upon this line lie the townſhips of Hingham, Weymouth, Braintree, and Stoughton. 2. [*b*] The line with Rhode-iſland colony, from the interſection of the north and ſouth line from Patucket Falls to Maſſachuſetts-Bay ſouth line, as ſettled by agreement of the two colonies, May 14, 1719, and afterwards confirmed by the king in council, is W. 7 D. N. about twenty miles to the N. W. corner of Rhode-iſland, being a production of Connecticut and Rhode-iſland N. and S. line, as ſettled by agreement of theſe two colonies, anno 1738. *N. B.* Here the differences of variation allowed per agreement with Rhode-iſland of W. 7 D. N. and with Connecticut of W. 9 D. N. occaſions a notch of one mile and forty rods in the townſhip of Douglaſs, from the Rhode-iſland N. W. corner to the Connecticut N. E. corner: upon this line lie the townſhips of Wrentham, Bellingham, Uxbridge, and Douglaſs. 3. The line with [*i*] Connecticut, run anno 1713, from ſaid N. E.

[*b*] Maſſachuſetts ſouth line was ſet off according to the letter of the charter, from three miles ſouth of the head of Stop-river in Wrentham, being the moſt ſoutherly branch of Charles-river; it falls into the main body of Charles-river at Medfield.

[*i*] In N. lat. 42 D. 2 M. as obſerved by the ingenious, learned, and inquiſitive gentleman William Burnet, Eſq; ſometime governor of New-York, and afterwards governor of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; a worthy ſon of the worthy, pious, and honeſt, though political biſhop Burnet.

corner

corner of Connecticut, W. 9 D. N. to the N. W. corner of Connecticut ſeventy-two miles: *viz.* from ſaid N. E. corner of Connecticut to Connecticut river (ninety rods north of the N. E. corner of Suffield) thirty-eight miles, and from thence to Connecticut N. W. corner thirty-four miles; in all ſeventy-two miles upon Connecticut: this line was [*k*] ſettled per agreement, and afterwards confirmed by the king in council: upon this line lie the townſhips of Dudley, Woodſtock indented, Sturbridge, Brimfield, Somers, and Enfield indented, Suffield indented, Weſtfield, Bedford, Houſatonicks, No's 3 and 2, and Sheffield.

As an equivalent, for ſome indented lands properly belonging to the colony of Connecticut, but ſettled, and for ſome time aſſumed under the juriſdiction, of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; anno 1713, the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay allowed the property, but not juriſdiction of ſome of their vacant province lands, containing 105,793 acres in four ſeparate parcels. Theſe equivalent lands were ſold at public vendue by the colony of Connecticut April 25, 1716, for 683*l.* New-England carrency in ſixteen ſhares, *viz.* Gurdon Saltonſtall, governor of Connecticut, Mrs. Saltonſtall, Paul Dudley, Addington Davenport, Tho. Fitch, Anthony Stoddard, William Brattle, miniſter, Ebenezer Pemberton, a miniſter of the goſpel, William and Joſeph Dummer, each one half of a ſhare, Jonathan Belcher, John White, William Clark, near Boſton common, John Wainwright, Henry Newman and John Caſwal, each one third of a ſhare, Nath. Gould, and Peter Burs, each one half of a ſhare, John Stoddard and Eliſha Williams, each one half of a ſhare, and to John Read one ſhare: about 40,000 acres of theſe lands, by the late ſettlement of a line with New-Hampſhire, fall

[*k*] A late petition to the general court, or general aſſembly for the indented townſhips of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, to be ſet off to the juriſdiction of Connecticut is idle and vain, becauſe the juriſdiction has been ſome years ſince finally iſſued by the king in council.

into

into the juriſdiction of New-Hampſhire upon Connecticut river above Northfield.

The weſt line of Maſſachuſetts-Bay hitherto is not ſettled; the people of New-York pretend that their eaſt line is Connecticut river [*l*], becauſe the Dutch colony, their predeceſſors, extended their pretenſions ſo far, and had a conſiderable trade in Connecticut river. But we may obſerve, that ſome years ſince, anno 1725, when New-York and Connecticut ſettled their line, which was afterwards confirmed by the king in council; their fundamental agreement was, that this boundary line ſhould be at twenty miles eaſt of Hudſon's river, and parallel with the ſaid river; therefore naturally this line in the ſame circumſtances muſt extend northward, and bound Maſſachuſetts-Bay and New-Hampſhire provinces.

The [*m*] north and eaſt lines have been in continued diſputes in oppoſite claims of Maſſachuſetts-Bay and New-Hampſhire. Anno 1739, the king in council, upon appeals from the judgment of commiſſioners (per agreement of both parties) appointed under the great ſeal of Great-Britain, finally determined the ſame.

As all diſputable claims are now extinguiſhed, we may reckon them as obſolete; but for the curious (antiquaries perhaps may be an improper term in a young colony) we ſhall give ſome ſuccinct account of thoſe claims.

It is frequently very difficult, and almoſt impoſſible to reconcile the letter of the boundaries of two old grants; becauſe generally more was granted, than had been ſurveyed, or perhaps more than had been diſcovered; therefore the lines were ill expreſſed, in looſe general terms, and frequently interfering; which cannot be adjuſted but by amicable voluntary conventions and agreements of

[*l*] Anno 1726, ſome of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay people, in ſettling Houſatonick townſhips, were arreſted to Albany court in an action of treſpaſs againſt a grant to ſome Dutchmen from my lord Cornbury, governor of New-York.

[*m*] It was deſigned to refer the hiſtory of this line to the ſection of New-Hampſhire, but it ſeems more naturally to fall in this place.

the parties concerned; to be explained and confirmed by the king in council, the original granter.

Immediately upon the royal grant or patent to the New-England company, called the council of Plymouth, that council granted to Sir Ferdinando Gorge, governor of the fort of Plymouth, and ſometime preſident of the ſaid council, and to Mr. Maſon merchant of London, their ſecretary, jointly; from Neumkeag or Salem river to Quenebec river along the ſea ſhore, and ſixty miles inland: ſoon after, they had ſeparate grants of ſeparate parcels of land: here, we are only to relate the diſputes with Mr. Maſon's heirs and aſſigns, and the ſection of New-Hampſhire muſt be referred to.

Anno 1621, March 9, the council of Plymouth granted to John Maſon, Eſq; of London, their ſecretary, his heirs and aſſigns, a tract of land from Neumkeag to Merrimack river. Anno 1629, they granted to ditto a tract [*n*] of land, between Merrimack river and Piſcataqua river, ſixty miles up each river, and theſe to be bounded by a line acroſs from river to river. Both theſe grants were joined in a new grant 1635, April 22, from the council of Plymouth to the ſaid Maſon, *viz.* ſixty miles up Neumkeag river, *&c.* and from the entrance of Neumkeag (a creek between Salem and Beverley) round by the ſea-ſhore to the middle entrance of Piſcataqua river, up Piſcataqua river, and Newichawennock river to the head thereof, and thence north weſtward till ſixty miles be accompliſhed; and croſs from the termination of each of theſe ſixty miles, to be called New-Hampſhire. Anno 1635, Aug. 19, king Charles, by patent, confirms this grant called New-Hampſhire, with power of government and juriſdiction (as in the palatinate or biſhoprick of Durham) with power of conferring honours.

The complaints from time to time of Mr. Maſon's heirs to the king in council, and the determinations

[*n*] This patent is poſterior to that of Maſſachuſetts-Bay 1628-9, and therefore void, as the lands between Neumkeag and Merrimack river.

there-

thereupon, have been already related in p. 410; we ſhall now mention ſome very large private claims from Indian grants, where both colonies of Maſſachuſetts Bay and New-Hampſhire were ſuppoſed to be concerned in property, as well as in juriſdiction.

Anno 1629, the chiefs of the Indians of Merrimack river ſold to John Wheelwright and others of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, all that land beginning "at the "end of twenty miles N. W. from Patucket falls, and "thence running a N. E. line to interſect Merrimack and "Piſcataqua rivers, and theſe two rivers to be the bounds "of it, from that line to the ſea." This, together with other lands, included all the late province of New-Hampſhire. This claim was revived by Mr. Cooke and others, about thirty years ſince, when ſome Iriſh Preſbyterians petitioned both aſſemblies of Maſſachuſetts-Bay and of New-Hampſhire, for a ſettlement or townſhip of lands: theſe emigrants are ſettled upon part of thoſe lands by charter or grant from the governor and council of New-Hampſhire; their townſhip is called Londonderry (formerly Nutfield) and flouriſhes much; they are a noted pattern and example of induſtry and frugality; particularly they excel in the fabric or manufacture of linen cloth. May the other townſhips of New England copy from them! This townſhip lies a few miles eaſt of Patucket falls of Merrimack river.

Anno 1683, a large tract of land called the Million purchaſe, both ſides of Merrimack river above Souhagen river, was granted by the Sachems of the Weymaſet or lower river Indians, and the Penycook or upper river Indians, to Jonathan Tyng of Dunſtable for valuable conſiderations. This tract of land extended upon the weſt ſide of Merrimack river, from the mouth of Soughagen river, where it falls into Merrimack river, ſix miles and a half up the ſaid Soughagen or Souhegonack river; thence N. 20 D. weſtward, ten miles; thence in a direct line from the northward as far as the moſt ſoutherly end or part (meaning, I ſuppoſe, the production weſtward of

a line from the ſoutherly end of the ſaid pond) of the great pond or lake, commonly called Wenapeſioche lake; extended upon the eaſt ſide of Merrimack river from Brenton's lands or farm (in Litchfield) ſix miles in breadth eaſtward, and thence running in a direct line northward unto, and as far as, the moſt ſoutherly end or part of Wenepaſioche lake; neither of theſe weſt or eaſt lines to come nearer to the river of Merrimack than ſix miles; an Indian plantation of three miles ſquare is reſerved. Theſe lands were conveyed in ſeveral parcels, and at ſundry times, to certain perſons by transfers, anno 1684, 1685, and 1686; of which transfers ſome were acknowledged before the magiſtates of the adminiſtration of the old colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and ſome before thoſe of king James the ſecond's reign. After theſe conveyances and transfers were confirmed by Robert Tufton Maſon proprietor of New-Hampſhire, April 15, 1686, ſo far as falls within the royal grant of New-Hampſhire, at a quit-rent of 10*s.* ſterling *per annum* when demanded, they were regulated into twenty equal ſhares, *viz.*

Joſeph Dudley Samuel Shrimpton John Blackwell
Charles Lidget William Stoughton Peter Bulkeley
John Uſher Richard Wharton William Blathwayt
Edward Randolph Thomas Henchman Jonathan Tyng
John Hubbard Thaddeus Macarty Daniel Cox.
Robert Thompſon Edward Thompſon

And three other perſons to be hereafter named and agreed upon; no benefit of ſurvivorſhip; to be divided as ſoon as may be, and each ſhare may take up 5000 acres at diſcretion for the preſent. Theſe grants and regulations were alſo confirmed July 12, 1686 (and entered Nov. 9, following) by Joſeph Dudley, preſident, and by the council of his majeſty's territory and dominion of New-England in America; with an addition of the townſhip of Concord, Chelmsford, Groton, Lancaſter, Stow, and Dunſtable, and twelve miles more of land. This claim

was

was in a manner revived about twenty-eight years ſince, but ſoon dropped; it is now again revived by an advertiſement in the Boſton Gazette of June 21, 1748. Theſe lands at preſent are in the juriſdiction of New-Hampſhire, and muſt be claimed in that province.

Not many years ſince Mrs. Rand from New-England, heireſs or repreſentative of Thomas Goffe, one of the twenty-ſix original patentees or proprietors of Maſſachuſetts-Bay grant, entered a claim in Chancery accordingly, and gave ſome diſturbance to the Maſſachuſetts-Bay veſſels in the river Thames in London, by entering a *Ne exeat* in Chancery; pretending they were the produce of that colony, which the twenty-ſix original proprietors had never jointly aſſigned to the ſettlers; but upon her death, and one of the heirs of the other original proprietors appearing, the affair dropped; and the ſettlers, by their repreſentatives in general aſſembly, continue in quiet poſſeſſion by preſcription.

For many years there had been a diſpute concerning the north boundary of Maſſachuſetts Bay colony with New-Hampſhire; New-Hampſhire claimed, from three miles north of the middle channel of the mouth of Merrimack river due weſt, until it meet with other Britiſh governments; Maſſachuſetts Bay claimed, from three miles north of the Black Rock, where Merrimack river emptied itſelf into the ocean, when the charter was granted; thence running at three miles diſtance parallel with the river, to three miles north of the fork or crotch where this river firſt receives the name Merrimack, and from thence due weſt to the South-Sea, or to any of his majeſty's other territories.

[*o*] Anno 1731, the general aſſembly of New-Hampſhire appointed Mr. Rindge their agent, to ſollicit at

[*o*] I have been the more particular in this affair, that it may ſerve, by way of inſtance, to illuſtrate the length of time required to bring Plantation affairs to an iſſue at the court of Great-Britain. The affair of the boundaries between lord Baltimore of Maryland, and the

home, for ſettling their boundaries with the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; 1733, the petition was preſented; 1734, Jan. 5, the Board of Trade and Plantations, ſent to the attorney and ſollicitor-general, this queſtion, "From what part of Merrimack river, the three miles "limitation ought to be taken?" March 19, the report was, "From three miles north of the mouth of Mer-"rimack river." 1737, April 9, by the conſent of both parties, a commiſſion under the great ſeal was iſſued to ſome gentlemen of the councils in the neighbouring provinces to hear and judge in the affair. The commiſſioners met at Hampton in New-Hampſhire Aug. 1, and gave their determination Sept. 2; both parties appealed to the king in council, and the commiſſioners adjourned themſelves to Aug. 1, 1738, to receive the king's pleaſure. 1739, March 5, the appeals were heard before the proper committee of privy council, and afterwards their report was heard before the king in council, where the affair was finally determined. Conformably to this determination the lines were run by the province of New-Hampſhire, *ex parte*, the Maſſachuſetts-Bay government refuſed to join in the ſurvey; the line between New-Hampſhire and the province of Main by Mr. Bryant; the line parallel with, and at three miles (on the north ſide) diſtance from the river Merrimack by Mr. Mitchell; and the line from Patucket falls ſtation W. 10 D. N. to New-York eaſt line by Mr. Hazen. Theſe lines or ſurveys were in May, 1741, lodged with the records of both provinces.

We come now to delineate the northerly line of Maſſachuſetts-Bay province. The commiſſioners for ſettling of it, 1737, put it thus, "If the ſame lands were grant-"ed by W. and M. charter, as by that of Charles I;" then this line ſhould run three miles north from the Black Rock at the mouth of the river Merrimack, and parallel

Penns of Penſylvania, is of a much longer ſtanding, and not as yet iſſued.

with

with the river to three miles north of the crotch where the rivers of Winnepaſiake and Pemegawaſſet meet, and thence due weſt: but if otherwiſe, then the line is to begin at three miles north from the mouth of the ſaid river, and run from thence due weſt. Upon the appeals the king in council iſſued the caſe in neither of theſe ways; but that after the parallel was carried ſo far as the flexure of the river at Patucket falls, it ſhould proceed no farther; becauſe if the parallel line were to be continued farther, it would be eaſt, and not north, from the river; the courſe of the river from this flexure becoming north and ſouth; and from a ſtation three miles north of the flexure or falls, the line to run W. 10 D. N. by compaſs, to New-York eaſt line.

Mr. Mitchell's line parallel with Merrimack river begins at three miles north of a Black Rock, to Patucket ſtation, being W. 9 D. S. by compaſs twenty-ſeven miles. This parallel line paſſes through and cuts off part of the following townſhips of Maſſachuſetts-Bay government, *viz.* Saliſbury, Ameſbury, Haverhill, Methuen, Dracut, and Nottingham; the colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay had extended theſe townſhips beyond the three miles north of Merrimack, not ſo much upon account of their having aſſumed the juriſdiction of that country, at the time of granting theſe townſhips, but chiefly becauſe they were Indian grants to Maſſachuſetts people.

Mr. Hazen's line from Patucket ſtation three miles eaſt of Merrimack river, runs W. 10 D. N. by compaſs to cut Connecticut river (one mile and three quarters north o Northfield meeting houſe; and about ten miles ſouth of fort Dummer) fifty-three miles fifty-eight rods; thence to New-York line twenty miles eaſt from Hudſon's river, thirty-ſix miles ſixty rod; in all about ninety miles. The line continued falls in with Hudſon's river ſix miles above Albany church, and a little below the mouth of Mohawks river This line paſſes through, and takes off from the Maſſachuſetts-Bay juriſdiction, ſome parts of the following townſhips and lands, *viz.* Dun-

ſtable, Groton, Townſend, [p] Ipſwich newtownſhip, Canada to Rowley, ſome province vacant lands, Canada to Sylveſter and others, Canada to Roxbury, Wincheſter, Northfield, Fall-fight townſhip, Boſton new townſhip, No. 2, and province vacant lands to New-York eaſt line.

The ſea line of the old colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay does not exceed eighty miles.

The ſuperficial land contents of ſaid colony we may eſtimate in this manner: 1. Its northerly line in a direct courſe, north ſide of Merrimack river, W. 9 D. S. to Pantucket ſtation is twenty-ſeven miles; thence W. 10 D. N. to New-York eaſt line are about ninety miles; being in all about 117 miles. 2. Its ſoutherly line is from Conohaſſet rocks to the notch in Bridgewater, fifteen miles; thence W. 18 D. ſouth to the ſtation tree twenty-three miles; thence W. 7 D. N. to Rhode-iſland, N. W. corner, which is nearly the ſame with Connecticut N. E. corner twenty-four miles [q], thence W. 9 D. N. to Con-

[p] A few years ſince, the general aſſembly of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay was in the humour of diſtributing the property of much vacant or province land; perhaps in good policy and foreſight, to ſecure to the Maſſachuſetts people, by poſſeſſion, the property of part of ſome controverted lands; accordingly it came to paſs, that upon a royal commiſſion from the court of Great-Britain, to determine this controverſy, the juriſdiction, but not the property, was allotted to New-Hampſhire, or rather to the crown. Some of theſe grants, called townſhips, were to the inhabitants of the ſeveral old townſhips, *e. g.* to Boſton three townſhips, to Ipſwich one, *&c.* nine townſhips were voted, but only ſeven granted, to the deſcendants of the Naraganſet or Pequod Indian war ſoldiers 1637, called Naraganſet townſhips; nine townſhips were granted to the heirs of the militia, or ſoldiers, who went againſt Canada, anno 1690, and are called Canada townſhips. A parcel of theſe townſhips, the furtheſt up in the country, run W. 5 and a half D. S. acroſs from Merrimack river thirty-five miles to Connecticut river, as a barrier againſt the Indians, they are called the double line of towns; whereof No. 3, 8, and 9, are very mountainous, rocky, and ſtony, not capable of ſettlement; No. 4 and 7 are the beſt lands.

At preſent there remains in the territory of Old Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, vacant or provincial lands, not exceeding the value of ſix townſhips of ſix miles ſquare each.

[q] This line, by a production of about twenty miles, falls in with Hudſon's river, about half a mile below the mouth of Eſopus river.

necticut

necticut N. W. corner ſeventy miles; being in all about 132 miles. 3. The meridian diſtance from the above-ſaid northerly and to the ſoutherly line is about forty-ſeven miles. Theſe forty-ſeven miles multiplied into 125, which is nearly the medium between the northerly and ſoutherly line, produces 5875 ſquare miles, which are 3,760,000 acres [*r*].

As to the ſituation of this American province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay in New-England, upon the ſurface of the terreſtrial globe; we ſhall obſerve that BOSTON the chief town or metropolis of New-England, from the obſervations of the late ingenious Mr. Thomas Robie, fellow of Harvard, alias Cambridge college of New-England determined it to be in 42 D. 25 M. N. lat. and [*s*] weſt from London 4 H. 46 M. which is W. long. 71 D. 30 M.

[*r*] By a late determination of the king in council, the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, has loſt of its claimed lands, about one half in number of acres: thus eſtimated; the ſoutherly line of the claimed lands diſunited from Maſſachuſetts, is 117 miles; the northerly line is from Endicot's tree, three miles north of the fork of Merrimack river, thirty five miles to Connecticut river, and thence to New-York eaſt line about ſixty miles, being in all about ninety-five miles, whereof a medium extent eaſt and weſt is 106 miles; this multiplied into fifty-five miles, the meridian diſtance between Pantucket falls and Endicot's tree, gives 5830 ſquare miles, which are 3,731,200 acres.

There are ſome actual ſurveys of extents which ought not to be loſt in oblivion; as for inſtance, from Merrimack river due weſt to Groton meeting-houſe are twelve miles; from Groton meeting-houſe (as ſurveyed by colonel Stoddard, major Fulham, and Mr. Dwight, by order of the general aſſembly) to Northfield meeting-houſe W. 16 D. N. by compaſs, are forty-one miles and a half; from Deerfield meeting-houſe near Connecticut river, a little higher, to Albany church upon the weſt ſide of Hudſon's river, W. 12 and a half D. N. are fifty-ſeven miles twenty rod. From ſuch actual ſurveys the public roads may be laid out to better advantage than at preſent: for inſtance, the preſent road from Boſton to Albany (this is the road to Montreal in Canada) by way of Springfield, the Houſatonick, and Kinderhook is about 200 miles; a new and better road, but not as yet well improved, is *via* Lancaſter and Nichawog to Sunderland upon Connecticut river eighty-four miles, and from Deerfield, a little higher to Albany, are fifty-ſeven miles, being in all only about 150 miles.

The

The general hiſtory under the old charter adminiſtration continued.

THIS charter was dated March 4, 1628-9; by charter Mr. Cradock was nominated their firſt governor, but by reaſon of his advanced age, he declined going over; and Mr. Endicot, deputy-governor, but being of no note, he was dropped: the company in London choſe John Winthrop, governor, and Thomas Dudley, deputy-governor.

Anno 1629, the company ſent over 350 people, 115 neat cattle, ſome horſes, ſheep, and goats (moſt of this ſtock died in the paſſage) ſix pieces of cannon, with ſtores; they landed at Neumkeag, now Salem, June 24, 1629; Mr. Endicot, their leader, gave it the name Salem.

1630. In April, Mr. Winthrop and Mr. Dudley, with ſome of the adventurers and aſſiſtants, many ſettlers and ſervants, proviſions and ſtores, in all ſeventeen ſhips, were ſent over this year: of the ſettlers about 100 died the firſt year; and the ſurvivors [*t*] ſuffered much for want of

[*s*] By the ſame eclipſe of the moon, March 15, 1717, obſerved by Caſſini and De la Hire at Paris (which is 9 M. 40 ſeconds in time eaſt from London) and by Mr. Robie at Cambridge of New-England. Two obſervations better aſcertain the difference of time between two remote places, than an obſervation in one place, and a calculation only for the other.

[*t*] Deputy-governor Dudley, March 28, 1631, wrote home to his friends in England, "The 180 ſervants which we had ſent over, we could not avoid giving them all their liberty, though they coſt us from 16 to 20*l.* ſterling a perſon, not having bread kine for a fortnight. If any comes to this ſettlement to plant for worldly ends (but if for ſpiritual he may do well) that can live well at home, he commits an error, of which he will ſoon repent him; we failed of our expectation to our great damage. People of England, who are endued with grace, and furniſhed with means to find their families for eighteen months, and to build and plant, let them come. In the beginning of our ſettlements we had great ſickneſs and mortality, as well as the ſettlers of New-Plymouth, which ſeemed to proceed from want of warm lodging and good diet; they who landed in ſummer died of fevers from the heats; they who landed in winter, as thoſe of New-Plymouth, died of the ſcurvy.

proviſions.

proviſions. After a chargeable, long, and tedious voyage, they landed at Salem; they diſliked Salem, and choſe to ſettle where the land was better; they proceeded to the mouth of [*u*] Charles-river farther up the bay. Here ſome ſettled, and called it Charles-Town; ſome ſettled at Sagus-river, now Lynn; ſome at Myſtic-river, now Medford; theſe two ſettlements are between Salem and Charles-Town; ſome from Charles-Town croſſed over, and ſettled upon a Peninſula, now called BOSTON, the metropolis of Britiſh America; ſome ſettled from Charles-Town weſtward at Newtown and Watertown; ſome from Boſton ſettled two miles weſt ſouthward, and called it Rockſbury, becauſe rocky ground; ſome ſettled four miles ſouth from Boſton, and called it Dorcheſter; they were moſtly weſt countrymen. Newbury ſettled 1635 [*w*].

Being ſickly, and fearing the ſeverity of the winter, many were diſcouraged; about 100 perſons returned with the ſhips to England; ſome Libertines went to a ſmall ſettlement which had been made at Piſcataqua without this juriſdiction. From ſettling out, April 30, to December following, died upwards of 200 perſons.

Anno 1631, freemen were firſt admitted, and here the old charter law-book begins; preceding May, 1634, admitted about 390 freemen; preceding 1641, about 4000 ſettlers came from England. For the twenty following years, the independent manner in religion was faſhionable at home, and more people went home from New-England, than came abroad to New-England. After the Reſtoration, the epiſcopal church of England again became rigid, and many Diſſenters came over with their miniſters; thus Mr. Allen was appointed miniſter

[*u*] It was ſo called ſome years before this ſettlement.

[*w*] Here I could proceed, and give the hiſtory of the firſt ſettling and progreſſive improvements of moſt townſhips in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; but this would be of too private and confined a nature, to be admitted into a general ſummary, and could engage the attention of but a few readers.

of

of Boſton, Mr. Lee of Briſtol, Mr. Bailey of Watertown, *&c.*

The aſſiduous and well-qualified agent Dummer, in his ingenious and politic piece, publiſhed in London, 1721, in defence of the New-England charters, when all charter and proprietary governments were in danger of being annihilated, by a bill brought into the Houſe of Commons of Great-Britain; he writes, "That the expence of ſettling the Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony for the "firſt twelve years, was about 200,000*l.* ſterling; that "the ſettlers were neither neceſſitous nor criminals."

The hiſtory of their ſucceſſive governors, is as follows:

1630. The company of Maſſachuſetts-Bay adventurers in London, choſe for their governor, John Winthrop, a lawyer, ſon of Adam Winthrop, of Groton in Suffolk; he brought over with him to New-England the proceeds of an eſtate of 600 to 700 *l.* ſterling *per annum*; was almoſt annually elected governor till his death; he was very charitable, particularly in diſtributing his medicinal Van Helmont noſtrums to the poor. His ſon was very inſtrumental in procuring the Connecticut charter, and was annually choſen their governor during his life. His grandſon was ſome time major-general of the colony, and chief-juſtice or judge; he died 1717. To his great grandſon John, was dedicated the xl^th^ vol. of the Philoſophical tranſactions of the London Royal Society; he died lately in London.

1636. In oppoſition to Mr. Winthrop, Henry Van e, ſon of Sir Henry Vane, was choſen governor; he came over an enthuſiaſtic rigid Puritan; his conduct was diſagreeable to the people, he was dropped the year following, and Mr. Winthrop choſen as formerly. He was afterwards member of the long parliament in England; and executed as a traitor 1662. Æt. 50.

1645. Thomas Dudley was elected governor, Mr. Winthrop, deputy-governor: Mr. Dudley was born at Northamp-

Northampton; he was a Puritan, and bred in the army; he was about ten years ſteward to the earl of Lincoln; he came over deputy-governor 1630, and was at times choſen major-general of the colony; he died in Rockſbury, July 31, 1652, Æt. 77. His ſon Joſeph Dudley ſuſtained many great and arduous poſts, Colony-agent, preſident of the council, chief-juſtice, member of parliament in England, and governor of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, as ſhall be in courſe related more at large. His grandſon Paul Dudley, Eſq; is the preſent chief-juſtice of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, of long experience in the laws and cuſtoms of the province; he is noted abroad in the world, by ſome ingenious pieces, relating to the natural hiſtory of New-England, publiſhed in the Philoſophical Tranſactions of the London Royal Society, for the years 1720 and 1721.

1653. John Endicot was choſen governor; he died 1665. 1665, Richard Bellingham, a lawyer, a very old man, was elected; he had been an aſſiſtant or magiſtrate thirty years before; he was choſen governor for ſeven years ſucceſſively; he died 1671, Æt. 80. He had formerly been treaſurer of the province; he was very ſevere againſt Anabaptiſts and Quakers; his memory is perpetuated by the townſhip of Bellingham, being called after his name.

1671. Was choſen John Leverett; he was annually continued governor till death 1676, in the autumn. His father Thomas Leverett, with his family, removed 1633, from Boſton in Lincolnſhire of Old-England, to New-England.

1676. Simon Bradſtreet was elected governor; he was annually rechoſen till anno 1686; the charter being vacated, he was ſuperſeded by preſident Dudley: upon the Revolution in New-England, April 1689, ſubſequent to and conſequent of the Revolution in England, Nov. 1688; by the advice and direction of the principal inhabitants of the colony, with the other colony officers, as elected 1686, he reaſſumed the government, till the arrival of the new charter, May, 1692. This was approved

proved of, and confirmed by W. and M. He was born in Lincolnſhire, had been a fellow of Emanuel College in Cambridge of Old-England; ſucceeded governor Thomas Dudley, as ſteward to the earl of Lincoln; he married a ſiſter of governor Joſeph Dudley; he died March 27, 1697, Æt. 95; he was the longeſt liver of all the firſt planters of New-England.

Some ſhort time after the ſucceſſion of king James II, the charter being vacated, Joſeph Dudley, Eſq; who had been ſent over the colony's agent, arrived in Boſton, June 1686, as preſident with a council; he aſſumed the adminiſtration; he was ſuperſeded by

The arrival of Sir Edmund Andros, governor of New-England, in Dec. 1686; he continued governor, until ſent home, with his officers, by the Revolutioners in the ſpring, 1689. He had been governor of New-York under the duke [x] of York and Albany for ſeven years preceding 1684, when he was ſuperſeded by colonel Dongan a Roman catholic: anno 1692 in Virginia he had the chief command, having ſucceeded Francis Nicholſon, who was lieutenant-governor under lord Howard, principal governor, diſmiſſed; Sir Edmund continued governor until 1698, when colonel Nicholſon from Maryland ſuperſeded him; governor Nicholſon returned to England 1704, and was ſucceeded by the earl of Orkney. Here we inſenſibly anticipate affairs belonging to the ſection of Virginia.

The ſucceſſive major-generals under the old charter were, Thomas Dudley, John Endicot, Edward Gibbons, Robert Sedgwick, Humphrey Atherton, Daniel Denniſon, John Leverett, Daniel Gookin, and Thomas Sergeant.

The ſucceſſive ſecretaries, were William Burgis, Simon Bradſtreet, Increaſe Newel, and Edward Rawſon; between the old and new charters in the intermediate

[x] The city of New-York was ſo called from his Engliſh title; and the city of Albany from his Scots title.

arbitrary

arbitrary oppreſſive adminiſtration in the reign of James II, James Randolph was ſecretary.

Colonel Uſher, at the Revolution was treaſurer for the dominions of New-England; upon this Revolution he went off abruptly.

[*y*] *Some ſingularly remarkable laws and cuſtoms iu the old charter adminiſtration.*

THEIR enacting ſtyle was, *It is ordered by this court, and the authority thereof.*

For many years from the beginning, the governor, aſſiſtants, or council, not under ſeven, and deputies or repreſentatives in a legiſlative capacity [*z*] voted together; but from long experience divers inconveniencies were found to ariſe, and it was enacted 1652, that the magiſtrates (governor and council) ſhould ſit and vote apart, conſtituting [*a*] a ſeparate negative.

The governor, deputy-governor, and aſſiſtants, or council called magiſtrates, were the ſuperior court for appeals in civil caſes; and were the court of oyer and terminer in caſes of life, member, baniſhment, and divorce. After they were conſtituted two diſtinct houſes, if they happened to differ in any caſes of judicature civil or criminal, the affair was to be determined by a vote of the whole court met together. The ge-

[*y*] Theſe minutes and common place from records and obſervations of ſelf and friends, I hope, are exact, and all matters material may be depended upon; but the buſineſs of my profeſſion and other affairs, do not allow me time ſufficient to reduce them into a ſtrict ſtiff method or order; therefore they appear miſcellaneous, but in ſome looſe manner digeſted for the uſe of future writers.

[*z*] In Scotland, before the happy union 1707, in their parliaments, the peers, commiſſioners for ſhires or counties, and commiſſioners for burghs or boroughs, made only one houſe and voted together.

[*a*] The colonies of Connecticut and Rhode-iſland followed their example, and their legiſlature to this day conſiſts of two negatives: the governor has no third negative, as in the provinces ſtrictly belonging to the crown; but in the upper houſe or negative, in caſe of an equivote, he determines the affair.

neral court only, had power to pardon condemned criminals. The governor when preſent was preſident in all courts. No general court to be continued above one year. The governor, deputy-governor, or majority of the aſſiſtants, may call a general aſſembly; but this aſſembly is not to be adjourned or diſſolved, but by a vote of the ſame.

County courts may admit freemen, being [*b*] church-members, that is, of the independent or congregational religious mode; only freemen were capable of voting in civil aſſemblies: 1662, upon the king's letter, this law was repealed.

Formerly ſome townſhips had it in their option, to ſend or not ſend deputies to the general aſſembly. The deputies of Dover and ſuch other towns as are not by law bound to ſend deputies, may be excuſed.

The officers annually elected by the freemen in general (not by their repreſentatives or deputies in the general court or aſſembly) were the governor, the deputy-governor, the aſſiſtants or council, the treaſurer, the major-general, the admiral at ſea, the commiſſioners for the united colonies, and the ſecretary.

By an act 1641, the freemen of any ſhire or town, have liberty to chuſe deputies for the general court [*c*], either in their own ſhire or town, or elſewhere as they judge fitteſt; ſo be it, they be freemen and inhabiting this juriſdiction.

By a law made 1654, no perſon, who is an uſual or common attorney in any [*d*] inferior court, ſhall be ad-

[*b*] This was too narrow and confined, perhaps more ſevere than ever was practiſed by the church of England in its moſt bigotted and faulted periods; the preſent generation in New-England are of an extenſive charity to all Proteſtants, though differing in ſome peculiar, but not eſſential, modes or ways of worſhip.

[*c*] This law was not re-enacted under the new charter adminiſtration, but a ſpecial act; reſidence was required, by the influence of a party or faction averſe to a polite aſſembly well verſed in commercial and other public general affairs of the world.

[*d*] At this time the general aſſembly was called the ſupreme or general court.

mitted

mitted to ſit as a deputy in the general court or aſſembly.

Where the country or colony laws are deficient, the caſe ſhall be determined by the [*e*] word of GOD.

Diſfranchiſement, and baniſhment, were the uſual penalties for great crimes.

Governor and deputy-governor jointly agreeing, or any of their aſſiſtants, conſenting, have power out of court, to reprieve a condemned malefactor, till the next court of aſſiſtants, or general court; and that the general court only hath power to pardon a condemned malefactory.

1652, Enacted, That a Mint-houſe be erected in Boſton, to coin ſilver of ſterling alloy into 12 *d.* 6*d.* and 3*d.* pieces, in value leſs than that of the preſent Engliſh coin by 2 *d.* in the ſhilling; the ſtamp to be, within a double ring; on the one ſide MASSACHUSETS, with a tree in the centre; on the other ſide NEW-ENGLAND, with the year [*f*] 1652, and the figure XII, VI, and III, according to the value of each piece; with a private mark. Excepting Engliſh coin, no other money to be current in this common-wealth; 5 *per cent.* for [*g*] charges of coining to be allowed by the owners of the ſilver brought into the mint to be coined. Exportation of this coin, except twenty ſhillings for neceſſary expences, is prohibited on pain of confiſcation of all viſible eſtate. Coinage is a prerogative of the Sovereignty, not of a colony. Scarce any of this coin now appears; with all other ſilver coin, it is drove away by a multiplied fallacious baſe paper-currency.

Beſides ſome ſmall duties of impoſt upon ſtrong liquors imported; and a ſmall exciſe of 2 *s.* 6 *d.* per hhd.

[*e*] Our Bible in theſe times was their body of laws, civil as well as eccleſiaſtical, eſpecially in criminal caſes.

[*f*] All the New England coin is dated 1652; though for many following years they continued coining.

[*g*] In Great-Britain the coinage charge is defrayed by the government; for this uſe the parliament allows 15,000 *l. per annum.*

upon cyder, and malt liquors retained; and tonnage, 6 *d.* per ton, upon ſhipping; the ordinary revenue was a poll tax or capitation upon all male whites of 16 Æt. and upwards, and a rate of — *d.* in the pound of principal eſtate at ſmall valuations: thus for inſtance, anno 1651, the tax was 20 *d.* per poll, and a rate of 1 *d.* in the pound eſtate.

Anno 1692, when the old charter expired, a tax of 10 *s.* poll, and a rate of 30 *s.* upon every 100 *l.* of principal eſtate, was computed to raiſe 30,000 *l.* value equal to proclamation money.

Anno 1639, a Court merchant is appointed. When a ſtranger's affairs do not allow him to tarry the ordinary terms of the courts; the governor or deputy, with any two of the aſſiſtants, or any three of the aſſiſtants, may call a ſpecial court.

Several acts for fairs and markets in ſeveral towns; for inſtance, in Boſton two yearly fairs, and a weekly market upon the 5th day [*b*].

Enacted, a ſmall body of good maritime laws in twenty-ſeven ſections.

The œconomy of their militia was after this manner. All white men of 16 Æt. and upwards, were inliſted; no company of foot to be under ſixty-four private men (ſmall towns are to join) no troops of horſe to exceed ſeventy men. The non-commiſſion officers to be appointed by the commiſſion officers of the company. The commiſſion officers of a company to be choſen by a majority of the men inliſted in that company, to be approved by the county-court, or ſeſſions. All the companies of one county or regiment, by a majority of the men belonging to that regiment are to chuſe a ſerjeant-major of the county, the commander of that regiment. The commander of all the militia of the colony was in a major-general, annually choſen by the general aſſem-

[*b*] It is not eaſily to be accounted for, that the court-merchant, and weekly markets, were not re-enacted under the new charter adminiſtration.

bly [*i*]. Any ſeven aſſiſtants, whereof the governor or deputy-governor to be one, may impreſs ſoldiers.

To prevent oppreſſion, any perſon taking exceſſive wages for work done, or unreaſonable prices for neceſſary merchandize; ſhall be fined at the diſcretion of the court where the offence is preſented. The ſelect men to regulate the wages of porters.

The forms of their judicial oaths were, By the Name of the Living, and ſometimes Ever-living GOD—By the great Name of the Ever-living Almighty GOD—By the great and dreadful Name of the Ever-living GOD. Theſe were uſed according to the ſolemnity of the occaſion.

Any perſon may view and have atteſted copies of any records; the journals of the council excepted.

[*k*] Powowoers to be fined five pounds. Jeſuits, or any Roman catholic eccleſiaſtics, to be baniſhed; if they return, to ſuffer death: this law was afterwards extended to the Quakers.

Anno 1656, none of that curſed ſect of heretics, lately riſen up in the world, which are commonly called Quakers, are to be imported: penalty upon the maſter 100*l.* per piece, and 40*s.* per hour for any other perſon harbouring or entertaining them.

1658. A Quaker [*l*] convicted, ſhall be baniſhed upon pain of death.

[*i*] All this is fully expreſſed in a few words in the Dorcheſter burying place near Boſton, upon a grave-ſtone of Mr. Atherton; he ſuſtained all theſe commands, as alſo the office of aſſiſtant or magiſtrate in the ſtate, and deacon in the church or congregation; the poetry is rude, being compoſed in the infancy of the country:

Here lies our Captain, and Major of Suffolk was withal,
A godly Magiſtrate was he, and Major general.

Anno 1655, Cromwell divided England into eleven diſtricts, and conſtituted a military commander in each, by the name of Major-general, but this was ſoon diſuſed. At preſent in Great-Britain, the militia of each county is under the direction of a lord-lieutenant, or of a lieutenancy of the country.

[*k*] Theſe were Indian conjurers and fortune-tellers.

[*l*] The Quakers, by their ſimplicity of manners, fair dealings, in-

Penalty for playing at cards or dice 5 *s.* for obſerving any ſuch day as Chriſtmas 5 *s.* profaners of the ſabbath day, for the firſt offence to be admoniſhed, but for after offences to be fined. Drinking healths aboard of veſſels 20 *s.* every health. Reviling magiſtrates or miniſters 5 *l.* or whipping.

1633. Conſtables are to preſent unprofitable fowlers, and tobacco-takers, to the next magiſtrate.

No motion of marriage to be made to any maid, without the conſent of her parents. Births, marriages, and deaths to be recorded in each town: to be returned yearly to the county court or ſeſſions.

The general aſſembly having received and peruſed a letter from the privy council in England, with an act of parliament 12 Carol. II. for the encouraging of ſhipping and navigation; they appointed naval officers in all their proper ſea-ports, the tranſactions to be tranſmitted to London once a year by the ſecretary.

Women, girls, and boys, are enjoined to ſpin; the ſelect men of each town, are to aſſeſs each family, at one or more ſpinners: when they have avocations of other buſineſs, they are to be deemed half or quarter ſpinners; a whole ſpinner ſhall ſpin every year, for thirty weeks, three pound every week of linnen, cotton, or woollen.

duſtry, frugality, humanity, and charity, with good propriety, give themſelves the denomination of FRIENDS: as ſuch they are at preſent much in favour with the civil government of Great-Britain; in theſe colonies, by an order from the crown, they are exempted from paying towards the parochial miniſters dues. I muſt not produce this as an inſtance (becauſe a powerful corps are in the oppoſition) that a regular clergy in pay, under the confined (confinement occaſions deſertion) diſcipline of Creeds, Confeſſions, Canons, Articles, *&c.* are not of that uſe in ſociety (from the long experience of many centuries) as thoſe not confined, but who act as voluntiers or irregulars not paid, but merely as from the *Amor Patriæ et Proximi*, they are directed. Forms in religion are generally of bad influence; with the vulgar, they paſs for the ALL of religion, and are thereby diverted from the eſſentials, *viz.* a good life, and charity, which is brotherly-love to the affluent, and compaſſion toward our neighbours the indigent.

Five

Five years quiet poſſeſſion to be deemed a good title. In commonages five ſheep ſhall be reckoned equal to one cow.

1667. No licenced perſon to ſell beer, but of four buſhels barley malt at leaſt, to the hogſhead, and not to be ſold above 2 *d.* the ale quart; not to be mixed with molaſſes, coarſe ſugar, or other materials. No mackarel to be caught, except for ſpending whilſt freſh, before the firſt of July annually. Surveyors appointed to view all ſhipping in building.

Wampumpeag to be a tender in payment of debts not exceeding 40 *s.* at 8 white or 4 black a penny; this was repealed anno 1661.

After a vote paſſed in any aſſembly or civil court, a member may enter his diſſent, without entering his reaſons of diſſent, to be recorded.

In all aſſemblies, neuters, that is ſilents, ſhall be accounted votes for the negative. Any two magiſtrates with the clerk of the county, may take probate of wills, or grant adminiſtration.

In old charter times the colony was at firſt divided into the three counties of Suffolk, Eſſex, and Middleſex; when they aſſumed the juriſdiction of New-Hampſhire and province of Main, and ſettled compactly upon Connecticut river, the colony, 1671, was divided into theſe ſix counties:

Counties	Shire-towns
Suffolk	Boſton.
Norfolk	Saliſbury and Hampton.
Eſſex	Salem and Ipſwich.
Piſcataqua	Dover and Portſmouth.
Middleſex	Charleſtown and Cambridge.
Yorkſhire	York.
Hampſhire	Northampton and Springfield.

Tranſactions relating to their Religious Affairs.

SOME account of the various ſectaries or modes of religious diſcipline and worſhip in the ſeveral Britiſh American colonies, was deſigned for the ſection of Rhode-iſland colony, that plantation being productive or receptive of very many ſectaries: but as the perſecutions (ſo called) of ſundry ſectaries in the old colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, is too much and too impartially noted by many hiſtorians; I could not avoid in this place, to give a few and matter-of-fact account of theſe things. I. Concerning the congregational way of religious diſcipline and worſhip as generally practiſed in the colonies of New-England. II. Some narrative of the ſeverities uſed in the Maſſachuſetts-Bay, towards various ſectaries or communions of rigid Browniſts, Antinomians, Muggletonians, Anabaptiſts, Quakers, and [*m*] Witches [*n*].

I. [*o*] Some conſcientious non-conformiſts haraſſed by the biſhops courts, *&c.* in the reign of James I, obtained a looſe grant from the council of Plymouth called the New-England company, of ſome lands in North-America; they tranſported themſelves to New-England, and at firſt were perhaps [*p*] enthuſiaſtically rigid and called Browniſts [*q*], from the name of their apoſtle or

[*m*] Witches are Enthuſiaſts or Maniacs, and may, with propriety of words, be ſaid of the devil's communion.

[*n*] By the many controverſies in revealed religions, the ſeveral ſects expoſe the inconſiſtencies and abſurdities of one another's opinions, and occaſion the wiſe and thinking part of mankind to regulate themſelves by natural religion only; and to conclude that all religions only are good, which teach men to be good.

[*o*] See p. 224. 369.

[*p*] Nothing but a religious heat or zeal at that time could have withſtood the ſeverities of their winters; at preſent their winters are leſs rigid from the country being more and more cleared of woods, and expoſed to the ſun, which diſſolves their ſnows ſooner than before it was opened.

[*q*] Robert Brown firſt appeared 1580. Sir Walter Raleigh writes, that in 1592, there were in England near 20,000 Browniſts.

leader;

leader; afterwards their indiſcreet zeal beginning to ſubſide, they were called [r] Independents, becauſe every congregation was independent of the other churches, but not independent of the civil government, as ſome invidiouſly repreſent it. A church conſiſted only of ſo many people as could conveniently meet together in one audience, and under covenant among themſelves; a vote of the brotherhood, made and unmade their miniſter, elders, and deacons; a miniſter could not adminiſter but to his own congregation; they allowed of communion with other churches in word and prayer, but not in ſacraments and diſcipline; they adviſed with neighbouring churches, but were under no obligation to follow their advice.

After ſome time, they ſtill became more moderate and ſociable; they converted the deſignation Independent, to that of congregational: although they retained the notion of an independent ſupreme eccleſiaſtic power in each congregation; they allowed, that ſometimes it may be expedient to have the advice of ſynods and councils: thus inſenſibly and naturally, for ſake of good order, they fall into the Preſbyterian mode; and, in fact, have had ſeveral ſynods appointed by the civil legiſlature. 1. In Auguſt 30, 1637, in Newtown was called an univerſal ſynod to condemn the errors of the Rigids and Antinomians; M. Williams, Mr. Vane, and Mrs. Hutchinſon were their leaders; this ſynod continued three weeks: this occaſioned an emigration, and the ſettling of the colony of Rhode-iſland. 2. Sept. 30, 1648, by order of the legiſlature, a ſynod was called at Cambridge, to eſtabliſh uniformity; they agree to the Weſtminſter confeſſion of 1646, in matters of faith and doctrine, but compoſe a plan of their own for diſcipline. 3. Anno

[r] This mode of religion ſeems to be laudable and well adapted to prevent *imperium in imperio*, that is, a church government from controuling the ſtate or civil government. Cromwell, a very great ſtateſman, as well as general, was ſenſible of this; they were his favourites upon that account.

1662, in the ſpring, in Boſton a ſynod was called by direction of the general aſſembly, concerning the right that grand-children of church-members had to baptiſm, concerning the conſociation of churches, and ſome other affairs of church-memberſhip. 4. Anno 1679, another ſynod in Boſton was appointed by the legiſlature, to conſult what was proper to be done to remove the evils which continued to afflict the people of New-England; 1678, many had died of the ſmall-pox; the reſult was, that all the churches ſhould renew their covenant. They had a ſecond ſeſſion, May 12, 1680, and agreed upon a confeſſion of faith, nearly the ſame with that of the Independents in England, Oct. 12, 1658, called the Savoy confeſſion of faith, and ſeemed to renounce the models of Geneva and Scotland. 5. Anno 1687, the miniſters of Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, jointly ſent an addreſs of thanks to king James II, for his [s] indulgence or general toleration of religious opinions and congregations. This was ſent over and preſented to king James by Mr. Increaſe Mather; he and his conſtituents were not politicians ſufficient to penetrate into the wicked and pernicious contrivance of that toleration. 6. About thirty years ſince, it was propoſed in the general aſſembly to call a ſynod of the congregational churches of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; this was refuſed or dropped, becauſe by the act of union of Scotland and England, it is provided that the church of England government, in all the Engliſh colonies was for ever eſtabliſhed. Here the hiſtory of New-England church ſynods muſt terminate.

All convocations, general aſſemblies, ſynods, *&c.* of clergymen, by their indiſcreet zeal or heats, rather increaſe, than heal the diſtempers of the church.

In other articles, the New-England Independents become leſs contracted, and of more extenſive charity.

[s] By this general indulgence Popery was craftily to be introduced; the colony of Plymouth unadviſedly ſent an addreſs of the ſame nature.

Although

Although a church properly conſiſted of no more perſons or Chriſtians, than could conveniently meet together in one place, cemented by a holy covenant, and admitted into church-membership by perſonal public confeſſion; at preſent they have relaxed of that rigidity, and, 1. In many of their churches, do not require that perſonal public confeſſional appearance, in order to be admitted into church-membership; but only a private application to their paſtor or miniſter to be communicated to the church only, if required. 2. They admit occaſionally members of other churches to the Lord's ſupper, by letters of recommendation. 3. A miniſter may occaſionally adminiſter the ſacraments to a neighbouring vacant church. 4. The brethren of the church, at the ordination of a miniſter, do not lay on hands; it is done by the laying on of the hands of the miniſters [*t*] of ſome neighbouring churches invited for that purpoſe: this is a conſiderable feſtival day in the townſhip or pariſh. 5. A lay elder may teach and perform all offices, excepting the adminiſtration of the ſacraments.

At preſent the Congregationaliſts of New-England may be eſteemed among the moſt moderate and charitable of Chriſtian profeſſions.

The perſecution of ſectaries in New-England, particularly of Anabaptiſts and Quakers, is not minutely related here; as being only local and temporary from the wrong-pointed zeal of the times, without any political wicked deſign [*u*].

[*t*] In a New-England ordination, five diſtinct perſonages or parts are required, 1. A preparatory Prayer. 2. A ſuitable ſermon. 3. A charge. 4. Another Prayer. 5. The right-hand of fellowſhip; ſome others join in the impoſition of hands.

[*u*] Mankind in a natural unpoliſhed ſtate is *animal ſuperſtitioſum*: this is the natural reaſon of the great influence of the clergy. A fiery hot religious zeal, or frantickneſs, with variety of ſymptoms or tenets, like other bodily diſtempers, at times becomes contagious and epidemic, principally amongſt the weak conſtitutions of mind; as bodily ails ſeize weak conſtitutions of body: for inſtance, in Great-Britain,

If

If by ſectaries are meant Diſſenters from the general mode of the religion of the country at that time; the church of England worſhip was formerly a diſſenſion in New-England: the firſt church of England congregation formed there was in Boſton 1679: it ſtill ſubſiſts and flouriſhes; and beſides a rector in the election and at the charge of the congregation, there is an annual royal bounty for an aſſiſtant miniſter, ſometimes called lecturer: hitherto, excepting in Boſton, there is no church of England, but miſſionaries: at this time, anno 1748 (including Mr. Price for Hopkinton appointed, but not as yet arrived) in the new charter province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, are ſeven miſſionary congregations, and about 200 independent congregations; beſides ſome congregations of Iriſh Preſbyterians, Anabaptiſts, Quakers, and lately ſome muſhroom meetings of Separatiſts, diſciples of Mr. Whitefield, and, as of ſhort duration, ſcarce deſerving mention.

By the articles of union of the two nations of Great-Britain, May 1707, the church of England is eſtabliſhed

the Lollards, Anabaptiſts, Independents, Quakers, Witches: this zeal, if left to nature, after ſome ſhort time defervesces and ſubſides; but if uſed with harſh violent adminiſtrations, that is, with perſecution, the diſtemper becomes more intenſe, more laſting, and more contagious or ſpreading. In all religious diſtemperatures, lenitives by long experience are found to be the moſt efficacious medicines; thus, of the abovementioned, ſome have diſappeared, the Lollards and Witches; the others are become very moderate, tractable, and ſome of the beſt members of the commonwealth or civil ſociety.

At preſent the differences amongſt the various communions, communities, or perſuaſions of Proteſtants in the Britiſh dominions, are not doctrinal, or eſſential; being only different modes or faſhions, in church-government, ceremonies of worſhip and veſtments: the Quaker himſelf, in his old-faſhioned formal dreſs, ſeems to ſome, to be as ſuperſtitious, as a clergyman of the church of England in his gown, caſſock, and other pontifical accoutrements. For this reaſon, the civil government of Great-Britain tolerates or connives at all Proteſtant denominations of Chriſtians; there are only the three denominations of Preſbyterians, Independents (in New-England they are called Congregationaliſts) and Anabaptiſts, who take out toleration licences. Speculative private opinions can never diſturb a ſtate.

in

in perpetuity in all the territories at that time to England belonging; but before this period, in all charters and governors patents, a general toleration for all Chriſtian religious communities (Roman catholics excepted) was the eccleſiaſtical conſtitution of our American colonies, without any preference [*w*].

1. The rigid Browniſts [*x*] are almoſt extinct; nothing violent, or out of the common courſe of human reaſon, can hold long; we have already given ſome tranſient hints concerning them; in the infancy of theſe colonies there were many degrees of rigidity [*y*], whereof ſeveral were puritanic and fanatical, of very ſhort continuance. The Rigids generally [*z*] ſeceded from the more moderate [*a*], and removed with their teachers or miniſters without the limits or juriſdiction of the colony. Anno

[*w*] The miniſters of the congregational perſuaſion, or diſcipline, in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, continue to meet annually about the time of the anniverſary provincial election of counſellors (being an annual jubilee, or feſtival, or concourſe from all parts of the colony) not by aſſuming any eccleſiaſtical authority, or combination, but only by way of friendly or brotherly intercourſe.

[*x*] True ſincere Enthuſiaſts may be of good civil uſe, if well pointed; I do not mean Freethinkers and Libertines, who for worldly ends, may act the hypocrite in any ſhape; but ſuch as make a conſcience of religion in general, and of their own way of thinking in particular, and are zealous for making of converts in ſpite of all perils and fatigue; ſuch may be uſeful miſſionaries amongſt the heathen, and promote religion and trade with them. This Enthuſiaſm ought to be encouraged and promoted.

[*y*] Mr. Locke, in a letter to Mr. Bold, dated Oates, May, 1699, ſays, "I deſign to take my religion from the Scripture, and then, whether it ſuits or ſuits not any other denomination, I am not much concerned; for I think at the laſt day it will not be enquired, whether I was of the church of England or Geneva; but whether I fought and embraced truth in the love of it."

[*z*] Some devotees would ſacrifice their king (or any other form of civil government) and country blindly to the enthuſiaſtic ſuperſtitious injunctions of their prieſts and exhorters. The laws of nature and nations require the curbing of theſe.

[*a*] The ſeveral ſects, or communions of Proteſtants, ſeem to agree in the eſſential doctrines of the Chriſtian religion, and differ only in ſome fanciful modes and external faſhions of worſhip.

1634,

1634, Roger Williams, miniſter of Salem, was baniſhed becauſe of his [*b*] Antinomian and [*c*] fanatical doctrines; after ſome removes, with his diſciples, he ſettled on the ſouth ſide of Patucket river and called their ſettlement Providence plantations, which name it retains to this day; they purchaſed it of the Indians, or had liberty from them to ſettle there: an inſtance of his formality, is a letter from him, dated, Nantigganſick 24th of the firſt month, commonly called March, the ſecond year of our plantation (by way of epocha, or in imitation of the V. C. of the Romans) or planting at Moothiſick or Providence.

When the people get into the diſtemperature, or humour of differing and dividing eſpecially in religion; they proceed to ſubdiviſions, and ſeparations upon ſeparations. Anno 1636, in the ſummer, ſome diſcontented Rigids to the number of about one hundred, went from the townſhips of Newtown, Dorcheſter, Watertown, and Rockſbury, under their leaders and teachers, Homes, Hopkins, Ludlow, Hooker, *&c.* removed weſtward to a pleaſant country upon Connecticut river, and gradually made the ſettlements of Hartford, Wethersfield, Windſor, Springfield, *&c.* Thoſe of them who found their ſettlements without the limits of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay charter, entered into a voluntary aſſociation or juriſdiction, which continued until they obtained an ample royal charter in the beginning of the reign of Charles II; as ſhall be more fully related in the ſection of Connecticut

[*b*] Antinomians hold, that the law of Moſes is unprofitable under the Goſpel; that juſtification is without good works; that morality and good works are no help to ſalvation, but rather a hindrance: ſuch pernicious doctrines are inconſiſtent with civil ſociety, and with goodneſs and honeſty, or a private life.

[*c*] The various enthuſiaſtical modes, at their firſt appearance in the world, were frantic with a violent, indiſcreet, religious zeal: they generally agree in two pernicious articles; 1. They diſclaim a civil magiſtracy and temporal puniſhments; and, 2. Their own wild notions are by themſelves called impulſes from GOD.

colony;

colony; thoſe are at preſent moderate, induſtrious, well-governed people.

Some of the Separatiſts were concerned in the ſettlement of Rhode-iſland (it was then called Aquatneck, and anno 1644, it was called the Iſle of Rhodes or Rhode-iſland) 1637-8 by a voluntary incorporation of eighteen perſons: this belongs to the ſection of Rhode-iſland.

2. The Anabaptiſts, at their firſt appearance in New-England, were enthuſiaſtically troubleſome; they choſe among themſelves the meaneſt of the people for their miniſters; they call themſelves Baptiſts by way of abbreviation of the name Anabaptiſts, after the [*d*] Lollards, who were the firſt in the Reformation, followed the Lutherans and Anabaptiſts [*e*]: ſome of them vainly imagine, that they ought to be called by that name in a peculiar manner; their baptiſm being the only ſcriptural baptiſm:

[*d*] The Lollards (ſo called from Walter Lollard, the author of this ſect in Germany in the thirteenth century) were our firſt Reformers; their name is now loſt, the firſt Reformation being ſubdivided into many denominations. They firſt appeared in England, under Wickliff, D. D. of Oxford, about the middle of the fourteenth century; they clamoured againſt tranſubſtantiation, auricular confeſſion, celibacy of the clergy, hierarchy, and ſeveral pecuniary perquiſites of the Roman catholic clergy; with ſome enthuſiaſtical notions, *viz.* the church conſiſts only of the predeſtinated, converting of church-effects to other uſes is no ſacrilege, neither public nor private ſucceſſion is indefeaſible, *&c.*

[*e*] The Anabaptiſts, a particular ſort of devotees, firſt appeared about the time of Luther's Reformation, and prevailed chiefly in the Netherlands and Weſtphalia; their eſſential or diſtinguiſhing doctrine was, not baptizing of infants, and re-baptizing by dipping ſuch as had been baptized in their infancy: hence is the denomination of Anabaptiſts; they pretended that infant baptiſm was not to be found in the Bible: at firſt they were moderate and orderly: Luther requeſted the duke of Saxony, that they might be favourably deal with, becauſe, their notional error excepted, they ſeemed to be otherwiſe good men. They ſoon ran into many pernicious wild doctrines; they condemned all civil adminiſtration and magiſtracy; corporal puniſhments (as a divine prerogative) they reſerved to God Almighty; they deſpiſed judicial oaths; diſregarded the ſcriptures, pretending to a perſonal kind of peculiar illumination, a community of goods, *&c.* John Buckhold a butcher, a native of Leyden, commonly called John or Jack of Leyden, having embraced the Anabaptiſtical ſeditious notions, became very popular, with many followers; the cry or parole was, Regent, and

they would not communicate with perſons baptized in infancy only; if occaſionally in a congregational meeting, upon a child's being preſented for baptiſm, they withdrew, to the great diſturbance of the congregation: fines were enacted; Holmes, becauſe he would not pay his fine, was whipped thirty laſhes. Anno 1644 and 1646, laws were made againſt diſturbers of the peace in any church in times of divine ſervice, and againſt raillery of magiſtrates; that all who ſhall condemn or oppoſe the baptiſm of infants, or that ſhall purpoſely depart the congregation at the adminiſtration of that ordinance, or that ſhall deny the order of magiſtracy; every perſon continuing obſtinate in theſe, after the proper means of conviction have been uſed, ſhall be ſentenced to baniſhment. In the beginning they generally kept the Sabbath with the congregational churches; their firſt ſeparation to form a peculiar church was at Rehoboth, 1651, and were much perſecuted all over New-England: from their church in Swanzey, proceeded a church in Boſton, May 28, 1665, which to this day continues a very orderly peaceable chriſtian ſociety: the young vagrant, Mr. Whitfield, by his preachings, or rather ſtrong youthful vociferations, did draw off ſome of the congregationaliſts week minds, to an Antinomian, or antimorality ſeparation: this occaſioned a ſeparation amongſt the Anabaptiſts, and their Separatiſts have a diſtinct congregation under Mr. Bounds, the leather breeches-maker; and two more Separatiſts, miniſters from the Congregationaliſts, are ſhortly to be ordained, *viz.* Mr. Croſſwell and Mr. Clark in Boſton.

3. The [*f*] Muggletonian books, anno 1654, by act of Aſſembly, as being full of blaſphemies (they go under

be re-baptized; in his itineraneies, at Munſter in Weſtphalia, he fell into open ſedition, and was maſter of the city for ſome time: the biſhop, by blockade, recovered it, and Buckhold ſuffered an exemplary painful lingring death, 1534.

[*f*] Muggleton was a journeyman taylor, he pretended to be a great prophet, and to an abſolute power of damning or ſaving whom he pleaſed.

the

the names of John Reeves and Lowdowich Muggleton, who pretended to be the two laſt prophets and witneſſes of JESUS CHRIST) to be brought to the next magiſtrate to be burnt by the common executioner in the market-place of Boſton upon a market-day: penalty ten pound for every book diſcovered not brought in.

4. The [g] Quakers firſt appearance in New-England was 1654, from Old-England and Barbadoes: their behaviour was ludicrous and indecent; they copied from the Anabaptiſts in their moſt enthuſiaſtic ſtate; the firſt in Boſton, were [b] Mary Fiſher and Anne Auſtin from Barbadoes: they ſeemed to join with the Antinomians and Anabaptiſts; they had many converts in [i] Salem, and it was their head-quarters. They impiouſly declared, that they were immediately ſent from GOD, and blaſphemouſly aſſerted they were infallibly aſſiſted by the Holy Spirit; they deſpiſed and ſpake evil of dignities, or civil magiſtrates, to the great diſturbance of civil juriſdiction. By reaſon of their enormities, ſome laws were made againſt the importation of Quakers, and their proceedings; as being obſtinate rogues, vagabonds, 1656, 1658, and 1659; and as diſturbers of the peace of the

[g] Their firſt appearance in England was anno 1644: George Fox, a ſhoe-maker, was their grand apoſtle, and were called Enthuſiaſts; anno 1650, they firſt obtained the name of Quakers from their oſcillatory, or vibrating bodily devotional action.

[b] Women (ſome women are qualified with an agility or glibneſs of tongue, eſpecially in railing againſt their ſuperiors and neighbours) have officiated as preachers, further back than hiſtory reaches; the Sibyls and other oracle deliverers were women; the oracle church or ſcheme (a modern word for religious ſectaries) of doctrine, the moſt ancient of Greece, was ſet up after the model of the oracle of Jupiter Ammon at Thebes in Egypt; the oracle of Apollo at Delphi, was the moſt celebrated in Greece, and their top preacher was Pythia or Pythoniſſa a woman. Thus we find that this woman-preaching religion is very ancient: what is lately called by our enthuſiaſts ſeeking of the Lord, reſembles the conſulting of oracles among the ancients.

[i] In Salem and its neighbourhood, enthuſiaſm, and other nervous diſorders, ſeem to be endemial; it was the ſeat of the New-England witchcraft, anno 1692; hypocondriac, hyſteric, and other maniac diſorders prevail there, and at Ipſwich adjoining, to this day.

common-

commonwealth, they were ſubjected to fines, impriſonments, whipping, cropping of ears (1658 three Quakers had their ears cropt) and baniſhment, and by act of aſſembly upon their return from baniſhment, 1659 and 1660, three or four Quakers ſuffered death: this in courſe occaſioned a national clamour, and the pains of death were exchanged into thoſe of being whipped, only through three towns at the cart's tail; but upon further complaints home, king Charles II, in council, by order, Sept. 9, 1661, required the accuſed to be ſent home for trial, and all penal laws relating to Quakers to be ſuſpended.

The people who are called by the ludicrous name of Quakers are at preſent noted for a laudable parſimony or frugality, moral honeſty, and mutual friendſhip: they have attained a conſiderable intereſt in the commonwealth: peerage like, they are indulged with affirmation, inſtead of a judicial oath; and in New-England they are exempted from paying rates to the townſhip miniſters. As Quakers, they call themſelves friends in a peculiar manner; their rejecting that ſacred ſymbol of Chriſtian friendſhip, "eating and drinking together" in the ſacrament of the Lord's ſupper, is not to be accounted for.

5. As to the witchcraft ſectary[k], we ſhall only mention what happened anno 1692, when a moſt horrid inhuman murder, by colour of law, was perpetrated upon many ignorant maniacs, and other perſons affected in their

[k] Originally *veneficium*, or witchcraft, did not ſignify an explicit covenant with the devil; but the ſtudy of the poiſonous qualities of herbs, and theſe herb-women were called *veneficæ*, or witches. The witchcraft of our times is a pavid ſuperſtition and ignorance; therefore it prevails in Lapland, and other obſcure ignorant parts of the world. Some adore what they admire, this is the only true religion; ſome adore what they fear: free-thinking politicians aſſert, that devil-worſhip is better than none, becauſe the firm belief of ſome inviſible ſuperintendency, good or bad, is the only check upon vulgar minds in civil affairs, which cannot allow of civil conviction.

nerves

nerves [*l*], called witches. Anno 1691-2, in February, it began in the family of Mr. Paris, miniſter of Salem-village; from ſomewhat endemial to the ſoil, three perſons were affected with nervous diſorders, convulſed, and acted as if demented; they were ſaid to be bewitched; and by Mr. Paris's indiſcreet interrogatories, they fancied themſelves bewitched by his Indian woman, and ſome neighbouring ugly old woman, who from their diſmal aſpect were called witches; and by the end of May, 1692, about 100 perſons were impriſoned upon that account: about this time Sir William Phipps arrived governor; and June 2, for their trial a ſpecial commiſſion of *oyer* and *terminer* was iſſued to lieutenant-governor Stoughton, major Saltonſtall, major Richards, major Gidney, Mr. Wait Winthrop, captain Samuel Sewall, and Mr. Sergeant; thus nineteen were hanged, one preſſed to death; ſome died in priſon; in all five men, and twenty-three women had been condemned: not any of the fifty who confeſſed themſelves witches,

[*l*] It was an endemial diſtemper of the brain and nerves. 1. Convulſion fits were a pathognomic ſign in this diſtemperature. 2. A bunch like a pullet's egg would riſe in their throat, a noted hyſteric ſymptom. 3. Much troubled with incubus, or night-mare, commonly called being hag-rid; for inſtance, Toothacer depoſed, "That being "upon his back, he had not power to move hand or foot, till he ſaw "the ſhape of the witch paſs from his breaſt." 4. Nervous diſorders, eſpecially if attended with hyſteric convulſions, leave the patients, or afflicted perſons, very weak; Mr. C. Mather deſcribes it thus, "When "their tormentors had left them for good and all, they left them ex-"treme weak and faint, and overwhelmed with vapours, which would "not only cauſe ſome of them to ſwoon away, but alſo were now and "then for a while diſcompoſed in the reaſonableneſs of their thought." This may be called a ſubſequent hectic of the ſpirit, from nervous weakneſſes; 2. Mr. Edwards of Northampton mentions the ſame conſequential diſorder, upon the going off of the pourings out of the Spirit, endemial there. The pourings out of the Spirit, which have at times been epidemic in Northampton upon Connecticut river, belong to this tribe of nervous diſorders, as we ſhall hereafter evince. The fugillations, that is, the black and blue ſpots in their ſkin, were called the devil's nip, pinch, or gripe; whereas they were only ſcorbutic ſtains, incident to aged perſons.

ſuffered death. Mr. George Burroughs, miniſter of Falmouth, who had left his former miniſter in Salem, was one in this ſacrifice, perhaps in reſentment; none of the executed confeſſed guilt; many of them were pious perſons. After theſe twenty diſmal deaths, many of the very popular, but very weak miniſters or clergy, addreſſed Sir William Phipps, a very weak governor, with thanks for what was already done, and exhorting to proceed.

The accuſers were ſome perſons ſaid to have the ſpectral ſight, and ſome confeſſing witches; but over-acting their parts, ſome of governor Phipps's; and of the Rev. Mr. Mather's relations and friends being accuſed, as alſo ſome of the accuſed good Chriſtians, and of good eſtates, arreſted the accuſers in high actions for defamation; this put a ſtop to accuſations, and in ſuperior court, Jan. 1692-3, of fifty-ſix bills, which were preferred againſt witches, the Grand Jury brought in thirty ignoramus; and of the remaining twenty-ſix, the Petty Jury convicted only three, who were afterwards pardoned: accuſations were diſregarded, and upon Sir William Phipps's going home, at this time about 150 were in priſon, and 200 more accuſed; they were all diſcharged, paying 30*s.* each, to the attorney-general.

Many of the confeſſing witches ſigned a paper, importing that moſt of their confeſſions were only aſſenting to, or repeating, what they were directed to; being weak in mind, and under terror, from the putting to death all perſons accuſed, who did not confeſs. In December, 1696, a general faſt was appointed by the aſſembly; praying that GOD would pardon all the errors of his ſervants and people, in a late tragedy raiſed amongſt us by Satan and his inſtruments. At this faſt judge Sewall, and ſeveral of the jury, gave in papers ſigned, heartily aſking forgiveneſs of all, and declaring that they would not do ſuch things again for the whole world. When this perſecution ceaſed, no more witchcraft was heard of.

May thoſe over-zealous provincial miſtakes in the warfare againſt the devils and auxiliaries, be buried in oblivion;

livion; eſpecially conſidering an act of parliament 1736, procured by the late good lord Talbot, has effectually liberated the dominions of Great-Britain from all bug-bears of this kind. By this act "no proſecution ſhall "be commenced, or carried on againſt any perſon for "witchcraft, ſorcery, enchantment, or conjuration, or "for charging another with any ſuch offence: if any "perſon ſhall pretend to exerciſe or uſe any of the a-"bove, or tell fortunes, or from occult arts pretend to "diſcover ſtolen goods; penalty one year impriſonment, "and once in every quarter of the ſaid year to ſtand on "ſome market-day in the pillory."

Perhaps I am already too tedious in the paragraphs concerning the various religious ſectaries that have appeared in New-England, therefore ſhall wave two late religious appearances to the ſection of Rhode-iſland, though falling within the period of the new charter of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay province; I mean the Northampton converſions, or pouring out of the Spirit, anno 1735: this enthuſiaſm muſt have ſpread (they were in the tribe of enthuſiaſts convulſionaries [*m*]) if ſome *felo de ſe*, and other flagrant diſorders had not expoſed them; 2. The followers of Mr. Whitefield, an actor, or perſonated enthuſiaſt, endued with a proper genius of low action; he firſt appeared in New-England, anno 1740; his followers hitherto, 1748, are not all returned to their right minds; very lately in the town of Boſton was ordained a country ſhoe-maker, and reinſtalled a renegado from a country pariſh, to encourage this ſeparation, or enthuſiaſtic diviſions.

I now proceed to ſome geographical account of the old colony of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; their mountains or hills, rivers, and ſea-ports.

Mountainous parts may be claſſed into mountains or hills, and continued high ſpringy lands; theſe, with ri-

[*m*] Such were the Sevennes, or French Prophets, about forty years ſince; and at preſent in France the Devotées of l'Abbe Paris.

vers, bays, and promontories, are permanent; therefore a proper baſis in the deſcription of a country called its geography; as this with chronology are the baſis of hiſtory.

The great Blue Hill, twelve miles S. S. W. from Boſton, with a continued ridge of hills running eaſtward to Boſton bay; upon this hill the townſhips of Milton, Braintree, and Stoughton meet. The ſummit of this hill is very proper for a beacon in caſe of any ſudden invaſion by an enemy; from thence a fire and great ſmoak may be [*n*] viſible to ſeven eighths of the province: in a clear day from it are diſtinctly to be ſeen, Pigeon-Hill, N. E. eaſterly about forty miles, a noted land-mark upon Cape-Anne, the northerly promontory of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; the great Watchuſet, the great Menadnock [*o*], Wateticks, and other noted mountains. The great Watchuſet hill in Rutland, lies W. N. W. northerly about fifty miles. The grand Menadnock in waſte lands of the province of New-Hampſhire, lies about twenty miles farther N. than Watchuſets.

From the high lands, at the meeting-houſe of old Rutland diſtrict near the Watchuſet hills, are the following bearings.

Great Watchuſet hill, N. E. half N.
Eaſt end of Wateticks, N. N. E. northerly
Great Menadnock, N. half W.
Mount Tom in Northampton, W. b. N. half W.
Mount Tobit in Sunderland, W. N. W.
Middle of Northfield hills—N. W.

Theſe are only general expreſſions of what I obſerved by a pocket-compaſs; and as a ſpecimen, how with

[*n*] Some years ſince, by direction of colonel Byfield of Briſtol from a great ſmoak made upon this great Blue Hill, Mount Hope in Briſtol was found to bear S by W. and by eſtimation forty-five miles direct.

[*o*] The Wateticks are partly in the province of Maſſachuſetts Bay, partly in the province of New-Hampſhire, and lie eaſt of a townſh p granted to Ipſwich.

proper

proper compaſſes or needles from ſeveral well concerted places of obſervation, and with actual particular ſurveys compared and adjuſted, an exact plan of the country (for utility or amuſement) may be obtained. I have employed ſome vacant, and ſometimes borrowed, time in this affair; which I deſign as a preſent to the province.

Upon or near the river Merrimack, there are ſeveral mountains or hills on its weſt ſide; *viz.* Anahouſick, Oncanouit, &c. but are not within the juriſdiction of this province; and, by a late determination of the king in council, they belong to the juriſdiction of New-Hampſhire.

Upon or near the great river of Connecticut in this colony, are the following mountains: In Sunderland E. ſide of Connecticut river, is Mount Tobit, a group of hills; and oppoſite on the weſt ſide of the river, in the ſouth parts of Deerfield, are the two Sugar-loaves, or Pikes of Deerfield.—About twelve miles lower upon the eaſt ſide of this river in Hadley, is Mount-Holyhock, a ridge of mountains, running eight or nine miles N. E. from the river. Here I took the bearings of all the mountains and high lands, ſo far as the naked eye could reach, which I do not inſert, as minuteneſs is not conſiſtent with the character of a ſummary. Oppoſite to this (leaving only a paſſage or channel for the river) on the weſt ſide in Northampton is mount Tom, a ſhort ridge of mountains, running in the ſame direction. The hills and mountains higher up the river belong to the ſection of the province of New-Hampſhire, as do the mountains noted in Hazen, W. 10 D. N. diviſional line between Maſſachuſetts-Bay and New-Hampſhire provinces.

At fifteen to twenty miles diſtance weſt of Connecticut river is a long ridge of hills called the Weſtfield Mountains. There is a conſiderable range of mountains ſeven miles eaſt of Houſatonick river, another ridge ſeven miles

weſt of Hauſatonick; this laſt is in the province of New-York. The Weſtfield and Houſatonick mountains render the old road from Boſton to Albany not ſo commodious, as a late projected road, *via* Deerfield.

[*p*] Much elevated HIGH SPRINGY LANDS; I ſhall give two inſtances in this province or colony, where very diffuſed runs of water originate.

I. In the lands where the townſhips of Worceſter, Leiceſter, and Rutland join, about fifty miles weſt from Boſton; here ſpring, 1. Quinepuxet river, which falls into Naſhway river; which falls into Merrimack river in Dunſtable of the province of New-Hampſhire; which empties

[*p*] Such are, but in a much more extended manner as to courſes and great lengths, I. In Europe, in Switzerland of the Alps, within a ſmall compaſs are the fountains of three great, and very long, rivers; 1. The Danube, which running eaſterly through the circles of Swabia, Bavaria, and Auſtria of Germany; through Tranſylvania, and the Turkiſh dominions in Europe, empties or diſembogues into the Black Sea in Bulgaria of Turky. 2. The Rhine, which running northerly paſſes through the lake of Conſtance, and many principalities of Germany, in ſome places dividing the German dominions from the French; falls into the German or Northern ocean in Holland, by ſeveral mouths called the Yſſel, Lech, and Wahaal; the old Rhine, after paſſing Utrecht and Leyden, is loſt in the Duynen or Downs (ſands accumulated by the ſtormy ocean) and does not reach the ſea. 3. The rapid Rhoſne, running through the lake of Geneva, for a conſiderable ſpace weſtward to Lyons; thence ſouthward to the Mediterranean ſea, in Provence of France. II. In the northern continent of America, ten or twelve miles weſt from Hudſon's river, and about eighty or ninety miles north from the city of New-York, are the Cat-kil mountains, very lofty, giving ſprings which extenſively run: for, 1. A Branch falls into Hudſon's river; thence to the ocean near New-York. 2. A Branch falls into Lake Ontario; thence in the great river of Canada, or St. Laurence, which diſcharges into the Atlantic ocean, between Nova Scotia and Cape Breton, and Newfoundland. 3. A run falls into the river Ohio or Belle Riviere, which falls into the Miſſiſippi, which empties by many mouths into the bay or gulph of Mexico. 4. A ſtream heads Delaware river, and falls into the Seſquahana river, which falls into Cheſepeak bay, and this enters the Atlantic ocean in Virginia. 5. A run of water falls into Delaware river, which falls into the bay and ocean between Penſylvania and the Jerſeys.

itſelf

itſelf into the ſea or Atlantick ocean at Newbury of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay: upon Quinepuxet and Naſhway river, are the townſhips of Rutland, Holden, Lancaſter, Bolton, Harvard, Groton, and Dunſtable. 2. Half-way river, which in its progreſs is called Blackſtone and Patuxet river; which empties into Naraganſet Bay of Rhode iſland colony: upon theſe, are the townſhips of Worceſter, Grafton, Sutton, Uxbridge, Mendon, Attleborough, and Rehoboth of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; and Cumberland, Smithfield, and Providence, of Rhode-iſland. 3. Story or French River, which falls into Quenebang river in Thomſon pariſh of Killingſley; which falls into Satucket river in Norwich; and this a little farther falls into Thames river or creek, which falls into Long Iſland ſound at New London. Upon theſe are the townſhips of Leiceſter, Oxford, Dudley of the Maſſachuſetts Bay, and Killingſley; Pomfret, Plainfield, Canterbury, Norwich, Groton, and New London of Connecticut colony. 4. Seven Mile river, which falls into Quenebang river in Brookfield; which falls into Chicabee river in Kingſton (a granted but not conſtituted or incorporated townſhip) called alſo the Elbows; which falls into Connecticut river in Springfield; which empties at Seabrook into Long Iſland ſound: upon theſe are the townſhips of Rutland, Leiceſter, Brookfield, Weſtern, Kingſton, and Springfield of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay. The townſhips which lie upon the great rivers of Merrimack and Connecticut ſhall be related, when we give ſome ſeparate diſtinct account of theſe rivers.

II. Lands not appropriated, called Province lands, adjoining to, and N. W. of Hatfield, weſt of Connecticut river; from thence are branches or runs of water, 1. A branch to Houſick river, running weſt, has upon it fort Maſſachuſetts, a frontier againſt the French and their Indians, which falls into Hudſon's river at Scatcook a village of Indians twenty miles north of Albany. 2. A branch to Houſatonick or Weſtenhoek river, which run-

ning ſouth to Stratford in Connecticut, falls into the Long Iſland ſound: upon this river to the townſhips of Boſton grant No. 3. near New-York line; the property of Jacob Wendell, Eſq. of his majeſty's council of the province of Maſſachuſetts Bay; Stockbridge, Upper Houſatonick, Sheffield of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, Saliſbury, Canaan, Sharon, Cornwall, Kent, New-Fairfield, New-Milford, Newtown, Woodbury, Derby, Stratford, and Milford of Connecticut. 3. Farmington river, running through Houſatonick No. 4. Houſatonick commonage, part of Houſatonick No. 3. and part of Bedford in Maſſachuſetts-Bay; through Colebrook, Wincheſter, Berkhamſtead, New-Hartford, Farmington, Simſbury; falls into Connecticut river in Simſbury. 4. Weſtfield river, with many branchings paſſes through Naraganſet No. 4. Houſatonick commonage, part of Blandford, part of Weſtfield, and falls into Connecticut river in Springfield by the name of Acgawaam near Springfield lower ferry.

RIVERS. The two great rivers of this colony are, Merrimack river, which comes from the croteh or fork near Endicot's tree, where Pomagewaſſet river and the diſcharge of the pond or lake Winipiſinket meet, and acquire the name of Merrimack (ſignifying in the Indian language a ſturgeon; this river abounds in ſturgeon.) From this fork it runs ſoutherly about fifty miles to Patucket falls, the elbow of the river in Dracut; and thence it runs eaſterly about thirty miles (round reckoning) to Newbury Bar. Upon this river (theſe great rivers, though in different provinces, are beſt underſtood and comprehended, when delineated without interruption) the townſhips in a deſcending order lie thus, 1. Upon the eaſt and north ſide are Gilman-town, Canterbury, part of Rumford, part of Suncook, Harrys-town, Litchfield, Nottingham of New-Hampſhire; part of Dunſtable, Dracut, Methuen, Haverhill, Ameſbury, and Saliſbury of Maſſachuſetts-Bay. Upon the weſt and ſouth ſide are the townſhips

townſhips of Contacook, part of Rumford, part of Suncook, Canada to Gorham and company, Naraganſet No. 5. Merrimack, and Dunſtable of New-Hampſhire; Dunſtable, Chelmsford, Tewkſbury, Andover, Bradford, and Newbury of Maſſachuſetts-Bay. The bar, at the mouth of this river, has only about ten feet of water, and ſhifts; it is navigable only about eighteen miles, to Mitchel's (the firſt falls) falls in Haverhill; here they deal chiefly in ſhip building, the adjacent country abounding in ſhip timber; the tide flows to Mitchel's falls; from Mitchel's falls, ſeven miles higher Bedel's, two miles Peters, ſix miles to Patucket falls, *&c.*

The falls in this river are many; excepting Dracut or Patucket falls about thirty miles from the bar, and Amuſkeag falls about twenty-five miles higher; all the other falls are paſſable for floats of timber, and for canoes or ſmall boats in freſhes or floods of the river. Many of thoſe called falls are only riplings or veins of ſcattered great rock ſtones. There is at times, when the river is low, a fording place a little above Swans ferry, twenty-four miles up from the bar, and a little above Hunt's or Dracut ferry is another fording place. The ferries croſs this river are many, I ſhall not enumerate them. The elbow or flexure of the river, called the horſe ſhoe, is about two miles above Patucket falls.

The rivers and rivulets (ſmall runs I ſhall not mention) which fall into this great river of Merrimack: 1. On its north and eaſt ſide, are Powow river in Ameſbury from ponds in Kingſton, about eight miles above Newbury ferry; eaſt river and weſt river in Haverhill below Mitchel's falls; Spigot river in Methuen, a little below Bedel's falls; Bever brook from Bever pond in Londonderry comes in between the two falls of Patucket ſix miles below the horſe-ſhoe; eleven miles above the horſe-ſhoe is Naſumkeag brook in the ſouth parts of Litchfield in the province of New-Hampſhire; ſix miles higher is Little Cohoes brook; one mile farther is Great Cohoes brook,

brook, the outlet of Maſſabiſick, a large pond in Cheſter townſhips; thence to Amuſceag falls are four miles, and four miles higher is Louſy brook in Harries town; thence ſix miles to Suncook river in the townſhip of Suncook. 2. On the ſouth and weſt ſide of Merrimack river, are, Falls river from Boxford, comes into a creek weſt ſide of Plumb-Iſland, and thence to the mouth of Newbury or Merrimack river; Hantichook river about nine miles above Newbury ferry; Catetchuck brook, from a pond of the ſame name in Andover; Shawſkin river enters in Andover, about one mile below the entrance of Spigot river, on the other ſide; Concord river about one mile below Patucket falls; this Concord river is of a conſiderable courſe, and higher is called Sudbury and Framingham river; it ſprings in Hopkington, upon it lie Hopkington, Framingham, Sudbury, Concord, Bedford, Billerica, and Tewkſbury; Stony brook which ſprings in Harvard paſſes through Littleton, Weſtford, and Chelmsford to Merrimack river; Salmon brook from a pond in Groton, diſcharges into Merrimack in Dunſtable of New-Hampſhire; a little higher falls in Naſhway river, already deſcribed page 455; thence to Naticook brook five miles; thence two miles to Souhegen river: upon Souhegen river lie Souhegan eaſt called Naraganſet No. 5, Merrimack townſhip, Souhegan weſt, called Naraganſet No. 3. Monſon townſhip, ſome peculiar grants, a townſhip granted to Ipſwich, Townſend, and ſome part of Lunenburg: a little below Amuſceag falls is Piſcataquaag brook, which waters a townſhip granted to Simpſon and others, afterwards purchaſed by Lane and others of Boſton; it waters a Canada townſhip granted to Beverley, and a Canada townſhip to Salem, and another to Ipſwich. The ſouthern branch of Contacook river waters Rumford or Pennycook, No. 5, of the double line of barrier towns called Hopkington grant, No. 6, of ditto, called Marlborough grant, ſome unappropriated lands; a grant to the town of Concord,

Concord, purchaſed by Mr. Peter Preſcot and others, and Canada to Rowley town: next above Contacook grant is Naamcook brook; and next above that is the fork or beginning of the denomination of Merrimack river.

[*q*] The other great river is Connecticut, an Indian word ſignifying a long river. Upon this river lie three of the New England colonies; Connecticut lies upon it about fifty-two miles; thence Maſſachuſetts Bay, by an indent of nine miles, which makes the townſhip of Suffield weſt ſide, and Enfield eaſt ſide of the river, to the W. 9 D. N. imaginary diviſional line of Maſſachuſetts-Bay and Connecticut: from this diviſional line, the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay lies about forty-ſeven miles direct, northerly; and farther North is New-Hampſhire indefinitely, or crown lands annexed to the juriſdiction of New-Hampſhire.

From the bar at the mouth of Connecticut river to the boundary imaginary line of Maſſachuſetts-Bay and Connecticut are about ſixty miles; from this imaginary line, as per a provincial ſurvey by Gardner and Kellock anno 1737, to the great falls in No. 3, [*r*] about twenty miles direct above fort Dummer, are in Meridian diſtance ſeventy-two Engliſh ſtatute miles and 120 rods; and theſe great falls are eighteen miles 140 rods eaſt of the Maſſachuſetts and Connecticut boundary line, where it interſects the river; and above theſe falls, for about ten or twelve miles, townſhips are laid out and appropri-

[*q*] The reader in all ſuch dry accounts which are local, and do not fall under the cognizance of many; muſt excuſe them, as deſigned for a local benefit, and may be ſuperficially paſſed over by ſome, as being of no general concern.

[*r*] In many articles, by ſome readers I may be cenſured as too prolix or minute; my deſign, I hope, is laudable, to prevent a loſs; public records are at times loſt by fire, *&c.* as happened not long ſince at Williamſbourg in Virginia, and laſt year at Boſton in Maſſachuſetts-Bay province.

ated:

ated: the garriſon in No. 4, on the eaſt ſide of the river, as a frontier againſt the French and their Indians, is well noted in the New-England hiſtory of the preſent war. The greateſt extent of New-England, directly inward, is from Seabrook bar at the mouth of Connecticut river, to this No. 4, being about 150 miles.

This river of Connecticut, from its long courſe, is ſubject to ſudden floods or freſhes, and, *e. g.* at Hartford ſometimes riſes twenty feet; the tide (the influence of the tide comes ſo high, or rather the ſtoppage of the river from the tides below) riſes only a few inches. The ſhoaleſt water from Suffield firſt falls to the mouth of the river, is about one mile below Hartford town, being about four feet. This river, as the adjacent people obſerve, becomes, in proceſs of time, [*s*] more ſhallow. From the mouth of this river to about 150 miles up, to the eye it does not alter much in its width (though in that ſpace it receives many conſiderable ſtreams) being generally from eighty to 100 rods; for inſtance, from Hadley to Northampton the ferry is about eighty rods, and at medium times runs two or three knots, ſcowed over in about nine minutes [*t*]. At the mouth of the river, the tide flows from four to ſix feet, upon the bar are about ten to twelve feet water; the general courſe of the river is N. N. E. and S. S. W.; a S. S. E. wind will carry a veſſel up all the reaches of this river, ſo far as it is navigable; it is navigable for ſloops near ſixty miles; the banks of the river are generally ſteep and ſandy; in different places in proceſs of time, loſing on one ſide, and gaining ground on the other ſide. Salmon and ſhad come up this river to ſpawn, but in ſmaller quantities and later, and continue a ſhorter time (about

[*s*] In new unimproved countries, damps and fogs lodge and form ſmall runs of water; as the land is cleared and laid open, thoſe damps vaniſh, and the ſmall runs dry up, and ſome of our water-mills, upon this account, are become of no uſe; their ſtreams are become quite dry or deficient.

[*t*] The width of Hartford ferry is 100 rods.

three

three weeks in May) than in Merrimack river. The rivulets and brooks, where they fall into the great river, are not paſſable in freſhes and floods, becauſe of the back water. Some ferries, where there are no habitations, are kept at the charge of the counties, conſiſting of a large ſcow or flat, to carry perſons, cattle, and goods, with a canoe-tender; travellers ferry themſelves over, always leaving the flat on one ſide, and the canoe on the other, to fetch the ſcow upon occaſion; an inſtance of this is in Northfield ferry.

The firſt falls of this river are about ſixty miles from from its mouth, at Devotion iſland in the ſouth parts of Suffield; the next are about the middle of Suffield, half a mile long; both theſe are paſſable by boats in channels: next are the falls in the ſoutherly parts of Northampton, about fifteen miles farther up the river, not paſſable by boats; the other falls higher, we ſhall not enumerate.

The townſhips upon this river are, 1. Upon its eaſt ſide; in Connecticut colony, Lime, Eaſt Hadham, part of Middletown, Glaſſenbury, part of Hartford, and part of Windſor; in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, Enfield, Springfield, Hadley, Sunderland, farms or peculiars, and part of Northfield; in the province of New-Hampſhire, part of Northfield, Wincheſter, No. 1, 2, 3, and 4. 2. Upon its weſt ſide; in Connecticut colony are, Seabrook, Weſt-Hadham, part of Middletown, Wethersfield, part of Hartford, and part of Windſor; in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay are, Suffield, part of Springfield, Northampton, Hatfield, Deerfield, part of Northfield; in the province of New-Hampſhire are part of Northfield, 40,000 acres equivalent land belonging to four proprietors (in its S. E. corner upon the river, on a plain and long reach of the river, ſtands fort Dummer, which, although in the diſtrict of New Hampſhire, incapable of defending its long frontier range, is maintained at the charge of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay) No. 1 and 2.

The

The conſiderable runs of water which fall into Connecticut river, 1. Upon its eaſt ſide are Salmon river and cove, in Eaſt-Hadham, Hocanum river in Eaſt-Hartford, Pedant brook and Scantick river in Eaſt-Windſor; Freſh Water brook in Enfield; Long Meadow brook, Mill river, and Chicabee river, with its townſhips enumerated, p. 455, in Springfield; Batchelor's brook and Fort river in Hadley (higher the great river is fordable from Hadley to Hatfield; and a little above Northfield meeting-houſe or church, carts in a dry time ford the great river) Mohawk's river, and Saw-mill brook in Sunderland; in the intermediate farms is Miller's river very rapid; it is compoſed of many branches which water Canada to Dorcheſter, Canada to Ipſwich, Ipſwich grant, Canada to Rowley, Pequioag, Canada to Sylveſter, and Canada to Rockſbury; in Northfield is Patchoaag brook, Aſhuelot river; its branches water ſome of the double range of frontier towns, Upper and Lower Aſhuelot townſhips, Canada to Rockſbury, and Wincheſter. 2. Upon its weſt ſide are Roaring brook, and Mill brook in Weſt-Hadham; Middleton river, and Dividend brook in Weſt-Middleton precinct; Goff's brook and Robin's brook in Wethersfield; Hartford river in Hartford; Allen's brook and Heyden's brook in Windſor, with Farmington river deſcribed p. 456; Stony brook in Suffield; Agawaam, alias Weſtfield river in Springfield, deſcribed p. 456; Monhan river in Northampton; Hatfield Mill river in Hatfield, Deerfield river, which by its branches waters the Boſton grants, No. 1 and 2, the grant to Hunt and others; Falls river, which after watering a townſhip to Gallop and others, and Falls-fight townſhip, falls into the great river in Deerfield: the next conſiderable run of water is Weſt river, about two or three miles above fort Dummer, conſiderably higher (information from captain Welles of Deerfield, formerly a Partizan or Ranger againſt the Indians in governor Dummer's war) Connecticut river forks; one branch comes from near the White Hills eaſterly in the province of Main, the other

other comes from the northward towards Canada, an Indian travelling branch to Canada.

We ſhall only mention one river more (in the ſtyle of a late hiſtorian C— M— D. D. the ſubject is dry, though watery) Charles River; it is not large and conſiderable, otherwiſe than as being referred to, in ſettling the South line of the late Maſſachuſetts-Bay colony, as is Merrimack river in ſettling the north boundary line: the words in the old charter are, "As alſo all and ſingular thoſe lands and hereditaments whatſoever, lying within the ſpace of three Engliſh miles on the South parts of ſaid river called Charles river, or any or every part thereof." Stop river, which riſes in Wrentham, was pitched upon as the moſt ſoutherly branch of Charles river, and at three miles ſouth of the head of this river, the ſouth line of Maſſachuſetts-Bay was delineated; Stop river falls into the main body of Charles river in Medfield. The fartheſt head of Charles river is in the N. E. parts of Mendon, and upon it lie the townſhips of Bellingham, Medway, Wrentham, Medfield, Sherburn, Natick an Indian reſerve, Dedham, Needham (here are two conſiderable falls in this river) Newtown, Weſtown, Waltham, Watertown, Cambridge, and Brooklin. This river falls into the bottom of Maſſachuſetts or Boſton bay, and ſerves to bring down to Boſton floats or rafts of ſhip-timber by the tide from Watertown Barcadier, about nine miles: there is another creek or river, a ſmall way eaſt of this, called Myſtick river, of about four miles rafting from the Barcadier of Medford townſhip; from Myſtick Barcadier are ſent to Boſton bricks, tar, and turpentine.

The Promontories remarkable are, only Point Alderton, about nine or ten miles below Boſton upon the ſouth ſide of the bay, over-againſt the light-houſe. Here is a good harbour called Hull gut, and the ſafe road of Nantaſket, ſecured by circumambient iſlands, where the king's ſhips and merchant ſhips outward and inward bound anchor for a time; it lies about ſix or ſeven miles

below

below Boſton, and, by act of aſſembly, is deemed belonging to the harbour of Boſton.

Cape-Anne the north ſide entrance or promontory of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; Thatcher's iſland lies about two leagues eaſt of this harbour, and a ſmall matter without Thatcher's are rocks called the Salvages: from the Salvages are two leagues to Ipſwich bar, a dangerous bay called Ipſwich bay, from a great ſea and indraught. Cape-Anne harbour is about eleven leagues N. N. E. eaſterly from Boſton; the ſouthern promontory of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, called Cape-Cod, in N. lat. 42 D. 10 M. lies about eighteen leagues E. by S. from Boſton: the width of the entrance of this bay, is from Cape-Anne harbour S. W. fourteen leagues, to the hook or harbour of Cape-Cod.

The ſea-ports and their principal trade of export and import muſt be referred to the following article, of the ſeveral juriſdictions of New-England, united by a new charter; it is only ſince the new charter took place, that ſea-port diſtricts of preventive cuſtom-houſes and branches have taken place. Here we ſhall only enumerate them; beſides ſmall creeks and inlets for timber and firewood in coaſting ſmall veſſels, and for curing of fiſh; there are Newberry, a branch of the collection of Portſmouth in New-Hampſhire; there are Ipſwich, Cape-Anne, Salem, and Marblehead, belonging to the collection of Salem; Charleſtown, Boſton, and all the other cuſtom-houſe branches of Maſſachuſetts-Bay belong to the collection of Boſton.

ARTICLE VI.

Concerning the preſent territories as united by the name of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

AS we before hinted by a charter, October 7, 1691, ſundry territories, under ſeveral grants and juriſdictions, for their better accommodation and conveniencies, were united by charter into one property and juriſdiction, that is, into one general aſſembly.

The

The bill for reſtoring the New-England charters being dropped by the diſſolution of the revolution-convention-parliament; the New-England agents were puzzled, whether to ſtand a trial at law, by a writ of error for reverſing the judgments againſt the old charters, or to accept of a draught of a new charter: at length they acquieſced in the king's pleaſure, and the king directed a new charter.

The nature of this union of ſeveral colonies into one juriſdiction, the new charter, with a ſubſequent explanatory charter, and ſundry other general affairs, have been by way of anticipation already narrated; ſee p. 374, &c.

In the general account of Britiſh North-America, we omitted the Poſt-office, a very beneficial inſtitution; and as the preſent province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay is its moſt conſiderable branch, here it may naturally take place.

The Poſt-office in England was ſettled by act of parliament 12 Carol. II. In the beginning of this preſent century, Mr. Hamilton of New-Jerſey projected a Poſt-office for Britiſh North-America; this he effected, and obtained a patent for the management and profits of the ſame. This patent he afterwards ſold to the crown, and a few years after the Union, the poſts of England, Scotland, Ireland, and America were put under one Director by act of parliament 9 Annæ; conſtituting one Poſt-Maſter-General for all the Britiſh dominions; to keep a General-poſt-office in London, the Poſt-Maſter-General may keep one letter-office in Edinburgh, another in Dublin, another at New-York, and other chief offices at convenient places in America and the Leeward Iſlands, and appoint deputies for managing the particular rates for the poſtage of letters in the Plantations; requires too much room for a ſummary, it is referred to Stat. 9 Annæ, Cap. 10. We ſhall only relate, that all letters from on board any ſhip, ſhall be delivered to the Deputy-Poſt-Maſter of the place, penalty 5*l.* ſterling for every offence; the Poſt-maſter paying to the deliverer one penny

ſterling per letter. *N. B.* This clauſe is not much attended to, becauſe the act exempts merchants letters, and thoſe of maſters of ſhips, ſo as ſuch letters be delivered to the perſons to whom they are directed, without receiving any profit for them: and any letters ſent by private friends, or by any meſſenger about private affairs or buſineſs.

From Piſcataqua or Portſmouth, to Philadelphia, is a regular poſtage; from thence to Williamſburgh is uncertain, becauſe the poſt does not proceed until letters are lodged ſufficient to pay the charge of the poſt-riders: from Williamſburgh in Virginia to Charles-Town in South-Carolina, the poſt-carriage is ſtill more uncertain.

There is a deputy Poſt-Maſter General for America, appointed by the Poſt-Maſter-General in London; New-York is appointed for his official reſidence, but by connivance he reſides any where, *e. g.* at Prenſet, in Virginia, Elliot Benger, Eſq; formerly Mr. Lodd in South-Carolina.

Here it properly belongs to give an account of the general and frequented travelling roads from Penobſcot bay N. lat. 44 D. 30 M. (farther north is D. of York's property and Nova Scotia, no travelling roads) to St. Juan or St. John's river in Florida, N. lat. 31 D. This, by an agreement with Spain anno 1738, is the termination of our property or claim in Florida. This is forty miles N. of St. Auguſtin, belonging to the Spaniards; from St. Auguſtin there is a land communication to Moville, and from thence to Miſſiſippi: theſe belong to the Spaniſh and French, which properly do not belong to our hiſtory.

We ſhall begin at St. George's Fort and Block-houſe upon St. George's river, a few miles S. W. of Penobſcot bay; from thence

		Miles
Of Canada, called the Eaſt.	To Muſcongus or Broad-Bay	12
	Frederick's Fort at Pemaquid	7
	Damarſcotti falls and mills	10
	The ſettlement on Sheepſcot river	5
	Arrowſick, or George-Town in Sagadahoc bay of Quenebec river, via Wiſcaſſet	20

George

Eastern parts of Massachusett's-Bay.	George fort in Brunſwick	22
	Royal's river in North-Yarmouth	14
	Preſumpſcot ferry in Falmouth	9
	Stroud-Water ferry in Falmouth	4
	Saco or Winter-Harbour ferry in Biddeford	20
	Kennebunk ferry in Arundel	10
	Welles meeting-houſe	6
	York ferry	16
	Kittery ferry over Piſcataqua R. to Portſmouth	8
		143
New Hamſh.	Hampton meet-houſe	14
	Boundary line Hampſhire and Maſſachuſett's-Bay provinces	6
		20
Of the weſtern diviſion of the province of Maſach.-Bay.	Merrimack R. F. dividing Saliſbury from Newbury	3
	Ipſwich	12
	Beverly ferry dividing Beverly from Salem	12
	Winiſimet or Chelſea ferry (of 2 M.) to Boſton	17
	Dedham	11
	Naponſet river in Walpole	9
	Wrentham meeting-houſe	7
	Attleborough meeting-houſe	9
	Rehoboth, alias Seaconck meeting-houſe	7
	Patucket river ferry; boundary of Maſſachuſett's-Bay province and Rhode iſland colony	2
		89
Rhode-iſland colony.	Providence town	1
	Through ſeveral ſmall and diſtant ſettlements to a little weſt of Pakatuke bridge, Pakatuke river divides the colonies of Connecticut and Rhode-iſland.	57
		58

Connecticut colony.	Myſtic riv. dividing Stonington from Groton	7
	Thames river ferry, dividing Groton from New London	8
	A rope ferry over Nahantick gut	5
	Saybrook river ferry, dividing Lyme from Saybrook	10
	Killingſworth	10
	Guilford eaſt pariſh	5
	Guilford weſt pariſh	5
	Brentford (generally to be underſtood) old meeting-houſe	12
	Eaſt Haven pariſh ferry	8
	New Haven	2
	Milford	12
	Stratford river ferry	4
	Stratfield, a pariſh	3
	Fairfield	4
	Norwalk	12
	Stamford	10
	Greenwich or Horſe-Neck	7
	Byram riv. dividing Connecticut from N. York	2
		126
Province of N. York	Rye	3
	New Rochel	5
	Eaſt Cheſter	4
	King's Bridge to the Iſl. of New-York county	6
	Half-way houſe tavern	9
	City of New-York	9
	Ferry to Staten Iſland point	15
	By land to Elizabeth Point ferry	6
		57
New	Woodbridge	12
	Brunſwick ferry of Raritan river	18
	Prince Town	12

Trent

Jerſeys.	Trent Town ferry over De la Ware river dividing the province of New Jerſeys from Penſylvania	10
		52
Penſylvania government.	Briſtol, oppoſite to Bridlington or Burlington	10
	Philadelphia	20
	Schuyhkill river ferry	3
	Derby	4
	Cheſter	9
	Brandewine	14
	Newcaſtle	6
	Boundary line of Penſylvania and Maryland	12
		78
Maryland government.	Elk-River	5
	North-eaſt river	7
	Seſquahana river ferry	9
	Gunpowder river ferry	25
	Petapſco river ferry	20
	Annapolis the capital of Maryland	30
	Upper Marlborough	16
	Piſcataway	16
	Port Tobacco	16
		144
Dominion of Virg.	Potomack fer. dividing Maryland from Virg.	4
	How's ferry	20
	Southern's ferry	30
	Arnold's ferry	36
	Clayborn's ferry	22
	Freneaux ordinary	12
	Williamſburgh the capital	16
	Hog Iſland	7
	Iſle of Wight court-houſe	18
	Nanſemond court-houſe	20

nia.	Bennet's creek (near this is the boundary line between the provinces of Virginia and N. Carolina)	30
		215
Province of North-Carolina.	Eden Town, formerly the capital	30
	Chowan Sound ferry	10
	Pimlico	44
	Ferry to Bathtown	5
	Newbern ferry (the preſent capital) where News river and Trent river meet	32
	Whittock river	20
	New river ferry	30
	Newtown or Wilmington on the forks of Cape Fear river, thirty miles above the bar	45
	Lockwood's folly	15
	Shallot river	8
	Little River, boundary line between the two governments of North and South-Carolina	8
		247
Province of South-Carolina and Georgia.	Eaſt end of Long-Bay	14
	Weſt end of Long-Bay	25
	Winyaw ferry	30
	Santee ferry	12
	Sewee ferry	20
	Charleſtown, the capital; here is a ferry	30
	Port-Royal	60
	Frederica in Georgia, on the ſouth branch of Altamacha river	90
	St. Juan or St. John's river, yielded to Great-Britain by Spain per agreement, anno 1738, it is forty miles N. of Spaniſh fort, St. Auguſtin	20
		301

In the new ſettlements they reckon by computed, not meaſured, miles; conſequently there may be in ſeveral of the diſtances, an unavoidable error of a mile or two.

This is a road of great extent, well laid out and frequented; it ſhews the vaſt extent of the Britiſh plantations along the eaſt ſhore of North-America; the ſeveral Britiſh provinces and colonies, extend upon this great road as follows:

	Miles
Eaſt diviſion of Maſſachuſetts-Bay	143
New-Hampſhire	20
Weſt diviſion Maſſachuſetts-Bay	89
Rhode-iſland	58
Connecticut	126
New-York	57
New-Jerſeys	54
Penſylvania	78
Maryland	144
Virginia	215
North-Carolina	247
South-Carolina and Georgia	301
	1532

The many ferries, and ſome of them not well attended, are a conſiderable hindrance in travelling: but by theſe it appears that the country is well watered, a great advantage in produce and manufactures; and as many of the rivers, ſounds, and bays are navigable, a conſiderable diſtance inland, they are of great benefit in navigation or trade.

As the conſtitutions of all the Britiſh plantations are nearly the ſame, being minute in this article, may ſave repetitions and ſhorten the following ſections; therefore perſpicuity and diſtinctneſs require this article to be divided into ſubſections.

§ I. *Concerning the Civil Adminiſtration.*

THIS adminiſtration may be divided into the legiſlative ſupreme court, called the General Court or General Aſſembly of the province; and the ſubordinate executive courts.

The Great and General Court or Provincial Aſſembly, conſiſts of three Negatives, *viz.* the Governor, the Council, and Houſe of Repreſentatives.

The Governor is by patent or commiſſion from the king *durante beneplacito*, with a book of inſtructions; which inſtructions, though binding to the Governor (frequently broke in upon by ſome Governors) are not ſo to the Houſe of Repreſentatives, as they have from time to time repreſented to the Governor: for inſtance, one of the inſtructions requires a ſalary of one thouſand pound ſterling *per annum*, to be ſettled upon the Governor; this is always obſtinately refuſed, but they are willing to grant a yearly ſupport, ſuitable to the dignity of his Excellency, and conſiſtent with the ability of the people their conſtituents, of which it may be ſuppoſed they only are the proper judges.

The military government by ſea and land, is ſole in the King's Governors; they grant all commiſſions in the militia, which gives the Governors a vaſt influence; people in the Plantations are readily bribed by diſtinguiſhing titles.—The Governors in the Plantations have that conſiderable power of negativing or ſuſpending counſellors without aſſigning reaſons; governor Belcher at one time negatived thirteen counſellors in the pernicious Land-bank intereſt; this management of Mr. Belcher's was in a high manner approved of by the paſſing an act of the Britiſh parliament ſoon after; this Land-bank is deſigned in the words of the act, "miſchievous under-"takings in America, and unlawful undertakings;" but ſo it is, that this act of parliament is not fully put in execution at this day, Chriſtmas, 1748. They nominate *durante beneplacito* all Judges, Juſtices and Sheriffs, which being,

being, with the militia-officers of the ſeveral townſhips, a great majority in the lower Houſe, gives the Governor a very great influence there: the power of negativing the members of the upper Houſe makes his influence there ſo conſiderable, that he has, in a great meaſure, two Negatives in the legiſlature; the king at home cannot negative or ſuſpend any member of the upper Houſe, called the Houſe of Lords.

The Governor has the opportunity of recommending to the Houſe, agents or provincial attornies, his friends or creatures: to manage their affairs and his own at the court and boards in Great-Britain, and to procure for them handſome gratuities: for inſtance, the Governor, in a meſſage to the Aſſembly, March 16, 1743-4, recommends a generous allowance to Mr. Kilby; he having ſerved the province upon particular orders of this court, with great induſtry, faithfulneſs and ſucceſs. A Governor by frequent and long ſpeeches and meſſages to the Houſe of Repreſentatives (ſometimes near one half of the Journal or Votes of the Houſe of Repreſentatives conſiſts of theſe ſpeeches and meſſages) ſeems to act as a member of that Houſe, or rather as the Speaker or Orator (a French expreſſion) of the Houſe; ſometimes Governors proceed farther; for inſtance, anno 1744, the Governor deſires of the Houſe of Repreſentatives, that in the receſs of the General Aſſembly (which muſt be ſhort intervals, becauſe of late years, the General Aſſembly at a great charge to the province have had very frequent and long ſittings) upon any ſudden emergency, the Governor and his council may be impowered to draw upon the Treaſurer. The Governor has a Negative not only in all bills of aſſembly, but alſo in all their elections, that of a Speaker not excepted.

Thus the Governor commiſſions all militia, and other military officers, independently of the council or aſſembly; he nominates all civil officers, excepting thoſe concerned in the finances or money-affairs, and, with conſent of the council, they are accordingly appointed.

He

He calls, diſſolves, prorogues, adjourns, removes, and otherways harraſſes the General Aſſembly at pleaſure; he frequently refuſes his aſſent to bills, reſolves, and orders of the General Court; whereas our Sovereign in Great-Britain, excepting upon very extraordinary occaſions, does not exert this prerogative: thus we ſee a delegated power aſſuming more than the ſovereign conſtituent authority chuſes to venture upon.

His juſt pecuniary perquiſites are conſiderable: an allowance or grant of 1000 *l.* ſterling or nearly its value *per annum*; has one third of all Cuſtom-houſe ſeizures; the naval office belongs to him, and many fees of various natures. In time of war there are fees for granting letters of mart or mark to private men of war, called privateers, and many emoluments ariſing from multiplied expeditions.

Notwithſtanding this great authority, a Governor's ſtation is very ſlippery; upon frivolous, and ſometimes falſe, complaints, he is liable to be called to account, ſuperſeded by ſome expectant at court; and if the maladminiſtration is notorious, he is alſo mulcted.

By charter the Governor cannot impreſs men into the military ſervice, to march out of the province, without an act or reſolve of the General Court; the Governor, by his 11th inſtruction, is not to give his aſſent to any act for repealing any of the ſtanding laws of the province, without a ſuſpending clauſe, that is, until a copy thereof be tranſmitted and laid before the king. By the 12th inſtruction the Governor is reſtrained to 30,000 *l.* ſterling *per annum*, emiſſions of public paper credit; but upon account of unforeſeen incidents in the time of the late war with Spain and France, he was in this article left at large. This gave a handle for unlimited ruining emiſſions, a privilege, ſaid to be by his Majeſty's indulgence; the Governor, in his ſpeech, July 2, ſays, "I am "freed now from the chief reſtraints I was under, "whereby depreciations enſued to the great ſinking of "all the perſonal eſtates in the province, ſpecialties ex-"cepted."

Some

Some account of the Governors, from the arrival of the new charter, in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

SIR WILLIAM PHIPS [*u*], ſon of a blackſmith, born anno 1650, at a deſpicable plantation on the river Quenebeck, after keeping of ſheep ſome years, was bound apprentice to a ſhip-carpenter for four years; afterwards went to Boſton, learned to read and write, followed the carpenter's trade, and married the widow of Mr. John Hull, merchant. Upon advice of a Spaniſh wreck about the Bahamas, he took a voyage thither, but without ſucceſs; anno 1683, in a king's frigate, the Algier Roſe, he was fitted out upon the diſcovery of another Spaniſh wreck near Port de la Plata upon Hiſpaniola, but returned to England unſucceſsful. Soon after 1687, he prevailed with the duke of Albemarle, at that time governor of Jamaica, and ſome other perſons of quality, to fit him out with a royal patent or commiſſion to fiſh upon the ſame Spaniſh wreck which had been loſt about fifty years ſince; by good luck in about ſeven or eight fathom water, he fiſhed the value of near three hundred thouſand pound ſterling (the Bermudians found good gleanings there after his departure) whereof he had about 16,000 *l.* ſterling for his ſhare, and the honour of knighthood; and obtained of king James II, by purchaſe, to be conſtituted high Sheriff of New-England, but was never in the execution of this patent, and returned to England, 1688, (*N. B.* he had not received baptiſm until March 1690, *Æt.* 40) and ſoon after came back to New-England. Upon the breaking out of the Indian war 1688, he ſollicited an expedition againſt Nova Scotia, May 1690, and had good ſucceſs againſt the French; but his ſubſequent expedition in autumn, againſt Canada, the ſame year, was diſaſtrous, as has been already narrated, and, in the words of Mr. Mather, "Though uſed to "diving for plate, this was an affair too deep for him to "dive into." Amongſt other bad conſequences of this ill-

[*u*] This account is mainly taken from Cotton Mather, D. D.

contrived and worſe managed Canada expedition, was the introducing of a pernicious, fraudulent paper-currency, or bills of public credit, to pay the charges or debt incurred; the operation of this injurious currency is ſuch, that all perſonal eſtates (ſpecialties excepted) are reduced to one for eight, reckoning by heavy pieces of eight (or ſeven eighths of an ounce of ſilver) at 6*s.*; the loſs of men was of very bad conſequence to an infant colony, which was not by the enemy, but by a camp fever, the ſmall-pox, and diſaſters in returning home; notwithſtanding, as Dr. Mather expreſſes it, "the wheel of "prayer for them in New-England was kept conſtantly "going round." Soon after his return to Boſton he went for London, to petition the court of England (notwithſtanding former diſaſters, and his own incapacity to manage the affair) to encourage another expedition againſt Canada. Upon obtaining a new charter dated Oct. 7, 1691, at the deſire of the New-England agents, Sir William Phips was appointed governor of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay and territories thereto belonging; he arrived with the new charter May 14, 1692; and June 8, the aſſembly under the new charter, met for the firſt time. He was ordered home to anſwer ſome complaints, and ſailed from Boſton, Nov. 17, 1694, and died of a malignant fever in London, Feb. 18, following [*w*]. If he had been diſmiſſed from his government,

[*w*] Mr. Mather, his advocate, writes, "Nor indeed had the hunger "of a ſalary, any ſuch impreſſion upon him, as to make him decline "doing all poſſible ſervice for the public—That he was not to be "reckoned amongſt thoſe who were infamous for infinite avarice and "villainy." *Magnalia*, Book II.—He was not aſhamed of his former low circumſtances; once in ſailing with a conſiderable command in ſight of Quenebeck; he ſaid to thoſe under his command, "Young "men, it was upon that hill that I kept ſheep a few years ago; you "don't know what you may come to."—Upon his death Dr. C. Mather wrote an elegy, beginning thus:

And to mortality a ſacrifice
Falls he, whoſe deeds muſt him immortalize.

This is not very fluent, but meant well.

he

he deſigned to have gone upon another Spaniſh wreck, which had governor Broadille aboard.

William Stoughton Eſq; lieutenant-governor, was commander in chief from governor Phip's going home in the Autumn 1694, until the arrival of governor lord Bellomont in June 1699; after a few months lord Bellomont returning to New-York, Mr. Stoughton was again in the chair, and continued till his death in May 1702. In honour to his memory a townſhip is called by his name.

In May 1702, upon the abſence of the governor and death of the lieutenant-governor, conform to charter, the majority of the council aſſumed the government until the arrival of governor Dudley, June 11, 1702.

Earl of Bellomont in Ireland, being appointed governor-general of New-York, Maſſachuſetts-Bay and New-Hampſhire; in his paſſage to America in the end of the year 1697, from this bad winter coaſt, he was obliged to bear away to Barbadoes; he did not arrive in New-York until May 1698. In the ſummer 1699, he met our aſſembly in Boſton; his being a new governor, cunning, complaiſant, and of quality, ingratiated him very much with the people; he was allowed 1000 *l.* ſalary, and 500 *l.* gratuity: In the Autumn he returned to New-York, and died there in February, 1700-1.

Joſeph Dudley, Eſq; arrived governor June 11, 1702, He was ſon to governor Thomas Dudley, ſee p. 429; he was choſen aſſiſtant (that is of the council) 1682; upon the charter being in danger, he was ſent home jointly with Mr. Richards as colony-agents: being a native of the country, a good politician, and cunning man, *i. e.* of ſubtilty, the court of England deemed him a proper perſon to introduce or facilitate a change in the adminiſtration of the colony; accordingly upon the charter's being vacated, he was appointed preſident or

pro

pro tempore commander in chief April 1686, and arrived at Boſton the June following: In December of the ſame year arrived Sir Edmund Andros as governor, Nicholſon lieutenant-governor, and two independent companies of ſoldiers; Mr. Dudley is appointed chief juſtice, but was outed in the New-England Revolution, April 1689.

Anno 1690, he was appointed chief juſtice of New-York. Upon going home he was choſen, anno 1701, member of parliament for Newtown of the Iſle of Wight, which introduced him to the government of the province of Maſſachuſettts-Bay his native country. King William died before he ſet out, but his commiſſion was renewed to queen Anne; he continued governor until Nov. 1715, when colonel Tailer was appointed lieutenant-governor under colonel Burgeſs appointed governor: colonel Tailer produced an exemplification of colonel Burgeſs's commiſſion or patent, and as lieutenant-governor under him aſſumed the government Nov. 9. *N. B.* queen Anne died Auguſt 1, 1714, Mr. Dudley continued in government according to the act of parliament for continuing officers for ſix months after the demiſe of a Sovereign, that is, until Feb. 1: the ſix months being expired, the council, in conformity to the charter, took upon themſelves the adminiſtration; but Mr. Dudley having, March 21, via New-York, received the king's proclamation for continuing all officers till further orders, he reaſſumed the government, and continued governor to November, as above: he died at his houſe in Rockſbury near Boſton, anno 1720, Æt. 73; he left ſurviving ſons, Paul, at preſent chief juſtice of the province, ſee p. 429, and William, who ſerved in the ſucceſsful expedition againſt Port-Royal of L'Acadie, now Annapolis-Royal of Nova Scotia: he was afterwards appointed a judge, and for many ſucceeding years elected one of the council, as being the beſt acquainted with the property of lands and other provincial affairs; he died a few years ſince, a great loſs to this country.

William

William Tailer, Eſq; who had ſerved as a colonel of a New-England regiment in the reduction of the aforeſaid Port-Royal; for this his good ſervice, he was appointed lieutenant-governor under governor Dudley, and arrived in Boſton from England, Oct. 3, 1711: 1715, he aſſumed the command in chief, as lieutenant-governor under governor Burgeſs. Colonel Burgeſs did not come over to his government, and was ſuperſeded by colonel Samuel Shute; upon Mr. Shute's arrival in Boſton, Oct. 4, 1716, Mr. Tailer's command in chief devolved upon colonel Shute, and as lieutenant-governor he was ſuperſeded by William Dummer, Eſq; he alternately ſuperſeded Mr. Dummer as lieutenant-governor under governor Belcher 1730; he died at his houſe in Dorcheſter near Boſton 1732. He was a generous, facetious, good-natured gentleman.

Samuel Shute, a military man, brother to lord Barrington, was appointed governor March 14, 1715-16, by the ſollicitation of Jonathan Belcher, Eſq; a very noted merchant of New-England, and afterwards governor there: colonel Shute arrived in Boſton Octob. 4, 1716, Mr. Dummer (I cannot avoid heaping encomiums upon him) was his lieutenant-governor; Mr. Dummer an honeſt man, his knowledge in politicks did not bias him; he was a natural patron of his country, and his good management in the Indian war during his adminiſtration, with ſmall expence, will perpetuate his memory with all true lovers of New-England. Colonel Shute, being a good-natured eaſy governor, ſome ill-natured deſigning men in the houſe of Repreſentatives, attempted, by way of precedent (if paſſed) to encroach upon the prerogative; colonel Shute, inſtead of ſending home, was well adviſed to carry home complaints [x], and back them there,

[x] Governors and other royal officers when complaints are lodged, or to be lodged, at the boards in Great-Britain, pro or con; theſe officers appearing at home in perſon, always turns to their beſt accounts. Attorneys or agents do not anſwer ſo well; many inſtances may be produced, but the caſe is notorious.

which

which accordingly he did, Nov. 1722; being ſeven complaints againſt the houſe of repreſentatives encroaching upon the royal prerogative, ſee p. 379; he obtained a redreſs of all theſe complaints; being aged not fit to go abroad, for his good ſervices he obtained a penſion of 400*l.* ſterling *per annum* for life.

Upon governor Shute's going home, the chief command in the adminiſtration, devolved upon lieutenant-governor Dummer, whoſe adminiſtration is univerſally celebrated, and requires no encomium of mine: he is alive and in good health at this preſent writing; he continued commander in chief till the arrival of governor Burnet in Boſton, July 19, 1728; upon governor Burnet's death, Sept. 7, 1729, he was again in the chair, until the arrival of governor Belcher, April 8, 1730.

William Burnet, Eſq; a ſon of the celebrated Biſhop Burnet of Saliſbury, a noted divine, politician, antiquary, and hiſtorian; this Mr. Burnet was Comptroller-general of the cuſtoms in Great-Britain, with a ſalary of 1200*l.* ſterling *per annum*; he exchanged with governor Hunter of New-York, whoſe health required his going home.—Upon the acceſſion of our preſent king GEORGE II, Colonel Montgomery, a favourite, was appointed governor of New-York, and Mr. Burnet, in Nov. 1727, was appointed governor of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; he arrived in Boſton, July 13, 1728; he died there Sept. 7, 1729, much lamented. When in the government of New-York, he was uſeful in promoting natural hiſtory: by a quadrant of a large radius, and well divided; by a good teleſcope of eighteen feet; and by a ſecond pendulum of large vibrations, he made ſeveral good aſtronomical obſervations, towards aſcertaining latitudes, longitudes, *&c.* in that province.

Lieutenant-governor Dummer, upon Mr. Burnet's death, was chief in the adminiſtration for ſeveral months, until the arrival of governor Belcher, Aug. 8, 1730. Jonathan

than Belcher, Eſq; a native of New-England, of a good clear paternal eſtate, and conſequently of a true natural intereſt in the country; in his younger days had a very liberal and polite education, having viſited many courts in Europe, and particularly was well received at the court of Hanover. During his government he religiouſly adhered to his inſtructions: If he had been continued two or three years longer in the adminiſtration, our pernicious fraudulent paper-currency would have all been cancelled; whereas ever ſince his diſmiſſion it has pejorated. He was ſuperſeded by governor Shirley's commiſſion for governor, which arrived Auguſt 14, 1741. There were by artifice ſeveral complaints againſt governor Belcher ſent home partly from New-England, and partly hatched in London; which have ſince been diſcovered to be falſe and forged. I ſhall mention a few of them: 1. That he was a friend to the fraudulent Land-Bank ſcheme; whereas it has ſince evidently appeared, that he was offered by the Land-Bank managers, a retaining fee of ſome thouſands of pounds (appropriated for himſelf, or a ſubſequent governor) to conciliate his countenance in the affair, and to promote the managers to offices of honour, profit and truſt; with a Land-Bank promiſe to promote the governor's intereſt in the houſe of Repreſentatives, (being a Land-Bank or debtor's houſe) as to ſalary and perquiſites. Mr. Belcher rejected this proffer with diſdain, and at one time negatived thirteen of their elected counſellors (here was a projection for debtors in a legiſlative capacity to defraud their creditors, by depreciating the debt) and diſqualified many Juſtices of the Peace, promoters of theſe unwarrantable ſchemes, and miſchievous unlawful undertakings, as expreſſed in the act of parliament, 1741. 2. A letter ſigned by five forged hands, to Sir Charles Wager firſt Lord of the Admiralty-Board, intimating, that Mr. Belcher countenanced the timbermen, in cutting off maſting white pine trees, to be converted into logs for deal-boards. 3. A ſpurious letter under a ſuppoſititious cover of Benjamin Colman,

D. D. to Mr. Holden (a diſſenter) a director of the Bank of England, and of great influence; this letter ſays, that the concerned, are many of the principal miniſters of the Preſbyterian and Congregational perſuaſion in New-England. No ſigners to this letter, alledging, that their ſigning might be the occaſion of their utter ruin by Mr. Belcher, but promiſe, upon Mr. Belcher's being ſuperſeded, to publiſh all their names. This letter intimates that governor Belcher, by his intimacy and frequent conferences with the Rev. Commiſſary P—e and Dr. C—r, Miniſters of the church of England, was contriving the ruin of the diſſenting intereſt in New-England. Theſe with ſome other villainous complaints and ſuggeſtions, occaſioned the removal of Mr. Belcher. Upon his going home, he evinced all theſe complaints to be forged, falſe, or frivolous; and the court, in the interim conferred upon him the government of the New Jerſeys, where he is at preſent, happy in the affections of the people. A ſhort account of the abandoned contrivers and managers of Mr. Belcher's affair, is referred to the Appendix.

William Shirley, Eſq; a gentleman of the law, who had reſided and practiſed law in New England for ſome years, ſucceeded Mr. Belcher, in Auguſt, 1741, and continues governor at this writing, December, 1748. A gentleman in the adminiſtration (*ante obitum nemo*, that is, before his political death) is not to be uſed with freedom; it is a treſpaſs againſt the ſubordination, requiſite in ſociety; therefore I muſt defer the ſhort account of this gentleman's perſonal character and adminiſtration to the Appendix; leſt, if applauded, it might be deemed adulation and flattery; or, if cenſured, may be conſtrued into inſult, detraction, and reſentment, which are not conſiſtent with the character of an impartial hiſtorian—Our preſent lieutenant-governor, ſucceſſor of colonel Tailer, is Spencer Phips, Eſq; a country-gentleman, adopted name and heir by act of aſſembly to Sir William Phips.

Theſe

Theſe are the governors and lieutenant or deputy-governors appointed at home, from the date of the new charter 1691, to December, 1748; the other royal officers, reſerved by charter, to be appointed by the court of Great-Britain are the ſecretary, and judge of vice-admiralty: It may not be improper here to annex a ſhort account of their ſucceſſion.

SECRETARIES. Iſaac Addington, Eſq; the firſt Secretary was appointed by the charter, during pleaſure; he was a perſon of great integrity; he died 1715, and was ſucceeded by captain Woodward, a military man, and of good learning; Mr. Woodward reſigned 1717, in favour of Mr. Willard, an honeſt, upright, and pious gentleman; he continues Secretary at this preſent writing.

The charter reſerves to the crown the exerciſe of any Admiral court or juriſdiction, by commiſſions to be iſſued under the great ſeal of Great-Britain, or under the ſeal of the High Admiral, or of the Commiſſioners for executing the office of High Admiral. This court of Vice-Admiralty conſiſts of a judge, a King's Advocate, a Regiſter, and a marſhal. A ſole Judge without a Jury, in caſes of high conſequence; and this Judge too frequently appointed at random, ſeems to be an error in the conſtitution: it is true, there may be an appeal to a court of Delegates in Great-Britain.

The ſucceſſion of Judges, was, *viz.*

Wait Winthrop, Eſq; May 22, 1699, appointed Judge of Admiralty for New-York, Maſſachuſetts-Bay, Connecticut, Rhode-iſland, and New-Hampſhire.

Mr. Atwood, Judge of Admiralty for the colonies of New-Hampſhire, Maſſachuſetts-Bay, Rhode-iſland, Connecticut, New-York, and the Jerſeys; being the Northern diſtrict of Cuſtom-houſe officers. He appointed, Nov. 10, 1701, Mr. Newton his deputy.

Roger Monpeſſon, Eſq; April 1, 1703, had a commiſſion as Judge for New-Hampſhire, Maſſachuſetts-

Bay, Rhode-iſland, Connecticut, New-York, and the Jerſeys.

Nathanael Byfield, Eſq; Dec. 13, 1707, had the like commiſſion.

John Menzies, Eſq; of the faculty of Advocates in Scotland, appointed Judge, Aug. 26, 1715, for New-Hampſhire, Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and Rhode-iſland.

Upon the death of Judge Menzies, 1728, Robert Auchmuty, Eſq; was appointed, by governor Burnet, Judge *pro tempore*.

Nathanael Byfield (formerly the Judge of Admiralty) was appointed Judge by governor Burnet; and confirmed from home, Nov. 5, 1728, as Judge for New-Hampſhire, Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and Rhode-iſland.

The aboveſaid Robert Auchmuty, Eſq; ſucceeded him Sept. 6, 1733.

Mr. Auchmuty was ſuperſeded by Chambers Ruſſel, Eſq; September, 1747.

All the officers of this court of Vice-Admiralty have a power of ſubſtituting or deputizing. The preſent Deputy-Judge is George Cradock, Eſq; of many years experience in this court.

Beſides this court of Vice-Admiralty, in each of the provinces and colonies, there is a Juſticiary Court of Admiralty for trial of piracies and other crimes committed upon the High Seas: the Members of this court are various in the various colonies; in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, the Judges are, the Governor, the Council, the Secretary, the Judge of Vice-Admiralty, the Captain of the King's ſtation ſhips of war, the Surveyor-General of the northern diſtict of cuſtoms, and the Collector of the Cuſtoms for the Port of Boſton.

The ſurvey of the royal timber, eſpecially of maſting trees, extends over the Northern Provinces and Colonies: the officers are appointed from home, and are a Surveyor-General, with four ſubordinate Surveyors; the whole charge of this ſurvey is 800 *l.* ſterl. *per annum*, with

with conſiderable riding charges, paid by the Navy-Office.

The officers belonging to the collections of cuſtoms are from home appointed by the Treaſury-Board, and warranted by the commiſſioners of the cuſtoms in Great-Britain. In this province there are but two collections, Boſton and Salem.

A Deputy-Auditor, is commiſſioned by the Auditor-General in Great-Britain, to audit the Treaſurer's provincial accounts; but anno 1721, this was declared by the General Aſſembly of the Province, to be inconſiſtent with their charter; it never is put in execution.

Some account of the ſecond negative in the legiſlature of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; *that is, of the King's or Governor's Council, called the Honourable-Board.*

THIS Council conſiſts of twenty-eight aſſiſtants or counſellors, to be adviſing and aſſiſting to the Governor, and to conſtitute one negative in the legiſlature, analogous to the Houſe of Lords in Great-Britain. The firſt ſet were appointed in the charter, and to continue until the laſt Wedneſday in May, 1693, and until others ſhall be choſen in their ſtead. I do here inſert the names of the twenty-eight counſellors appointed by charter, whereof there are none ſurviving at this preſent writing, as it is an honour to their families or poſterity.

Simon Broadſtreet	Bartholomew Gidney
John Richards	John Hathorn
Nathanael Saltonſtall	Eliſha Hutchinſon
Wait Winthrop	Robert Pike
John Phillips	Jonathan Curwin
James Ruſſel	John Joliffe
Samuel Sewall	Adam Winthrop
Samuel Appleton	Richard Midlecot

John Foſter	William Bradford
Peter Serjeant	John Walley
Joſeph Lynde	Barnabas Lothrop
Samuel Heyman	John Alcot
Stephen Maſon	Samuel Daniel
Thomas Hinkley	Sylvanus Davis, Eſqrs.

"Yearly once in every year hereafter, the aforeſaid "number of twenty-eight counſellors ſhall be, by the ge- "neral court or aſſembly, newly choſen, *i. e.* of the pro- "prietors or inhabitants in the old colony of Maſſachu- "ſetts-Bay, eighteen; formerly New-Plymouth, four; "formerly the province of Main, three; Duke of York's "former property, lying between Sagadahock river and "Nova Scotia, one." Two counſellors more to be choſen at large.

The counſellors are annually choſen laſt Wedneſday of May, by a joint vote of the laſt year's counſellors, and the new houſe of repreſentatives. This negative is called The Board.

There ſeems to be ſome inconveniencies in the conſtitution of this negative; they may be INTIMIDATED by the firſt negative, the Governor, as he has a power of negativing any counſellor's election, without alledging reaſons; they ſtand in AWE of the members of the third negative, as to their election by the houſe of repreſentatives: thus they appear not to be FREE agents.

The Council are aſſiſting to the Governor (ſeven makes a board) by their advice and conſent in appointing of all civil officers, excepting thoſe of the Finances.

The Governor and Council have the probate of wills, of granting adminiſtrations, and of divorces; they appoint a ſubordinate judge of probates in each county.

The Governor, with the advice and conſent of the Council, nominates and appoints judges, commiſſioners of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, ſheriffs, juſtices of the peace, and other officers to our Council and courts of juſtice belonging; provided that no ſuch appointment be made without

without ſummons iſſued out ſeven days before ſuch nomination or appointment, unto ſuch of the ſaid counſellors, as ſhall be at that time reſiding within our ſaid province.

Formerly, under the old charter the counſellors or aſſiſtants were elected by the votes of the freemen of the colony, as is the preſent practice of the neighbouring colonies of Connecticut and Rhode-iſland; but under the new charter (as beforementioned) they are annually choſen by a joint vote of the majority of the old board of counſellors, and of the new houſe of repreſentatives.—Although their election is annual, the former counſellors are generally continued; laſt election 1748, they were all continued.

When the new charter firſt took place, the allowance or wages of a counſellor was 5 *s.* per day, exchange with London, 133 *l.* New-England for 100 *l.* ſterling; at preſent their wages are 30 *s.* per day, exchange with London, eleven hundred pounds New-England, for one hundred pounds ſterling, Chriſtmas 1748. In this proportion a multiplied public paper-credit in bills has depreciated the New-England currency; a vaſt progreſſive loſs in all perſonal eſtates, ſpecialties excepted [*y*].

[*y*] We muſt not reckon depreciations indifferently by public allowance advanced, becauſe the variation does not obſerve every where the ſame proportion, *e. g.* the firſt allowance to counſellors was 5 *s.* currency per day, at preſent it is 30 *s.* which is ſix for one, depreciation allowance: the governor's allowance was 300 *l.* common currency *per annum*, at preſent it is 9,600 *l.* old tenor, or common currency, which is about nineteen for one; ſo much the governor is at preſent favoured by the houſe of repreſentatives, while they themſelves accept of 20 *s.* preſent currency old tenor, for the original 5 *s.* per day, which is only ſix and two thirds for one. This difference in proportions, is eaſily accounted for, and, if requiſite, ſhall be taken notice of in the Appendix.

Some account of the third Negative in the legiſlature of the province of [z] Maſſachuſetts-Bay; *called the Honourable Houſe of Repreſentatives.*

THE province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay is repreſented in their lower houſe, not by a deputation from counties, cities and boroughs, as in Great-Britain, and in ſome of the Britiſh colonies; but from certain diſtricts of land or country, incorporated by the names of townſhips, very unequal in extent; thus Springfield contains upwards of 100,000 acres; Medford does not exceed 2060 acres; but generally they are the value of ſix miles ſquare, being nearly 23,000 acres: their number of inhabitants is as various, and conſiſts of one to five pariſhes.

The charter declares "each of the ſaid towns and places, being hereby impowered to elect and depute two perſons and no more, to ſerve for and repreſent them reſpectively in the ſaid great general court or aſſembly. "To which great general court or aſſembly, to be held "as aforeſaid, we do hereby, for us, our heirs and ſuc-"ceſſors, give and grant full power and authority, from "time to time, to direct, appoint, and declare, what num-"ber each county, town, and place, ſhall elect and de-"pute, to ſerve for, and repreſent them reſpectively, in "the ſaid great and general court or aſſembly."

This laſt clauſe gives a very great latitude to our general aſſemblies to regulate the repreſentation of the country. 1. The charter ſays, each place is impowered to depute two perſons and no more; Boſton is allowed to ſend four; it is true, that equitably, conſidering their taxes and number of inhabitants in proportion to the whole colony repreſentation, they might be allowed to ſend twenty; but ſuch proportions are not obſerved in Great-Britain our mother-country, perhaps for reaſons

[z] So called, from the name of the tribe of Indians living thereabouts, when the Engliſh firſt began ſettlements there.

of

of ſtate. 2. By acts of aſſembly all townſhips under 120 qualified voters are reſtricted to ſend one and no more, whereas by charter any townſhip may ſend two. 3. The charter does not limit the number of qualified voters in any townſhip or place conſtituted, to enable them to ſend repreſentatives; they ſeem to be limited by acts of aſſembly, but with this reaſonable qualification, that no townſhip, conſiſting of leſs than eighty legal voters ſhall be obliged, that is, fined for the not ſending of a repreſentative. 4. Lately (by inſtruction to the governor, or otherways, I am not certain) this province hath conſtituted townſhips, with all town or corporation privileges, excepting that of deputing repreſentatives to the general aſſembly; though the charter expreſly ſays, that they all may ſend repreſentatives: it is true, that the multiplying of townſhips, eſpecially by ſubdividing old large well-regulated townſhips, into many ſmall jangling townſhips, has been, not many years ago, practiſed with particular views; but has occaſioned an [*a*] INCONVENIENT number of repreſentatives: the ſmall townſhips, under eighty voters, being qualified to ſend, but not obliged to ſend repreſentatives; upon the emergency of a governor's, or any deſigning party intereſt, they are prompted to ſend a deputy to forward ſome party affair.

Incorporating of townſhips with all other town privileges, excepting that of ſending repreſentatives, ſeems to be inconſiſtent with that privilege eſſential to the conſtitution of Great-Britain, *viz.* that all freeholders

[*a*] Maſſachuſetts-Bay government, though lately curtailed, at preſent ſummon about 150 repreſentatives, being more than all of the following five provinces:

New-York	27
Eaſt and Weſt New Jerſeys	22
Penſylvania proper or higher	30
The three lower counties	18
South-Carolina	42
	139

of

of 40*s. per annum* income, and others legally qualified are to be repreſented in the legiſlature and taxation; as in New-England there are no county repreſentations, and as they are not in the humour of being repreſented by counties, though agreeable to charter; it ſeems conſonant to the conſtitution, and will, at the ſame time, obviate the above inconveniencies, that is, that two, three, four, or more of theſe new or ſmall Townſhips, be joined in ſending one or two repreſentatives, after the model, ſettled by the articles of Union in Great-Britain, for the ſmall Parliament-Towns in Scotland or North-Britain [*b*].

[*b*] Our Plantations in America, New-England excepted, have been generally ſettled, 1. By mal-contents with the adminiſtrations from time to time. 2. By fraudulent debtors, as a refuge from their creditors. 3. And by convicts or criminals, who choſe tranſportation rather than death. Theſe circumſtances make the juſt civil adminiſtration in the colonies a difficult performance. An indebted, abandoned, and avaricious governor, in colluſion with ſuch miſcreants or villains, is capable of doing great iniquity and damage in a province; therefore the court of Great-Britain ought to be very circumſpect, and appoint men of probity and wiſdom for governors, the only checks; the recommending miniſter, may be interrogated: Is this candidate, or his wife, any relation, particular friend, or amica? But we muſt not inſiſt upon Utopian governments.

The incident difficulties which may ariſe between a governor in high power, and a licentious people, are problems not eaſily ſolved; liberty without obedience is confuſion, and obedience without liberty is ſlavery: to ſupport a coercive power over a giddy people, and to ſecure the people againſt the abuſe of this power, are difficult problems.

When the generality of a province are diſguſted with their governor, let the occaſion of this diſguſt be any how; perhaps it may be adviſeable to ſuperſede him by another of equal or more virtue and qualifications for government, eſpecially where a governor's avarice and villainy are notorious: we gave inſtances in Lowther and Douglaſs.

All numerous combinations, aſſociations, or partnerſhips, in an abſolute ſovereignty or depending provinces, tend to the ſubverſion, ruin, or, at leaſt, confuſion of the ſociety; we have a notorious inſtance of this in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay of New-England. Anno 1740, a combination of DESPERATE DEBTORS, by the bubble name of Land-Bank, had formed a prevailing party, which, notwithſtanding

By

By cuſtom, all elections, provincial, county, or town, are determined not by the major vote, but by the majority of voters; becauſe where there are more than two candidates, a perſon may have a major vote, though not a majority of the voters.

The votes or journal of the houſe of repreſentatives, is regularly printed at a public charge, one copy for each townſhip, and one copy for each member.

The houſe of repreſentatives inſiſt upon ſeveral privileges; I ſhall mention a few, 1. The governor's in-

their being timely ſtigmatized and damned by an act of the Britiſh parliament, their influence in the aſſembly continues to prevail to this time 1749; in a lucid interval anno 1746, Journal, p. 246. the houſe of repreſentatives, ſay, "We have been the means of effectually bring-"ing diſtreſs, if not ruin upon ourſelves." And in ſummer 1748, at the deſire of the houſe of repreſentatives, a faſt is appointed, "Upon "account of the extreme drought, a puniſhment for many public ſins "we have been guilty of." This ſeems borrowed from the account of a general faſt appointed by the aſſembly, praying God, "That he "would pardon all the errors of his ſervants and people in a late "tragedy (meaning the affair of Salem witchcraft) raiſed amongſt us "by Satan and his inſtruments."

Here is an obvious political obſervation, that, notwithſtanding the proceedings of a community, may be much perverted or vitiated; there are certain boundaries, which humanity and the natural affection which mankind bear to their progeny cannot exceed: I ſhall give ſome few late inſtances of it in this provincial government.—1748, June 3, the board of council and houſe of repreſentatives, in a joint meſſage to the governor, ſay, "The great loſs of inhabitants for huſ-"bandry, and other labour, and for the defence of an inland frontier "of about 300 miles; the vaſt load of debt already contracted; and "the unparalleled growing charge. The annual charge of Connecti-"cut government, at this time is about 4000*l.* to 5000*l.* old tenor; "whereas Maſſachuſetts-Bay government, only about one third larger, "is at the annual charge (meaning the preſent year) of 400,000*l.* old "tenor. Moreover, Connecticut is almoſt out of debt, and we are al-"moſt two millions in debt; INSUPPORTABLE DIFFICULTIES!" In the ſame Journal, the houſe of repreſentatives complain, that many thouſands of inhabitants have been carried off from us, by the expedition againſt the Spaniſh Weſt-Indies; by the expedition againſt Louiſbourg; by forming and recruiting the two American regiments at Louiſbourg; the protection of Nova Scotia; the maintaining of provincial privateer veſſels; and the defence of our frontiers.

ſtructions

ſtructions from the ſecretary of ſtate, of the department, are recommendatory, but not obligatory upon the repreſentatives of the people. New-England was no military acquiſition or conqueſt of the crown (ſuch acquiſitions, until formerly annexed to the dominions of Great-Britain, are by the prerogative abſolutely under direction of the crown) but originally and eſſentially belonging to the dominions of England; and therefore acts of parliament only are obligatory; and no inſtruction pecuniary, procured by the patron, the friend, or the money of a governor, with an arbitrary (perhaps) annexed penalty, *of incurring the diſpleaſure of the Crown*, is ſtrictly obſerved. A noted and repeated inſtance of this we have in the inſtruction for a ſettled ſalary upon the governor; moreover, they aſſert, "That they are at liberty to vary from any former grants to governors, *&c.* governor Shute, a good inoffenſive man, was reduced from an allowance of 1200*l. per annum* common currency, to 1000*l.* 2. That the council may only concur or not concur in a tax or any other money-bill,

Anno 1747, the governor inſiſting upon a further emiſſion of theſe depreciating bills; the repreſentatives, though a paper-money making houſe, could not avoid remonſtrating, "If we emit more bills, we apprehend it muſt be followed by a great impair, if not utter loſs of the public credit, which already has been greatly wounded."

June 16, the board of council remonſtrate, "The neighbouring provinces have been at little or no expence of money or men; while this province is reduced to the utmoſt diſtreſs, by bearing almoſt the whole burden of the war."

"With public taxes, we are burdened almoſt to ruin."—"The province is at a prodigious daily charge, beyond their ſtrength," "Which has involved us in a prodigious load of debt, and, in a manner, exhauſted our ſubſtance."—1746-7, March 14, the houſe of repreſentatives reſolve, "That not only from the immenſe debt the province is loaded with from the Cape Breton expedition, but alſo from the decreaſe of the inhabitants; they will make no eſtabliſhment the preſent year, for any forces which ſhall not be poſted within the bounds of the province."—"Should the whole ſum expended in the late expedition againſt Cape-Breton, be reimburſed us, we have ſtill a greater debt remaining, than ever lay upon any one of his majeſty's governments in the plantations."

but

but may make no amendment; the affair of ſupplying the treaſury always originates in the Houſe of Repreſentatives. 3. Not long ſince all accounts of public charges, ſome very trifling, were rendred, audited, and paſſed by the Houſe of Repreſentatives; not only at a great unneceſſary charge (our aſſembly-men are all in pay) of upwards of 100*l.* per day, at that time, for paſſing a controverted account of a few pounds; but contrary to charter; the words of the charter are, "The aſſembly to impoſe and levy proportionable and "reaſonable aſſeſſments, rates, and taxes; upon the "eſtates and perſons of all and every the proprietors or "inhabitants of our ſaid province or territory; to be iſ-"ſued and diſpoſed of, by warrant under the hand of the "governor of our ſaid province for the time being, with "the advice and conſent of the council." Some years ſince, upon complaint home, the king in council has explained this affair.

In this article we ſhall have frequent occaſion to mention money-affairs, *viz.* emiſſion of public provincial bills of credit, called paper-money; ſupplies of the treaſury, annual taxes, ſalaries, and other government charges; all which at various times have been expreſſed in various tenors; *viz.* Old tenor, middle tenor, new tenor firſt, new tenor ſecond, which, in the face of the bill, is about 12 *per cent.* worſe than new tenor firſt, but from the inaccuracy of our people, and an abandoned neglect of a proper credit, paſs indifferently at the ſame value. But that I may be the more eaſily underſtood, I ſhall, by means of a ſmall table (which is the moſt conciſe and diſtinct manner of repreſenting ſuch things) reduce all tenors to their value in old tenor the original, and to this time 1749, the denomination of common currency: and to prevent the reader's trouble in reducing the value of our old tenor from time to time (as it has been generally in a progreſſive ſtate of depreciation or pejoration) to a proper

per ſtandard of exchange with London, or value per oz. Mexico ſilver. The exchange with London, is 100*l.* ſterling for—I have added the acceſſions of governors, for the laſt half century, to make it apparent how much our paper currency has depreciated in their reſpective adminiſtrations.

Periods	Exc. with Lond.	1 oz. Silv.	Acceſ. of Gov.
A.D. 1702	133	6 *s.* 10 *d.* ½	*Dudley*
1705	135	7 *s.*	ditto
1713	150	8 *s.*	ditto
1715	175	9 *s.* 3 *d.*	Taylor and Shute
1717	225	12 *s.*	ditto
1722	270	14 *s.*	Dummer
1728	340	18 *s.*	Burnet
1730	380	20 *s.*	Belcher
1737	500	26 *s.*	ditto
1741	550	28 *s.*	Shirley
1749	1100	60 *s.* [*c*]	ditto

Exchange continues to riſe rather than fall, notwithſtanding the generous reimburſement granted by the Britiſh parliament, towards paying off our provincial debts incurred by a private corporation adventure, in the Cape-Breton expedition: perhaps the merchants and others are diffident, and ſuſpect that ſome ſubſequent general aſſembly (with the countenance of a ſuitable

governor)

[*c*] That we may the better eſtimate the differences of Maſſachuſetts preſent currency from the preſent value of currencies in the other Britiſh plantations, colonies, and provinces; we exhibit their preſent (1748) exchanges with London.

For 100 *l.* ſterl.	Currency		
New-England	1100	North-Carolina	1000
New-York	190	South-Carolina	750
Eaſt-Jerſeys	190	Barbadoes	130
Weſt-Jerſeys	180	Antigua	170 to 180
Penſylvania	180	St. Chriſtopher's	160
Maryland	200	Jamaica	140
Virginia	120 to 125		

governor) worſhipers of that wicked idol, the iniquitous, bubbling paper-currency, may pervert the proper application of this bounty or donation. Something of this kind has lately been a remora at home, and has prevented the province from receiving it by their agents hitherto.

June 15, at the commencement of the new charter juriſdiction, 1692, was enacted, A continuance of the local and municipal laws of the old charter juriſdiction, if not repugnant to the laws of England, until Nov. 10, following.—The fundamental law or general political principle of the colonies of New-England, is, that natural and ſalutary maxim, *Salus populi eſt ſuprema lex*; they do not countenance the ſlaviſh doctrines of non-reſiſtance, paſſive obedience, hereditary indefeaſible right, and the like.

The preſent enacting ſtyle is, Be it enacted by the Governor, Council, and Houſe of Repreſentatives.

Thankſgivings and faſts, ever ſince governor Shute's complaints, have been appointed by the governor and council, at the deſire of the Houſe of Repreſentatives.

Becauſe all acts of aſſembly are required by the charter to be ſent home for allowance or diſallowance, therefore many things are done by the name of Order or Reſolve.

Late years, the governors are directed by their inſtructions not to conſent to bills of ſundry kinds, until they be ſent home for approbation—Thus it is in the parliament of Ireland.

The general aſſembly, by their accepting of an explanatory charter upwards of thirty years ſince, have curtailed the houſe of repreſentatives, from the privilege of electing their own Speaker abſolutely; that is, a power is reſerved to the governor, or any other commander in chief, to negative or diſapprove any Speaker elected and preſented; and that the repreſentatives ſo aſſembled, ſhall forthwith elect any other perſon to be Speaker, to be approved or diſapproved, in manner as aforeſaid:

as

as alſo from adjourning of themſelves, not exceeding two days at a time, without leave from the governor, or any other commander in chief of the province.

When a joint committee of both houſes is appointed, generally one third is from the council, and two thirds from the repreſentatives.

Although the military, are the abſolute prerogative of the king, and of his repreſentative the governor; the aſſembly, eſpecially the Houſe of Repreſentatives, do, upon extraordinary occaſions, in faithfulneſs to their conſtituents, complain, and, in ſome meaſure, admoniſh the governor. We ſhall produce a few late inſtances.—1746, The houſe, by meſſage to the governor, ſay, that they ſuſpect the governor's inliſting men for his Louiſbourg regiment, out of the impreſſed frontier forces: the governor denies this, but acknowledges that he had allowed the frontier ſoldiers to be inliſted in the Canada expedition, and to impreſs men in their place. —It does not appear to us neceſſary or convenient, for this government, any ways to concern themſelves in building a fort at the great carrying-place from Hudſon's river to Wood Creek in the government of New-York.—The forces, particularly upon the eaſtern frontiers, have been very negligent in ſcouting, and all other military ſervices; there have been many ineffectives; inhabitants of ſeveral townſhips, to do duty in their own townſhips, have been inliſted, paid, and victualled, though they only followed their own private buſineſs: "This is very abuſive to the government, as well as in-"jurious to theſe expoſed parts."—1747, The aſſembly repreſent "the huſbandry, manufactures, and naviga-"tion of the province; have ſuffered much by multiplied "expeditions."—"We have, by our paſt actions, proved "ourſelves zealous for his majeſty's ſervice; but our un-"happineſs is, that although the ſame diſpoſition re-"mains, yet we are in a manner incapacitated to pro-"mote it for the future.

The houſe of repreſentatives frequently complain of their being involved in unneceſſary and improper charges. 1747, April 21, "We apprehend that we have made conſiderable grants for the protection and encouragement of the ſix Indian nations of New-York government, beyond what has been done by New-York itſelf, in whoſe borders theſe Indians are ſituated.

There are many altercations amongſt the three negatives; when this happens in the parliament of Great-Britain, as it is very ſeldom, it is as a prodigy; ſuch differences leſſen the reſpect due from the people to each negative in the legiſlature. Each of thoſe negatives, moreover, at times vary [*d*] from themſelves, by contra-

[*d*] Our G——r——r, for certain political reaſons, which we ſhall not now dive into, ſees meet to vary from time to time.—Soon after his acceſſion, June, 1742, in a meſſage to the houſe, he gives wholeſome paternal advice, 1. That long ſeſſions are very expenſive to the province. 2. He entreats them to keep the province clear of debt, which, inſtead of decreaſing, will continually increaſe their incumbrances.—3. 1741, Auguſt 17, in his firſt ſpeech, "A creditor, who has the miſ-"fortune of having an out ſtanding debt, of the value of 1000 *l.* ſterl. "contracted anno 1730, can now receive no more in our courts of "judicature (unleſs in a caſe of ſpecialty) than the value of about "650 *l.* ſterl. the great injuſtice and oppreſſion of which, upon the "creditor, has a great tendency to introduce a ſpirit of diſhoneſty into "this community."——4. 1741, Oct. 14, "Reſtraints upon emiſſions, "which his majeſty has been graciouſly pleaſed, out of his paternal "affection to his people to do, and has thereby ſaved this province "from greater ruin."—"It is the injuſtice of thoſe bills, which has "plunged us into thoſe difficulties—in ſome ſubſequent aſſemblies the "ſecuring to every creditor the juſt value of his debt, is a piece of "juſtice hitherto unknown to your laws, or courts of judicature."—— 5. "The province being ſo long accuſtomed, to eſtimate province bills "of public credit, according to their nominal value, is grown quite in-"ſenſible of their real value."—1744, Nov. 29. he well obſerves in his ſpeech with regard to multiplying paper-currency." "And can "ſuch a proceeding be thought beneficial to the country? Can it poſ-"ſibly be deemed either prudent with reſpect to yourſelves, or juſt with "regard to your poſterity?"—1747-8, Feb. 3, "The general diſtreſs "of the province, ariſing from the extraordinary emiſſions of paper-"money, whereby the value thereof, for all occaſions of life, is ſunk "ſo low, and is ſtill ſinking; and thereby the eſtates of orphans and

dictory ſpeeches, meſſages, and reconſidering of their votes. I write with the liberty and freedom which is eſſential to the Britiſh conſtitution.

" widows, and of many others who have no remedy in their power, " againſt this growing evil, daily diminiſhing; which muſt, in very " little time, bring many good families to ruin."

On the other ſide of the queſtion; we may obſerve, that, 1. Of late years, the ſeſſions of aſſembly, are longer and more frequent, than ever; for inſtance, the annual aſſembly of 1745, ſat about thirty weeks at the daily charge (our aſſembly-men are all in pay) of near 1500*l.*——2. Our provincial debt, 1741, when Mr. Belcher was ſuperſeded, was about 130,000*l.* at preſent 1749, it is about two millions. ——3. " The great and ſudden depreciations of province-bills, is ow- " ing to the immoderate price of exchange and ſilver."——4. Jan. 15, 1741-2, " The inſtruction, containing a reſtraining clauſe in emitting " bills of credit, is remitted: as this is an alteration, which, I am per- " ſuaded (ſpeech to the aſſembly) will be very agreeable unto you, " and has been occaſioned through my acceſſion to the government; " I mention it to you with no SMALL SATISFACTION."——5. In a ſpeech to the aſſembly, " From 1718 to 1743, in conſtant practice all " debts upon book, note, bond, or mortgage, were diſcharged in " province bills penny for penny, that is, in the nominal ſum; " which he deems to be equitable, becauſe both creditor and debtor, " tacitly run the chance of the riſing or falling of thoſe bills." *N. B.* This was the common cant of the land bank managers and other debtors; the forbearance and indulgence of creditors is ridiculed, as much, as if a perſon intruſted by another with money or goods, ſhould turn bankrupt, and laugh at his friend for his truſt; alledging, that it was in his option, to truſt or not truſt him. How provoking is this to an honeſt man, for his good nature and compaſſion, to have his eſtate firſt by a private, and afterwards by a more open and daring combination of the debtors, reduced in a reverſe proportion of 12*s.* to 30*s.* the price of ſilver from anno 1718 to 1743, and from 30*s.* to 60*s.* as it is anno 1749; and afterwards be laughed at as a ſilly fool.

And in fact, how could a perſon remedy himſelf with the ſtricteſt ſagacity in the following caſes? A man lets out money upon mortgage, May, 1745, exchange with London 650*l.* currency for 100*l.* ſterl. in the ſpace of three years, May, 1748, exchange is 1100*l.* currency for 100*l.* ſterl.—a creditor all this time cannot recover his money, becauſe by the laws of the province, near one year (by appeals and reviews) is required to bring a bond to final judgment, and the equity of redemption is three years more: moreover, the public loans, and the private bank loans were conditioned at ten to fifteen years

Upon

Upon the arrival of the new charter of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay; their firſt general aſſembly,

forbearance, which, with the aboveſaid four years additional, makes an unavoidable forbearance of fourteen to nineteen years: further, ſome of the loan 1716 (a great damage to the public) is not ſued out at this preſent writing. How is it poſſible to provide againſt the continued great depreciations during ſo many years?

As it does not belong to any provincial aſſembly, to explain acts of parliament, becauſe they may be deemed ſufficient to execute themſelves, under the agency of the colony executive courts; I do not pretend to be a ſtateſman ſufficient, to account for a bill brought into our court of legiſlature yearly, for theſe eight years laſt paſt; entitled, "A Bill for the more ſpeedy finiſhing of the Land-Bank ſcheme:" as it is never brought to an iſſue, perhaps ſome may call it, rather a Bill of Grace.

Governor Shirley, in his ſpeech, October 14, 1741, "Nothing is "more eaſy, than to ſecure to every creditor his juſt due, let the bills "depreciate never ſo much, by enabling the king's judges to do juſtice "to every creditor in that particular—It is the injuſtice of our bills "which has plunged us into theſe difficulties." But as this advice has not been followed or repeated, the creditors have generally ſuffered in the reverſe proportion of ſixty to thirty in a few years; ſuch is the malignant nature of this depaſcent ulcer, that nothing but the extirpation or exciſion of this, can ſave our body politic. *Delenda eſt.*

I deſire readers, not affected with paper-currencies, may excuſe prolixity; when this vile chimæra, or monſter, comes in my way, I cannot contain myſelf.

This ſcheme for fraudulent debtors to cheat their creditors, was firſt projected, anno 1714, by J. C. The maxim, or baſis was, by multiplied emiſſions, to depreciate the nominal value of our currency: thus the difference between the nominal value, at any time when paid, and its real value when lent or contracted for; was a fraudulent gain to the debtor, and a very injurious loſs to the honeſt creditor; for inſtance, anno 1713, exchange with London 150*l.* currency for 100*l.* ſterl.—At preſent 1749, by depreciations we are at 1100*l.* currency for 100*l.* ſterling, that is, in ſucceſſive dealings, the creditor has loſt ſix in ſeven of his debts or contracts, which is the debtor's crafty gain. There were various eſſays made from time to time to arrive to this depreciation; the laſt was miraculouſly the moſt ſucceſsful. 1. Emitting bills of public credit, not only for the ordinary and neceſſary charges of government, but for public loans to private perſons, *viz.* anno 1714, 50,000*l.* anno 1716, 100,000*l.* anno 1721, 50,000*l.* anno 1727, 60,000*l.* at long credit; this had a conſiderable effect in favour of debtors, but ſome inconveniencies and inſtructions put a ſtop to it. 2. Poſtponing the cancelling of emiſſions: thus emiſ-

or legiſlature, convened in June, 1692; in the firſt place they continued the municipal laws (not repugnant to

ſions yearly multiplied, and the cancelling of them delayed, increaſed this flood of a baſe currency. 3. Notes of private aſſociations deſigned to be upon a par, current with public bills of credit, would have multiplied this falſe currency immenſely; but from private complaints ſent home, this was cruſhed in embryo, by act of the Britiſh parliament, 1741. 4. At length, by multiplied expenſive expeditions, they compaſſed their deſigns to the greateſt extent, or to a *ne plus ultra*, which, it is to be hoped, the parliament of Great-Britain, in their wonted goodneſs, will rectify in their preſent ſeſſion.

I am ſorry that, upon any occaſion, or in any reſpect, I ſhould give offence to any particular perſon, or to any number of men: it is not from malice or reſentment: it cannot be imagined, that in courſe, writing unavoidable hiſtorical truths, I ſhould deſignedly and maliciouſly reflect upon the country and its municipal juriſdiction; this is my *altera patria*, from upwards of thirty years reſidence.

However, the creatures of any miniſtry at home may, from time to time, find fault with the liberty of the preſs, which they repreſent as licentious; the courts of judicature, which, by good Providence, are independent of the miniſtry, vindicate the preſs, if not too licentious, and find fault with their deſpotic accuſers.

While I write mere facts with proper vouchers, and in a good light, I uſe only that liberty (not licentiouſneſs) of the preſs, which ſeems ſacred and eſſential to the Britiſh conſtitution; as we have no general intendants as in the French conſtitution, every hiſtorical writer with us, may be a ſort of intendant or check upon provincial adminiſtration; for inſtance, as the houſe of repreſentatives are the grand inqueſt of the province, eſpecially as to miſdemeanors in the adminiſtration: may I not take a hint from their journals, *e. g.* although, as above, the colony of Connecticut are to this province as two to three; Connecticut is almoſt out of debt, and we are about two millions currency in debt: the annual public charges of Connecticut are from 4000 to 5000 *l.* currency, thoſe of Maſſachuſetts Bay are about 400,000 *l.* which vaſt proportional difference, is ſaid to be owing to the differences in the frugality and integrity of their reſpective adminiſtrations. 2. The repreſentatives in their journals ſeem to complain of univerſal infectious corruption, *viz.* That officers, from the higheſt to the loweſt, were iniquitous in their perquiſites: the field officers, captains, and others were complained againſt for extorting money from the private men, as a commiſſion of receiving their wages, and for certifying their time of ſervice; for buying their wages, or pay, at a great diſcount; for taking money in the diſcharge or exchange of impreſſed men; and for falſe incomplete muſter-rolls. Theſe things are all wiſely provided againſt by the general aſſembly, but the executive part

the laws of England) of the old charter adminiſtration, for a few months, until a ſmall body of new laws could be formed.

By this new charter, ſee p. 374. of this Summary, the houſe of repreſentatives is conſtituted in this manner, *viz.* Every year, and for ever, upon the laſt Wedneſday of May, and at all other times as the governor ſhall think fit, ſhall be held a general court or aſſembly; the freeholders and other inhabitants of the reſpective towns and places are impowered to depute two perſons, and no more, to repreſent them in the general aſſembly. The qualification of an elector is 40 *s.* at leaſt *per ann.* freehold, or other eſtate, to the value of 50 *l.* ſterling.

The preſent practice by acts or reſolves of the general aſſembly, and by cuſtom. Boſton ſends four deputies or repreſentatives; Salem, Ipſwich, Newbury, Marblehead and Charleſtown, generally ſend two each: from the other towns which ſend repreſentatives, each ſends one. We have not got into the method directed by charter for two or more ſmall townſhips joining, to ſend a repreſentation, which would prevent the inconveniency of multiplying repreſentatives, and would reſtore to the conſtituted, incorporated townſhips (by charter qualified, and by the Britiſh conſtitution privileged to be repreſented) that privilege of which they are abridged by being refuſed to ſend a repreſentative, as we have no general county elections.

By act of aſſembly, firſt year of the charter 1692, each town, conſiſting of thirty to forty qualified electors, may (at their option) ſend, or not ſend, one repreſentative; each town of forty qualified are enjoined to ſend one repreſentative; each town of 120 qualified may ſend

of the adminiſtration ſeems to connive; for inſtance, by a late act, "if "any perſon authorized, ſhall exact or take any reward, to diſcharge "or ſpare any (ſoldiers) from the ſaid ſervice, he ſhall forfeit ten "pounds for every twenty ſhillings he ſhall ſo exact or take." In this caſe many officers have been notoriouſly guilty, but not called to account.

two repreſentatives; no town, Boſton excepted (which may ſend four) is at any time to ſend more than two repreſentatives. Writs for calling a general aſſembly to iſſue from the Secretary's office thirty days before their meeting, directed to the Select men, as returning officers; the returns to be made into the Secretary's office one day at leaſt before the time prefixed for the meeting of the general aſſembly—Forty repreſentatives to conſtitute a houſe—Penalty for non-attendance 5 *s.* per day. All repreſentatives, with one ſon or ſervant each, to have perſonal protection during their ſeſſions, excepting in caſes of treaſon or felony.

By act of aſſembly 1693, the qualifications of a voter, for a repreſentative, is reduced from the charter qualification of 50 *l.* ſterling, principal eſtate to 40 *l.* ſterling. —Repreſentatives muſt be freeholders and reſidents in the town for which they are choſen.

Anno 1726, no town, under the number of ſixty qualified lectors, to be obliged to ſend a repreſentative—1730, No town, under the number of eighty qualified electors, to be obliged to ſend a repreſentative—About one third of the townſhips, which have precepts ſent them, ſend no repreſentatives.

Here we ſhall inſert by way of table, the number of precepts iſſued out, and the number of members returned to the houſe of repreſentatives, from ten years to ten years (to mention every year would be tedious, and of no uſe) in each county.

The whole legiſlature, for reaſons beſt known to themſelves, do at times jointly vary from their former notions of affairs: A noted inſtance of this was anno 1741, a ſum of 127,125 *l.* in public bills of credit to be cancelled by taxes, conform to the emitting acts of aſſembly; ſo high a tax was judged inconvenient, and it was divided amongſt the three ſubſequent years: anno 1748, the province being poorer by expedition, loſſes of working men, and by ſhip-building, and other articles of trade failing, the province tax for the year is enacted, at upwards of 400,000 *l.* The reimburſements granted by parliament were deſigned to pay off the public bills of credit, that is, the provincial debt contracted by the Cape-Breton expedition.

A liſt

A liſt of Precepts ſent, and of Returns made 1708 *to* 1748.

	1708		1718		1728		1738		1748	
	Precepts.	Returns.	Precepts.	Returns.	Precepts.	Returns.	Precepts.	Returns.	Precepts.	Returns.
Suffolk	19	13	14	15	16	17	17	17	18	16
Eſſex	17	17	20	19	19	18	20	20	19	18
Middleſex	22	18	20	20	28	20	33	22	32	25
Hampſhire	8	6	7	7	11	7	12	7	17	9
Worceſter							18	8	22	5
Plymouth	7	5	8	8	10	9	13	10	13	8
Barnſtap.	6	4	5	5	8	6	9	6	6	6
Briſtol	11	7	10	9	12	11	15	10	11	8
York	3	2	3	3	7	5	10	7	11	5
D. county	3	1	2	3	3		13		3	
Nantuck.	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1
Total	97	74	91	88	115	94	151	108	153	101

N. B. Anno 1731, ſome townſhips were taken from the counties of Suffolk, Middleſex, and Hampſhire; and formed into a new county called the county of Worceſter.

As this hiſtory ſeems to ſwell too much for the peruſal of the people in our infant colonies, who in general are not bookiſh, and do not apply themſelves to read books of any conſiderable bulk; I muſt forbear inſerting the long liſt of the townſhips in Maſſachuſetts-Bay province.

We ſhall here only obſerve, that our townſhips or diſtricts of lands, may be diſtinguiſhed into four ſorts. 1. Incorporated townſhips, which are ſerved with precepts, and generally ſend repreſentatives; this year they are in number ninety-five. 2. Incorporated townſhips, which are ſerved with precepts, but generally do not ſend repreſentatives; this preſent year they are fifty-eight: their number being ſo large, is occaſioned by their poverty, which proceeds from their labouring young men being taken away, that is, depopulated by multiplied expeditions, and their being peculated by multiplied taxes. Formerly our province tax was from ſix thouſand

to (in great exigencies) forty thouſand pounds *per annum*; whereas this preſent year 1748, the provincial tax upon polls and eſtates is three hundred ſeventy-ſeven thouſand nine hundred ninety-two pounds, and exciſes doubled: thus they cannot well ſpare 30 *s.* a day, the preſent wages of a repreſentative. 3. Townſhips incorporated, but in expreſs words debarred from ſending repreſentatives; theſe are but few in number, becauſe lately introduced. This ſeems anti-conſtitutional (that as we have no county-repreſentatives) perſons of good eſtates real and perſonal ſhould in no manner be repreſented, as if they were aliens, ſervants, or ſlaves. 4. Townſhips or diſtricts granted to a number of proprietors, but as the conditions of the grant, particularly the ſettling of a certain number of families in a limited ſpace of time, are not fully performed, they are not as yet qualified to be conſtituted, by act of aſſembly, with all town privileges; of theſe there are many, eſpecially in thoſe lands which lately were taken from the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and annexed to the crown in property, and to the province of New-Hampſhire in juriſdiction. *N. B.* This late boundary line cut off from Maſſachuſetts-Bay province, the conſtituted, but not repreſented townſhips of Rumford and Litchfield upon Merrimack river; of Wincheſter upon Connecticut river; with part of the conſtituted townſhips of Nottingham and Dunſtable, upon Merrimack river; part of Groton and Townſhend; part of Northfield upon Connecticut river: the other diſtricts or grants not incorporated annexed to New-Hampſhire, were, Herrys town, Contacook, the nine townſhips commonly called the double row of frontier towns againſt the French and their Indian auxiliaries, the row of four townſhips upon the eaſt ſide of Connecticut river, the row of two townſhips weſt ſide of Connecticut river, [*e*] Canada to Gallop and others, Canada

[*e*] About twenty years ſince, and for ſome following years, the general aſſembly of the province were in the humour of dividing and appropriating moſt of the then reckoned provincial or unoccupied

to

to Sylveſter and others, Lower Aſhuelot, Upper Aſhuelot, Canada to Rowley, Canada to Ipſwich, Canada to Salem, Canada to Beverley, Naraganſet No. 3, Naraganſet No. 5, Lanes New-Boſton, townſhip to Ipſwich; in all twenty-nine grants transferred to New-Hampſhire juriſdiction: the other granted, but not conſtituted townſhips, which remain in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, are, in the province of Main, townſhip to Cape-Anne or Glouceſter, townſhip to Powers and others, townſhip to Marblehead, Naraganſet No. 7, Naraganſet

lands; that in caſe of future claims by the crown, &c. by poſſeſſion they might retain at leaſt the property. This was provident and good policy, and accordingly upon ſettling the line between the two provinces, the property of the aboveſaid diſtricts, was in the commiſſion reſerved to theſe poſſeſſors; but lately the heirs and aſſigns of Mr. Maſon, original grantee of New-Hampſhire, have intimidated the Maſſachuſetts proprietors, and brought ſundry of them to compound for a valuable quit claim; whereas, if by contribution of the preſent proprietors (a mere trifle to each of them) they, by petition, had carried the affair before the king in council, they would have been quieted in their property, and obviated any further claims, ſuch as the claims of colonel Allen's heirs, Mr. Maſon's general aſſignee; and of the claims of the million purchaſe lately revived, which may likewiſe be converted into bubbles.

Our general aſſembly at that time were in ſuch a hurry to appropriate the vacant lands, that ſeveral old townſhips were encouraged to petition for an additional new townſhip: and when they were ſatiated, the aſſembly introduced by way of bounty to the deſcendents of the ſoldiers in the Indian war of king Philip (ſo called) 1675, and of the ſoldiers in Sir William Phipp's expedition againſt Canada, anno 1690. Thus nine townſhips were granted to each of theſe expeditions; thus no lands (excepting in the inland back wilderneſs of the province of Main) were left to recompence the deſcendents of the particular ſufferers (the province in general was an unaccountable ſufferer) in the unforeſeen and inconceivable (becauſe rath) expedition againſt Louiſbourg; our adminiſtration perhaps did not underſtand the doctrine of chances; but by good providence, though the chance was upwards of a million to one againſt us, we gained the prize, not by playing away men (as is the phraſe in Flanders) in being killed, but by the poltroonry of the French garriſon. This muſt not be underſtood as detracting from the New-England militia troops, who are noted for their courage as bull-dogs (excuſe the expreſſion) where they fix, they never quit hold, until they conquer, or are cut to pieces.

No.

No. 1, and Philips's town upon Salmon Falls river; between Merrimack river and Connecticut river are Canada to Dorcheſter, Canada to Ipſwich, Canada to Rockſbury, townſhip to Welles and others, townſhip to Salem, Nichawoag, Pequioug, Naraganſet No. 6, Naraganſet No. 2, Townſhend. On the weſt ſide of Connecticut river, are the grants of Fall fight townſhip, of Canada to Hunt, and others; Naraganſet No. 4, townſhips to Boſton, No. 1, 2, 3, Upper Houſatonick, four more Houſatonicks, and Bedford: making in all grants not incorporated, twenty-eight in the province of Maſſachuſetts Bay not alienated; and twenty-nine transferred as to juriſdiction, to the province of New-Hampſhire.

The affair of the above townſhips is variable, and of no permanent uſe; but this may ſerve a future curious hiſtorian, as an accurate account for the ſtate of the year 1749.

There are a few things, in which the houſe of repreſentatives of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay in New-England (which, in all reſpects, is the principal Britiſh colony) vary from the practice of the Houſe of Commons in Great-Britain. I ſhall mention two, which muſt not be deemed conſtitutional, as being only by ſundry acts of the general aſſembly, and conſequently if inconvenient, may be repealed or altered by ſome ſubſequent act.

1. That a repreſentative muſt be a [*f*] reſident in the townſhip for which he is elected. As the repreſentative of a diſtrict or townſhip ſo called, is not a peculiar agent for that townſhip, but is their quota of repreſentation of the whole province in the general aſſembly;

[*f*] It is ſaid, that anno 1692, there were ſome Boſton gentlemen repreſentatives for ſome of the out-towns, but not agreeable to the then Rev. I M—th—r; Mr. B—f—d for Briſtol is mentioned; Mr. M——, of great intereſt with the weak governor Phipps, and with the devotionally bigotted houſe, procured this act.

a gentle-

a gentleman of good natural intereſt and reſident in the province; a man of reading, obſervation, and daily converſant with affairs of policy and commerce, is certainly better qualified for a legiſlator, than a retailer of rum and ſmall beer called a tavern keeper, in a poor obſcure country town, remote from all buſineſs. Thus this countryman will not be diverted from the moſt neceſſary and beneficial labour of cultivating the ground, his proper qualification, to attend ſtate affairs, of which he may be ſuppoſed groſly and invincibly ignorant: thus the poor townſhips, by gentlemen at large ſerving gratis or generouſly as the quota of the townſhip, will be freed from the growing (in one year, from anno 1747 to 1748, this charge was advanced from 20*s.* to 30*s.* per day) charge of ſubſiſting an uſeleſs repreſentative: therefore, if this clauſe of reſidence in the act of aſſembly 1693, is not abſolutely repealed, may it not be qualified in this manner? *viz.* The repreſentative, if not a reſident in the townſhip, being a reſident in the province, ſhall have a rent roll of **** *per annum* in the place, or ſhall be the proprietor of **** hundred acres in the townſhip for which he is elected.

2. That counſellors and repreſentatives do ſerve their country upon wages. The honour and pleaſure of doing good, is recompence ſufficient to a patriot: thus the province will [*g*] ſave a very conſiderable part of

[*g*] As ſavings, that is frugality, in private œconomy is a conſiderable lucration, ſo it is in the public charges of government; for inſtance, the taking and maintaining the fort of Louiſbourg in the iſland of Cape-Breton coſt Great-Britain; conſidering other unavoidable vaſt charges, not conveniently able to afford ſuch an extra charge upon a place which muſt in policy unavoidably be reſtored, to the great diſguſt of the brave New-England men, who in loyalty, and patriotiſm to the Britiſh nations, ventured not only their lives to the number of upwards of 2000 of an infant colony, dead, but their fortunes (that is their country, notwithſtanding the generous reimburſement of the Britiſh parliament, reduced to great diſtreſs) I ſay it coſt about

taxation; for inſtance, this preſent year 1748, the province would have ſaved about 25,000 *l.* The whole annual provincial charge from the commencement of the charter, fell ſhort of this ſum, until anno 1735; that year, the rates were 31,000 *l.* old tenor: thus in time to come two of the negatives would be under no temptation of having their wages augmented by colluſion with the third negative; the governor's allowance being by them immoderately advanced [*b*].

The allowances or pay of the three negatives for their ſervices, are ſettled by themſelves from time to time; therefore they do not ſuffer by the depreciation of their own public bills of credit. I ſhall here annex a table (tables contract things into a more eaſy, leſs diffuſed, and therefore more diſtinct view) of the pay of the three negatives in ſome ſucceſſive periods, and of the province rate: the province polls in theſe reſpective years, ſee afterwards, as taken from the valuation acts: in about ſeven years period, a valuation or cenſus is made for proportioning the aſſeſſments of each townſhip or diſtrict towards the provincial rate or charge.

A. D.	1702	1720	1730	1740	1743	1745	1747	1748
Govers. pr. An.	Dudley 600	Shute 1200	Belcher 2400	ditto 3600	Shirley 5400	ditto 6000	ditto 7600	ditto 9600
Counſ. pr. Day	5 *s.*	6 *s.*	10 *s.*	15 *s.*	18 *s.*	18 *s.*	30 *s.*	40 *s.*
Repre. pr. Day	3 *s.*	4 *s.*	6 *s.*	10 *s.*	12 *s.*	12 *s.*	20 *s.*	30 *s.*
Rates.	6000	6000	8000	39000	60000	120000	168324	381672

500,000 *l.* ſterling, a dead loſs to Great-Britain; whereas a ſmall additional charge in the better garriſoning of Annapolis, Placentia, and St. John's, with a few additional ſhips of war from Great-Britain, under the direction of an active commander, ſuch as Sir Peter Warren or Mr. Knowles, would have not only ſecured our northern colonies and their trade againſt all French armaments, the French being at that time notoriouſly weak at ſea, but alſo would have cut off all communication between Old France, and New France or Canada.

[*b*] By act of aſſembly, governors are exempted from rates or taxes; therefore ſome governors eaſily conſent to and laugh at a high tax.

Any

Any well-diſpoſed perſon without doors may ſubmiſſively offer advice or propoſals, even after a bill is enacted, becauſe acts are frequently explained or altered by ſubſequent acts for the public good: all legiſlatures and their laws ought to be ſacred and tenderly uſed, without cavilling or cenſuring. Thus in Great-Britain it has been a practice time out of mind for writers not of the legiſlature, freely and decently to give their advice and ſchemes. As the affair I mean is only temporary, I ſhall ſubjoin it among the annotations [*i*].

[*i*] It is arrogant, in ſome meaſure ſeditious, and a great ſin againſt the divine inſtitution of ſociety, for any perſon or perſons, to exclaim againſt the acts of legiſlature; the following are only ſome private ſpeculations, concerning the negotiating of the late Cape-Breton expedition reimburſement money, and the *ſudden tranſition* from an immenſe baſe paper-currency, to that good and univerſal medium of ſilver-money.

1. The late act for receiving and negotiating our *reimburſement* money, granted by the parliament of Great Britain, impowers Sir Peter Warren, Mr. Bollan, and Mr. Palmer, or two of them, the ſaid Bollan to be one; perhaps the giving of a negative to Mr. Bollan, may diſguſt the other two gentlemen, ſo as to prevent their acting, and conſequently occaſion a further delay of the *reimburſement*; did not Mr. Bollan's being formerly appointed ſole agent in this affair, diſguſt his fellow provincial agent Mr. Kilby, a gentleman of knowledge and ſpirit in tranſacting of buſineſs; and occaſion a memorial of merchants and others, Sept. 21, 1748, to the treaſury of Great-Britain, to delay the remittance of the *reimburſement* money, for reaſons therein ſpecified? This delay is a damage to the country after the rate (I mean the intereſt of the money) of 11,000 *l.* ſterling, or 110,000 *l.* old tenor *per annum*; as if ſome debtors managers, ſtudied methods to delay the *melioration* of the denominations of our currencies, by clogging the affair.

2. The amount of our provincial debt (that is, of our public bills, or paper currency) anno 1748, was about 2,405,000 *l.* old tenor; by this act, a part of it 712,000 *l.* is to be ſunk by very heavy rates upon a reduced poor people, in the years 1748 and 1749; and the remaining 1,693,000 *l.* old tenor, to be redeemed or exchanged by the reimburſement ſilver; commiſſions, freight, inſurance, and ſome petty charges being firſt deducted.

I uſe the words, a poor reduced people, 1. In conformity to ſundry expreſſions uſed at ſeveral times by the Houſe of Repreſentatives, in their meſſages to the Governor, "With public taxes we

In

In this province there ſeems to be a ſtanding faction conſiſting of *wrong heads* and *fraudulent debtors*; this

" are burdened almoſt to ruin."—" The province is at a prodigious " daily charge beyond their ſtrength, which has involved us in a pro- " digious load of debt, and in a manner exhauſted our ſubſtance."— " Although the ſame diſpoſition remains, yet we are in a manner " incapable to promote it (the Britiſh intereſt) for the future." 2. The loſs of about 3000 robuſt, labouring young men by expeditions; major Little, lately commander of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay reinforcements, ſent to Annapolis in Nova Scotia, in his book publiſhed in London 1748, concerning the nature of the preſent trade of our northern colonies, writes, that by multiplied expeditions they had loſt 7000 men, and many thouſands perverted to idleneſs. Here I may, by way of amuſement, obſerve, that according to the eſtimates of political arithmeticians, in all well ſettled countries the numbers of males and females are nearly equal (ſome are very particular, and ſuppoſe eighteen male births, to ſeventeen female births) therefore as we have lately by expeditions loſt about three thouſand young men, there remains with us a balance of three thouſand young women, good breeders, but idle in that reſpect; the balance may be transferred to ſettle Nova Scotia, under the cover of ſome regiments of ſoldiers that muſt be diſbanded, which, in the interim, may be tranſported to Nova Scotia, cantoned, and continued in pay for two or three years, with portions of land, at an eaſy quit-rent; thus the French ſettlers, our perfidious ſubjects, may be elbowed out. 3. The inconceivable decay of our trade and buſineſs: fiſhery and ſhip-building are the moſt conſiderable articles. Formerly from Marblehead, our principal cod-fiſhery-port, there were about 160 fiſhing ſchooners; at preſent, 1748, only about ſixty ſchooners: formerly there have been upon the ſtocks in Boſton 7000 ton of top ſail veſſels; at preſent, not much exceeding 2000 tons. 4. Some of our townſhips, and conſequently their proportion of taxes, have lately, by the determination of the king in council, been ſet off to the neighbouring governments of New-Hampſhire and Rhode-iſland. 5. The late ſudden and conſiderably enhanced pay of the three negatives of the legiſlature, notwithſtanding exchange, ſilver, and neceſſaries of life (cloathing growing cheaper) being nearly at the ſame price anno 1747 and 1748.

3. Our combination of debtors, who formerly were for poſtponing of paper-money, all of a ſudden, inconſiſtently with their proper character, *quidquid id eſt timeo*, are for ſinking all paper-currency in the ſpace of a year or two; we may without breach of charity, ſuſpect their hurrying the province into a ſtate of confuſion, that they may fiſh in troubled waters; perhaps as paper-currency arrived by de-

faction

faction endeavours to perſuade us, that one of our *invaluable* charter privileges, is, *A liberty to make paper-*

grees to a vaſt ſum, and great depreciation; it would be more natural to ſink it gradually in the ſpace of half a dozen, or half a ſcore of years; and by act of parliament (not by precarious inſtructions) no more paper-money to be emitted, a governor conſenting to any ſuch emiſſions to be rendered incapable, and muſcted. Notwithſtanding that I always was a profeſſed enemy to all paper, as being a baſe, fallacious, and fraudulent contrivance of a currency, I cannot avoid thinking, that this is the moſt ſalutary method.

4. The honeſt and honourable way of paying a bill, *is*, according to the face of the bill; that is, all bills with us of 6 *s.* in the face of the bills, ſhould be paid in a piece of eight; whereas, by the act 1748, a piece of eight ſhall be received in payments for 11*s.* 6*d.* new tenor; thus theſe bills in their own pernicious nature, from anno 1742 to 1748, have ſuffered a diſcount of about 10 *s.* in the pound. Mr. S—l—y, in a ſpeech or meſſage in relation to the firſt emiſſion of theſe new tenor bills, inſinuates, that he had contrived bills which could not depreciate; but notwithſtanding, theſe bills have greatly depreciated in paſſing through ſeveral hands; and as it is impoſſible to adjuſt the proportion of depreciation in each of theſe heads, it is unreaſonable that the laſt poſſeſſor ſhould have the allowance of the ſucceſſive depreciations: therefore the aſſembly in equity have allowed the poſſeſſor only the current value. But here the aſſembly ſeem to allow themſelves to be bankrupts at the rate of 10*s.* in the pound, from 1742 to 1748. Perhaps, if a piece of eight had been in the new projection enacted equal to 12 *s.* new tenor, which is 48 *s.* old tenor, the general price amongſt merchants; it would have been no injuſtice to the poſſeſſor, it would have prevented their being hoarded up, and the reimburſement money would have paid off about 6 *per cent.* more of our debts, that is, cancelled ſo much more of our iniquitous currency. *N. B.* Perhaps, the ſtating of a piece of eight (ſeven eighths of an ounce of ſilver) at 6 *s.* currency, and one ounce of ſilver at 6 *s.* 8 *d.* is out of proportion: the true proportion is 6 *s.* 10 *d.* two ſevenths.

5. In place of ſending over the reimburſement in foreign ſilver-coin, if the provincial treaſurer were empowered from home and here, to draw partial bills for the ſame upon the Britiſh treaſury, or where elſe it may be lodged; this would ſave commiſſions, inſurance, freight, and ſmall charges, to the value of about 12,000 *l.* ſterling upon the 183,000 *l.* reimburſement, ſufficient to diſcharge 120,000 *l.* old tenor, of our debts. I ſhall not ſay that private pecuniary views, but not œconomy are in the caſe.

Upon the ſuppoſition of this reimburſement money being remitted

money,

money, or public bills of credit, receivable in all dealings (ſpecialties excepted) as a legal tender.

by bills of exchange, conſulting the beſt advantage of the province; perhaps by appropriating one half of the reimburſement for that end, 910,000*l.* O. T. of our debt or bills would in the moſt expeditious manner be inſtantly ſunk; all merchants, ſhop-keepers, and others would gladly purchaſe with our paper ſuch good and punctual bills preferable to any other private bills of exchange: the other half of the reimburſement to be by the like bills of exchange purchaſed here by ſilver to introduce a ſilver currency, the *only proper commercial medium*; providentially in favour of this purpoſe, we have lately had imported a capture from the Spaniards of fifty-four cheſts of ſilver, which the owners would gladly have exchanged for ſuch bills. All merchants and others in New-England and the adjacent provinces who ſend pieces of eight home as returns, or to purchaſe freſh goods, would be fond of bringing their ſilver to purchaſe ſuch good bills free from all the charges of other remittances. Thus beſides a ſilver currency commencing, of 910,000*l.* old tenor value, we ſhall have a remaining paper currency of 1,495,000*l.* to be cancelled gradually by rates and other taxes, ſuppoſe in ten years, is about 150,000*l.* old tenor, or 37,500*l.* new tenor *per annum*; thus the two years 1748 and 1749, perhaps oppreſſively loaded, will be much eaſed, and the infatuated paper-currency men made eaſy by ſinking of it gradually; with the proviſo of an act of parliament prohibiting, *for ever* hereafter, any more public bills of credit to be emitted.

This remaining 1,495,000*l.* paper-currency, abſtracting from the 910,000*l.* ſilver, part of the reimburſement, is more than a ſufficient medium for trade and buſineſs, in a quick circulation, in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay. Let us recollect, that in the latter part of governor Belcher's adminiſtration, 1741, immediately preceding governor Shirley's acceſſion, this province in its full vigour and extent of trade, ſeemed to be ſufficiently ſupplied, by a ſum not exceeding 160,000*l.* a fund for taxes not aſſeſſed, for taxes aſſeſſed but not collected, and for arrears of loans; let us ſuppoſe a like ſum of 160,000*l.* from the neighbouring governments, obtained a credit of circulation with us (the four colonies of New-England hitherto as to currencies have been as one province) makes 320,000*l.* at that time ſilver was at 29*s.* per ounce, at this time, 1748, it is 58*s.* per ounce; therefore upon this foundation we muſt ſuppoſe 640,000*l.* old tenor value, the medium ſufficient or requiſite for our trade and buſineſs; whereas we have allowed 1,195,000*l.* old tenor value, being more than double that ſum, to remain for a paper currency.

3. Townſhips

3. By charter all vacant or not claimed lands were veſted in the collective body of the people or inhabitants; and their Repreſentatives in General Court aſſembled, with conſent of the Governor and Council, make grants of their provincial lands to a number of private perſons, to be incorporated, upon certain conditions, into townſhips: there are alſo ſome peculiar grants which, after ſome years, are by acts of aſſembly annexed to ſome neighbouring townſhip.

If, in granting theſe lands, they had been ſubjected to any eaſy quit-rent to the province, theſe lands would have ſettled compactly, and improved ſooner; whereas, at preſent, ſome proprietors of large tracts of lands do not ſettle or ſell, becauſe being at no charge of quit-rent, and not in the valuation of rates or taxes for the provincial charge of government; they chuſe to let them lie unimproved many years, for a market. That this might have been practicable, appears by lands in the townſhip of Hopkinton ſubjected to an annual quit-rent for the benefit of our provincial ſeminary, called Harvard-College; which, notwithſtanding of quit-rent, is well ſettled and improved; the Rev. Mr. Commiſſary Price is their preſent miſſionary miniſter, and is a conſiderable proprietor there under quit-rent.

The townſhips are generally granted in value of ſix miles ſquare (ſome old grants of townſhips are much larger) to be divided into ſixty-three equal lots, *viz.* One lot for the firſt ſettled miniſter as inheritance; one lot for the miniſtry as glebe-lands; one lot for the benefit of a ſchool; the other ſixty lots, to ſixty perſons.

A ſtranger may think it unaccountable, that in the beginning of governor Shirley's adminiſtration, anno 1741, the projected ſpeedy cancelling of about 130,000 *l.* old tenor bills by the taxes for 1741, ſhould be judged too oppreſſive for one year, and was therefore divided amongſt three ſubſequent years; whereas the 103,000 *l.* new tenor, or 412,000 *l.* old tenor, taxes of 1748 (although we have the reimburſement money to alleviate this grievous weight) towards the end of his adminiſtration, is not lightened.

or families, who ſhall, within five years from the grant, erect a dwelling-houſe of ſeven feet ſtud, and eighteen feet ſquare, with ſeven acres cleared and improved, fit for mowing or ploughing; to erect a houſe for public worſhip in five years, and maintain an orthodox miniſter. Every townſhip of fifty, or upwards, houſholders, to be conſtantly provided with a ſchool-maſter, to teach children and youth to read and write; penalty for neglect 20 *l. per annum*: as alſo if conſiſting of 100 or upwards houſholders, they are to maintain a grammar-ſchool; penalty 30 *l. per annum*, if conſiſting of 150 families; penalty 40 *l.* if conſiſting of 200 families; and higher penalties *pro rata*.

In each townſhip, by a general act of aſſembly, there are conſtituted certain town-officers to be elected at a town-meeting annually in March. I ſhall inſtance Boſton; for the year 1748 were choſen the following officers:

Town-Clerk	Hayward
Seven Select-Men	Ten Cullers of ſtaves
Town-Treaſurer	Ten Viewers of boards,
Twelve Overſeers of the poor	ſhingles, *&c.*
Seven Aſſeſſors	Four Hogreeves
Ten Firewards	Twelve Clerks of the market
Five Sealers of leather	Two Aſſay-Maſters
Six Fence-Viewers	Six Collectors of taxes
A Surveyor of hemp	Twelve Conſtables.
Informers of deer	

Any man rateable for 20 *l.* principal eſtate to the province-tax, poll not included, is qualified to vote in town-meetings, excepting in the choice of repreſentatives, which requires a qualification of 40 *s. per annum* freehold, or 40 *l.* ſterling perſonal eſtate.

Sometimes portions of adjoining townſhips are by acts of aſſembly incorporated into a pariſh or precinct, for the better conveniency of attending divine ſervice;

but in all other reſpects, excepting in miniſterial rates, they belong to their original townſhips.

The plantations and farms in the old townſhips near Boſton, are generally become ſmall, occaſioned by a provincial act of aſſembly, which divides the real, as well as the perſonal, eſtate of inteſtates, amongſt all the children or collaterals: our people are much bigotted to this province-law, and chooſe to die inteſtate. This humour is not without its advantages, *e. g.* where a farm thus becomes ſmall, the poſſeſſor cannot live by it, and is obliged to ſell to the proprietor of ſome adjoining farm, and move farther inland, where he can purchaſe waſte land in quantities at an eaſy rate, to the enlarging of our country improvements. Thus in the former townſhips, which now compoſe the county of Worceſter, about forty years ſince, there were not exceeding 200 families; whereas in the laſt valuation 1742, there were found in that county about 3200 taxable white male perſons; but our multiplied expeditions ſince that time, have diminiſhed them much.

The civil are officers annually choſen by a joint vote of the Board or Council, and Houſe of Repreſentatives, and with the conſent of the governor are appointed.

The Treaſurer or Receiver-General.

The General Impoſt-Office.

The General Commiſſary for ſoldiers, their proviſions and ſtores, and for Indian trade.

The Attorney-General.

Collectors of Exciſe, one for each county.

Public Notaries for the ports of

Boſton	Newbury	Caſco-Bay
Salem	Plymouth	York County.
Marblehead	Barnſtable	Duke's-County
Glouceſter	Kittery	Nantucket.

N. B. The Attorney-General is annually choſen; the Governor and Council pretend to have the ſole privilege of appointing him; the Houſe of Repreſentatives hi-

therto have not given up this point, but the perſon appointed by the Governor and Council is the acting officer.

Becauſe all acts of aſſembly are required to be ſent home for allowance or diſallowance; therefore ſome tranſactions formerly have paſſed by way of Order or Reſolve only.

A member of the Houſe of Repreſentatives is fined 20*s.* old tenor, for every day's abſence, without leave or good excuſe.

Every ſeſſion there is a committee appointed to prepare a liſt of the travel (twenty miles travel is the ſame with one's days attendance) and attendance of the members of the houſe for the ſeſſions.—Their wages are paid out of the general provincial ſupply or bills of public credit, emitted for the ordinary and extraordinary charges of the province for the year; the bills of this article are drawn in again not by a general provincial rate or tax, but by a peculiar rate impoſed upon the ſeveral towns who ſend repreſentatives.

The townſhips that have precepts ſent to them, but make no returns, are liable to be fined at the diſcretion of the Houſe; but are generally excuſed, and perhaps out of fifty delinquents (ſome are excuſed by law, as being under the number of eighty families) very few are fined. This article, though very ſmall, is one of the articles for calling in the public bills of credit from year to year.

Perhaps an aſſembly grant, as is the preſent practice, in the beginning of every year's adminiſtration of a Governor for his ſervices to be done during the next ſubſequent year, may be thus qualified; to be paid after twelve months, if the preſent Governor's life or adminiſtration continue ſo long, otherwiſe in proportion to the time of ſervice. We have a remarkable inſtance of this in the worthy Governor Burnet; ſome ſhort time before his death, there was a vote of 6000*l.* for the laſt year and current year's ſervice, which, for want of concurrence, did not take place; ſoon after the commencement

ment of the then current year, Governor Burnet died, and his heirs received only 3000*l.* old tenor, for all his ſervices, being for about thirteen months: thus the province honeſtly ſaved about 3000*l.*

The Executive Courts.

BY charter the General Aſſembly are allowed to erect judicatories, to hear and determine concerning pleas, whether real, perſonal, or mixt; and all manner of crimes capital or not capital.

In perſonal actions, where the matter in difference doth exceed the value of 300*l.* ſterling appeals are allowed to the king in Privy Council, providing ſuch appeal be made in fourteen days after judgment given; and that before ſuch appeal be allowed, ſecurity be given by the appellants in the value of the matter in difference, with coſts and damages, but execution not to be ſtaid.

See the preſent charter, pag. 375.

Our judicatories in civil actions are thus conſtituted: 1. All actions under 10*l.* old tenor, which may at preſent be about 20*s.* ſterling are at firſt inſtance cognizable by a [*k*] Juſtice of Peace. 2. From thence lies appeal to an inferior court, or country court of common pleas; this court ſeems to be of no great [*l*] conſequence, and generally ſerves, without much pleadings, only to tranſmit it to the ſuperior or provincial court, perhaps the moſt upright of any in our national plantations or

[*k*] It has hitherto been too much a practice to multiply the number of the Juſtices of the Peace: This, amongſt other inconveniencies (as an old country Juſtice well obſerved) "depreciates the former credit of a "Juſtice, as the multiplying of our public bills of credit depreciates our "currency." May not acts of aſſembly be made from time to time, to limit the number of Juſtices in each county, and their qualifications be under ſome regulation?

[*l*] The ſmallneſs of court-fees multiplies law-ſuits, and is a ſnare for poor people to become litigious.

colonies: all actions not exceeding the value as above, muſt originate in the inferior courts. 3. From the inferior court of common pleas, there is appeal to a ſuperior or provincial court in their circuits; this is alſo a court of *oyer* and *terminer* in criminal affairs. 4. From this court there is a review to the ſame court of Judges, but of another jury. 5. There lies a privilege of petitioning the General Aſſembly, as a court of error, upon proper allegations, to order a rehearing before the ſame ſuperior court: perhaps a court of delegates would have ſounded better.

The courts of general quarter-ſeſſions, and inferior court of common pleas, are held at the ſame place and time, and according to the laſt general appointment 1743, are as follow, per counties:

Suffolk	At Boſton. Firſt Tueſday of January, April, July, and October.
Eſſex	Salem. Second Tueſday of July; laſt Tueſday in December. Newbury. Laſt Tueſday in September. Ipſwich. Laſt Tueſday in March.
Middleſex	Cambridge. Third Tueſday in May. Charleſtown. Second Tueſday in December and March. Concord. Laſt Tueſday in Auguſt.
Hampſhire	Springfield. Third Tueſday in May; laſt Tueſday in Auguſt. Northampton. Second Tueſday in February and November.
Worceſter	Worceſter. Firſt Tueſday in November and February, Second Tueſday in May, Third Tueſday in Auguſt.
Plymouth	Plymouth. Firſt Tueſday in March, Third Tueſday in May, September, and December.
Barnſtaple	Barnſtaple. Laſt Tueſday in June, Third Tueſday in March, October, and January.

Briſtol

Briſtol	Briſtol. Second Tueſday in March, June, September, and December.
York	York. Firſt Tueſday of April, July, October, and January. Falmouth. Firſt Tueſday in October.
Duke's-County	Edgartown. Firſt Tueſday in March; laſt Tueſday in October.
Nantucket	Sherburne. Laſt Tueſday in March, firſt Tueſday in October.

The ſuperior courts of Judicature and Aſſizes.

Suffolk	Boſton. Third Tueſday in Auguſt and February.
Eſſex	Salem. Second Tueſday in November. Ipſwich. Second Tueſday in May.
Middleſex	Cambridge. Firſt Tueſday in Auguſt. Charleſtown. Laſt Tueſday in January.
Hampſhire	Springfield. Fourth Tueſday in September.
Worceſter	Worceſter. Third Tueſday in September.
Plymouth	Plymouth. Second Tueſday in July.
Barnſtaple and Duke's-County	Barnſtaple. Third Tueſday in July.
Briſtol	Briſtol. Fourth Wedneſday in October.
York	York. Third Wedneſday in June.

By act of aſſembly, occaſionally, but not ſtatedly, the times of the ſitting of theſe ſeveral courts are varied. And, in general, as theſe courts may from time to time be varied by acts of the provincial general aſſembly, the above is only a temporary account.

The Juries never were appointed by the Sheriffs of the counties; every townſhip of the county at a regularly called town-meeting, elected their quota for the county; but as ſome evil, deſigning men, upon particular occaſions, officiouſly attended theſe townſhip-meet-

ings, in order to obtain a packt or partial Jury; lately the Jurors are by lot, being partly by chance, partly by rotation. *N. B.* The privilege of Juries ſeems to give the people a negative, even in the executive part of the civil government.

In each county the Governor and Council appoint one High-Sheriff with a power of deputizing, and any number of Coroners.

The Judges of the ſeveral courts, appoint the Clerks of their ſeveral courts, but generally conform to the recommendation from the Governor. *N. B.* Judges ſhould be independent of, and in no reſpect under, the direction of a king or of his Governor.

The other civil courts; ſome are appointed immediately by charter; a court for probate of wills, and granting adminiſtrations, which is veſted in the Governor and Council; they appoint a ſubſtitute, called the Judge of Probate, with a Regiſter or Clerk in each county, from which there lies an appeal to the Ordinary, the Governor and Council. 2. In time of war, a Court-Martial by commiſſion from the Governor, with conſent of the Council, to exerciſe the Law-Martial upon any inhabitants of the province.—Some are by commiſſion from the court and boards in Great-Britain; 1. A court of Vice-Admiralty, ſee p. 483. 2. A juſticiary Court of Admiralty for trial of pirates, *&c.* ſee p. 484. All theſe have occaſionally been formerly mentioned.

Generally in all our colonies, particularly in New-England, people are much addicted to quirks in the law; a very ordinary country man in New-England is almoſt qualified for a country-attorney in England.

In each county, beſides the civil officers appointed by Governor and Council, and the military or militia officers appointed by the Governor as Captain-General, there is a County-Treaſurer and County-Regiſter, or Recorder of deeds or real conveyances; theſe are choſen by a joint written vote of the qualified voters in each town-ſhip of the county, and ſorted in the next ſubſequent quarter

ſeſſions

ſeſſions for the county. The County-Treaſurers yearly render and paſs their accounts with a committee of the General-Aſſembly.

Taxes and Valuations.

THE provincial taxes of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, conſiſt of three articles, Exciſe, Impoſt, and Rates.

1. Exciſe. By act of Aſſembly, after June 29, 1748, for the ſpace of three years (the exciſe [*l*] is farmed for three years) the following duties, old tenor, ſhall be paid, being double of the former exciſe.

Every gallon of brandy, rum, and other ſpirits diſtilled, 2 *s.*

Wine of all ſorts, 2 *s.*

Every hundred of lemons or oranges, 20 *s.*

Limes, 8 *s.*

The vender or retailer to ſwear to the account by him rendered to the farmer; 20 *per cent.* for leakage to be allowed duty free.—Penalty for retailing without licence 12 *l. toties quoties*; retailers are deemed ſuch as ſell ſmaller quantities than a quarter-caſk or twenty gallons; the taverners, innholders, and other retailers, are not to plead their licence for vending in any other houſe, beſides that wherein they dwell. Formerly the Collectors were choſen by the General Aſſembly; at preſent the Farmers are the Collectors.—Licences are from the quarter-ſeſſions of the county, by the recommendation of the ſelect men of the town-ſhip, where the taverner or retailer lives.—The Farmer is accountable to the Treaſurer once every year.

The exciſe for three ſucceſſive years from 1748, is doubled; this with the increaſe of our rioting and drunkenneſs, introduced partly by our idle military expeditions, has increaſed the revenue of impoſt upon liquors

[*l*] Boſton, with the reſt of the county of Suffolk's exciſe, is farmed for 10,000 *l.* old tenor, being about 1000 *l.* ſterling *per annum*.

imported,

imported, and excise upon home consumption, but much to the damage of private families, and the oeconomy of the country in general.

The impost and excise of 1710, 1711, 1712, did not exceed a sum of 7000 *l.* old tenor.

1715 were estimated at 7000 *l.* old tenor.

1726 impost 5200 *l.* Excise 3600 *l.*

1747 Excise, impost, and tonnage 17,616 *l.*

1748 33,480 *l.*

2. Impost the tonnage by act of Assembly, June 1748: for one year; salt, cotton-wool, provisions, the growth and produce of New-England; prize-goods condemned in any part of the province, and goods from Great-Britain, are exempted from impost.

The impost payable, is

Wines from the Western Islands per pipe	4 *l.* old tenor,
Madeira, and other sorts	5 *l.*
Rum per hogshead of 100 gallons	4 *l.*
Sugar	2 *s.*
Molasses	16 *d.*
Tobacco	2 *l.*
Logwood per ton	3 *s.*

All other goods 4 *d.* for every 20 *s.* value.

Foreign goods imported from other places, than that of their growth and produce, to pay double impost.

Upon re-shipping for exportation to be drawn back

per pipe of Western Islands wine	3 *l.*
Madeira and other sorts	3 *l.* 12 *s.*
per hogshead of rum	3 *l.*

For liquors allowed 12 *per cent.* for leakage, and decayed liquors, or where two thirds are leaked out, shall be accounted as outs free of duty—Stores may be allowed to the master and seamen, not exceeding 3 *per cent.* of the lading.

The general Impost-Officer or Receiver may appoint Deputies in the out-ports; the general Impost-Officer, his salary is 200 *l.* old tenor; and to each Deputy in the out-ports, not exceeding 40 *l.* old tenor *per annum*.

All

All forfeitures are one half to the province, and half to the informer; the informer's part to bear the charges of ſuit—The fee to the Impoſt-Officer, for every ſingle entry, is 2 *s.*—Maſters of veſſels to report their veſſels and cargoes within the ſpace of twenty-four hours.

All veſſels not belonging to Great-Britain, Penſylvania, Eaſt and Weſt Jerſeys, New-York, Connecticut, New-Hampſhire, and Rhode-iſland, or any part of a veſſel not belonging as above, ſhall pay every voyage a pound of good piſtol powder per ton, called tonnage.

The naval officer is not to give letpaſſes to any veſſel outward bound, 'till impoſt and tonnage is certified as paid.

3. Rates are taxes upon polls and eſtates; polls are all white men of 16 Æt. and upwards; eſtates are real, perſonal, and faculty, or income ariſing from their trade and buſineſs.

At the commencement of the new charter, the taxation was by—number of rates; a ſingle rate was 12 *d.* poll, and 1 *d.* upon 20 *s.* principal eſtate; ſix years income of eſtate real, perſonal, and faculty, is deemed as the principal. Anno 1692, to pay off Sir William Phipp's unſucceſsful Canada expedition, a tax of 10 *s.* poll, and one quarter value (is 5 *s.* in the pound) of one years income of eſtate, real, perſonal, and faculty, was computed to raiſe 30,000 *l.* [*m*]. At this time the poll is generally 3 *d.* upon every 1000 *l.* rate, and for every 12 *d.* poll, 1 *d.* rate.

[*m*] About twenty years after the New-England revolution, anno 1710, towards the charges of the expedition againſt Port-Royal, now Annapolis-Royal, the quotas of the four New-England colonies for every 1000 *l.* was in this proportion.

	l.	*s.*	*d.*	
Maſſachuſetts-Bay	638	7	9	
Connecticut	194	14	3	half-penny
Rhode-iſland	111	5	3	half-penny
New-Hampſhire	55	12	6	

At preſent, 1749, Connecticut much exceeds that proportion in men, and Rhode-iſland much exceeds that proportion in effects.

Aſſeſſors

Aſſeſſors are to eſtimate houſes and lands at ſix years income, as they are or may be let, Negro, Indian, and Mulatto ſlaves, proportionably as other perſonal eſtate; an ox of four years old and upwards at 8 *l.* old tenor; a cow of three years old and upwards at 6 *l.*; a horſe or mare of three years old and upwards at 8 *l.*; a ſwine of one year old and upwards at 32 *s.*; a ſheep or goat of one year old and upwards at 12 *s.*

As townſhips, in like manner as private perſons in proceſs of time, alter their circumſtances; for the more equal adjuſtment of their quotas of taxes, there is after a number of years (generally once in ſeven years) a luſtration or cenſus, called a valuation, made throughout the province; there is, anno 1749, a valuation on foot, laſt valuation was 1742; there were valuations 1734, 1728, &c. We ſhall here inſert the valuations of each county, and of ſome of the townſhips the higheſt and the loweſt valued, as a ſample of the whole; being their proportions in every 1000 *l.* rate.

	Before 1278	Since 1742,
Counties of Suffolk	287	268
Eſſex	198	196
Middleſex	171	138
Hampſhire	55	54
Plymouth	77	79
Briſtol	95	96
Barnſtaple	66	42
York	37	53
Duke's-County	11	6
Nantucket	13	6
Worceſter		60

	Before 1728,	Since 1742. An. 1734.	
Boſton	185	743	180
Salem	27	28	50
Ipſwich	26	28	27
Newberry	22	23	26
Marbleh.	20	20	19
Charleſt.	17	19	13
Dartm.	16	14	15
Hadley	5	5 & half	5
Stow	3	3	2 half
Bellingham		2	1
Townſhend			half

Worceſter, July 10, 1731, was taken out of the counties of Suffolk, Middleſex, and Hampſhire.

The Aſſeſſors may abate or multiply upon particular rates, ſo as make up the ſum ſet upon each town or diſtrict.

The exempted from polls and rates, are, the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, and their families; the Preſident, Fellows,

Fellows, and Students of Harvard-college; ſettled miniſters and grammar ſchool-maſters; and perſons by age, infirmities, and extreme poverty, to be deemed as invalids.

Taxes may be paid, not only in public bills, emitted, but in certain ſpecies [*n*] of goods, formerly called ſtock in the Treaſury; but as theſe goods are receivable in the Treaſury, at a value not exceeding half their market-price, it cannot be ſuppoſed, that theſe goods will be brought into the Treaſury: theſe goods are, coined ſilver and gold, merchantable hemp, merchantable iſle of Sable cod-fiſh, bar iron, bloomery iron, hollow iron ware, Indian corn, winter rye, winter wheat, barley, barrel pork, barrel beef, duck, long whale bone, merchantable cordage, train oil, bees wax, bayberry wax, tried tallow, peaſe, ſheeps wool, and tanned ſole-leather.

The ways and means are apparently very eaſy, but in conſequence ruinous, being only a manufacture of public bills of credit, without limitation of quantity, not incumbered with any intereſt, and not to be redeemed till after many years; that ſtrangers may have a diſtinct view of our depreciating œconomy, I ſhall annex a table of our preſent currency in bills, which is our only fund, as they ſtood Chriſtmas 1748. The lateral left-hand column, is the times when they were emitted; the top line is the periods at which they are redeemable.

[*n*] In the firſt years after the New-England revolution, at the firſt emiſſion of the fraudulent public bills of credit, as a currency; their tenor was—*This indented bill of* ***** *due from the Maſſachuſetts-Colony to the poſſeſſor ſhall be in value equal to money; and ſhall be accordingly accepted by the Treaſurer, and Receivers ſubordinate to him, in all public payments, and for any ſtock at any time in the Treaſury. Boſton in New-England, February the third,* 1690; *By order of the General Court.* At that time the ways and means to ſupply the annual charges of government was by ſo many ſingle rates (as in Germany by Roman months, and in Scotland by months cefs) whereof a certain proportion was receiveable at the Treaſury in money, and a certain proportion in produce and goods enumerated, and at a fixed price, which were called ſtock in the Treaſury to be ſold for provincial bills.

To

Emitted.		To be drawn in by Rates, to be cancelled.												
	£.	1748	1749	1750	1751	1752	1753	1754	1755	1756	1757	1758	1759	1760
1747 Feb.	200000	82800												
[a] April	200000	- - -	100000	100000										
[b] July	280000	- - -	- - -	- - -	135200	135200								
Auguſt	280000	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	140000	140000						
December	200000	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	100000	100000				
1746 March	80000	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	40000	40000				
[c] June	328000	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	80000	80000	80000	80000
July	100000	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	25000	25000	25000	25000
Auguſt	80000	- - -	40000	40000	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -						
[d] Septemb.	40000	20000												
November	80800	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	- - -	20200	202000	20200	20200
1747 [e] Feb.	32800	- - -												
[f] April	80000	39000												
June	32000	32000												
October	136000	136000												
1748 Feb.	100000	100000												
June	400000	- - -	40000											
	Total	409800	540000	140000	135200	135200	140000	140000	140000	140000	125000	125200	125200	125000

[a] Part of this was cancelled by the taxes of 1747.
[b] Of this 9600 *l.* for repreſentatives, was cancelled by the repreſentatives tax in the Year 1746.
[c] The 8000 *l.* for repreſentatives, was cancelled 1747. [d] This was cancelled 1747 in Part.
[e] This was cancelled 1747. [f] This in part was cancelled 1747. [g] Here is ſome ſmall error.

This

This table is reduced to old tenor, becauſe our current way of computing is by old tenor; the denominations of middle tenor and new tenor, are too whimſical and captious to take place. Thus the debt of the province, *exeunte* 1748 was 2,466,712 *l.* contracted in the ſpace of four years, by projecting whimſical expeditions (lucrative to the projectors, but pernicious to the province) from certain applications, not rejected at home by the miniſtry, becauſe the populace are pleaſed and amuſed with expeditions.

There muſt be a conſiderable addition to the taxes of every year, ſubſequent to 1748, for the annual charges of government.

The cancelling of bills each year is by four different funds; thus the ſum of 415,512*l.* bills of old tenor is brought in.

But exciſe, impoſt, and tonnage	£. 33,180
Fines of townſhips delinquent in repreſentatives	360
Polls and rates	364,000
Townſhips tax for repreſentatives of laſt year	17,672
Total	415,512

The town of Boſton paid of that year's tax £. 65,520

Our annual ſupplies or appropriations are in ſundry articles; thus of the 400,000 *l.* old tenor emiſſion anno 1748.

For garriſons, armed veſſels, forces upon the eaſtern and weſtern frontiers	£. 160,000
Warlike ſtores and commiſſaries diſburſments	136,000
Allowances and grants	72,000
Expended where no eſtabliſhment	12,000
Contingencies	2,000
Repreſentatives wages	18,000
Total	£. 400,000

Not

Not long ſince there were extra (immenſely chargeable) articles of expeditions to Cape-Breton, Canada, *&c.* [*o*].

In gratitude, we ought not to forget the compaſſionate goodneſs of the parliament of Great-Britain, the parent of all our colonies. The expences of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, in taking, repairing and ſecuring of Louiſbourg on Cape-Breton, till May 1746,

[*o*] To repreſent at one view the vaſt depreciated promiſcuous paper currency, or rather public debt of the colonies of New England, as it is at preſent.

Emitted by Maſſachuſetts-Bay	£. 2,466,712
Connecticut about	281,000
Rhode-iſland about	550,000
New-Hampſhire about	450,000

Thus the preſent depreciated (10 for 1 ſterling in round numbers) New-England paper currency is about 3,748,000 *l.*

The parliament reimburſements on account of the reduction of Louiſbourg, when received will cancel to Maſſachuſetts-Bay about

£.	1,836,490
Connecticut	280,000
Rhode-iſland	63,000
New-Hampſhire	163,000
£.	2,342,390

There will remain about 1,405,000 *l.* New-England currency; to this muſt be added about 5 *per cent.* deducted from the reimburſement money for charges of receiving and tranſmitting about 117,000 *l.* is nearly one million and a half remaining currency.

Connecticut (that colony is managed by men of wiſdom and probity) has not much more outſtanding public bills of credit, than their reimburſement grant from the parliament may redeem.

New-Hampſhire has about 450,000 *l.* old tenor value; their reimburſement, may ſink in round numbers, about 150,000 *l.* there will remain about 300,000 *l.* About one third of the whole was lent to the inhabitants upon mortgages to the government at a long period; the remainder, excepting ſome ſmall ſums for the charges of government, was iſſued towards the late abortive Canada expedition, and has no other fund for drawing it in again, beſides ſome expectations of being reimburſed the Canada expedition charges.

Rhode-iſland may have about 550,000 *l.* old tenor, whereof 75,000 *l.* will be ſunk by bills of exchange drawn on their agent, on account of the Canada expedition; 60,000 *l.* will be ſunk by the Cape-Breton reimburſement; there will remain about 415,000 *l.* lent upon mortgages (of long periods, reaching ſo far as anno 1765) to the government.

when

when his majeſty's regular troops arrived there to defend it, amounted to 261,700 *l.* new tenor paper New-England currency, which, according to the exchange of that time, amounted to 183,649 *l.* ſterling; but when the accounts were ſent home, our currency was ſo much depreciated, that the 261,700 *l.* new tenor, was in value equal only to 104,680 *l.* ſterling; making a difference of 78,969 *l.* ſterling. This produced a queſtion at court and in parliament; whether the ſaid province ought to be paid a ſterling ſum, equal in value, to the ſum in bills of credit, expended upon the expedition, according to the value of theſe bills at the time the expence was contracted, or only a ſterling ſum, equal to the value of theſe bills in their preſent depreciated ſtate? In goodneſs they determined according to the favourable ſide of the queſtion, and allowed us the full ſum of 183,649 *l.* ſterling.

Number of inhabitants, produce, manufactures, trade, and miſcellanies.

INSTEAD of imaginary eſtimates, I conceived it might be of better credence to adduce looſe records and public accounts of things.

Before I proceed, I muſt make this general remark; that our forwardneſs towards expeditions may have occaſioned the court of Great-Britain to deem us ſelf-ſufficient; from 1739 to 1749, in the Spaniſh and French war, Great-Britain ſent us only the Succeſs, a ſixth rate man of war for a few months; whereas in times of the profoundeſt peace we had a conſtant ſtationed man of war from Great-Britain. Our provincial armed veſſels at a great charge, beſides their ſerving as tenders to the Britiſh ſquadrons in the affair of Cape-Breton, their only ſervice ſeems to have been the eaſy capture of a French privateer ſloop captain De la Brotz, no man killed on either ſide; the fault was not in the New-England men (they are always forward in ſervice) but in the management perhaps.

Anno 1656, we had three regiments militia, Suffolk, Middleſex, and Eſſex; anno 1671, three more regiments were formed, *viz.* Norfolk or Piſcataqua, Yorkſhire or province of Main, and Hampſhire upon Connecticut river; Piſcataqua regiment is now in the province of New-Hampſhire, the other two continue undivided large regiments (perhaps Yorkſhire regiment has lately been divided) anno 1748, Hampſhire regiment, colonel Stoddard, was about 2600; York regiment, Sir William Pepperell, 2755; theſe, with Boſton regiment colonel Wendell of 2500 men, are large enough to be ſubdivided into battallions.

Anno 1706, the militia of Maſſachuſetts-Bay in their addreſs to the queen call themſelves twelve regiments.

Anno 1711, Admiral Walker upon the Canada expedition, demanded of the government of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, a ſupply of ſailors; the governor and council repreſented, that their ordinary garriſons, forces upon the inland frontiers, and men detached for the Canada expedition, were upwards of 2000 men, which are more than one fifth of the fencible men of the province.

In the ſpring anno 1722, the ſmall-pox being over, by order of the Select-men, Mr. Salter made a perluſtration of the town of Boſton; he reported 10,670 ſouls; this ſmall-pox time 5980 perſons were ſeized with this diſtemper whereof 844 died, and about the ſame number fled from Boſton: thus we may eſtimate about 12,000 people in Boſton at the arrival of the ſmall-pox. After twenty years anno 1742, by a new valuation, there were reported 16,382 ſouls in Boſton, add to theſe ſome men lately gone upon the Cuba expedition, ſeveral ſons and apprentices deſignedly overlooked to eaſe the quota of Boſton's provincial tax, we may reckon about 18,000 inhabitants at that time; thus in the ſpace of twenty years, from 1722 to 1742, Boſton inhabitants had increaſed one third, or 6000. Taking this in another view; anno 1720, a year of middling health, and immediately preceding the ſmall-pox, the burials in

Boſton were nearly 345; by philoſophical and political arithmeticians it is eſtimated that in a healthful country (ſuch is Boſton) [*p*] in thirty-five dies *per annum* is nearly 12,000 inhabitants; anno 1742, a year of middling health in Boſton, were buried about 515; by thirty five, makes nearly 18,000 inhabitants. In the valuation of 1742, of thoſe in Boſton were 1200 widows, 1000 of them poor; in the alms-houſe 111, in the work-houſe thirty-ſix, Negroes 1514; dwelling-houſes 1719, ware-houſes 166, horſes 418, cows 141.

1722, Governor Shute returned to England; in his report to the Board of Trade and Plantations, he ſays, that in the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, where 94,000 people, whereof 15,000 were in the training liſt (the alarm liſt males from 16 Æt. and upwards, is about one third more than the training liſt, becauſe many are excuſed from impreſſes and quarterly trainings) diſpoſed into ſixteen regiments of foot, and fifteen troops of horſe. About 25,000 ton of ſhipping in the two collections of Boſton and Salem at that time.

In the valuation of anno 1728, for Boſton were about 3000 rateable polls, males from 16 Æt. and upwards, which is nearly the ſame with the alarm liſt: For inſtance, anno 1735 the rateable polls in Boſton were 3637; anno 1733 the alarm liſt was about 3500, which allowing for two years increaſes is nearly the ſame. *N. B.* about this time, captain Watſon, one of the Aſſeſſors, in curioſity examined the books; he found the church of England people charged not exceeding one tenth of the rates or taxes in the town of Boſton.

1735, The provincial valuation was 35,427 polls (white men of 16 ætat. and upwards) 2600 Negroes, 27,420 horſe kind of three years old and upwards, 52,000 neat cattle of three to four years old and upwards, 130,000 ſheep of one year old and upwards.

1742, In the valuation were 41,000 white men's polls.

[*p*] From the eſtimates of Drs. Halley and Newman, of thirty-five births, eighteen are boys, ſeventeen are girls.

1749, A valuation is on foot, but not finiſhed; here will be conſiderable deductions. 1. Trade much decayed, and taxes inſupportably high has obliged many to leave the province. 2. Men annexed to New-Hampſhire and Rhode-iſland. 3. Deaths occaſioned by the Cape-Breton expedition. 4. Loſt in the Minas of Nova Scotia French maſſacre. 5. Killed and captivated upon our frontiers by the French and Indians.

1747, The houſe of repreſentatives, in a meſſage to the governor, ſay, that 3000 is about one twelfth of our fencible men.

As by charter the general aſſembly of the province is impowered to create judicatories for trying all caſes civil or criminal, capital or not capital; accordingly by act of aſſembly in the beginning of the French war, Auguſt 1744; the commanders in chief, may at any time call a Court martial, which, for mutiny or deſertion, may inflict death.

Although in ſucceſſion of years, things vary much; we ſhall for the information of the curious of after times, inſert the preſent œconomy of our officers civil, land military, and ſea military. *N. B.* Exchange being ten to eleven, New-England old tenor currency for one ſterling.

Allowances old tenor to civil officers for 1748.

	l.
To the Governor	9,600
Secretary with extras	800
Five Judges of ſuperior court	4000
Treaſurer with extras	1400
Commiſſary with extras	1600
Preſident of College	1400
Profeſſor of Divinity	300
Clerk to Repreſentatives	480
Door-keeper	320
Two Chaplains	80

The

The land military eſtabliſhment for Cape-Breton, 1745.

	l.	*s.*
To the Lieutenant-General per month	60	
Colonel	48	
Lieutenant-Colonel	40	
Major	34	
Captain of forty to fifty men	18	
Lieutenant	12	
Second Lieutenant or Enſign	8	
Adjutant-General	18	
Adjutant to a regiment	12	
Serjeant	6	8
Corporal	5	12
Clerk	6	8
Quarter-Maſter-General	16	
Surgeon-General	28	
Surgeon of a regiment	25	
Surgeon's mate	18	
Drum Major	6	8
Common drum	5	12
Chaplain	24	
Armourer of a regiment	10	
Commiſſary of ditto	12	
Three thouſand centinels, each	5	

The artillery eſtabliſhment for Cape-Breton.

	l.
To the Firſt Captain per month	36
Engineer	34
Second Captain	20
Firſt Lieutenant	16
Three Lieutenants, each	8
Firſt Bombardier	34
Three ditto, each	8
Four aſſiſtants, each	8
Thirty Gunners, each	8

The artificers for the train were twelve houſe-carpenters, and four ſhip-carpenters, commanded by captain Barnard.

The General was allowed 2000 *l.* for extraordinary contingent ſervices, to be accounted for.

The encouragement to private men for inliſting was 4 *l.* bounty, one month's advance wages, a blanket, 20 *s.* ſubſiſtence, which was afterwards advanced to 30 *s.* per week; their firelocks to be deducted out of their wages.

By ſollicitation from hence, orders came from home to raiſe two regiments of 1000 men, regular troops, each for Louiſbourg garriſon; but by a good providence in favour of the country, they never could be rendered effective, and probably upon Louiſbourg's being evacuated, theſe men may return to their labour, for the benefit of this country.

To the ſea military eſtabliſhment, 1745.

	l.	*s.*
To the Captain per month	22	
Lieutenant	14	8
Maſter	12	8
Surgeon	12	8
Chaplain	12	8
Gunner	10	
Boatſwain	10	
Mate	10	
Boatſwain's Mate	9	
Steward	9	
Cook	9	
Gunner's Mate	9	
Pilot	11	4
Carpenter	11	
Cooper	9	
Armourer	9	
Coxſwain	9	
Quarter-Maſter	9	
Midſhipmen	10	10
Common ſailors	8	

N. B. Anno 1745, in the time of the Cape-Breton expedition, exchange with London was ſeven and a half for one;

one; afterwards, as our currency depreciated, ſailors could not be got at theſe nominal wages, and a common ſailor's wages was ſet at 10 *l.* per month.—In the winter months, when our armed veſſels are laid up, the Captain, Gunner, Boatſwain, and three common ſailors only are kept.—Our inland frontier ſummer forces (in time of war) are reduced to one third of their complement in winter.

Anno 1743, the year preceding the French and Indian war, our military charges were very ſmall.

	Men
Caſtle William in Boſton bay	40
Richmond fort on Quenebec river	10
Brunſwick fort on Amareſcogin river	6
Pemaquid fort eaſt of Sagadadock	6
St. George's fort near Penobſcot	13
Saco river fort	13
Fort Dummer on Connecticut river	16
Province ſtore ſloop	10
	114

The parties in Maſſachuſetts-Bay at preſent, are not the Loyal and Jacobite, the governor and country, Whig and Tory, or any religious ſectary denominations, but the Debtors and the Creditors. The Debtor ſide has had the aſcendant ever ſince anno 1741, to the almoſt utter ruin of the country.

Our late bad œconomy is very notorious; for inſtance, anno 1725, Caſtle William in Boſton harbour was victualled at 7 *s.* per man, per week; anno 1748, victualling was 38 *s.* per week, becauſe of depreciations. By expeditions, we loſt many of our labouring young men; this made labour ſo dear, that in produce or manufacture any country can underſel us at a market.

For many years, in the land-ſervice, the allowance of proviſions to each man was; garriſon allowance

one pound of bread per day, half a pint of peaſe per day, two pounds of pork for three days, and one gallon of molaſſes for forty-two days; marching allowances per day, one pound of bread, one pound of pork, and one gill of rum. A centinel or private ſoldier's pay per month was, anno 1742, 30*s.* old tenor; anno 1744, at the breaking out of the French and Indian war, it was advanced to 5*l.* anno 1747, 6*l.* 5*s.* anno 1748, 8*l.* A Captain's wages were double, and the other officers in proportion.

The encouragement for privateers commiſſioned by the governor, was 10*l.* old tenor per head, for each enemy killed or taken priſoner; and captures made by the provincial armed veſſels were to be diſtributed, to the Captain two eighths, to the Lieutenant and Maſter one eighth, to the warrant officers one eighth, to the petty officers one eighth, to the common ſailors three eighths; aboard the provincial privateers, the victualling allowance was to each man per week, ſeven pounds of bread, ſeven gallons of beer, three pounds of beef, four pounds of pork, one quart of peaſe, and one point of Indian corn.

The Captains are to make up their muſter rolls; and the Commiſſaries their accounts before the men are paid off.

The alacrity of the New-England militia may be obſerved, by the alarm from d'Anville's Breſt French ſquadron, end of September 1746; in a very ſhort time 6400 men from the country, well armed, appeared in Boſton common, ſome of them (*e. g.* from Brookfield travelled ſeventy miles in two days, each with a pack (in which was proviſion for fourteen days) of about a buſhel corn weight: Connecticut was to have ſent us 6000 men, being one half of their training liſt; theſe men were paid by the province for their travel and attendance.

The ſection concerning the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, is ſwelled ſo much, that ſome heads in common to all New-England, ſhall be deferred to the following New-England ſection, and at preſent only mention

Timber

Timber of many ſorts. Many kinds of pine trees: whereof the principal are the white pine, a beautiful tree of the beſt uſe for maſting, and joiners work; and the pitch pine, the mother of turpentine, tar, pitch, oil of turpentine and reſin. Various kinds of oaks; the principal for ſhip-building, and other conſtructions, are the white oak, the beſt, the ſwamp oak, and the black oak.

[*q*] Grain of various ſorts: ſcarce any of them are natives or ſpontaneous. Indian corn is the principal; rye thrives tolerably; as do likewiſe phaſeoli or kidney beans of ſeveral ſorts, called Indian or French beans; all the varieties of Engliſh grain are ſown, but do not grow kindly. Apples are very natural to the ſoil and climate; flax grows well; and lately the people from the north of Ireland have improved the fabrick of linen and all other ſpinning work. The ſoil ſeems not ſtrong enough for hemp; many trials have been made.

Fiſhery, ſee p. 294: whaling, I mean fiſh oil and whale bone, have at preſent [*r*] failed us much, and our cod-fiſhing; fiſhing ſchooners are not half ſo many as a few years ſince; anno 1748 only fifty-five fiſhing ſchooners at Marblehead.

Cape-Anne	20
Salem	8
Ipſwich	6

Thoſe ſchooners of about fifty ton, fiſh in deep water (the deeper the water, the larger and firmer are the cod)

[*q*] Our continent ſouthern colonies are peculiarly adapted for grain, tobacco (in South-Carolina they are making trials for indigo, cotton, and ſilk) and deer ſkins. Our northern continent-colonies produce kindly paſturage, cyder, fiſhery, furs, naval ſtores, and other timber.

[*r*] Within theſe few years, our cod-fiſhery, whaling, and ſhip-building have failed much; and by peculation and depopulation, we were like to have been carried into ruin; but it is to be hoped we may have better times. At preſent our trade is not half ſo much, and our taxes from thirty to forty times more, than they were a few years ago.

ſeven

ſeven hands to each ſchooner, *communibus annis*, they make 600 quintals per ſchooner; generally five fares a year; two fares are to the banks of the Iſland of Sable, the other three fares are to Banquero, and to the other banks along the Cape-Sable ſhore. The merchantable dry cod are carried to the markets of Spain, Portugal, and Italy; the refuſe cod are ſhipped off for the Weſt-India iſlands to feed the Negro ſlaves. Concerning the ſmall fiſh, ſee p. 303. A ſturgeon fiſhery in the ſeveral branches of Sagadahock, ſome years ſince, was encouraged by a ſociety of fiſhmongers in London, but from the miſmanagement of the undertakers, eſpecially as to proper vinegar, it turned to no account, and was neglected ever ſince Mr. Dummer's Indian war.

Our provincial ſtores in the truck-houſes for Indian trade has always been very ſmall; anno 1746, when the Indian trade ceaſed becauſe of the war, the Commiſſary for that trade reported, that he was accountable to the province for a balance of 13,324 *l.* 6 *s.* 4 *d.* old tenor, in his hands. In New-England, beaver, other furs, and deer ſkins, are become ſo inconſiderable, they are ſcarce to be reckoned an article in our trade; ſee p. 176.

To give a general view of the navigation of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, we may obſerve, that in this province are two collections or cuſtom-houſes, Boſton and Salem. At Boſton cuſtom-houſe, from their quarterly accounts, Chriſtmas 1747 to Chriſtmas 1748, foreign veſſels cleared out 540, entered in 430; about ten years ago nearly the ſame number: from the quarterly accounts of Boſton diſtrict naval-office, on foreign voyages, Michaelmas 1747 to Michaelmas 1478, cleared out 491 veſſels, *viz.*

Ships	51	Sloops	249
Snows	44	Schooners	93
Brigs	54		
			491

Excluſive of fiſhing and coaſting veſſels of the provinces and colonies of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, New-Hampſhire,

ſhire, Connecticut, and Rhode-iſland. This cuſtom-houſe returns *communibus annis*, 200 *l.* ſterling for Greenwich hoſpital.

Salem collection includes the ports of Salem, Marblehead, Cape-Anne, Ipſwich, and Newbury. *N. B.* By a miſtake p. 456. Newbury was ſaid to be a branch of the collection of New-Hampſhire. From the cuſtom-houſe quarterly accounts of Salem, from Michaelmas 1747 to Michaelmas 1748, cleared out veſſels upon foreign voyages 131, entered in ninety-ſix; *viz.*

Cleared out,	Ships	4	Entered in,	Ships	1
	Snows	12		Snows	11
	Brigs	21		Brigs	11
	Sloops	31		Sloops	18
	Schooners	63		Schooners	55
		131			96

In which were ſhipped off to Europe 32,000 quintals of dry cod-fiſh, to the Weſt-India iſlands 3070 hogſheads (at ſix to ſeven quintals refuſe cod-fiſh per hogſhead) for Negro proviſion. New-England ſhips off no pickled cod-fiſh.

Mr. Blanchandin, in anno 1721, of the cuſtom-houſe diſtrict of Salem, ſays, That in the courſe of ſeveral years preceding, *communibus annis*, he cleared out about eighty veſſels upon foreign voyages *per annum*.

Ship-building is one of the greateſt articles of our trade and manufacture: it employs and maintains above thirty ſeveral denominations of tradeſmen and artificers; but as in all other articles, ſo in this more particularly for a few late years, this country has the ſymptons of a galloping (a vulgar expreſſion) conſumption, not ſo deſperate but by the adminiſtration of a ſkilful phyſician, it may recover an athletic ſtate of health; *ſublata cauſa tollitur effectus*. I ſhall illuſtrate the gradual decay of ſhip-building, by the ſhip-building in Boſton, meaning top-ſail veſſels.

Anno

Anno 1738 on the ſtocks 41 veſſels of 6324 tons.
1743 30
1746 20
1749 15 2450

As to the decay of our cod-fiſhery, I ſhall only mention, that anno 1716, upon my firſt arrival in New-England, by the books of the two Cuſtom-houſe diſtricts of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, were exported 120,384 quintals; anno 1748, exported about 53,000 quintals.

Rum is a conſiderable article in our manufactures. It is diſtilled from molaſſes imported from the Weſt-India iſlands; it has killed more Indians than the wars and their ſickneſſes; it does not ſpare white people, eſpecially when made into flip, which is rum mixed with a foul ſmall beer, and the coarſeſt of Muſcovado ſugars; it is vended to all our continent colonies to great advantage.

Hats manufactured and exported to all our colonies, are a conſiderable article.

Iron is a conſiderable article in our manufactures; it conſiſts of theſe general branches: 1. [*s*] Smelting-furnaces, reducing the ore into pigs; having coal enough and appearances of rock ore. In Attleborough were erected at a great charge three furnaces, but the ore proving bad and ſcarce, this projection miſcarried as to pigs: they were of uſe in caſting of ſmall cannon for ſhips of letters of marque, and in caſting cannon-balls and bombs towards the reduction of Louiſbourg. 2. Refineries, which manufacture pigs imported from New-York, Penſylvania and Maryland furnaces, into bar-iron. 3. Bloomeries, which from [*t*] bog or ſwamp ore, without any furnace, only by a forge hearth, reduce it into a

[*s*] 120 buſhels of charcoal are ſufficient to ſmelt rock ore into one ton of pigs; the complement of men for a furnace is eight or nine, beſides cutters of the wood, coalers, carters, and other common labourers.

[*t*] Bog or ſwamp-ore lies from half a foot to two feet deep; in about twenty years from digging, it grows or gathers fit for another digging; if it lies longer it turns ruſty, and does not yield well: three tons of ſwamp ore yield about one ton of hollow ware.

bloom

bloom, or ſemiliquidated lump to be beat into bars, but much inferior to thoſe from the pigs or refineries. 4. Swamp [*u*] ore furnaces; from that ore ſmelted, they caſt hollow ware, which we can afford cheaper than from England or Holland.

Oil of turpentine diſtilled from the New-England turpentine, which yields the moſt and beſt oil, and from Carolina turpentine; as alſo reſin or its reſiduum; we defer to a digreſſion concerning naval ſtores in the New-Hampſhire ſection.

Miſcellanies. The light-houſe at the entrance of Boſton harbour was erected anno 1715; coſt 2385 *l.* 17 *s.* 8 *d.* currency. Light-houſe money was 1 *d.* in, and 1 *d.* out, per ton. Anno 1742, it was enacted at 2 *d.* old tenor in, and as much out, per ton, in foreign voyages. Coaſters from Canſo in Nova Scotia to North-Carolina, 4 *s.* per voyage.

In caſtle William, of the harbour of Boſton, are 104 cannon, beſides mortars; whereof twenty cannon of 42 lb. ball, and two mortars of thirteen inches ſhell arrived anno 1744, with all ſtores, excepting gun-powder, at the charge of the ordnance.

1711, Oct. 2. In Boſton, the provincial court-houſe, and ſenior congregational meeting-houſe, with many other good houſes, were burnt down; 1747, Dec. 9, the provincial court-houſe was burnt; moſt of the records in the ſecretary's office were conſumed; the county records of land conveyances were ſaved.

There is a public grainery in Boſton, for ſupplying poor families with ſmall parcels of grain and meal, at 10 *per cent.* advance, for charges and waſte; this grainery is ſufficient for 10 to 12,000 buſhels of grain at a time.

[*u*] Colonel Dunbar, anno 1731, informs the Board of Trade and Plantations, that in New-England were ſix furnaces, meaning hollow ware furnaces and nineteen forges, meaning bloomeries, not refineries; at that time we had no pig-furnaces, nor refineries of pigs.

In

In New-England the people are generally Congregationaliſts. Many of the congregational churches have laid aſide public relations of their converting experiences, which formerly was required previous to the admiſſion of their infant progeny to baptiſm, and of themſelves to the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper; giving ſatisfaction to the miniſter, of their faith and good life, is deemed ſufficient. In Maſſachuſetts-Bay are 250 congregational churches; in Connecticut about 120; in New-Hampſhire about thirty; in Rhode-iſland only ſix or ſeven, being generally Anabaptiſts, Quakers, and of ſome other ſectaries.

The ſeveral religious ſocieties in the town of Boſton, anno 1749, are three churches of England, one North of Ireland Preſbyterians, nine Congregationaliſts, one French Huguenots, who by length of time have incorporated into the ſeveral Engliſh congregations, and at preſent are no ſeparate body, and have lately ſold their church-building to a congregation of Mr. Whitfield's diſciples; two Anabaptiſts, *viz.* one original, and one ſeparatiſt, one Quaker-meeting very ſmall, Whitfield's ſeparatiſt, and a ſeparatiſt of ſeparatiſts.

The ability and numbers in the ſeveral religious ſocieties in Boſton, may be gathered from a Sunday's contribution for charity to the poor of the town much diſtreſſed by want of fire-wood in the hard winter, February, 1740-1, *viz.*

	l.	*s.*	*d.*		*l.*	*s.*	*d.*
Church of England: Dr. Cutler	72	14	2	Mr. Welſteed	58	0	0
Church of England: Mr. Price	134	10	0	Mr. Hooper	143	0	0
Church of England: Mr. Davenport	133	3	3	Mr. Foxcroft	95	0	0
				French church	14	11	3
Dr. Colman	164	10	0	Anabaptiſt	14	2	0
Dr. Sewall	105	0	0	Iriſh meeting	27	5	0
Mr. Webb	105	0	0	Mr. Checkley	72	12	0
Mr. Gee	71	10	5	Mr. Byles	40	2	0

Harvard

Harvard-College [*w*] *in* Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

ANNO 1636, Winthrop governor, Dudley deputy-governor, and Bellingham treaſurer; the general aſſembly granted 400 *l.* towards a collegiate ſchool, but afterwards called a college: this was not then applied; it received the addition of 779 *l.* 17 *s.* 2 *d.* a donation bequeathed 1638 by Mr. Harvard, miniſter of Charles-town; the name of the college perpetuates his memory; it is ſituated in a healthful ſoil (not above 1 *per cent.* of the ſcholars die *per annum*) formerly a diſtrict of New-town, and conſtituted a townſhip by the name of Cambridge. 1640, The income of the ferry between Boſton and Charleſtown was granted to the college; it is now lett at 600 *l.* New-England currency, or 60 *l.* ſterling *per annum*; this ferry is about three miles from Cambridge.

Anno 1642, the general aſſembly appointed Overſeers of this college, *viz.* the governor, deputy-governor, the council called Magiſtrates, and the ordained miniſters of the ſix adjoining towns of Cambridge, Water-town, Charleſtown, Boſton, Rockſbury, and Dorcheſter.

Their charter bears date, May 31, 1650; the corporation to conſiſt of a preſident, five fellows, and a treaſurer or burſer, to elect for vacancies, and to make by-laws; the Overſeers have a negative.

The college-building conſiſts of a court built on three ſides, the front being open to the fields; the building on the firſt ſide was by a contribution, 1672, through the whole colony of 1895 *l.* 2 *s.* 9 *d.* whereof from Boſ-

[*w*] In the continent of North-America, we have four colleges, whereof two are by charters from home; that of Virginia is dated anno 1692, that for the New-Jerſeys is dated October 22, 1746: the other two are by provincial or colony charters; Harvard or Cambridge college of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and Yale college of Connecticut. They do not aſſume the names of univerſities or ſeminaries of univerſal learning; perhaps the firſt deſign of the college in Maſſachuſetts-Bay, was as a ſeminary for a ſucceſſion of able and learned goſpel-miniſters.

ton

ton about 800 *l.* it was called by the former name Harvard-College; the building on the bottom ſide was erected anno 1699, at the charge of lieutenant-governor Stoughton, and is called Stoughton-College, conſiſting of ſixteen chambers, garret-chambers included; the third ſide was built anno 1720, at the charge of the province, and is called Maſſachuſetts-Hall, conſiſting of thirty-two chambers. Beſides this court, there is a houſe for the preſident at ſome diſtance from the court, and at a ſmall diſtance behind the Harvard ſide of the court is a neat chapel, the gift of Mrs. Holden of London, widow of Mr. Holden, a late director of the bank of England.

The reſident inſtructors of youth, are a Preſident or Superviſor, four Tutors or Philoſophy Profeſſors, the Holliſian Profeſſor of Divinity, the Holliſian Profeſſor of Natural and Experimental Philoſophy, and a Profeſſor of Hebrew. The income or revenue of the college is [*x*] not ſufficient to defray its charge. Some of that body have an additional province allowance; the ingenious and reverend Mr. Holyoke, preſident beſides the rents of the building called Maſſachuſetts-Hall, was voted, 1748, out of the province treaſury 1400 *l.* old tenor; the Rev. Edw. Wiggleſworth, D. D. Holliſian Profeſſor of Divinity, beſides the 80 *l.* New-England currency, the Hollis donation, lately to prevent depreciations, the bonds at intereſt, which are a fund for theſe Hollis ſalaries, are reduced to ſpecialties, and thereby become more in the preſent nominal currency; he has, anno 1748, an additional allowance of 300 *l.* old tenor. The Holliſian Profeſſor of Natural and Experimental Philoſophy, is upon the ſame footing and ſalary with the Holliſian Profeſſor of Divinity; though this branch is the moſt uſeful of all ſciences; the preſent incumbent, the in-

[*x*] The college never had any remarkable misfortune; the Rev. Mr. Cotton Mather writes, that once, providentially, ſhort public prayers (I do not know, that hereby he intended to recommend ſhort prayers) by diſmiſſing the ſtudents in good time, diſcovered the fire, and prevented a conflagration of the college-buildings.

genious and induſtrious (obſervations and experimental trials are induſtry) Mr. Winthrop has no additional provincial allowance or encouragement. The Profeſſor of the Hebrew language is Judah Monis, formerly a Jew, and publickly chriſtianized, or baptized, in the college-hall, May 27, 1722: he has petitioned for a provincial allowance, from time to time, but without effect. The four tutors commonly called Profeſſors of philoſophy, have each from the income of the college 300 to 400 *l.* old tenor *per annum*, with ſome ſmall perquiſites; there are about ten Holliſian poor ſcholars at about 10 *l.* old tenor *per annum*.

Several well-diſpoſed perſons have, from time to time, forwarded the affair of the college; beſides the grants from the provincial general court, and the donations of Mr. Hollis and Hopkins.

This ſeminary at firſt conſiſted of a Preceptor, two Uſhers, and a treaſurer; Mr. Eaton was the firſt preceptor; he was a man of learning, too ſevere in his diſcipline; the general aſſembly diſmiſſed him, and Mr. Dunſter [*y*] was appointed preſident anno 1640, being an Anabaptiſt (a ſect at that time hated in New-England) he was adviſed to reſign 1654. Mr. Chauncy, miniſter of Scituate, formerly a Church of England miniſter, ſucceeded him, and died 1671, Æt. 82. He was ſucceeded by Hoar, a doctor of Phyſic from the univerſity of Cambridge in Old-England; in his time the ſcholars [*z*] deſerted the college, and he reſigned 1675. He was ſucceeded by Urian Oakes, a man of good accompliſhments, and miniſter of Cambridge; he died 1681. Was ſucceeded by Mr. Rogers of Ipſwich, phyſician; he died 1684. Was ſucceeded by Mr. Increaſe Mather; he was

[*y*] The New-England Pſalms in preſent uſe, are a juſt ſtrict verſion, but not an elegant looſe paraphraſe; they were compoſed by Mr. Elliot of Rockſbury, Mr. Mather of Dorcheſter, and Mr. Weld; printed anno 1640, and afterwards corrected by Mr. Dunſter and Mr. Lyons, tutor to Mr. Mildmay.

[*z*] Anno 1672, there were no Scholars to commence.

Preſident or Rector [*a*] for about twenty years; Mr. Mather, upon the arrival of governor Andros, went a voluntier, agent to the court of England; he left the college under the direction of two tutors, Leverett and Brattle; he came over to New-England 1692, in company with the new charter; and for his good ſervices at home had the degree of a Doctor in divinity conferred upon him; the firſt and ſole inſtance of a Doctor's degree conferred in Harvard-college: he was [*b*] teacher of a congregation in Boſton; his acquaintance with Mr. Hollis in London, followed by the ſollicitations of Benjamin Colman, D. D. a miniſter in Boſton, procured the generous Holliſian donations. Dr. Mather was ſucceeded by Mr. Willard, a miniſter in Boſton. This was ſucceeded by Mr. Leverett, a judge in the ſuperior court, and afterwards a worthy and moſt deſerving preſident of this college; his ſalary from the province was 150 *l. per annum*; he died 1724; was ſucceeded by Mr. Wadſworth, a miniſter of Boſton; his too eaſy diſcipline was faulted; he died 1737; and the preſidentſhip continued vacant ſome time. The preſent preſident is the learned and ingenious Mr. Holyoke, a miniſter from Marblehead.

Proteſtants of any denomination may have their children educated and graduated here. At admiſſion, the ſcholars ſubſcribe the college laws: the manner of this college is, after four years reſidence, they are admitted to a Batchelor's degree in theſe words, *Admitto te ad primum gradum in artibus, pro more academiarum in Anglia*: after three years more (reſidence not required) they are admitted to the degree of Maſter of Arts, in theſe words, *Admitto te ad ſecundum gradum in artibus, pro more acade-*

[*a*] When Mr. Dudley was Preſident of New England, for diſtinction the Preſident of the college was called Rector.

[*b*] There have been paſtors in the north Church or Congregation of Boſton, a regular ſucceſſion of father, ſon, and grandſon; the grandſon, upon ſome party differences in the old Congregation, has formed a new diſtinct unanimous Church.

miarum

miarum in Anglia. They generally become miniſters; the proverbial ſaying amongſt ſome ſtrangers, that all the men of note in New-England have been preachers, is not juſt. The public act of commencement is on the firſt Wedneſday of July annually: they began to confer academical degrees anno 1642; that year nine ſcholars commenced batchelors; the greateſt commencement was, anno 1725, of forty-five batchelors, in the adminiſtration of Mr. Dummer; the college lately is upon the decline, as are the ſervile arts and ſciences; anno 1746, only twelve ſtudents commenced batchelors.

Beſides provincial grants and the legacy of Mr. Harvard already mentioned, there have been many liberal contributions towards the revenue of the college, its edifices, library, experimental philoſophy, inſtruments, *&c.* which the nature of the Summary does not require to be minutely related; I ſhall only mention the donations of Hopkins, and Hollis, and Holden; Samuel Sewall, John Leverett, Thomas Fitch, and Daniel Oliver Eſqrs; a committee of the Truſtees appointed in his Majeſty's Court of Chancery, to purchaſe houſes or lands to perpetuate the charity of Edward Hopkins, Eſq; purchaſed province lands now called Hopkinton townſhip of 22,500 acres, including a few peculiar farms formerly granted. At a meeting April 19, 1716, theſe Truſtees agreed, that 12,500 acres of the lands ſhould be laid out in lots and leaſed at 3 *d.* New-England currency *per annum* quit-rent per acre for ninety-nine years; the leaſes to commence March 25, 1723, and upon the expiration of ninety-nine years, the leaſes to be renewed from time to time, ſo as never to exceed 9 *d.* per acre, and the Truſtees to ſave the tenors or tenants from paying any provincial tax, for three quarters of their lands; but by continued depreciations of that pernicious paper-currency of New-England, the value of theſe lands was in a progreſſive ſinking to the great damage of the college. To check this the general aſſembly aſcertained thoſe rents to a ſterling value; 1741, by act of aſſembly the quit-rents

were converted into 1 *d.* ſterling per acre *per annum*, until anno 18 3, and 3 *d.* ſterling after, the termors paying all the provincial taxes of theſe lands; and to enable theſe tenants to pay thoſe province taxes, the common lands (being about 8000 acres) to be divided amongſt them clear of any quit-rent.

Mr. Thomas Hollis of London merchant, made a donation of about 300 *l. per annum* New-England currency, as encouragement for a Profeſſor of Divinity, for a Profeſſor of Natural and Experimental Philoſophy, and exhibitions for the education of poor ſcholars, with ſome allowance to the college-treaſurer for managing this charity; anno 1721, he had the thanks of the general aſſembly for his donations. He made an addition of many valuable books to the library; gave an *apparatus* for philoſophical experiments to the value of 115 *l.* ſterling; he ſent Hebrew and Greek types; he was a benefactor to the Houſatonic Indians.

Samuel Holden, Eſq; late Director of the bank of England, beſtowed charities in New-England to the value of 4847 *l.* New-England currency. His widow and daughters built a chapel in Harvard-College, with other benefactions to the value of 5585 *l.* New-England currency.

Some account of the Wars, or rather of the Incurſions and Depredations of the Canada French and their Indians, againſt the governments or people of New-England *and* Nova Scotia, *from the Revolution, anno* 1688 *to anno* 1749.

AS no writer of obſervation and leiſure, has hitherto given us a diſtinct account of theſe affairs, we offer this ſhort hiſtory, referring the reader to ſome previous accounts mentioned in this Summary; ſee p. 160. We ſhall begin with ſome general obſervations.

The

The Indians, in their tranſactions and conferences, run much into ſimilitudes and allegories [*c*].

[*d*] The general characters of our Indians, are to decline open engagements; buſh-fighting, or ſkulking, is their diſcipline; they are brave when engaged; great fortitude in enduring tortures and death; love of liberty; affection to their relations; implacably revengeful [*e*]; inhumanly cruel; in all their feſtivals and other dances, they relate what ſucceſſes they have had, and what damages they have received in their late wars.

Every nation or tribe is an abſolute republic or ſtrict democracy; their chief families have a kind of ſucceſſion as to property, but in no other reſpects; wiſe conduct, courage, and perſonal ſtrength, are the chief recommendations for war captains [*f*], *&c.*

When the Indians break out, they ſeldom make any onſet in large bodies; but, after a general rendezvous, they divide into ſmall ſkulking parties: the whole art of war amongſt the Indians, is the managing of ſmall parties, and, like carnivorous beaſts of the foreſt (the French, with good propriety, term them, *Les hommes des bois)* commit rapines and moſt cruel murders, without regard to age or ſex [*g*].

[*h*] As formerly amongſt the Iſraelites, ſo it is at pre-

[*c*] Their language is not copious, becauſe their knowledge of things not extenſive; they ſeem to avoid labial letters.

[*d*] See p. 19.

[*e*] The Indians are the moſt implacably vindictive people upon earth; they revenge the death of a relation, or any great affront, when occaſion preſents, let the diſtance of time or place be never ſo remote.

[*f*] The delegates of the Indian nations, after agreeing upon articles with neighbouring powers, are obliged to go home and perſuade their young men to concur.

[*g*] The Barbarians ground all their wars upon perſonal or national enmity; whereas the ruptures in Europe depend more upon intereſt than upon pure revenge. To ſet the Indians at variance one nation againſt another nation, is of no advantage to the colonies from Europe; it prevents their beaver-hunting, and other branches of the Indian trade.

[*h*] As man is a gregarious animal, the American Indians aſſociate

ſent with our Indians [*i*]; he is a mighty prince, or Sagamore, who leads 100 or 200 fighting men. The Indians reckon it a bloody battle, where they loſe ten or twelve men. Formerly, their inſtruments of war were arrows and darts; at preſent our neighbouring Indians uſe fire arms, that is, muſkets and fuzils, a hatchet, and long ſharp-pointed knives [*k*]. Lately in winter, in war times, they do not travel, leſt the Engliſh ſcouts ſhould trace them. All the incurſions and rapines of the Indians are concerted, encouraged, and conducted by our perfidious neighbours the French of Canada [*l*].

The moſt ſucceſsful manner of managing a war againſt the Canada French and their Indians, is by ſcouting [*m*]

in herds or hords, but not in a progreſſive wandering manner, as the Tartars at this time, and as the Iſraelites of old in the wilderneſſes of Arabia.

[*i*] See p. 157 and 184.

[*k*] The far Indians uſe only arrows and clubs.

[*l*] The French with their Indians may plunder, but cannot keep poſſeſſion of any of our North-America continent colonies; our colonies join, and are well peopled. The French Canada and Cape-Breton colonies have not this advantage.

Narrow rivers are the beſt canoe travelling, becauſe in lakes, or wide rivers, any conſiderable degree of wind obliges them to go aſhore.

[*m*] Mr. Dummer, a wiſe patriot, by continued ſcouts and rangers to the Indian head quarters, their clambanks, ponds which the Indians frequented for fiſhing, fowling, and hunting, and their travelling carrying-places, kept the Indians at a diſtance, and by harraſſing of them, brought them to a happy peace. The Houſe of Repreſentatives have frequently voted, that our inland frontiers are beſt ſecured by ſcouting parties in time of war. 1744, They voted that the ſcouts on the frontiers have not been employed in ranging according to their votes---ſmall ſcattering garriſons, without making excurſions into the Indian country, avail nothing: this war we had upwards of fifty ſuch at a time.

The Houſe of Repreſentatives at times find fault with the management in our laſt war. 1747, Feb. 6, it being repreſented to the Houſe of Repreſentatives, that many of the ſoldiers raiſed for the Canada expedition, as well as thoſe raiſed for the immediate ſervice of the province, labour under divers grievances proper for the conſideration of this houſe; therefore a committee is appointed: when the levies for the Cape-Breton expedition were daily coming to Boſton,

and

and ranging parties farther than our frontiers: thus they are kept at a diſtance from our ſettlements; they are intimidated, and ſubjected to the inconveniencies of ſickneſs, hunger-ſtarved, and cold-ſtarved by continued harraſſing.

This laſt French and Indian war, we have practiſed, the cantoning of our frontier forces in many ſmall parcels, and very little ſcouting: but luckily the Indians were much reduced by former wars, and by their intemperance in the uſe of rum; and of the ſmall remainder ſome were called off by the Canada French to Crown-Point, and ſome to Nova Scotia. The only conſiderable appearance of the French and Indians upon our frontiers this war, was in ſummer. 1746, June 19, a large party appeared againſt No. 4 [*n*], upon Connecticut river; captain Stevens, with fifty men (doubtleſs private property conduced to animate them) made a gallant and ſucceſsful defence againſt a large party of the enemy. Aug. 19, a party of the enemy, commanded by M. Rigaud de Vaudreuïl, appeared before fort Maſſachuſetts; the garriſon ſurrendered priſoners to be relieved the firſt opportunity; the enemy plundered the fort, and burnt it. This fort was by the aſſembly deſigned and allowed to be the beſt ſupplied with forces and ſtores, becauſe it flanks our frontier, being in its N. W. corner, and the

the repreſentatives by meſſage deſire that the forces may be ſent on board the tranſports, and other forces prevented from coming in, leſt they ſhould be infected with the ſmall-pox.---1746, June 13, voted that a committee be appointed, to enquire into the complaints of the ſoldiers in the eaſtern and weſtern frontiers, with reſpect to the ſupply of proviſions.---And a committee to prevent children under 16 Æt. from inliſting.---1746, July 16, the Houſe in a meſſage repreſent, that by inducing of the men impreſſed for the frontiers into other military ſervice, there was a great diſtreſs upon the people, as requiring further impreſſes; this may diſcourage future houſes from ſhewing their zeal in like manner as this houſe has done.

[*n*] Phineas Stephens and others, having made good improvements in No 4, a little above the great falls of Connecticut river in the province of New-Hampſhire; to maintain their ſettlements, built a fort which was afterwards garriſoned by the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay.

neareſt to Crown-Point French fort; in Maſſachuſetts fort were only three women, five children, twenty-two men, whereof only eight were in health; a ſerjeant was the commanding officer; they were ſhort of ammunition, had only remaining three or four pounds of powder and as much lead. The deſign of a barrier againſt the Canada French and Indians, perhaps would have better been anſwered by four ſtrong places well fitted, *viz.* one on Quenebec river, a little above Richmond fort; another high up Nawichawanock, or Salmon falls river; a third at the [*o*] crotch, or fork of Merrimack river; and the fourth at No. 4, on Connecticut river: theſe forts to ſerve as places of arms for rendezvous, and as magazines for proviſions and other ſtores; 200 effective men to be allowed to each of them (may be reinforced upon occaſion) not [*p*] impreſſed men, excepting for occaſional reinforcements, but voluntiers in good pay, with generous ſcalp and captive premiums; one half of the men alternately to be abroad in the wilderneſs at a conſiderable advanced diſtance from the barrier, ranging and ſcouting; the other half to remain in garriſon. In this ſituation offenſive and defenſive, no ſkulking parties would venture to attempt our ſettlements, and our outplantations or farms would uninterruptedly continue under cultivation for the general good of the province, as well as for the private intereſt of the proprietors.

Beſides the ordinary forts of George's, Pemaquid, Richmond, Saco, and fort Dummer, there were additional new forts or block-houſes in the weſtern parts, fort Maſſachuſetts, Pelham, Shirley, Coleraine, Fall-town, Dinſdale, Northfield, Deerfield, Road-town, New-Salem, Wincheſter, Lower Aſhuelot, Upper Aſhuelot, No. 4, Pequioag, Naſhawog, Naraganſet, No. 2, Browns, Leominſter,

[*o*] Here we ſuppoſe Maſſachuſetts-Bay and New-Hampſhire acting in concert.

[*p*] Impreſſed men cannot be long detained from their families and buſineſs, conſequently muſt be frequently relieved by a rotation of raw men, not accuſtomed to this duty.

Lunenburg,

Lunenburg, Townſhend, Groton, New-Ipſwich, Salem, Canada, Souhegan Weſt, New-Hopkinton, Great Meadows, Contacook, Rumford, Suncook; in the eaſtern parts were Philips Town, Berwick, Kittery, York, Wells, Arundel, Biddeford, Scarborough, Falmouth, Sacarippee, Naraganſet No. 7, or Gorham's, New-Marblehead, North Yarmouth, Topſom, Wiſhcaſſet or Unkſechuſet, Rices of Charlemont, George Town or Arrowſick, Wiſcaſſet, Sheepſcot, Damaraſcotti, and Eaſt George's; being in all fifty-ſix, generally inſufficient cantonments; whereof fifteen are in another province.

In the inland frontiers many of the out farm houſes have jets in their corners, with loop holes for ſmall arms, and may be called caſernes.

For the ſeveral tribes of the New-England or Abnaqui Indians [*q*]. In the late wars with the Engliſh, by cold and hunger, by ſickneſs, and by immoderate uſe of ſpirits, theſe Indians decreaſe faſt. It is true, that in the late wars with the Indians, we loſt more people than the Indians; becauſe we had more people to loſe, and becauſe the Indians know better where to find us, than we know where to find them.

The variety of enſigns or ſignatures of the Indians of North-America, are the Tortoiſe, Bear, and Wolf.

We have given ſome account [*r*] of the New-England Indian wars or incurſions down to the Revolution, and from thence we now proceed. King William's Revolution in England was November, 1688; in New-England the Revolution happened in April, 1689: from that time to anno 1749, in the ſpace of ſixty years, we have had four Indian wars.

1. In the adminiſtration of governor Phipps and lieutenant-governor Stoughton, from 1688 to January 7, 1698-9.

2. Under governor Dudley, from Auguſt 10, 1703 to July 17, 1713.

[*q*] Pag. 183. [*r*] Pag. 189, &c.

3. Under

3. Under lieutenant-governor Dummer, from July 25, 1722 to December 15, 1725.

4. Under governor Shirley, from November 1744 to 1749.

We ſhall take no notice of the Spaniſh war, which was proclaimed in London, October 1739, and in Boſton of New-England April 1740, becauſe it did not in the leaſt affect our inland frontier, nor our ſea coaſt; the expedition againſt the Spaniſh Weſt-India ſettlements, commonly called the Cuba expedition, ordered from home, was a very great diſadvantage to our young colonies of North-America; the American regiment, divided into four battallions, conſiſting of about 3600 men, whereof ſcarce any returned, depopulated our plantations very much; of the 500 men ſent from Maſſachuſetts-Bay, not exceeding fifty returned. The New-England men compoſed the third battallion, excepting the two Rhode-iſland companies that were incorporated into the firſt battallion in place of two North-Carolina companies incorporated in the third battallion. The ſeveral colonies were at the charge of levy money, of proviſions, and of tranſports for their reſpective quotas; they were paid off or diſmiſſed Octob. 24, 1742, and allowed to keep their cloathing and firelocks. The 500 men from Maſſachuſetts-Bay for the Cuba expedition coſt us about 37,500 *l.* old tenor, which at that time was equal to 7000 *l.* ſterling.

1. Phipps and Stoughton's Indian war. Anno 1688, a general war began to be hatched in Europe; and the eaſtern Abnaquie Indians, by inſtigations of the Canada French, upon pretence of the Engliſh encroaching upon their lands and cheating them in trade, became uneaſy, and began an open rupture by depredations at North Yarmouth and Sheepſcot, when governor Andros was in his other government of New-York; captives were made on both ſides; Andros upon his return from New-York returned the Indian priſoners, without receiving

from the Indians the Engliſh which they had captivated. In the ſpring 1689, at Quochecho in New-Hampſhire, a large party of Indians killed major Waldron, and about twenty people more; they carried away about as many captives. The preceding winter, governor Andros, with 1000 men, marched to the eaſtern parts, and built ſmall forts at Pemaquid, Sheepſcot, and Pejepſcot. Nov. 1689, our army went into winter quarters, and left garriſons in Welis, York, Berwick, and Quochecho.

Anno 1690, Maſſachuſetts-Bay ſent 160 men to Albany in New-York government for their protection againſt the Canada French and Indians.

Anno 1692, Sir William **Phipps**, with 450 men marches to the eaſtward, and built a good fort at Pemaquid eaſt of Quenebec river; in Auguſt 1696, at Pemaquid, the French landed a few men to join the Indians; captain Chub, who had ſucceeded captain Church in the command of the fort, with ninety-five double armed, baſely ſurrendered; the French demoliſhed the fort; in this fort were fourteen cannon mounted, whereof ſix were eighteen pounders.

Anno 1693, June 12, arrived at Boſton Sir Francis Wheeler's ſquadron, fitted out to diſtreſs the French colonies in America; he made ſome vain attempts upon Martinico and Guadaloupe. Purſuant to inſtructions Sir Francis propoſes to the governor and council, the attempting of Quebec in Canada, to ſail by the beginning of July with a recruit of 4000 men, and four months proviſions. This could not be complied with upon ſo ſhort notice, the ſquadron imported a malignant, ill conditioned fever, which deſtroyed many of our people, and ſailing from Boſton Auguſt 3, attempted Placentia of Newfoundland in vain; arrived in England October 13, with hands ſcarce ſufficient to bring the ſhips home. How inhumanly do ſovereignties play away their men!

The Canada French not capable to ſupply the Indians with proviſions and ammunition, occaſioned a ſubmiſſion of the Penobſcot, Quenebec, Amareſcogin, and Saco Indians,

dians, by a treaty at Pemaquid, Auguſt 12, 1693; the articles were, 1. To abandon the French intereſt. 2. To deliver all captives. 3. A free trade. In ſome ſhort time Canada received from France conſiderable ſupplies, and the Canada French perſuaded the Indians to break out again July 18, 1694, by killing and captivating many of our people upon the frontiers; and afterwards many ſcuffles of no conſequence.

Anno 1697, a ſquadron from France was deſigned to make a deſcent upon New-England, but were diſperſed in a ſtorm.

Soon after the French peace of Ryſwick 1697, our eaſtern Indians ſubmitted Jan. 7, 1698-9.

2. Dudley's Indian war. About ſeven weeks after an inſidious congreſs at Caſco, with the Penobſcot, Noridgwoag, Ameraſconti, Pigwocket, and Penacook Indians, Auguſt 10, 1703, M. Bobaſſier, with about 500 French and Indians in ſeveral diviſions, by ſurprize invaded a frontier of about forty miles extent from Caſco to Wells and York, and made a moſt barbarous havock (a French miſſionary maſſacre) ſparing neither age nor ſex; about 200 men, women, and children were murdered. (The aſſembly voted 40 *l.* premium for each Indian ſcalp or captive; in the former war the premium was 12 *l.*) This maſſacre was ſoon after the congreſs with the Indian delegates in June 20, 1703; the Indians then made great profeſſions of friendſhip; they received our preſents, trading places and prices of commodities were agreed upon. All this war, the five nations called the New-York Indians ſtand neuter; and by this ſtratagem the Dutch of Yew-York, by means of theſe Indians, carried on an advantageous trade with the French of Canada.

Anno 1703-4, Feb. 29, the French and Indians, about 250, commanded by M. Arteil, made a moſt barbarous inhuman incurſion upon Deerfield; they killed about ſixty perſons; captivated about 100, with Mr. Williams

their miniſter; of the captives they killed at times about twenty-one when unfit for travel.

Anno 1704, June, Caleb Lyman, at Cowaſſuck on Connecticut river, with one Engliſhman and five Mohegan Indians, killed eight enemy Indians out of nine; our aſſembly gave them a reward of 31 *l.* Major Church, with 550 voluntiers, viſits Penobſcot, Mount Deſert, Peſamaquady, and Minas of Nova Scotia, but made no attempt upon Port-Royal; he brought away many priſoners. M. Boocore, with two miſſionaries and 700 French and Indians, deſigned an incurſion upon New-England, but from differences amongſt themſelves they diſperſed; ſome of them conſorted and did damage at Lancaſter, Groton, Ameſbury, Haver-hill, Exeter, Oyſter-river, Dover, *&c.* In the winter, colonel Hilton, with 270 men, viſits Noridgwoag, but found no Indians. In the winter ſeaſons the Indians do not ſo much damage as formerly; the Engliſh having got into the uſe of raquettes or ſnow-ſhoes. A French privateer ſhallop was caſt away upon Plymouth ſhore; a ſtoreſhip for Canada was taken by an Engliſh Virginia fleet. The French from Placentia do damage, 1704 and 1705, in ſeveral Engliſh harbours in Newfoundland [*s*]. Captain Crapoa, in a French privateer, carries eight of our fiſhing-veſſels to Port-Royal of Nova Scotia.

Anno 1706, the Indians do damage at Oyſter-river, in April. In July, 270 French and Indians made incurſions at Dunſtable, Ameſbury, Kingſton, Chelmſford, Exeter, Groton, Reading, and Sudbury. Captain Rous, with a flag of truce, was ſent to Port-Royal of Nova Scotia to negotiate priſoners; his management was faulted [*t*]. Mr. Shelden was ſent to Canada twice to redeem captives. Colonel Hilton, with 220 men, ranges the eaſtern frontiers, and killed many Indians. About this time the premiums for Indian ſcalps and

[*s*] See p. 290. [*t*] See p. 307.

captives

captives were advanced by act of aſſembly, *viz.* per piece to impreſſed men 10 *l.* to voluntiers in pay 20 *l.* to voluntiers ſerving without pay 50 *l.* with the benefit of the captives and plunder.

Anno 1707-8, March 13, from Boſton ſailed colonel Church, with two New-England regiments, upon an expedition againſt Port-Royal, Subercaſſe governor; he returned *re infecta* [*u*].

Anno 1708, in the ſpring, a body of 800 French and Indians was formed, with deſign to invade the inland frontiers of New-England, but differing amongſt themſelves they ſeparated; 150 of them concerted and made an incurſion upon Haver-hill, killed the miniſter Mr. Rolfe and many others. Colonel Hilton, with 170 men, viſits Amaraſconti and Pigwocket.

Anno 1709, in April and June, Deerfield was harraſſed by 180 French and Indians commanded by M. Revel, ſon-in-law to M. Arteil. Colonel Nicholſon and captain Vetch, at the court of Great-Britain, propoſe a conqueſt of Canada by ſea and land forces [*w*]: this in appearance or ſemblance was encouraged by the court, and inſtructions were ſent to the ſeveral provinces to furniſh certain quotas, to be cloathed, armed, and paid at a Britiſh charge; but by political management at court, after a conſiderable expence, this was dropped, and an expedition againſt Port-Royal of Nova Scotia was directed for the following year [*x*].

Anno 1711, near Exeter, the Indians kill ſeveral people; colonel Hilton and others were killed, and ſome captivated: in Chelmsford major Tyng and ſome others were killed; and weſtward, ſome were killed at Marlborough, Brookfield, Simſbury, and Waterbury. In winter, colonel Walton ranges the Clambank ſhores eaſtward. The abortive ſcheme for reducing Quebec and Placentia, conſequently all Canada and Newfoundland, by an expedition under general Hill and admiral Walker [*y*]. In April, the Indians do damage eaſtward.

[*u*] See p. 308. [*w*] Ibid. [*x*] Ibid. [*y*] See p. 311.

We

We loſt twenty fiſhing veſſels on the Cape-Sable ſhore, by the negligence of our Guarda la Coſtas. Captain Carver takes a French privateer from Placentia of forty-five men. Upon the frontier of Virginia, the French and their Indians murder many inhabitants.

Upon advice of a ſuſpenſion of arms between Great-Britain and France in Europe, the Indians applied for an accommodation by ſubmiſſion; accordingly at Portſmouth of New-Hampſhire, July 11, 1713, the Indian delegates had a congreſs with the commiſſioners of the New-England colonies; the baſis of the ſubmiſſion was the treaty at Penobſcot, Aug. 11, 1693, and that any difference between a Briton and Indian, ſhall be iſſued in a Britiſh court of judicature. Theſe Indians were called of the rivers of St. John's, Penobſcot, Quenebec, Amereſcogin, Saco, and Merrimack; Mauxis was their chief.

3. Governor Shute and lieutenant-governor Dummer's Indian war [z]. The Canada miſſionaries, 1717, perſuaded the Indians, with threatenings, to claim ſome lands ſettled by the Engliſh; this was compromiſed at Arrowſick in Auguſt. Anno 1719, the Indians were moved by the Canada French to renew the ſame claims, but a ſmall ſcout of ſixty men kept them in awe. Anno 1720, the Indians were adviſed by the French to be more inſolent, by killing cattle, and threatening the lives of the inhabitants; colonel Walton, with 200 men, brought them to ſubmiſſion, and received four Indian hoſtages for their future good behaviour. The Canada French continuing uneaſy becauſe of our enlarged ſettlements; anno 1721, M. Croizer from Canada, M. St. Caſteen from Penobſcot, Rolle, and De la Chaſſe French miſſionaries, with about 300 Indians, make a general appearance at Arrowſick, an iſland of Sagadahock, threatening, that if the Engliſh did not remove from the claimed Indian lands in three weeks, they would kill the people, burn

[z] See ſome anticipating accounts, p. 199 and 317.

the

the houſes, and deſtroy their cattle; accordingly at Merry-meeting bay of Quenebec river, June 13, 1722, the Indians made a beginning, and captivated Love, Hamilton, Hanſard, Treſcot, and Edgar. July 5, 1722, in Boſton theſe Indians were proclaimed enemies and rebels. Captain Herman, with a ſcout, killed ſeveral Indians upon Quenebec river. A body of Indians, at Arrowſick, kill ſome people, burnt ſixty dwelling-houſes, and deſtroyed fifty head of cattle; they in vain attempted Richmond fort upon Quenebec river, and St. George's fort near Penobſcot; they ſeized an Engliſh ſloop at Peſamaquady; [*a*] in vain attempted Annapolis of Nova Scotia; they ſurprized ſixteen of our fiſhing veſſels near Canſo [*b*]. Lovel, with his ſcouting party of voluntiers, was of great ſervice, but at laſt unfortunate. The great havock of Indians by a large ſcouting party made at Noridgwoag [*c*]. At Noridgwoag a ſcouting party, ſome time before this, ſeized ſome letters from the Governor-General of Canada to miſſionary Ralle, exhorting all the French miſſionaries, notwithſtanding the profound peace between Great-Britain and France, to incite the Indians to act vigorouſly againſt the Engliſh. The Indians at times did ſome ſmall damages upon our frontiers; they inveſted fort St. George near Penobſcot, thirty days without ſucceſs.

Anno 1723, Aug. 21, arrived in Boſton ſixty-three Indians of the Six New-York nations, with a ſham propoſal of alliance againſt our Eaſtern Indians; their real project was only to receive preſents; they returned home without ſtipulating any ſuccours.

Anno 1723, Nov. 17, arrived in Boſton a meſſage from the general of Canada, by capt. Le Ronde Denie and lieut. De Ramſay de troupes marines. 1725, In January, col. Thaxter and Dudley from Maſſachuſetts-Bay, and Mr. Atkinſon from New-Hampſhire, ſet out with a meſſage to expoſtulate with the French govern-

[*a*] See p. 317. [*b*] Ibid. [*c*] See p. 199.

ment

ment of Canada, concerning their inciting and aſſiſting our rebellious Indians.

The Indians much harraſſed by our frequent ſcouts to Penobſcot, Noridgwoag, White Hills, *&c.* and by our rangers viſiting their carrying-places, clam-banks, fiſhing, fowling, and hunting grounds; ſubmitted to our own terms, [*d*] Boſton, Dec. 25, 1725; which was afterwards ratified at Caſco, Aug. 5, 1726. By this Indian war, theſe Indians were ſo much reduced, that, in the late French and Indian war from 1744 to 1749, we ſuffered very little upon our frontiers. All the ſupplies from 1720 to 1725 incluſive, did not exceed 242,000 *l.* whereof 10,000 *l.* old tenor *per annum* defrayed the ordinary charges of government, a notorious inſtance of honeſty, frugality and good management. The forces were allowed per week, 10 *s.* pay, and 6 *s.* proviſion.

4. Governor Shirley's French and Indian war. The war againſt France was proclaimed in Boſton, June 2, 1744; and to guard againſt the French and Indian incurſions, 500 men were impreſſed; whereof 300 for the eaſtern frontier, *viz.* 50 from each of the militia regiments of Pepperell, Gerriſh, Berry, Plaiſted, Saltonſtal, and Phipps; and 200 men for the weſtern frontier, *viz.* fifty from each of the regiments of Chandler, Ward, Willard and Stoddard; twenty-five men from each regiment of Wendell at Boſton, and Gouge, for reinforcing the ordinary ſtanding garriſons, *viz.* George's fort to forty men, Pemaquid to twenty-four, Richmond to twenty-five, Brunſwick to twelve, Saco to twenty men; no detachments were made from the militia of the old colony of Plymouth. Ninety-ſix barrels of gunpowder ſent to the ſeveral townſhips, to be ſold to the inhabitants at prime coſt, including charges.

In ſummer 1744, upon the breaking out of the French war, the Preſident colonel Maſcarene, and council of

[*d*] See p. 200.

Nova Scotia, repreſent the weak ſtate of the garriſon of Annapolis, and ill condition of its fortifications; the aſſembly of the province of Maſſachuſetts-Bay, generouſly ſent them a reinforcement of 200 men in four companies, allowing 25 *l.* levy-money per man (the men to find their own arms) and three months proviſion; their pay and further victualling was from Great-Britain; they continued about eighteen months in pay, and were of good ſervice againſt M. Lutre and Duvivier's attempts upon Annapolis [*e*].

The Cape-Sable, and St. John's Indians of Nova-Scotia, having in ſummer, under M. Lutre, made an attempt upon Annapolis; they were proclaimed rebels and enemies at Boſton, November 1744, from three miles eaſt of Paſamaquady river; and 400 *l.* old tenor granted a premium for each ſcalped or captivated Indian. When it was found that the Penobſcot and Noridgwoag Indians had joined them, the declaration of war was extended to theſe, Auguſt 23, 1745; theſe Indians having burnt a fort at St. George's, ſome houſes, and killed many cattle.

This war, ſo far as it relates to Nova Scotia, has already been mentioned [*f*]. 1. M. Lutre, with 300 Cape-Sable and St. John's Indians, did attempt the fort of Annapolis in June 1744. 2. Duvivier, with the ſame Indians and ſome regular troops from Louiſbourg, in all about 800 men, in September, inveſted and ſummoned the fort, and after three weeks retired to Minas. 3. M. Marin from Canada, with about 900 French and Indians in May, 1745, made a ſhort appearance before the fort, and retired to Minas, thence to proceed towards the relief of Louiſbourg; they were intercepted. 4. M. de Ramſay, with about 1600 men French and Indians from Canada, arrives at Minas in ſummer 1746, deſigned to join Duke d'Anville's armament at Chebucto; towards the end of September, he came before Annapolis, but made no aſſault; being adviſed of the return of the French fleet

[*e*] See p. 319. [*f*] Ibid.

for

for France, he retired to Minas and Chichanecto, and from thence next ſummer to join a French fleet and land forces towards reducing of Annapolis. In the winter 1746-7, about 500 to 600 of De Ramſay's men from Chicanecto, ſurprized the New-England forces cantoned at Minas, and did much havock [*g*]. The French return to Chicanecto waiting the arrival of la Jonquiere's ſquadron from France, but upon advice of this fleet being deſtroyed in Europe, De Ramſay returns to Canada, and Nova Scotia ſuffered no further diſturbance.

Thoſe 500 men, of the Canada levies, were the ſecond reinforcement ſent by Maſſachuſetts-Bay to Nova Scotia; they were about twelve months in pay, and the remains of them returned to Boſton in Autumn 1747.

Octob. 31, 1747, all the Canada levies were diſmiſſed, and next day, November 1, about 270 of them, in ſix companies, liſted as a third reinforcement for Nova Scotia; they were allowed Britiſh pay, and a full cloathing, but ſoon wore out; they were ordered home in the ſeverity of winter, 1748-9, and in rags; but by kind Providence, they generally arrived ſafe, and were diſmiſſed February 24, 1748-9.

For the three Canada expeditions that have been projected, but not effected ſince the Revolution; ſee p. 309, &c. The Canada levies of 1746, were under the direction of Sir Peter Warren and Mr. Shirley, with an inſtruction to employ them occaſionally, as in diſcretion they might think proper; accordingly, late in the year, when the river of St. Laurence was become impracticable, they cantoned 900 of them, part of the Crown-Point deſtination (2000 under Waldo and Dwight were the whole) along the frontiers in double pay, national and provincial, and 500 were ſent to Nova Scotia. In autumn, 1747, Knowles and Shirley, by inſtructions from home, had the direction of Nova Scotia.

For the affair of Cape-Breton, a miraculouſly ſucceſs-

[*g*] See p. 324.

ful expedition [*b*], our colony people love frolicks; they continued in pay about eighteen months.

For the North-America ſea campaigns of 1744, 1745, 1746, and 1747 [*i*]; to theſe we may add, that in the winter 1748-9, all the ſtation ſhips of North-America were called off, to form a ſquadron againſt St. Jago de Cuba, but in vain. The French and Spaniſh privateers improved this opportunity of a naked coaſt, took many of our veſſels, impuné they ſailed up Delaware river to within a few miles of Philadelphia, and many leagues up Cheſepeak bay of Virginia, and up Cape-Fear river of North-Carolina.

Towards the Crown-Point expedition, 1746, we ſent by water to Albany four months proviſions for 1500 men with tents, a thirteen inch mortar, and —— barrels of gunpowder; the ſickneſſes at Albany, and the alarm from d'Anville's ſquadron luckily put a check.

In the ſummer, 1748, notwithſtanding a ceſſation of arms in Europe being notified, ſome aſſociated banditti Indians in the French influence, did damage at Saratogo at fort Maſſachuſetts, in our eaſtern country; and at St. John's river of Nova Scotia, they killed ſome men belonging to the Anſon and Warren of the ordnance.

There are ſeveral miſcellany affairs belonging to this article, to be related in a ſhort looſe manner; which may ſerve as common place for future hiſtorians.

The ſix Indian nations of New-York, by the Dutch trading influence, did amongſt them reſolve to ſtand neuter; the Oneidas and Cayugas, French prieſt-rid, refuſed a meeting of delegates deſired by governor Clinton. In Auguſt and September 1746, Maſſachuſetts-Bay ſent commiſſioners to confer with theſe Indians at Albany; and 1748, Maſſachuſetts ſent their governor and other commiſſioners there to concert war affairs when the war was over.

1746, The French and their Indians from Crown-Point commit many barbarous murders and depredations

[*b*] See p. 335. 345 [*i*] See p. 338, &c.

at

at Saratogo near Albany. 1747, The militia garriſon of Saratogo carry off the ordnance and ſtores, and burnt the fort, without orders from the governor or government, as it is ſaid.

In the ſpring, 1744, arrive in Boſton the King's gift to Caſtle-William of 20 cannon of 42 pound ball, and 2 mortars of thirteen inches, with all ſtores, excepting gunpowder.

Anno 1744, the provincial aſſembly voted a range of forts to be built between Connecticut river and New-York boundary line, *viz.* Fall-fight, Colerani, Sherley, Pelham, and Maſſachuſetts.

In the ſpring, 1745, the province frigate Maſſachuſetts was launched; the fund was 6 *d.* per ton each voyage upon veſſels in foreign voyages, and 6 *d.* per ton *per annum* on fiſhing and coaſting veſſels of the province.

For the years 1745, 1746, and 1747, the premium for Indian ſcalps and captives 1000 *l.* old tenor per head to voluntiers, and 400 *l.* to impreſſed men; their wages and ſubſiſtence-money to be deducted.

1747, Auguſt, arrives in Boſton, twenty-one days paſſage from Quebec in Canada, a French flag of truce with 172 priſoners and captives Britiſh; ſeventy of the Britiſh died in Quebec; their allowance there per day was one pound and a half bread, half a pound beef, one gill of peaſe, with ſpruce beer.

1747, We ſent a flag of truce, Auguſt 1, from Boſton with ſixty-three French priſoners, delivered at L'Iſle de Baſque, thirty-five leagues below Quebec, and received ſixteen Britiſh priſoners; returned to Boſton October 3.

On our eaſtern and weſtern frontier, and in the intermediate province of New-Hampſhire, beſides ordinary garriſons, there were, anno 1745, about 747 men for ſummer; 1746, about 1270 men for ſummer, and 315 for winter; 1747, about 1676 men (the Canada 900 levies included) for the ſummer, and 509 for winter; 1748 (including 200 men from Connecticut) 1410 men

for

for ſummer, and 524 for winter, fifty from Connecticut included.

1749, Beginning of February, the peace which had been ſigned at Aix-la-Chapelle the 7th of October, 1748, was proclaimed in London, and in Boſton May 10th following.

After the concluſion of the peace with France and Spain; by order of the general of Canada, a conſiderable number of people, conſiſting of (as it is ſaid) ſome regular troops, Canadians and Indians, made a ſhort appearance near Bay Verte of Nova Scotia; they pretended that their buſineſs was to cut fire-wood for the expected French troops to garriſon Louiſbourg, but the real deſign ſeems to have been, to keep up their claim to ſome part of Nova Scotia, leſt Great-Britain in after times ſhould claim preſcription from an uninterrupted poſſeſſion; ſome ſhort time after this, the Governor-general of Canada by a formal letter to the Government of Nova Scotia, put in a French claim to the northern parts of Nova Scotia [*k*].

Peace being now fully ſettled, the court of Great-Britain ſeems to be in earneſt (ſince the peace of Utrecht neglected) in ſettling of Nova Scotia, as appears by the following extract from the original piece.

Whitehall, March 7, 1748-9.

A Propoſal having been preſented unto his Majeſty, for the eſtabliſhing a civil government in the province of Nova Scotia in North America; as alſo for the better peopling and ſettling the ſaid province, and

[*k*] The General of Martinico's French claim laſt winter to the iſland of Tobago, forty leagues ſouth from Barbadoes, and comprehended in the commiſſion of the governor of Barbadoes, was ſomething of this nature.

It is probable, that claims of this kind will be brought before the commiſſaries or commiſſioners uſually appointed to ſettle ſome concerns, which otherwiſe would have protracted the negotiations for a general peace.

extending

extending and improving the fiſhery thereof, by granting lands within the ſame, and giving other encouragements to ſuch of the officers and private men lately diſmiſſed his majeſty's land and ſea ſervice, as ſhall be willing to ſettle in the ſaid province: and his majeſty having ſignified his royal approbation of the purport of the ſaid propoſals, the Right Hon. the lord commiſſioners for Trade and Plantations do, by his Majeſty's command, give notice, that proper encouragement will be given to ſuch of the officers and private men lately diſmiſſed his Majeſty's land and ſea ſervice, and to artificers neceſſary in building and huſbandry, as are willing to accept of grants of land, and to ſettle with or without families in the province of Nova Scotia.

To the ſettlers qualified as above, 1. Will be granted paſſage and ſubſiſtence during their paſſage; as alſo for the ſpace of twelve months after their arrival. 2. [illegible] and ammunition, as far as will be judged neceſſary for their defence, with proper utenſils for huſbandry, fishery, erecting habitations, and other neceſſary purpoſes. 3. A civil government, to be eſtabliſhed with all the privileges of his Majeſty's other colonies or governments in America, and proper meaſures will be taken for their ſecurity and protection.

The lands granted ſhall be in fee-ſimple, free from the payment of any quit-rents, or taxes, for the term of ten years; at the expiration whereof no perſon to pay more than one ſhilling ſterling *per annum*, for every fifty acres ſo granted: the lands are to be granted with the following qualifications and proportions.

Fifty acres to every private ſoldier or ſeaman, and ten acres over and above to every perſon (including women and children) of which his family ſhall conſiſt, and further grants to be made to them; as their families ſhall increaſe.

Eighty acres to every officer under the rank of an enſign in the land ſervice, and that of a lieutenant in the ſea ſervice, and fifteen acres to every perſon belonging to the family.

200 Acres to every enſign, 300 to a lieutenant, 400 to a captain, 600 to any officer above the rank of a captain in the land ſervice; in the ſea ſervice, 400 acres to a lieutenant, 600 acres to a captain; thirty acres to every perſon belonging to ſuch families. Reputed ſurgeons, whether they have been in his Majeſty's ſervice, or not, ſhall be in the capacity of enſigns.

All perſons deſirous to engage, are to enter their names in the month of April, 1749, at the Trade and Plantation office, or with the Commiſſioners of the Navy reſiding at Portſmouth and Plymouth.

N. B. This volume begins January 1746-7, and ends May 1749. The Reader therefore will make Allowances for what Alterations have been made in the Engliſh Settlements ſince that time.

End of the Firſt Volume.

00032396

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 25 June, 2016